



Gc  
974.701  
W52bo  
v.1  
1281018

M. L.


GENEALOGY COLLECTION

✓

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01149 0262



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
Allen County Public Library Genealogy Center









**HON. GALEB HEATHCOTE.**

From the original Picture in the possession of the Right Rev.  
William Heathcote de Lancey.



A  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER,  
FROM  
ITS FIRST SETTLEMENT  
TO THE  
PRESENT TIME.

---

By ROBERT BOLTON, JR.  
AUTHOR OF THE "GUIDE TO NEW ROCHELLE," AND  
A MEMBER OF THE N. Y. HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

---

VOLUME I.

"It is the privilege of History to impart the experience of age, without its infirmities; to bring back things long obscured by time, or sinking into oblivion; and enable us to form some reasonable conjectures of what may happen to posterity."—*Poulson's Hist. of Holderness.*



NEW YORK:  
PRINTED BY ALEXANDER S. GOULD,  
144 NASSAU STREET.

---

1848.

---

Entered according to the Act of Congress in the year eighteen hundred and forty-eight

BY ROBERT BOLTON, JR.

In the Clerk's Office of the District Court for the Southern District of New York.

---

1281018

TO

THE INHABITANTS

OF

WESTCHESTER COUNTY,

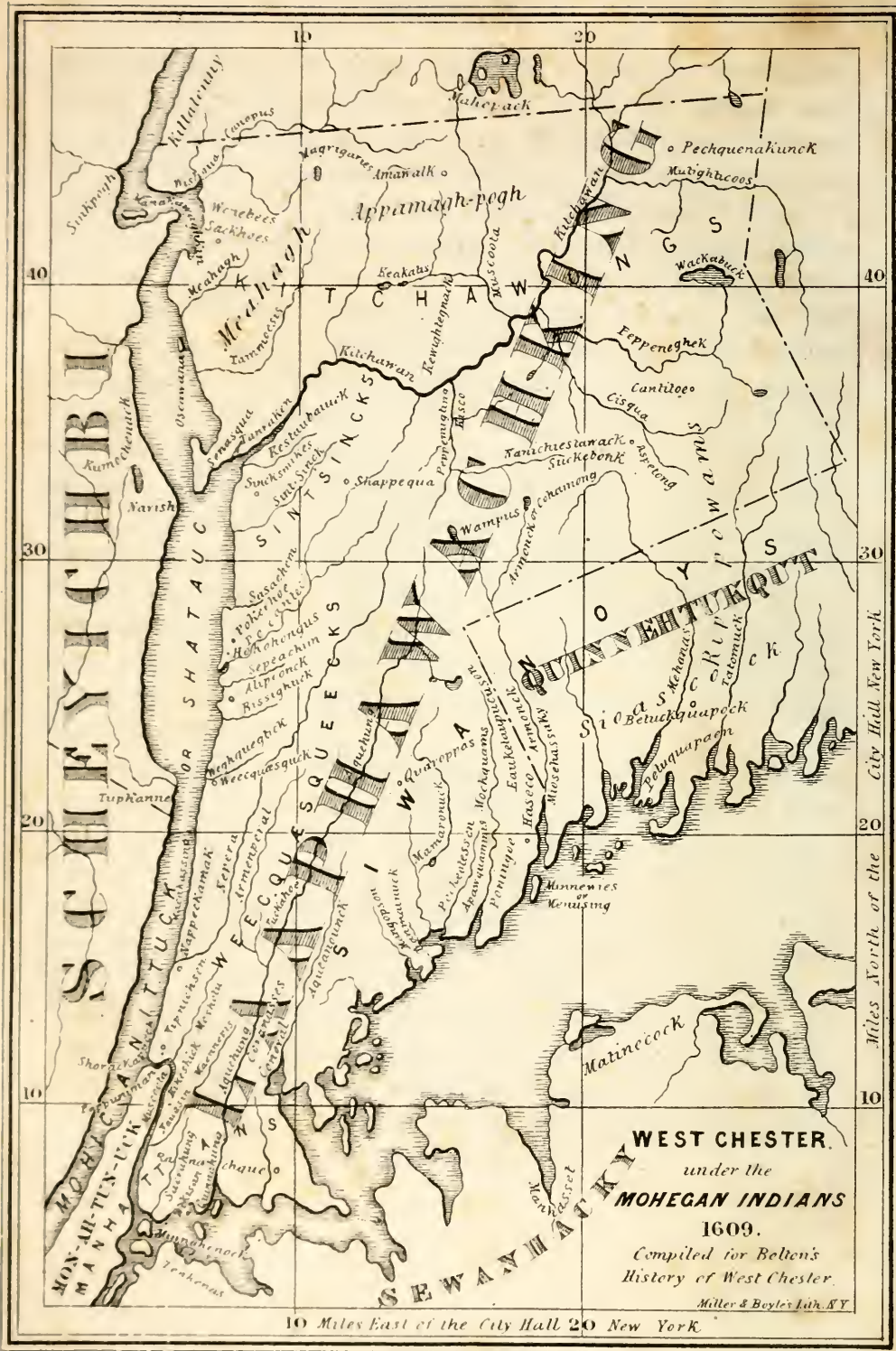
THESE VOLUMES

ARE MOST RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED

BY

ROBERT BOLTON, JR.

POND FIELD FARM, EASTCHESTER,  
*April 17th, 1848.*



S C H U Y L K I L L

Miles North of the City Hall New York

**WEST CHESTER.**  
 under the  
**MOHEGAN INDIANS**  
 1609.  
 Compiled for Bolton's  
 History of West Chester.  
 Miller & Boyles Lith. N.Y.

10 Miles East of the City Hall 20 New York

# INTRODUCTION.

---

## ABORIGINES.

AT the period of the Dutch discovery the *Mahicanni* resided on the east shore of the Hudson River. "These were the *Man-kikani* and *Mahikans* of De Laet, the *Mahiccanders*, *Mohick-anders* and *Nahikanders* of the Dutch, the *Manhikans*, *Ma-hikans*, or *Mohegans*, according to Professor Ebeling, and the *Mohegans* or *Muhhekanew*, (the original name of Mohegans.) According to the English the *Mohiccans*, *Mahiccon*, and lastly, *Mahiccans*, were all one people, originally a branch of the Delaware nation. The Mahiccans and Delawares both say they were once one people."<sup>a</sup> "The best information (says Mr. Heckewelder) which I could procure of the extent of the country the *Mahicanni* inhabited, was from an aged and intelligent man of this nation, whose grandfather had been a noted chief. His report was as follows, to wit: 'When I was a boy, my grandfather used to speak much of old times; how it had been before the white people came into this country, (that is, the State of New York, in which the relator was born,) and what changes took place since, from time to time. The western bounding line of the *Mahicanni* was the river *Mahicannittuck*, which the white people now call the 'North River.' Our towns and settlements extended on the east side of this river from *Thup-*

---

<sup>a</sup> Moulton's Hist. of New York, 226.

*hane* or *Tuphane*, (a Delaware word for *cold stream*, from which the whites have derived the name *Tappan*,) to the extent of tide water up this river; here was the uppermost town. From thence our towns were scattered throughout the country on the smaller rivers and creeks. Our nearest neighbors on the east were the *Wampano.*"<sup>a</sup>

"The country between the banks of the Connecticut River<sup>b</sup> and the Hudson, (says Mr. Bancroft,) was possessed by independent villages of the *Mohegans*, kindred with the *Manhattans*; whose few smokes once arose amidst the forests on New York Island."<sup>c</sup> Mr. Schoolcraft informs us that "The *Mohegans* and the *Minci* were two tribes of Algonquin lineage, who inhabited the valley of the Hudson between New York and Albany." *Mohegan*, (continues the same authority,) is a word, the meaning of which is not explained by the early writers; but if we may trust the deductions of philology, it needs create little uncertainty. In the *Mohegan*, as spoken at the present time by their lineal descendants, the *Stockbridges of Wisconsin*, *Maihtshow*, is the name of the *common wolf*. It is called, in cognate dialects of the Algonquin, *Myegan* by the Kenistenos, and *Myeengun* by the Chippewas, Ottawas and Pottowattomies. In the old Algonquin, as given by La Hontan, it is *Mahingan*, and we perceive that this was the term employed by the early French writers for the *Mohegans*. In the language of the Indian priests or medais, a mystical use of the names of various objects in the animated creation is made, in order to clothe their arts with the degree of respect and authority, which ignorant nations are ready to pay to whatsoever they do not fully understand; in other words, that which is mysterious. Thus, in the medicin songs of the *Odjibwas*, a wolf is called, not *Myeengun*, the popular term, but *Mohhwag*. It is believed the priests of the ancient *Mohegans* made similar distortion of their words, for similar ends, and that the terms *Moh hi Kan* and *Moh hin gan*, used by the early French

---

<sup>a</sup> Moulton's *Hist. of New York*, part i. 227.

<sup>b</sup> *Connecticoola*, meaning *Long River*, was the Indian name, says Judge Benson.

<sup>c</sup> Bancroft's *Hist. U. S. A.*, vol. iii. 239.

missionary writers for this tribe, furnish the origin of the term. The term itself, it is to be understood, by which the tribe is known to us, is not the true Indian, but has been shorn of a part of its sound, by the early Dutch, French and English writers. The modern tribe of the *Mohegans*, to whom allusion has been made, called themselves MUHHEKANIEW. This is, manifestly, a compound declarative phrase, and not a simple nominative, and is equivalent to the phrase, "I am a Mohegan." It is in accordance both with religious custom, and the usage of the Indian priesthood, to infer a unity of superstitious practices in nearly affiliated tribes. In this manner the word "Mohegan" was used to denote, not a common wolf, but the caries lupus, under the supposed influence of medical or necromantic arts. In other words, Mohegan was a phrase to denote an enchanted wolf, or a wolf of supernatural power. This was the badge or arms of the tribe, rather than the name of the tribe itself. And this also, it may be inferred, constituted originally, the point of distinction, between them and the Minci, or WOLF TRIBE PROPER. The affinities of the *Mohegans* with the *Minci*, or *Moncees*, on the west banks of the Hudson, and through them with the *Delawares*, are apparent in the language, and were well recognized at the era of the settlement."<sup>a</sup>

"The universal name the *Monseys* have for New York, (says Mr. Heckewelder) is LAAPHAWACHKING, or *the place of stringing beads.*"

The *Mohegans* were again sub-divided into numerous bands, each known by a distinctive name. Among these, inhabiting the County, may be enumerated the *Siwanoy*s, who occupied the northern shores of the Sound "from Norwalk to 24 miles to the neighborhood of Hellgate." How far they claimed jurisdiction inland is uncertain.

The *Manhattans* had their principal settlement on New York island, and from thence north to the bounds of *Yonkers*, nearly opposite *Tappan*. The *Wecquaskecks* possessed the

<sup>a</sup> Proceedings of N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844, 87.

country "lying between two rivulets called the *Sint Sinck* and *Armonck*, lying between the East and North rivers."

The *SINT SINCKS* occupied the present town of *Ossin-ing*, and its immediate vicinity.

The *KITCHAWONKS* claimed the lands bordering the *Kitchawan* or *Croton River*, and as far north as St. Anthony's Nose in the Highlands.

The *PACHAMI* and *WAPPINGERS* possessed the Highlands.

The *TANKITEKES* "resided in the rear of Sing Sing."<sup>a</sup>

The principal Indian villages appear to have been as follows :

Nappeckamak,	Kestaubaiuck,
Weecquæsguck,	Kitchawan,
Alipconck,	Sackhoes,
Sinck Sinck,	Kekisconck,
Nanichiestawack,	Betuck-quapock,
Momoronuck,	Pasquashic.

Noapaim.

"The three prominent Indian names for the Hudson River, (says Mr. Schoolcraft) are 'The Mohegan,<sup>b</sup> Chatémuc,<sup>c</sup> and the Cahotatea."

Like their neighbors, the Indians of Westchester were in subjection to the Iroquois, and acknowledged it by the payment of an annual tribute.

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. of N. N., 240.

<sup>b</sup> Mohegan River.

<sup>c</sup> "Shaita, in the cognate dialect of the Odjibwa, means a pelican." "Uc is the ordinary inflection for locality"—Mr. Schoolcraft's Paper, Proceedings of N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844. "The great white pelican (*P. trachyrhyncus*) was formerly numerous on the Hudson and other rivers and lakes of this State. At the present day it has entirely disappeared, and I do not know of its existence even as an accidental visitor."—Nat. Hist. of N. Y., by James de Kay.



## A GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE COUNTY.

IN giving a history of the County, it appears proper to begin with a recital of the act framing the same, entitled "An Act to divide the Province of New York and dependencies into Shires and Counties, &c."

"Having taken into consideration the necessity of dividing the Province into respective Countys, for the better governing and settling courts in the same, be it enacted by the Governor, Council and the Representatives, and by the authority of the same, that the said Province be divided into twelve Countys as followeth: The *County of Westchester* to conteyne West and Eastchester, Bronx-land, Fordham, Anne Hook's Neck, Richbells, Miniford's Islands, and all the land on the maine to the eastward of Manhattan's Island as farre as the government extends, and the Yonkers' land, and northward along Hudson's River as farre as the Highland."

"This bill having been three times read before the Governor and Council, is assented to the first of November, 1683."<sup>a</sup>

Westchester County was represented in the first Legislative Assembly of the Colony, which met at New York on the 9th of April, 1691;<sup>b</sup> and it has constituted one County to this time, having been organized as such by the General Acts of 1788 and 1801. It is situated on the east side of the Hudson, immediately north of New York County: bounded north by Putnam and Dutchess Counties; east by the State of Connecticut; southerly by Long Island Sound and East River; west by Haarlem River and the Hudson, or by New York County, the State of New Jersey, and the County of Rockland in this State. The area may be 480 square miles—307,200 acres—situated between 40° 47',

<sup>a</sup> Provincial Laws of N. Y., County Clerk's Office, Queens Co., L. I. The above act was confirmed on the 1st of October, 1691.

<sup>b</sup> In the person of John Pell, Esq. On the 20th Oct., 1635, James II. appointed John Pell, John Palmer, William Richardson, Joseph Horton, sen., and Joseph Theale, Justices of the Peace in the County of Westchester.

and 41° 22' north latitude, 103' east, and 32' east longitude from New York.

The County is thus described by William Smith the historian of New York, in 1756.

“Westchester County is large, and includes all the land beyond the Island of *Manhattans* along the *Sound* to the *Connecticut* line, which is its eastern boundary. It extends northward to the middle of the Highlands, and westward to *Hudson's River*. A great part of this county is contained in the manors of *Philipsburgh*, *Pelham*, *Fordham*, and *Courtlandt*, the last of which has the privilege of sending a representative to the General Assembly. The county is tolerably settled. The lands are in general rough but fertile, and therefore the farmers run principally on grazing. It has several towns, *Eastchester*, *Westchester*, *New Rochelle*, *Rye*, *Bedford*, and *North Castle*. The inhabitants are either *English* or *Dutch* Presbyterians, Episcopalians, Quakers, and *French* Protestants. The former are the most numerous. The two Episcopal missionaries are settled at *Rye* and *Eastchester*, and receive each £60 annually taxed upon the county. The town of *Westchester* is an incorporated borough, enjoying a mayor's court and the right of being represented by a member in Assembly.”<sup>a</sup>

REPRESENTATIVE POPULATION OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY  
FOR 1846.

Towns.	Total population.	Deduct alien, not taxed, and persons of color.	Total representative population.
Bedford, . . .	2725 . . .	29 . . .	2696 . . .
Cortlandt, . . .	6738 . . .	1743 . . .	5595 . . .
Greenburgh, . . .	3205 . . .	270 . . .	2935 . . .
Eastchester, . . .	1369 . . .	2055 . . .	1114 . . .
Harrison, . . .	1039 . . .	152 . . .	887 . . .
Lewisboro, . . .	1511 . . .	6 . . .	1535 . . .
Mount Pleasant, <sup>b</sup>	2962 . . .	126 . . .	2836 . . .
Mamaroneck, . . .	780 . . .	64 . . .	716 . . .

<sup>a</sup> Smith's Hist. of N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> Mount Pleasant includes the inmates of the county poor-house, which is returned in the census separately, as follows; total number of inmates 184, aliens not naturalized, and persons of color not taxed, 25.

North Castle,	. 2010	. .	102	. .	1908
New Castle,	. 1495	. .	49	. .	1446
North Salem,	. 1228	. .	38	. .	1490
New Rochelle,	. 1977	. .	346	. .	1631
Ossin-ing, <sup>a</sup>	. 3312	. .	177	. .	3135
Pelham,	. 486	. .	64	. .	422
Poundridge,	. 1427	. .	14	. .	1413
Rye,	. 2180	. .	287	. .	1895
Somers, <sup>b</sup>	. 1761	. .	93	. .	1668
Scarsdale,	. 341	. .	57	. .	284
Westchester, <sup>c</sup>	. 5052	. .	756	. .	4296
White Plains,	. 1155	. .	140	. .	1015
Yorktown,	. 2278	. .	149	. .	2129
Yonkers,	. 2517	. .	249	. .	2268

## POPULATION OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY FROM 1731 TO 1840.

A. D. 1731,	6,033	A. D. 1800,	27,423
A. D. 1771,	21,745	A. D. 1810,	30,272
A. D. 1786,	20,554	A. D. 1835,	37,791
A. D. 1790,	24,003	A. D. 1840,	48,686

“The County of Westchester comprises a very important section of this state: washed on the west by the Hudson, on the south by the East River and Long Island Sound, it enjoys very superior advantages for trade and commerce, with a fine soil for agriculture, and a charming diversity of surface and of elegant situation; while its contiguity to the great commercial metropolis of North America, completes a proud superiority of geographical position. The north-west corner is considerably broken by the south-eastern border of the Highlands, of a mountain character; and a range of hills of moderate height extends from York Island toward the north-east extremity, on which are

<sup>a</sup> Name changed to Ossin-ing in 1846. See Sess. Laws, chap. 30, sec. 5.

<sup>b</sup> Part of Somers annexed to Newcastle. See Laws of 1846, chap. 249.

<sup>c</sup> West Farms erected from part of Westchester. See Sess. Laws, 184, chap. 279.

situated the heights and hills much known in the Revolutionary war, particularly in the year 1776. Besides Harlem, Hudson and East Rivers, forming the boundaries, there are several small streams that afford many mill seats. Peekskill Creek and Croton River, which rise in Dutchess and Putnam counties, run south-westward across the north-western part of Westchester County to the Hudson. Saw Mill River runs from Mount Pleasant to the Hudson at Yonkers; and Bronx River, the largest, Hutchinson's and Mamaroneck Rivers run south into the East River. Byram River runs from Westchester, principally in Connecticut, and forms two miles of the state boundary from its mouth in East River, which receives some other small streams from the south-east angle of Westchester County, direct across the south-west angle of Connecticut."

"The soil of this County admits of no general character, except that its tillage is productive to the agriculturist. The style of its agriculture is in the first order, if we except Dutchess. The lower part has considerable of ornamental farming and gardening, where are the seats of men of opulence, cultivated with much taste." The manufactures are numerous. White Plains and Bedford are the half shire towns. "Tarrytown, Sing Sing, and some others, are charming positions on the Hudson, where are small villages and landings, with considerable trade. Tappan Bay, a wide place in the Hudson, is here three miles in width, where crowds of shipping are constantly seen passing in opposite directions, exhibiting a most elegant display of commercial activity."<sup>a</sup>

"The County of Westchester is based on primitive rock called hypogene, or granite gneiss, long ridges of which intersect the county, with here and there small veins of iron ore and quartz. Large numbers of granite boulders are found here, both inland and on the coast; also some fine quarries of white marble and two silver and gold mines at Sing Sing and Peekskill." According to the late geographical survey the principal minerals are, white marble, iron ore, galena, sulphate of barytes,

---

<sup>a</sup> See Spafford's Gazetteer of N. Y.

copper, iron and zinc, oxide of manganese, green carbonate of copper, serpentine, calcareous spar, phosphate of lime, hydrate and carbonate of magnesia, quartz, drusy, calcedony, agate, jasper, hyroxene, hornblende, asbestos, actynolite, homolite, hydrous anthophyllite, felspar, stilbite, garnet, epidote, chenite, tourmaline, sphene, vanquelemite, magnetic pyrites, chromate of iron, red ochre and red chalk.

The natural growth of wood is very extensive, especially upon the higher lands. Among the principal varieties may be enumerated the White Oak, (*Quercus Alba*,) Red Oak, (*Quercus Rubra*,) Pin Oak, (*Quercus Paluster*,) and the Black Oak, (*Quercus tetron*;) the White Elm, (*Ulmus Americana*;) Red or Slippery Elm, (*Ulmus Fulva*,) and the Witch Elm, (*Ulmus Montana*;) the Plane or Buttonwood, (*Platanus*;) the Ash, (*Traxinus*;) Basswood, Lime or Linden, (*Zelia*;) Beach, (*Tagus*;) Birch, (*Betula*;) Maple, (*Acer*;) Locust, (*Robinia*;) Chesnut, (*Castanea*;) Walnut, (*Juglans*;) Hickory, (*Carya*;) the Whitewood or Tulip, (*Liriodendron*;) Dogwood, (*Cornus*;) Hemlock or Spruce, and the Red Cedar (*Juniperus*.)

“This County suffered severely during the Revolution. The whole southern part was marked by the marches, works of defence, or skirmishes and battles of hostile armies; and, indeed, the active operations of the war in 1776 were principally confined to this region, and in the autumn to this County—and the two armies were in full force, constantly on the alert, and under the eyes of their respective Commanders-in-Chief. And this, too, was probably the most interesting period of the war, though attended with no exploits of very brilliant fame. The British with a numerous army, and a powerful marine, were in possession of New York, while Washington, with an inferior and badly supplied army, dispirited by the affair of Long Island, was merely manœuvring to keep them in check. The battle of White Plains, October 28th, will long be remembered, as will the dismal prospect of that year, when the Patriot Fathers of America had still the courage to declare Independence, and assert the rights of nature and of nations.<sup>a</sup> But though the morning

---

<sup>a</sup> July 4, 1776.

sun of Dec'ared Independence arose thus in a cloud,—while yet it was morning, Princeton, Trenton and the plains of Saratoga enjoyed a broad refulgence, diffusing new spirits over the nation. And it were well worthy the attention of every American youth to study the history of that war, and thus learn the price paid for Independence ; the better to know how to appreciate its value. Nor ought we to forget that the privileges so dearly purchased, can only be preserved to our posterity, by that zeal for our country which governed the conduct of our fathers, now descended to the grave.”<sup>a</sup>

“The County of Westchester,” says Mr. N. P. Willis, “has been made the scene of, perhaps, the best historical novel of our country, and, more than any other part of the United States, suffered from the evils of war. The character and depredations of the “*Cow-boys*” and “*Skimmers*,” whose fields of action were on the skirts of this “NEUTRAL GROUND,” are familiar to all who have read “the Essay” of Mr. Cooper. A distinguished clergyman<sup>b</sup> gives the following very graphic picture of Westchester County in those days:—

“In the autumn of 1777, I resided for some time in this County. The lines of the British were then in the neighborhood of King’s Bridge, and those of the Americans at Byram River. The unhappy inhabitants were, therefore, exposed to the depredations of both. Often they were actually plundered, and always were liable to this calamity. They feared every body whom they saw, and loved nobody. It was a curious fact to a philosopher, and a melancholy one to hear their conversation. To every question they gave such an answer as would please the inquirer ; or, if they despaired of pleasing, such a one as would not provoke him. Fear was, apparently, the only passion by which they were animated. The power of volition seemed to have deserted them. They were not civil, but obsequious ; not obliging, but subservient. They yielded with a kind of apathy, and very quietly, what you asked, and what they supposed it impossible for them to retain. If you treated them kindly, they received it coldly ; not as a kindness, but as a compensation for

---

<sup>a</sup> Spafford’s Gazetteer of N. Y. Upon the evacuation of New York by the British forces, Nov. 25, 1783, the Governor of the State and Commander-in-chief were escorted by a body of *Westchester Light horse, commanded by Captain Delavan.*—*Editor.*

<sup>b</sup> Dr. Timothy Dwight’s *Travels*, 3d vol.

injuries done them by others. When you spoke to them, they answered you without either good or ill nature, and without any appearance of reluctance or hesitation; but they subjoined neither questions nor remarks of their own; proving to your full conviction, that they felt no interest either in the conversation or yourself. Both their countenances and their motions had lost every trace of animation and of feeling. The features were smoothed, not into serenity, but apathy; and, instead of being settled in the attitude of quiet thinking, strongly indicated that all thought beyond what was merely instinctive, had fled their minds for ever.

“ Their houses, in the meantime, were in a great measure scenes of desolation. Their furniture was extensively plundered, or broken to pieces. The walls, floors, and windows were injured both by violence and decay; and were not repaired, because they had not the means to repair them, and because they were exposed to the repetition of the same injuries. Their cattle were gone. Their enclosures were burnt, where they were capable of becoming fuel; and in many cases thrown down where they were not. Their fields were covered with a rank growth of weeds and wild grass.

“ Amid all this appearance of desolation, nothing struck my eye more forcibly than the sight of the high road. Where I had heretofore seen a continual succession of horses and carriages, life and bustle lending a sprightliness to all the environing objects, not a single, solitary traveller was seen, from week to week, or from month to month. The world was motionless and silent; except when one of these unhappy people ventured upon a rare and lonely excursion to the house of a neighbor no less unhappy; or a scouting party, traversing the country in quest of enemies, alarmed the inhabitants with expectations of new injuries and sufferings. The very tracks of the carriages were grown over, and obliterated; and where they were discernible, resembled the faint impressions of chariot wheels said to be left on the pavements of Herculaneum. The grass was of full height for the scythe; and strongly realized to my own mind, for the first time, the proper import of that picturesque declaration in the Song of Deborah: ‘ In the days of Shamgar, the son of Anath, in the days of Jael, the highways were unoccupied, and the travellers walked through by-paths. The inhabitants of the villages ceased; they ceased in Israel.’ ”\*

The subjoined account of the County, in 1780, is taken from Dr. Thacher’s Military Journal :—

“ The country which we lately traversed, about fifty miles in extent, is called “ NEUTRAL GROUND ; ” but the miserable inhabitants who remain are

---

\* American Scenery, by Bartlett and Willis.

not much favored with the privileges which their neutrality ought to secure to them. They are continually exposed to the ravages and insults of infamous banditti, composed of royal refugees and tories. The country is rich and fertile ; and the farms appear to have been advantageously cultivated, but it now has the marks of a country in ruins. A large proportion of the proprietors having abandoned their farms, the few that remain find it impossible to harvest the produce. The meadows and pastures are covered with grass of a summer's growth, and thousands of bushels of apples and other fruit are rotting in the orchards. We brought off about two hundred loads of hay and grain ; and ten times the amount might have been procured, had teams enough been provided. Those of the inhabitants of the neutral ground who were tories, have joined their friends in New York, and the Whigs have retired into the interior of our country. Some of each side have taken up arms, and become the most cruel and deadly foes. There are within the British lines banditti, consisting of lawless villains, who devote themselves to the most cruel pillage and robbery among the defenceless inhabitants between the lines ; many of whom they carry off to New York, after plundering their houses and farms. These shameless marauders have received the names of *Cowboys* and *Skinners*. By their atrocious deeds, they have become a scourge and terror to the people. Numerous instances have been related of these miscreants subjecting defenceless persons to cruel tortures, to compel them to deliver up their money, or to disclose the places where it has been secreted. It is not uncommon for them to hang a man by his neck till apparently dead, then restore him, and repeat the experiment, and leave him for dead. One of these unhappy persons informed me, that when suffering this cruel treatment, the last sensation which he recollects, when suspended by his neck, was a flashing heat over him like that which would be occasioned by boiling water poured over his body ; he was, however, cut down, and how long he remained on the ground insensible, he knows not. A peaceable, unresisting Quaker, of considerable respectability, by the name of Quincy, was visited by several of these vile ruffians ; they first demanded his money, and after it was delivered they suspected he had more concealed, and inflicted on him the most savage cruelties in order to extort it from him. They began with what they call scorching, covering his naked body with hot ashes, and repeating the application till the skin was covered with blisters ; after this they resorted to the halter, and hung the poor man on a tree by his neck, then took him down, and repeated it a second, and even a third time, and finally left him almost lifeless."\*

Westchester County under the late constitution formed the Second Senatorial, and Assembly Districts ; under the present,

---

\* Thacher's Military Journal, 232.



she constitutes the Seventh Senatorial with Rockland, and is divided into two Assembly Districts.

## JUDGES OF THE COUNTY.

John Pell . . . . .	1688	John Waters . . . . .	1802
Caleb Heathcote . . . . .	1700	Caleb Tompkins . . . . .	1808
William Willett . . . . .	1721	William Jay . . . . .	1820
Frederick Phillips . . . . .	1730	Isaac Requa . . . . .	1820
Isaac Honeywell . . . . .	1734	Jonathan Ferris . . . . .	1820
John Thomas . . . . .	1734	William Miller . . . . .	1820
Lewis Morris, Jun. . . . .	1738	Edward Kemeys . . . . .	1821
Samuel Purdy . . . . .	1744	St. John Constant . . . . .	1822
William Leggett . . . . .	1752	Ezra Lockwood . . . . .	1822
Nathaniel Underhill . . . . .	1755	Henry White . . . . .	1823
John Thomas . . . . .	1765	John Townsend . . . . .	1825
Robert Graham . . . . .	1778	Nehemiah Brown, Jun. . . . .	1831
Stephen Ward . . . . .	1778	Aaron Vark . . . . .	1833
Gilbert Drake . . . . .	1778	Joseph A. Constant . . . . .	1838
Ebenezer Lockwood . . . . .	1778	George Case . . . . .	1843
Jonathan G. Tompkins . . . . .	1778	Albert Lockwood . . . . .	1845
Ebenezer Purdy . . . . .	1797	Robert J. Hart . . . . .	1846
		Albert Lockwood . . . . .	1847.

## CLERKS OF THE COUNTY.

Edward Collier . . . . .	1688 to 1691
Joseph Lee . . . . .	1691 to 1698
Benjamin Collier . . . . .	1698 to 1707
John Clapp . . . . .	1707 to 1711
Daniel Clark . . . . .	1711 to 1722
William Forster . . . . .	1722 to 1732
Benjamin Nicoll . . . . .	1745 to 1746
John Bartow . . . . .	1760 to 1764
Richard Hatfield . . . . .	1777 to 1800
Thomas Ferris . . . . .	1807 to 1815
Elijah Crawford . . . . .	1815 to 1820
William Requa . . . . .	1820 to 1821
Nehemiah S. Bates . . . . .	1821 to 1829
Nathaniel Bayles . . . . .	1829 to 1833
John H. Smith . . . . .	1833 to 1837
Chauncey Smith . . . . .	1837 to 1839
Charles A. Purdy . . . . .	1839 to 1843
Munson I. Lockwood . . . . .	1843 to 1849

## SHERIFFS OF THE COUNTY.

Thomas Wheeler, under the Dutch, . . . . .	1654 to 1664
Resolve Waldron, High Sheriff of the North Riding, . . . . .	1664 to 1670
Robert Coe, . . . . . " " ditto " " . . . . .	1670 to 1671
John Manning . . . . . " " ditto " " . . . . .	1671 to 1672
Benjamin Collier, High Sheriff of Westchester County, . . . . .	1688 to 1692
Roger Barton . . . . . , . . . . .	October 14, 1702 to 1706
Nicholas Cooper . . . . .	1733 to 1737
Isaac Willet . . . . .	1737 to 1766
Lewis Graham . . . . .	1766 to 1768
John de Lancey . . . . .	1768 to 1769
James de Lancey, Jun., last of the Colonial, . . . . .	1769 to 1775
John Thomas . . . . .	January 6, 1778 to 1780
Jesse Hunt . . . . .	1780 to 1781
John Thomas . . . . .	1781 to 1785
Jesse Hunt . . . . .	1785 to 1788
Thomas Thomas . . . . .	1788 to 1792
Samuel Haight . . . . .	1792 to 1796
Elias Newman . . . . .	1796 to 1799
William Barker . . . . .	1799 to 1806
Daniel Delavan . . . . .	1806 to 1807
St. John Constant . . . . .	1807 to 1810
Elijah Ward . . . . .	1810 to 1811
St. John Constant . . . . .	1811 to 1814
Lyman Cook . . . . .	1814 to 1815
Zabud June . . . . .	1815 to 1818
Lyman Cook . . . . .	1818 to 1821
Ward B. Howard . . . . .	1821 to 1823
John Townsend . . . . .	1823 to 1826
Alan McDonald . . . . .	1826 to 1829
David D. Webbers . . . . .	1829 to 1832
Aaron Brown . . . . .	1832 to 1835
Joseph H. Anderson . . . . .	1835 to 1838
Amos T. Hatfield . . . . .	1838 to 1841
Joseph Lyon . . . . .	1841 to 1844
William H. Briggs . . . . .	1844 to 1847
James M. Bates . . . . .	1847.

## SURROGATES OF THE COUNTY.

John Bartow . . . . .	1754 to 1761
Caleb Fowler . . . . .	1761 to 1778
Richard Hatfield . . . . .	1778 to 1787

Philip Pell . . . . .	1787 to 1796
Elias Newman . . . . .	1796 to 1800
Samuel Young . . . . .	1800 to —
Edward Thomas . . . . .	— to —
Samuel Young . . . . .	1807 to 1808
Ezra Lockwood . . . . .	1808 to 1815
Henry White . . . . .	March 16, 1815 to 1819
Samuel Young . . . . .	July 8, 1819 to 1821
Ebenezer White, Jun. . . . .	Feb. 17, 1821 to 1823
Jonathan Ward . . . . .	1823 to 1839
Alexander H. Wells . . . . .	1839 to 1844
Frederick I. Coffin . . . . .	1844 to 1847
Lewis C. Platt . . . . .	1847 to 1852

---

Deputies from Westchester County to the Provincial Congress,  
met at New York, May 23d, 1775.

Gouverneur Morris	Philip van Cortlandt
Lewis Graham	James Holmes
James van Cortlandt	David Dayton
Stephen Ward	John Thomas, Jun.
Joseph Drake	Robert Graham
William Paulding.	

Members of the New York Convention from Westchester  
County for deliberating on the adoption of the Constitution of  
the United States, assembled at Poughkeepsie, June 17, 1788.

Lewis Morris	Philip van Cortlandt
Philip Livingston	Thaddeus Crane
Richard Hatfield	Lott W. Sarles.

Delegates from Westchester County to the Convention met at  
Kingston, Ulster County, to frame the Constitution of the State  
of New York, April 20th, 1777.

Pierre van Cortlandt	Ebenezer Lockwood
Gouverneur Morris	Zebediah Mills
Gilbert Drake	Jonathan Platt
Lewis Graham	Jonathan G. Tompkins.

Delegates from Westchester County met in Convention for

framing the late Constitution of the State of New York, November 10th, 1821.

Peter A. Jay,

Peter Jay Munro,

Jonathan Ward.

Delegates from Westchester County met in Convention, for framing the present Constitution of the State of New York.

John Hunter,

Aaron Ward.

---

*A List of the Officers chosen in the several districts of the South Battalion of Westchester County, (except Westchester,) A. D. 1775.*

#### YONKERS.

John Cock, Captain.

John Warner, 2d Lieutenant.

William Betts, 1st Lieutenant.

Jacob Post, Ensign.

New officers to be chosen for this company, no commission issued.

#### EASTCHESTER.

Stephen Sneden, Captain.

Daniel Sersing, 2d Lieutenant

Thomas Pinckney, 1st Lieutenant.

William Pinckney, Ensign.

Commission issued, dated September 20.

#### NEW ROCHELLE,

*And Manor of Pelham.*

Joseph Drake, Captain.

James Willis, 1st Lieutenant.

David Guion, 2d Lieutenant.

Commission issued and dated 20th September.

#### PHILIPSBURGH.

*Upper Company.*

Abraham Ledew, Captain.

John Belyea, 2d Lieutenant.

Benjamin Brown, 1st Lieutenant.

John Oakley, Ensign, (son of Isaac.)

Commission issued September 2, delivered to Mr. Paulding.

#### PHILIPSBURGH.

*Tarrytown Company.*

Abraham Storms, Captain.

Joseph Appleby, 2d Lieutenant.

George Combs, 1st Lieutenant.

Nathaniel Underhill, Ensign.

Same date, delivered to Mr. Paulding.

## PHILIPSBURGH.

*East Company.*

David Storms, Captain.	Gilbert Dean, 2d Lieutenant.
Benjamin Vermilyea, 1st Lieutenant.	Gilbert Requaw, Ensign.

Same date delivered to Mr. Paulding.

## PHILIPSBURGH.

*Lower Company.*

Isaac Vermilyea, Captain.	Isaac Honeywell, 1st Lieutenant.
	Dennis Lent, 2d Lieutenant.

Dated September 20, delivered to Mr. Paulding.

## MAMARONECK AND RYE.

*Except the Upper End of King Street.*

Robert Blomer, Captain.	Ezekiel Halstead, 2d Lieutenant.
Alexander Hunt, 1st Lieutenant.	Daniel Horton, Ensign.

## SCARSDALE, WHITE PLAINS,

*And Brown's Point.*

Joshua Hatfield, Captain.	Anthony Miller, 2d Lieutenant.
James Verrian, 1st Lieutenant.	John Falconer, Ensign.

## HARRISON PRECINCT,

*And the Upper End of King Street.*

Henry Dusingberry, Captain.	Caleb Paulding, 2d Lieutenant.
Lyon Mills, 1st Lieutenant.	Gilbert Dusingberry, Ensign.

## NORTHCASTLE.

*East Company.*

Benoni Platt, Captain.	Abraham Knapp, 2d Lieutenant.
David Hobby, 1st Lieutenant.	Jonathan Guion, Ensign.

## NORTHCASTLE.

*South Company.*

Benjamin Ogden, Captain.	Caleb Merritt, Jun., 2d Lieutenant.
Jeremiah Hunter, 1st Lieutenant.	James Brondige, Ensign.

In Northcastle, North Company, there were not persons sufficient in number who had signed the association, to make officers of; so that nothing was done.

## BEDFORD.

*Eastern District.*

Lewis McDonald, Jun., Captain.	Henry Lord, 2d Lieutenant.
James Miller, 1st Lieutenant.	Jesse Miller, Ensign.

## BEDFORD.

*Western District.*

Eli Seely, Captain.	Ephraim Raymond, 2d Lieutenant.
Hezekiah Grey, 1st Lieutenant.	Gabriel Higgins, Ensign.

## POUNDRIDGE.

Joseph Lockwood, Captain.	William Fansher, 2d Lieutenant.
Noah Bouton, 1st Lieutenant.	Gilbert Reynolds, Ensign.

## SALEM.

*South District.*

Abijah Gilbert, Captain.	Sands Raymond, 2d Lieutenant.
Jacob Haight, 1st Lieutenant.	Joseph Cooley, Ensign.

## SALEM.

*Northern District.*

Thaddeus Crane, Captain.	Ezekiel Hawley, 2d Lieutenant.
Jesse Truesdale, 1st Lieutenant.	Ebenezer Brown, Ensign.

---

*A List of the Officers chosen in the several districts of the  
North Battalion, of Westchester County.*

## MANOR OF CORTLANDT.

The District late commanded by Francis Lent.

James Kronkhyte, Captain.	Staats Degrete, 2d Lieutenant.
Abraham Lamb, 1st Lieutenant,	David Penore, Ensign.

The District late commanded by Bartow Underhill.

Gilbert van Cortlandt, Captain.  
 Daniel Haines, 1st Lieutenant ; signed the association the day he was chosen.  
 James Teller, 2d Lieutenant.  
 Hermanus Gardiner, Sen., Ensign.

## The District late commanded by Jeremiah Drake.

Gilbert Lockwood, Captain.

John Drake, 1st Lieutenant; signed the association the day he was chosen.

Joshua Drake, 2d Lieutenant; the like.

Peter Carman, Ensign; the like.

## The District late commanded by Joseph Strang.

John Hyatt, Captain.

John Drake, 1st Lieutenant.

Obadiah Purdy, 2d Lieutenant.

Joseph Horton, Ensign; signed the association the day he was elected.

Commission issued, dated September 20.

## The District late commanded by Ebenezer Theall.

Andrew Brown, Captain.

John Crissey Miller, 2d Lieutenant.

Samuel Haight, 1st Lieutenant.

Solomon Purdy, Ensign.

Commission issued, dated September 20.

## The North Division of the District, late commanded by Levi Bailey.

Nathaniel Delavan, Captain,

Titus Runnells, 2d Lieutenant.

Thomas Nicholls, Jun., 1st Lieutenant.

Abraham Purdy, Ensign.

Commission issued, dated September 20.

## The South Division of the same District.

Gideon Selah, Captain.

Caleb Hobby, 2d Lieutenant.

Samuel Lawrence, 1st Lieutenant.

Abraham Todd, Ensign.

The Company commanded by David Montross refused to choose officers.

---

*A List of Officers chosen in the several Districts of the North Battalion of Westchester County.*

## Manor of Cortlandt, the District late commanded by Francis Lent.

James Kronckhyte, Captain.

Abram Lamb, 1st Lieutenant.

Staats Dregrete, 2d Lieutenant.

David Penore, Ensign.

The District late commanded by Bartow Underhill.

Gilbert van Cortlandt, Captain.

Dan. Hains, 1st Lieutenant ; signed the association the day he was chosen.

James Teller, 2d Lieutenant.

Hermanus Gardinear, sen'r, Ensign.

The District late commanded by Jeremiah Drake.

Gilbert Lockwood. Captain.

John Drake, 1st Lieutenant ; signed the association the day he was chosen.

Justus A. Drake, 2d Lieutenant ; the like

Peter Carman, Ensign ; the like.

The District late commanded by Joseph Straug.

John Hyatt, Captain.

John Drake, 1st Lieutenant ; commission issued dated Sept. 20.

Obadiah Purdy, 2d Lieutenant.

Joseph Horton, Ensign ; signed the association the day he was elected.

The District late commanded by Ebenezer Theall.

Andrew Brown, Captain.

Samuel Haight, 1st Lieutenant.

John Crissey Miller, 2d Lieutenant ; commission issued dated Sept. 20.

Solomon Purdy, Ensign.



LEWIS MORRIS APPOINTED BRIG. GENERAL 25TH JUNE, 1778. (Council Minutes A. No. 1, p. 21-22.)

Field and Staff Officers.	Captains.	First Lieutenant.	Second Lieutenant.	Ensigns.	Associated Exempts.
Thomas Thomas, Col Gilbert Budd, sen'r, Lt. Col	Richard Sackett, Gre- nadiers Josiah Miller	Joseph Miller, Gre- nadiers Zephaniah Miller	Moses St. John, Gre- nadiers Nathan Canfield	Benj. Ambler, March 8, 1780 Hezekiah Miller	Gideon Seely, Capt Sol'mon Close, 1st Lt Tytus Reynolds, 2d Lt. April 22, 1779
Thaddeus Crane, Maj Edward Thomas, Adj Tim'y Brundage, 2d Maj David Hobby, Maj. Mar. 3, 1780,	Marcus Moseman Ebenezer Scofield David Purdie Jesse Trusdale David Hobby Jacob Purdy John Thomas, jun'r Caleb Lawrence	Jonathan Londer Jos. Dowlittle Gilbert Lyon William Wright James Miller Abraham Miller	Gabriel Higgen David Fanshier Josiah Hays Abraham Smith Wright Carpenter David Lyon Thomas Carpenter James Brundage Isaac Miller, 29th of September, 1780	Ely Tyler Samuel Lewis David Smith Abijah Wallace William Mosier Nathaniel Tucker John Faulkner Uria Wallace, N'r 5, 1778	Ebenezer Slawson, Capt Sam. Bouten, 1st Lt Zepha. Mills, 2d Lt. October 19, 1779 Joseph Benedict, Lt. Col
(Two companies consoli- dated May 28, 1778, p. 54 Two comp. consol., p. 54 Isaac Smith, Adjut. p. 251	Moses St. John, 29th Sept. 1780 Gilbert Lyon, do	Isaac Clark, 29th of September, 1780 Wright Carpenter, do	William Moshier, do Nath'l Tucker, 29th June, 1781 Hez'iah Miller, 19th Nov., 1781	Samuel Banck, Nov. 8, 1781 Benj. Ambler, Nov. 19, 1781 Timothy Miller, do	Ebenezer Slawson, Maj. Mar. 3, 1780
James Hammond, Lt. Col of Jos. Drake's Regi- ment formerly Rich'd Garrison, 2d Maj Isaac Requaw, Adj Jonathan Horton, Major 25th June, 1778	George Comb Daniel Martling Gabriel Requaw Jonas Arser Israel Honeywell	Corn's van Tassel Gershom Sherwood John Baker John Oakley Tennis Lent	Jacob van Tassel John van Wart William Veal Henry Lambert Daniel Williams	Thomas Buice Peter Pawling Jonathan Knot Benjamin Brown Stephen Sherwood	Enoch Mead, Adj. Joel Bouten, 2d Maj. 10th July, 1782, p. 249.
					28th May, 1778, p. 52. 16th June, 1778, p. 75.

WESICHESTER COUNTY. (*Council Minutes A No. 1, p. 22.*)

Field and Staff Officers.	Captains.	First Lieutenants.	Second Lieutenants.	Ensigns.	Captains and subalterns to be officers of the companies of their respective beats, page 93
<i>Samuel Drake</i> , Col	James Cronckhyto	Benj Dyckman	Hermanus Gardinear	John Porter	25th June, 1778, p. 90.
John Hyatt, Lt. Col	Ebenezer Boyd	John Maudevil	David Ferris	Major Drake	
Nathaniel Delavan, Major	John Drake	Abraham Smith	Obadiah Purdy	Ifenry Carman	
Isaac Poinier, June 25, 1778	Samuel Haight	Daniel Mordine	Solomon	Isaac Clark	
Robert Lang, 2d Major, do	Henry Strang	Daniel Delavan	John McKeel	James Archer	
	Ephraim Lockwood	Isaac Keeler	Daniel Purdy	Wm. Rogers	
	Sam. Lawrence, (resigned,) p. 315	Joseph Benedict	Nath'l Reynolds, junr	Enoch Benedict	
	Samuel Delavan	Andrew Baker	Jacob van Wart	John Montross	
	Jas. Taylor	John Kuduey	Joseph Veal, junr	Isaac Vermiliet, jr	
	Abraham Buckhout,	Jacob van Wart, F'y 27, 1779	Adam Montross, F'y 27, 1779	Isrl Underhill, F'y 27, '79	
<i>Thaddeus Crane</i> , Lt. Col., p. 159, Oct. 21, 1779	Feb. 27, 1779	Wm. Colear, do	Elvan Purdy, do	John McCreery, do	
Nathaniel Delavan, Major, do	Ab'm Smith Heady, do	David Ferris, do	Major Drake, do	Dennis Kennedy, do	
John Coley, Adjut. Feb. 17, 1780	Samuel Delavan, (Horse,) do	John McKeel	James Archer, do	Jacob Carpenter, do	
Jac'b Gilbert, 2d Major, do	John Drake, Grenadiers, do	John Mandeville, Horse, do	Uriah Wallace, Horse, do	Jac. Vermilie, Cor. do	
Jesse Trusdell, Maj. April 12, 1782, p. 245	Benjamin Chapman, Feb. 17, 1780	Ezekiel Hyatt, jun. Grenadiers, do	Elijah Scott, Grenadiers, do	J. Carman, 3d Lt. Gre's, do	
	Daniel Bouton, Mar. 4, 1780	Ebenezer Avery, Ap. 10, 1782, p. 243	Abm. Fanshar, April 10, 1782, p. 243	Jas. Hunt, 29 J'e, '81	
	Samuel Lewis, do	Benajah Brown, do, do	Isaac Northrup, Feb. 17, 1780	Joshua Drake, do	
		Gilbert Reynolds, 4th March, 1780	David Smith, March 4, 1780	Austin Reynolds, do	
		Benj. Brown, do	Abm. Fanshar, 10th April, 1782	Jesse Seymore, April 10, 1782, p. 243	
		Eben. Avery, Ap. 10, 1782, p. 243	Benajah Brown, do, do	Nat'l Lockw'd, do. do	
		Benajah Brown, do, do		J. Chapman, F'y 17, '80, p. 166	
				E Avery, Mar 4, '80, p 177	
				Jehiel Bouton, do., p. 178	
				Benj. Benedict, do., p. 178	
				J Seym're, 10 Ap. '82, 243	
				Nathan Lockwood, do. do	

*Intituled List of Field Officers for Westchester County, Sept.  
12, 1775.*

(Endorsed on the back, "an old letter on Military Returns," Sec. Stat. Office, fol. 26, 1775, page 13.)

*Commissions issued dated October 14, 1775.*

FIELD OFFICERS NOMINATED BY THE COMMITTEE OF WESTCHESTER CO.

*First Regiment.*

Joseph Drake, Colonel.  
James Hammond, Lieutenant.  
Moses Drake, 1st Major.  
Jonathan G. Graham, 2d Major.  
Abraham Emmons, Adjutant.  
Theophilus Bartow, jun'r, Quarter Master.

*Second Regiment.*

Thomas Thomas, Colonel.  
Gilbert Budd, Lieutenant-Colonel.  
Ebenezer Lockwood, 1st Major.  
Thaddeus Crane, 2d Major.  
Jonathan G. Tompkins, Adjutant.  
John Thomas, 2d Quarter Master.

*Third Regiment.*

Pierre van Cortlandt, Colonel.  
Gilbert Drake, Lieutenant-Colonel.  
Joseph Strang, 1st Major.  
Ebenezer Purdy, 2d Major.  
John Cooley, Adjutant.  
Isaac Norton, Quarter Master.

---

THE WESTCHESTER GUIDES

*During the Revolution.*

John Pine,	Michael Dyckman,
John Odell,	James Oakley,
Abraham Dyckman,	Frederick Martin Post,
Isaac Odell.	

---

COUNTY PAPERS.

The "WESTCHESTER HERALD," edited by Mr. Caleb Roscoe, published at Sing Sing. The "WESTCHESTER SPY," Mr. Manuel Noah, Editor, published

at White Plains. The "PEEKSKILL REPUBLICAN," Messrs. Richards and Bronson, published at Peekskill. The "HUDSON RIVER CHRONICLE," Mr. James B. Swain, Editor, published at Sing Sing. The "EASTERN STATES JOURNAL," Mr. Edmund G. Sutherland, Editor, published at White Plains; and the "STAR SPANGLED BANNER," Mr. A. Hanford, Editor, published at New Rochelle.

---

LODGES OF ODD FELLOWS,

*Established in Westchester County.*

Names of the Petitioners for Cortlandt Lodge, I. O. of O. F., No. 55, located at Peekskill, Westchester County.

John C. Hitchcock,  
Caleb H. Bosworth,

James L. Seabury,  
James M. Spear.

Charter granted by G. L. of N. Y., August 18, 1841.  
Instituted,

Names of the Petitioners for Cryptic Lodge, I. O. of O. F., No. 75, located at Peekskill, Westchester County.

Joseph L. Cook,  
Ephraim D. Fuller,  
C. W. Rogers,  
William Travis,  
W. Gorden,

James R. Ferris,  
James Summerbell,  
Isaac Hadden,  
John McCoord,  
E. D. Hinsdale.

Charter granted November 2, 1842.  
Instituted.

Names of the Petitioners for Westchester Lodge, I. O. of O. F., No. 77, located at Tarrytown.

Thomas Lindley,  
Jacob Storms,  
William G. Darley,

Caleb G. Wildey,  
Thomas Archard,  
Albert Lewis.

Charter granted November 2, 1842.

Names of the Petitioners for Putnam Lodge, I. O. of O. F.,  
No. 89, located at West Farms.

Aaron E. Hovey,  
William Bayard,

James H. Jessup,  
Robert L. Archibald,

John P. Descaso.

Charter granted June 15, 1843.

Instituted June 22d, 1843.

Names of the Petitioners for Ossinsin Lodge, I. O. of O. F.,  
No. 97, located at Sing Sing.

Edward van Wart,  
Charles Southworth,  
Jonathan Knapp,  
William Campbell,

C. B. Blanchard,  
Benjamin Underwood,  
David J. Foster,  
E. J. Sutherland.

Charter granted November 1, 1843.

Names of the Petitioners for Melancthon Lodge, I. O. of O. F.,  
No. 163, located at Portchester.

J. V. Wilson,  
W. A. Todd,

C. G. Whiting,  
J. J. Dealls,

William Stivers.

Charter granted June 16, 1845.

Names of the Petitioners for Nepperhan Lodge, I. O. of O. F.,  
No. 181, located at Yonkers.

Samuel W. Chambers,  
James Borlane,  
Horatio S. Gates,  
Ezra B. Keeler,  
Alfred H. Hyatt,

William Mann,  
James Hughes,  
Peter Garrison,  
William Henry Garrison,  
William P. Reviser,

Matthias Warner.

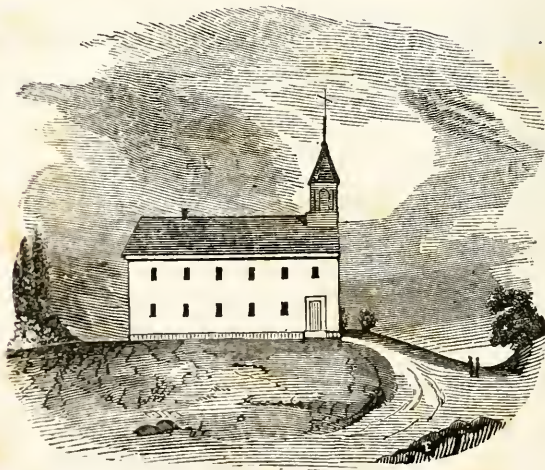
Charter granted September 30, 1845.

Names of the Petitioners for Throgmorton Lodge, I. O. of O.  
F., located at Westchester.

Timothy S. Gibbons,  
Titus H. Adee,  
Andrew Naudain,  
James A. Timpson,  
William W. Waldron,  
Matson S. Arnow,  
Andrew Arnow,

George Granger,  
Alexander Tennent,  
William Bogie,  
Joseph Bartlett,  
Isaac Poole,  
Morris E. Linn,  
John Mitchell.

Charter granted June 24, 1846.



Presbyterian Church, Bedford.

THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER.

BEDFORD.



St. Matthew's Church, Bedford.

THE half shire town of the county forms in shape nearly a square, each of its sides being six miles in length. The name is probably derived from the town of the same title in Bedfordshire, England, from whence the early settlers came. The earlier etymology of its name in the Saxon language was *BEDANPOND*.<sup>a</sup>

Among the Mohegan Indians Bedford formed a portion of the great territory of Rippowams, which extended eighteen miles north of Stamford on the Sound, also eight miles east and west of the same.

It will be shown presently that the chief proprietors of Rippo-

---

<sup>a</sup> Camden's *Brittania*.

wams in 1640, were Ponus, sagamore of Toquams, and Wascusue. sagamore of Shippan.

Cornelius van Tienhoven, (an early Dutch authority,) in describing the bounds of the Indian territory of Wechquaesqueck, says, "this land is situate between two rivulets called Sint Sinck and Armonck, lying between the East and North rivers."<sup>a</sup> The term Armonck (here alluded to,) is supposed to have been the original Indian appellation for the Byram river, whose springs arise from the Comonck hills in this town, sometimes called Cohamong ridge;<sup>b</sup> the last syllable *onck* or *ong*, when taken in connection with the rest of the word, denotes "the place or locality where shells are manufactured into wampum." From this we infer that the seawan (the specie currency of the natives,) was once manufactured in large quantities upon the banks of the Byram or Armonck.

It may not be amiss to inform our readers that "*Seawant* or *Seawan* was one of the names for Indian money, called also *Wampum*, *Wampum peague*, and *Peague*, which consisted of beads formed of the shells of the Quahaug,<sup>c</sup> or wilk, a shell fish which was formerly very abundant on our coasts, but lately of more rare occurrence. It was of two colors, the black being held of twice the value of the white; indeed the last was formed of another shell fish, called *Meteauhock*, or Periwinkle, also named *Suckautock*. The current value was six beads of the white or three of the black for an English penny. The first account we have of the English dealing in this currency was in 1627."<sup>d</sup>

A. D. 1650, the following act was passed by the Dutch council of the New Netherlands, in consequence of "the corruption of loose seawant, among which there are current money that are not perforated, and half finished, and also made out of stone, bone, glass, muscle shells, horns, and some out of wood, and broken ones, whereby occasion is given for repeated complaints from the

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 211.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of Co. Roads, Co. Clerk's office, page 1.

<sup>c</sup> The round clam (*venus mercenaria*, Lin.) "called Quehog, by the Mohegans. From the internal purple part of this shell fish, the colored beads of the aborigines were manufactured." Nat. Hist. of N. Y. part 1, Moluscæ, 217, 18.

<sup>d</sup> Alb. Rec. Notes of translator.



inhabitants that they cannot go with such seawant to the market ; therefore no loose seawant shall be current, nor be a lawful tender except that the same shall be strung. Commercial seawant to consist of six white or three black seawants for one stuyver ; the base strung seawant shall pass eight white or four black for one stuyver.”<sup>a</sup>

In 1658, it was reduced from six to eight of the white, and from three to four of the black, for a stuyver. In 1663, seawan had got into much disrepute, and was finally discontinued in 1682.

Sometime subsequent to the sale of 1640, the whole township of Bedford was emphatically styled by the early planters Catonah's land, after the Indian chief and proprietor of that name ; hence we deduce the origin of the present local term Cantitoe, which yet survives in the northern part of the town, the termination oe denoting the place of that sachem's residence.

Catonah must have assumed the supremacy over these lands about 1680, for his first conveyance to the proprietors of the Hop grounds bears date 23d December of that year. He appears to have been living in 1703. What connection (or if any) existed between Catonah and his predecessor Penaghag, (the grandson of Ponus,) it is impossible to determine at this distant period.

In the vicinity of Bedford both Visschers and Vaunder Douck in their maps of the New Netherlands, locate the Indian village of Nanichiestawack, while further south was situated that of Betuck-qnapock.

A bold eminence lying to the north of Bedford village, still retains the aboriginal name of Aspetong. Two roads in the western part of the town traverse the Indian paths of Potiticus and Suckebonk, while Muscoota path runs near the northern line. The summit of the high mountain ridge east of Bedford continues to be called the “*Indian farm.*” There is a tradition current in the neighborhood, that the south side of this mountain, sometimes denominated Stony hill, was the scene of a bloody fight between the early settlers and the aborigines. Mrs. Martha Holmes an aged inhabitant of Bedford, (still living,) remembers

---

<sup>a</sup> Dutch Trans. Rec. City Clerk's office, N. Y. p. 30, 31.

in 1765, to have seen several Indian mounds at the foot of this hill, (a little south of the old school house,) which were pointed out to her as the graves of those who fell in the conflict. This may have been the battle fought between the Dutch and Indians in Feb. 1644, an account of which is recorded in the journal of the New Netherlands. Mr. O'Callaghan thus details the action in his history of the N. N. : "On his return from Heemstede, Capt. Underhill was ordered to Stamford, to obtain particulars of the whereabouts of the savages. He brought word back, that they were encamped some five hundred strong in that direction, and that the old guide urged the forwarding a body of troops immediately thither, as he was desirous, on the one hand, to prove that the former ill success of the Dutch was not his fault ; on the other hand anxious for protection, as his life was in constant danger.

"One hundred and thirty men embarked accordingly, under Capt. Underhill and Ensign Van Dyck, in three yachts, and landed the same evening at Greenwich. But a severe snow storm having set in, detained them at that settlement the whole of the night. The weather, however, moderated towards morning, when the party set forward and arrived soon after, at the foot of a rocky mountain,<sup>a</sup> over which some of the men had to crawl, with considerable difficulty, on their hands and feet. The evening, about eight o'clock, brought them to within a few miles of the enemy. Their further progress was, however, now impeded by two rivers, one of which was some two hundred feet wide, and three in depth. It was considered best to remain here awhile, in order to refresh the men and to make arrangements for the coming attack. After a rest of a couple of hours, the party again set forward at ten o'clock. It was full moon, and the night so clear—'a winter's day could not be brighter,'—that the Indian village was soon discovered at a distance. It consisted of three rows of houses or huts, ranged in streets, each eighty paces long, and backed by a mountain which sheltered it from the north-west wind.

"But the Indians were as much on the alert as their enemy. They soon discovered the Dutch troops, who charged forthwith, surrounding the camp, sword in hand. The Indians evinced on

---

\* Supposed Stony hills, a mountainous ridge north of Bedford.

this occasion, considerable boldness, and made a rush once or twice, to break the Dutch line, and open some way for escape. But in this they failed, leaving one dead and twelve prisoners, in the hands of the assailants, who now kept up such a brisk fire, that it was impossible for any of the besieged to escape. After a desperate conflict of an hour, one hundred and eighty Indians lay dead on the snow outside their dwellings. Not one of the survivors durst now show his face. They remained under cover, discharging their arrows from behind, to the great annoyance of the Dutch troops. Underhill now seeing no other way to overcome the obstinate resistance of the foe, gave orders to fire their huts. This order was forthwith obeyed; the wretched inmates, endeavoring in every way, to escape from the horrid flames, but mostly without success. The moment they made their appearance, they rushed or were driven precipitately back into their burning hovels, 'preferring to be consumed by fire than to fall by our weapons.'

"In this merciless manner were butchered, as some of the Indians afterwards reported, five hundred human beings. Others carry the number to seven hundred; 'the Lord having collected the most of our enemies there, to celebrate some peculiar festival.'

"Of the whole party, no more than eight men escaped this terrible slaughter by fire and sword. Three of these were badly wounded. Throughout the entire carnage, not one of the sufferers—man, woman or child, was heard to utter shriek or moan.

"This expedition having been thus crowned with complete success, the wounded, fifteen in number, were attended to, and sentinels posted to prevent surprise. Large fires were then kindled, as the weather was still excessively cold, and the conquerors bivouacked during the remainder of the night, on the field of battle. They set out next morning on their return in good order, 'marching with great courage over that harrassing mountain, the Lord enduing the wounded with extraordinary strength,' and arrived at Stamford at noon, after a march of two days and one night, during which they had little repose and less comfort. The English received the soldiers with friendly hospitality, proffering them every possible kindness. Two days afterwards the detachment arrived at Fort Amsterdam, where a public thanks-giving was ordered for

the brilliant success which attended the New Netherland arms.<sup>a</sup>

“The late punishment (continues the same authority,) inflicted upon these Indians, and the approach of spring, made them desirous of peace, and they therefore solicited the intervention of Capt. Underhill to procure a cessation of hostilities.

“Mamaranack, chief of the Indians residing on the Kicktawanc, or Croton River, Mongockonone, Pappenharrow from the Weckquaesqueecks and Nochpeem, and the Wappings from Stamford, presented themselves in a few days (April 6, 1644,) at Fort Amsterdam, and having pledged themselves that they should not, henceforth, commit any injury whatever on the inhabitants of New Netherland, their cattle and houses, nor show themselves, except in a canoe, before Fort Amsterdam, should the Dutch be at war with any of the Manhattan tribes, and having further promised to deliver up Pacham, the chief of the Tankitekes, peace was concluded between them and the Dutch, who promised on their part, not to molest them in any way, but to allow them to cultivate their fields in peace; and as a guarantee of their sincerity, surrendered several of their prisoners.”<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 1st of July, 1640, Nathan Turner, in behalf of the people of Quinipiacke, (New Haven,) “bought of Poñus, sagamore of Toquams, and of Wascussue, sagamore of Shippam, (the other Indians consenting thereto,) all the ground belonging to the said sagamores, except a piece of ground which Ponus reserved for himself and the other Indians to plant upon.” This purchase embraced all the land sixteen miles north of the Sound. The Indian name of the tract was Rippowams.<sup>c</sup>

“The consideration was twelve coats, twelve hoes, twelve hatchets, twelve glasses, twelve knives, two kettles, and five fathoms of white wampum.” The liberty of hunting and fishing on the land, was reserved by the Indians.<sup>d</sup> The above sale was confirmed to the inhabitants of Stamford, on the 10th of August, 1655, by Ponus, and Onox his eldest son: “extending sixteen

<sup>a</sup> Journal Van N. N.

<sup>b</sup> O’Callaghan’s Hist. N. N. p. 300, 1, 2, 3.

<sup>c</sup> On the 30th of Oct. 1640, Mr. Andrew Ward and Mr. Robert Coe, on behalf of themselves and twenty other planters, purchased Rippowams of New Haven, for £33 sterling. Lambert’s History of New Haven, 176.

<sup>d</sup> Lambert’s History of New Haven.

miles north of the town plot of Stamford, and two miles still further north for the pasture of their cattle; also eight miles east and west, (the same as paid for before;) and as a further recompense, four coats of English cloth was given them.”<sup>a</sup> This grant comprised nearly the whole township of Bedford.

The next purchase was made of the Indians on the 23d day of December, 1680:

“Witness these presents, that we whose names are underwritten, namely: Katonah, Stockahwac. Segotah, Jovis, Tohmacogyah, Yannayo, Kakenoud, we do for ourselves, our heirs and executors, administrators and assignees, and for and in the behalf of all other proprietors of ye lands. commonly called ye hopp grounds: we say we do hereby sell, alienate, assign and set over, from these our heirs, executors, administrators and assignees, a certain parcel of uplands and meadows, commonly called and known by ye name of ye hopp grounds, which land begins at ye north end of Stamford bounds, as it is already bounded with marked trees, only the west line to be extended southward until it shall meet with its south-west line, drawn from three marked white oaks, standing, and very near together, at south-west corner of ye said land, and ye above named, do hereby sell, alienate and assign, and set over from us and ours ye land above described with ye rights and privileges thereunto belonging, forever unto Richard Ambler, Abraham Ambler, Joseph Cheoles, Daniel Weed, John Wescot, Jonathan Petit, John Crosse, John Miller, Nicholas Webster, Richard Ayres, William Clarke, James Seely, Joseph Stephens, Daniel Jones, Thomas Yomoyou and Benjamin Stephens, from their heirs, executors, administrators and assignees forever, quietly to possess and enjoy, without molestation by us or ours, or by any by our means or procurements; moreover, we the above named Katonah, Rockaway, Segotah, Jovis, Tohmacogyah, Yannayo, Kakenard, do herein and hereby grant, sell and give, free liberty of timber and herbage, for their creatures, upon our adjacent lands forever, and free liberty of timber, and do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction for ye land abovesaid, in witness of truth we have caused this bill of sale to be made, and hereunto set our hands and seals, the day and date above written, Dec. 1680. Signed, sealed and delivered, in ye presence of us, Joshua Knap, David Waterbury.<sup>b</sup>

KATONAH  $\times$  his marke.

ROCKAHWAY  $\sphericalangle$  his marke.

SEGOTAH  $\llcorner$  his marke.

JOVIS  $\sphericalangle$  his marke.

COHMACOYYOH  $\mathcal{R}$  his marke.

YANNAPE  $\circ$  his marke.

KAKENOU  $\sphericalangle$  his marke.

<sup>a</sup> Lambert's Hist. of New Haven.

<sup>b</sup> Original document in possession of the Hon. W. Jay, Bedford.

The same year there appear to have been no less than twenty-two proprietors of the Hop grounds, and from the town records we learn that £43 10s 6d, had been paid for its purchase.

Upon the 11th of October, 1681, the proprietors of the Hop ground agreed that no one might be admitted as an inhabitant, nor should have power to sell or exchange the land that might be allotted to him, nor should he have any voice in disposing of lands, but that any inhabitant on paying forty shillings should have an equal share with the proprietors in all the undivided land.

At a court of election holden in Hartford, May 11th, 1682, the following license was granted to the people of the Hop ground.

“Upon the petition of the people of the Hop ground, this court doth grant them the privilege of a plantation and do order that the name of the town be henceforth called Bedford, and this court doe appoint Joseph Theall to be the present chief military officer for the train band of Bedford, and Abraham Ambler is also empowered by this court to grant warrants to swear officers and witnesses, and to joyne persons in marriage according to law, and they doe free the sayd towne of Bedford from county rates, for the space of three years next ensuing.<sup>a</sup>

May the 2d, 1683, Catonah sagamore, and Papiag his son, Tандаquid, Queraway and Chickhaag sold to the proprietors of Bedford the land and meadow of Cohamong (Armonck) commonly so called—“which said land and meadow lyeth to the south west, going to the bounds of Bedford.”<sup>b</sup>

By the settlement of the colonial boundaries, November, 1664, Bedford fell within the jurisdiction of Connecticut, the line between the two colonies commencing from the east point of Mamaroneck River, where the fresh water falls into the salt at high water mark, north north west to the line of Massachusetts. On the ground that this decision was erroneous, a further agreement was concluded at New York, 28th of October, 1683, between the governor of Connecticut and certain persons appointed to act with him, by which it was stipulated that the line between New York and Connecticut should begin at Byram River, at the east point,

---

<sup>a</sup> Connecticut Col. Rec. Hartford, volume iii. folio 131, 134.

<sup>b</sup> Town Rec.

called Lyon's Point, and so up along the said river to the country road, thence north west 8 miles from Lyon's point, and then twelve miles east north east, and then in a line parallel to the North River, and twenty miles distant therefrom, to the south line of Massachusetts. The whole matter being left subject to the king's ratification. By this settlement Bedford would have been transferred to New York; but the king's death unfortunately took place on the 6th of February, 1684, before its completion, in consequence of which the whole matter was again left open for a long and angry discussion which soon ensued.

In 1685 the general court of Connecticut issued an order to the effect, that all towns should take out patents in due form, and that the same should be legal evidence of their rights. Before the 28th of January, 1688, the town ordered that as much money should be raised as may be necessary to pay for a patent.

It will be seen, however, that the patent was not granted until May, 1697. The names of the inhabitants including the resident proprietors of Bedford in 1690, numbered thirty-one. Their names are as follows:

John Green,	William Clark,	John Brown,
Joseph Miller,	John Holmes, sen.,	John Miller, jun.,
John Holmes,	Richard Ayres,	Jonathan Miller,
John Miller,	John Holmes, jun.,	John Ambler,
Mrs. Wildman,	Abraham Wildman,	David Mead,
M. Denham,	Isaac Denham,	Daniel Jones,
Zachariah Roberts,	Jeremiah Andrews,	Caleb Webb,
John Webb,	Richard Wescote,	Thomas Asten,
Stephen Clason,	Daniel Simpkins,	David Clason,
Stephen Holmes,	William Clark,	John Higgins,
	Abraham Ambler.	

Upon the 25th May, 1692, Catonah, Noname, Wappowaham, Wewewana-poage, Chuckheag and Pommescacan, sell to Daniel Simpkins of Bedford, a certain piece of land lying west of the bounds of Bedford, that is to say, half a mile square, as it is already marked and laid out by the Indians, and bounded as followeth, viz. east by the bounds of Bedford, and south by a brook running off from the west ridges, and west and north as it is marked by the above-said proprietors.<sup>a</sup>

Witnessed and delivered in the presence  
of us, STEPHEN HOLMES

CATONAH ✕ his mark.  
WAPPOWHAM > his mark.

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

and JOHN BROWN.  
CHUCKHEAG  $\aleph$

PUMMESECHAM  $\aleph$  his mark.  
NONAME  $\aleph$  his mark.

## WEWEWANAPAGE.

February 10th, 1695, the town ordered that the rates shall be issued according to the following valuations,<sup>a</sup> viz.

Each head or person . . . . .	£12	0	0
“ Ox, . . . . .	4	0	0
“ Cow, . . . . .	3	0	0
“ Horse, . . . . .	2	0	0
All improved lands, . . . . .	0	15	0
All improved meadow with fence, . . . . .	0	10	0

In March, 1695-6, we find Governor Fletcher of New York, writing to Governor Treat concerning sundry persons in Rye and Bedford who desired to have their land titles confirmed.<sup>b</sup>

At a meeting of ye governor and council, held at Hartford, January 19th, 1696, protection was granted to the towns of Rye and Bedford, as members of their corporation; and on the 10th of May following, Daniel Simpkins was appointed ensign for the latter town. January 21st, 1696-7, Rye and Bedford applied to be united to Connecticut, upon which that colony concluded to receive them.<sup>c</sup>

In a letter from Governor Fletcher, to the authorities of Connecticut, dated April 5th, 1697, the former complains about the latter's receiving Rye and Bedford, and thus withdrawing them from the obedience of New York.<sup>d</sup>

To compel the refractory towns into obedience, Governor Fletcher issued a proclamation upon April 15th, 1697, in which he required Rye and Bedford to return to their allegiance.<sup>e</sup>

April 19th, 1697, Governor Fletcher states that Major Sellick had interfered in favor of Connecticut, with fifty armed men.<sup>f</sup>

In reply 30th of April, 1697, Connecticut disclaims the use of violent measures, and refers the whole matter to the King.<sup>g</sup>

Governor Fletcher and counsel, in answer to Connecticut, May 10th, 1697, entitles the reasons of the latter *subterfugees*, and complains of her making a disturbance in time of war. In con-

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Bound. letters, fol. 10, p. 138.

<sup>e</sup> Bound. letters, 141.

<sup>g</sup> Bound. letters, No. 144.

<sup>b</sup> Boundary letters, Hartford, fol. 10, letter 137.

<sup>d</sup> Bound. letters, 140.

<sup>f</sup> Bound. letters, 141-2.



clusion, Connecticut may rest assured that New York will use all lawful means to reduce these people to obedience.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 1st of May, 1697, the town petitioned for a patent, embracing ten miles in length, from the north end of Stamford bounds to ten miles northward into the woods, and eight miles wide. The patent (which bears the Connecticut seal,) was taken out May 13th, 1697. From the town records, it appears that Zachariah Roberts, was allowed by the town, three shillings a day, and half his expenses, and the town further ordered that every man should pay him two pounds of flax for his expenses in going to Connecticut about the said patent.

In answer to Governor Fletcher's letter of May the 10th, the Governor and general assembly of Connecticut reply May 19th, 1697, that they consider the arguments of New York weak and unsatisfactory, and are therefore, determined to protect these people.<sup>b</sup>

May the 31st, 1697, Governor Fletcher and council find just fault with Connecticut for using "such a stile," and assert that Connecticut gave up these towns by arrangement, in 1683, and made no claim to them for twelve years or more, New York is therefore determined to pursue her duty.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the accession of Lord Bellamont to the government of New York, April, 1698, we find Connecticut sending a delegation to congratulate him. In a letter dated May 6th, Lord Bellamont expresses his thanks and good will towards Connecticut, and encloses a letter from the Lords Commissioners of Trade, in regard to Rye and Bedford; he also denies their reasons for countenancing those towns in their revolt.<sup>d</sup>

In reply, May, 1698, the deputy governor and assistants express the kindest and most friendly feelings towards his excellency, but cannot answer concerning Rye and Bedford until Governor Winthrop's return.<sup>e</sup>

Upon the 29th of March, 1700, King William the third gave his approbation and confirmation to the agreement and survey of 1683 and 1684, whereby Rye and Bedford were included in New York.<sup>f</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Bound letters, No. 145.

<sup>b</sup> Bound. letters, No 146.

<sup>c</sup> Bound. letters, No 147.

<sup>d</sup> Bound. letters, No.148.

<sup>e</sup> Bound. letters, No. 149.

<sup>f</sup> Bound. letters, fol. XI., letters 48-9.

On the 10th of October, 1700, the general court of Connecticut released Bedford from all allegiance.

October, 1713, Connecticut appointed certain commissioners to meet those of New York in fixing the line. A final agreement and conclusion took place between the commissioners at Dover, in Dutchess Co., May the 14th, 1731,<sup>a</sup> by which Bedford and Rye were forever hereafter included in ye province of New York.

The following grant and conformation under the hand of Kotonah, occurs on the 24th of July, 1700.

“Kotonah Sagamore and chief proprietor of ye land about Bedford, having formerly sold unto the inhabitants of the town of Bedford, a certain tract of meadow land and upland northerly from the town and joining to their first purchase, which tract of land is bounded by a small brook east, which runs north on the west side of Potiticus falls, and west by Beaver Dam River, northerly by the Cross River, and southerly by Bedford's land. This above named tract of land (of Cotonah) Cotonah have sold from me and mine or any Indian or Indians laying claim thereunto, to the inhabitants of Bedford, for a valuable consideration in hand, already received to my full satisfaction, &c., &c.

Signed sealed and delivered  
in presence of us,  
BENJAMIN HART  
and ABRAHAM FINCH.”

KATONAH ✕ his mark.  
TOYEBEAKUP ✕ his mark.  
RURAHQUOSH ∞ his mark.

On the 13th of March, 1700, the town sold to John Johnston one hundred acres of land for £56, and some months after Crosses vineyard for £8. At a town meeting held in Bedford Oct. 4th, 1701,

“The town by a major vote, doth order the committee to proceed with ye Indians about purchasing ye lands westward of ye old purchase, and now marked the old purchase, formerly bought of the Indians, November 3d, 1701. The town doth also agree that ye land westward of the first purchase, shall be paid by heads; and every head that payeth the Indians for it shall have every one of them an equal share, according to what they pay. At the same time a committee is chosen by vote, consisting of Zacariah Robertson, John Holmes, jun., and Jonathan Petit, to see ye Indians satisfied for ye land formerly bought of them, which is west of the first purchase.”

Upon the 4th of February, 1702, the town of Bedford sold to

---

<sup>a</sup> Bound. letters, fol. XI., letter 136

John Dibble, Crosses vineyard purchase for £18; on the 16th of March (1702,) John Dibble agrees to sell 100 acres of the same to Jacobus Van Courtland, &c.

By a grant dated April 20, 1702, Katonah and Wackemane convey to the inhabitants of Bedford all that tract of land within the following bounds, viz :

“To begin where Beaver dam river and Cross River meet and so to run on the north west side of a brook called miry brook, and then to run across the hills westerly on the west side of Cisqua meadows until it meets the river called Cisqua River, and a great swamp, and so to run up the brook and by marked trees to the north end of Byram pond, and so to the north end of Cohamong pond, and then to a great red oak tree formerly marked by the Indians for Bedford southermost bounds which stands on the west side of the west turn of Meanau’s River, and this above said land, we Katonah and Wackemane do sell for us our heirs, &c., to the inhabitants of Bedford.

Signed, sealed and delivered in presence of  
 Zachariah Roberts and John Holmes.

KATONAH	∩	his mark,
WACKEMANE	∫	his mark,
CARAROECA	○	his mark,
ARATTOH	≡	his mark,
MANGAKOM	⊃	his mark,
SIMON	∅	his mark,

Upon the 4th of January 1703-4, Ketonah Sagamore and Wackemane, chief proprietors of the lands about Bedford, have sold, and by these presents doe sell &c., unto John Dibble of Bedford, in the county of Westchester, &c. a certain tract of upland and meadow, &c. all within ye bounds hereafter named and bounded by marked trees, from one branch of Beaver dam River southward of Stone hills, then to rise westward of Stone hills, northward by ye marked trees until it meets with a brook coming out of Stone hills, and so to be bounded by ye said brook until it meets the Cross River, and bounded by the said Cross River until it meets a small brook, and then bounded westward by Bedford’s cross vineyard purchase, and then bounded by Bedford’s first purchase, southerly and eastwardly until it meets ye aforesaid branch, which tract of land thus bounded we Catonah and Wackemane for us our heirs, &c., have sold to the above said John Dibble, &c.<sup>a</sup>

CAROROCA	∩	his mark,	CATONAH	∫	his mark,	[L. s.]
MONAQUI	∫	his mark,	WACKEMANE	≡	his mark,	[L. s.]
SIMON	∅	his mark,	MANGOCKEN	∅	his mark.	[L. s.]

The same year we find John Dibble and wife, conveying to Jacobus Van Courtland, 700 acres of land lying in Bedford, called the vineyard purchase, besides a certain parcel of meadow and

<sup>a</sup> The original documents in possession of the Hon. William Jay.

upland in ye bounds of said Bedford, first purchased, with marked trees northerly, eastwardly by a small brook which runneth into Cross River, and northerly by the Cross River, containing about 400 acres.

Upon the 5th of May, 1703, Catonah Sagamore and Wackemane, for themselves and in behalf of any other Indians concerned, sell to Zachariah Robertson of Bedford, all that land between Bedford bounds and Muscotah River which lyeth between Cisqua River and ye Cross River, for the several particulars hereinafter named.

This is ye truth of ye bargain test.

Zacariah Robertson.

10 pieces of eight which is paid,  
6 shirts,  
4 dozen coats,  
2 blankets,  
1 broad cloath coat,  
4 hatchets,  
4 lbs of powder,  
2 gallons of rum.

The last Indian deed for lands in Bedford bears date, July 24th, 1703.

Wherein Catonah and Wackemane sell to Jacobus Van Courtland of the city of New York, and Zacariah Robertson, a certain tract of upland meadow and swamp, all within ye bounds hereafter named, that is to say to begin where Beaver dam River and ye Cross River meets, and so to run westwardly by Bedfords marked trees until it comes to a black oak tree marked upon a high hill, and then to run west to Muscotah River, and then to keep the south side of Muscotah River, until it meets ye Cross River, and to keep the said Cross River until it meets ye aforesaid Beaver dam River, &c.

Signed sealed and delivered in presence  
of us, Nathan Clark, Joseph Hunt,  
Hezekiah Roberts.

NOAPAPIN  $\gamma$  his mark,  
MASHATO  $\kappa$  his mark,

CATONAH  $\odot$  his mark,  
WACKEMANE  $\circ$  his mark,  
MEQUACOM  $\mathfrak{H}$  his mark,  
CACOPORO  $\mathfrak{M}$  his mark,  
MAMTERO  $\omega$  his mark,  
AMBOOCK  $\sphericalangle$  his mark,

By a patent issued on the 8th day of April, 1704, Queen Anne confirmed the inhabitants of Bedford in all their legal rights.

“Whereas the general court of Connecticut on the 13th day of May in ye year of our Lord Christ, 1697, hath granted unto the proprietors, inhabitants of the town of Bedford, then within that colony, all those lands, &c., in their abutments, viz: southerly on ye bounds of the township of Stamford, west-

wardly by ye wilderness, north on ye wilderness, and eastwardly on ye wilderness or land not laid out, every of which sides is six miles in length, which said lands have been by purchase or otherwise lawfully obtayned of the native Indian proprietors thereof &c., and the governor and company of the said colony assembled in general council by virtue of their charter afterwards to wit, ye 21st day of May, in the ninth year of King William, did give, grant, ratify and confirm &c. unto John Miller, sen., Daniel Simpkins, Zacariah Roberts, Samuel Seely, Jeremiah Andrews, John Wescoate, John Miller, jun., and John Holmes, jun., and the rest &c. The aforesaid parcel of land six miles square the privileges of being one entire township by patent.

We have given, granted, &c. to our loving subjects, Zacariah Roberts, sen., John Holmes, sen., Cornelius Seely, sen., Zacariah Roberts, jun., Cornelius Seely, jun., John Miller, jun., Jonathan Miller, John Holmes, jun., David Miller, Richard Holmes, Jonathan Holmes, David Holmes, Capt. Peter Mathews, Col. Jacobus Van Courtland, Obadiah Seely, Stephen Claeson, John Westcoate, jun., Richard Westcoate, Nathan Clarke, Joseph Hunt, Richard Ayres, Jeremiah Andrews, Joseph Palmer, David Meade, John Dibble, Daniel Jones, John Clapp, Thomas Howard and Vincent Simpkins, their heirs the said tract of 23,000 acres called ye town of Bedford, &c. Witness our right trusty and right well beloved cousin, Edward Vicount Cornbury, Captain General and Governor in chief of our province of New York and New Jersey, and ye territories and tracts of land depending on them in America, Admiral of the same, &c., in council at Fort Anne, New York, the 8th day of April, in the third year of our reign A. D. 1701.<sup>a</sup>

In the spring of 1714 a rate was levied on ye proprietors of ye township of Bedford, in proportion to their several properties therein, for ye raising ye sum of £50 for ye discharging of her majesties dues of quit rent for ten years.

The proportion of Col. Jacobus Van Cortland for 2565 acres in ye north west corner of ye patent lands was

was . . . . .	£6 08 06
For his vineyard purchase, 607 acres . . . . .	1 10 05
For his right in Dibble's purchase, 762 acres . . . . .	1 18 00
For his right in ye new purchase. . . . .	2 13 04

The following document is extracted from a manuscript volume entitled "the receipt book of the quit rents of Bedford, paid from 1714 to 1767."

"Received of Mr. Jonathan Miller and Joseph Seely the sum of fifty pounds, proclamation money, being in full for ten years quit rent for the town of Bed-

---

<sup>a</sup> Albany Book of Pat. No. vii. 271.

ford, to the 25th of March last, witness my hand this 1st day of May, A. D. 1714.<sup>a</sup>

£50 procl. money.

T. BYERLY, COLL.

Upon the 12th of October, 1705, John Dibble,<sup>b</sup> by a bill of sale conveyed all his right, title and interest in the town of Bedford to Jacobus Van Cortland; the latter individual subsequently became invested in the rights of Jonathan Miller on the 15th of October, 1713, and Zacariah Roberts on the 13th of October, 1717.

Upon the 23d of June, 1736, "the land to the north of Cross River was divided by lot among the twenty nine proprietors of Bedford."

On the 10th of April, 1738, Jacobus Van Cortland devised "all his tenements and hereditaments situated within the patent and township of Bedford to his son Frederick Van Cortland of Yonkers and his three daughters; Margaret, wife of Abraham Depeyster; Anne, wife of John Chambers; and Mary, wife of Peter Jay, the parties giving mutual leases and releases to one another."<sup>c</sup>

Frederick Van Cortland one of the above devisees obtained a release from the following freeholders of Bedford on the 21st of September, 1741.

Hezekiah Roberts,	John Holmes,	Daniel Holly,
John Miller,	Jonathan Westcoat,	Nathan Clark,
Joseph Seely,	Richard Westcoat,	Moses Fountain,
Jonathan Holmes,	Daniel Miller,	John Miller,
Zacariah Mills,	Richard Holmes,	Samuel Miller,
Jonathan Seely,	Daniel Haight,	Samuel Barras,
Ebenezer Holmes,	Philip Ayres,	Ebenezer Owen,
Jonathan Miller,	Vincent Simpkins.	

From an original map drawn up by Samuel Purdy, surveyor, it appears that a partition of Jacobus Van Cortlandt's estate took place in 1743. To Frederick Van Cortlandt, was allotted 1424 acres, to Abraham De Peyster 1110 acres, to John Chambers 1282 acres, and to Peter Jay 1299 acres.

<sup>a</sup> The original in possession of William Jay of Bedford.

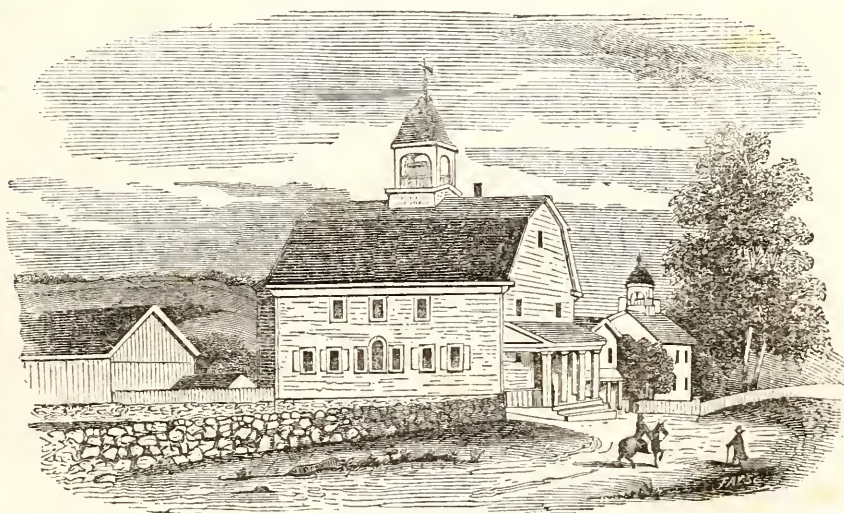
<sup>b</sup> The ancestor of John was Thomas Dibble a freeman of Dorchester, Massachusetts, who removed to Windsor, Conn.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Lib. G. folio 293.

Upon the death of Peter Jay, Esq. in 1782, his share fell to three sons, Peter, Frederick, and John. The latter was subsequently invested with a large portion of the original allotment.

By the decease of the Honorable John Jay in 1829, his son William Jay, Esq. became the sole proprietor of the Bedford estate. Mr. Jay therefore, is the only descendant of Jacobus Van Cortlandt, that owns a foot of the original patent in the town of Bedford. Abraham De Peyster sold to various individuals. The descendants of the ancient proprietors of the Hop grounds (resident in Bedford) are still very numerous, viz: the Green's, Miller's, Holme's, Robert's, Ambler's, Clark's, Ayre's, Westcoat's, Simpkin's, Mead's, Webb's, Clason's and Higgin's.

The village of Bedford is delightfully situated a little north of the Mehanas River, in a large and fertile vale almost environed by high hills. The surrounding country, is well wooded, and watered by several streams tributary to the Croton. The principal of these are the Pepemighting misnamed the Kisco, the Cisqua or Beaver dam, and the Peppeneghek or Cross River. Bedford being a half shire town with White Plains, (which is located sixteen miles south.) The courts are held alternately at both places.



Court House, Bedford.

As early as 1680, the proprietors of the Hop ground (then residing at Stamford,) appointed a committee "for the purpose of

laying out a town spot, and house lots, the latter to consist at least of three acres each, also a town common field or park, was directed to be laid out." At this period the Hop ground formed a part of Stamford township within Fairfield county, and was therefore under the jurisdiction of Connecticut. In 1681 the general court of that colony ordered the laying out of a plantation at the Hop ground.

On the 11th of October, 1681, the proprietors of the Hop ground appointed a committee to lay out and divide the residue of the land at the Hop ground. It was also agreed to receive eleven inhabitants in order to form a town, and a committee appointed to go and view the land for the purpose of laying out a cart way to the Hop ground.

"Upon the 11th of May, 1682, the general court ordered that the name of the town be henceforth called *Bedford*."

The town records, preserved in the clerk's office, contain the following items, which, from their curiosity we insert:—January 14th, 1682, a committee was appointed to take measures for building a grist mill for the town." July, 1682, at the first town meeting held in Bedford it was voted that any person having a right in land and not building a house by the last of next May, or who should build a house and not inhabit it for three years, should forfeit his right to the town.

January 29th, 1688. The town by vote doth order, that every one here present at the town meeting shall have a piece of land consisting of four acres added to the former dividend, for their faithfulness in attending town meetings. Seventeen were present on this occasion. On the 9th of January, 1699, the town agreed to give six acres of land for a grind stone. November 17th, 1701, the town bought a mill for £15. The present village contains a court house and prison, two churches, an academy, two taverns, three stores, forty dwellings, and about two hundred and fifty inhabitants; it is fourteen miles from Sing Sing, and sixteen from Tarrytown, on the Hudson, forty-four from New York, and twelve from Greenwich in Connecticut, on the sound. Near the western border of the town is situated the Bedford railroad station. The Bedford academy has been in suc-



cessful operation for several years; its present principal is Mr. Odell Close. Besides the above institution, there are eighteen school districts. The old parish grave yard lying on a declivity near the Methodist meeting house, contains many curious memorials.

The Deceased Thomas Woolsey born in the year A. D. 1655.	Sacred to the memory of COL. LEWIS McDONALD Esq. and Sarah his wife being a native of North Britain borne at Strathspey 1709 and departed this life 24 July 1777	W. W. here lies the body of Thomas Woolsey also Jacob Briam son of Thomas born Sept. 1733 ob. 1760.
--	--	--

Sacred  
to the memory of the  
REV'D EBENEZER GRANT  
17 years minister of the  
Presbyterian Church in Bedford  
who departed this life Sept. 6. 1821.

aged 48 years  
Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord  
from henceforth, yea, saith the spirit, that  
they may rest from their labors  
and their works do follow them.

Rev. 14: 13.

The Methodist Episcopal Church was erected in 1837, and incorporated on the 18th of January, 1838.<sup>a</sup> A prior incorporation of this society, appears to have taken place 24th July, 1825. John Fountain, Robert Knowlton, Joseph Clark, James Fountain, Gabriel Smith, trustees.<sup>b</sup> A third occurs 9 April, 1844.<sup>c</sup>

Upon a commanding eminence which rises north of the village stands the Presbyterian Church, a modern structure of wood, surmounted with a small cupola and spire. The old church which was burnt during the revolutionary war, stood south east of the present edifice, near the foot of the hill. The first religious society organized at Bedford in 1680, was Congregational, at that time the established religion of the colony of Connecticut.

<sup>a</sup> Religious Sec. Co. Rec. Lib A.

<sup>b</sup> Ib. Lib. B. p. 53.

<sup>c</sup> Ib. Lib. B. 88.

The proprietors of the Hop ground appear to have made early provision for the erection and support of a church, for, in 1680, "it was agreed that a meeting house should be erected on the commons." In 1681, the general court instructed the committee who were to lay out a plantation at the hop ground, "to take care that there should be a suitable lot laid out for the first minister of the place, and a lot for the minister forever." December 8th, 1681, the proprietors agreed to give Mr. Prudden a call to be their minister. In 1688 the Rev. Thomas Denham must have been settled here, for on the 28th of January, (of that year,) the town ordered £20 to be raised and collected for Mr. Denham's salary.

September 23, 1689. The town by vote agreed that in "case Mr. Abraham Ambler, sen., will come up and live at Bedford and carry on the Sabbath as God shall enable him, we will give unto him the sum of £20 a year, so long as he shall perform the work among us." The following month (October 15) it was agreed to build Mr. Abraham Ambler a frame house forty feet by twenty-two.

"16th of December, 1692, David Mead was chosen by the town to keep the town drum, to keep it in repair and to beat it when necessary, and to be allowed 10 shillings yearly."

Prior to the use of bells in New England, the meetings were summoned by beat of drum, or the blowing of the conch shell: to this practice the poet alludes:

"New England's Sabbath day,"  
Is heaven-like, still, and pure,  
Then Israel walks the way  
Up to the temples door:  
The time we tell,  
When there to come,  
By beat of drum,  
Or sounding shell.

On the 19th of October, 1694, the town agreed to buy a house and lot of John Ambler for a parsonage, provided his price do not exceed £35.

On March 21st, 1698, the town voted that every man should pay three pence per acre for all the land he had for the support of a minister.

Upon the 9th of January, 1699, the inhabitants of the town re-

requested the ministers in the county to inform them where they could procure a minister, at the same time offering forty acres of land and £30 in current provision as his pay.<sup>a</sup>

On the 26th of December, 1699, the town agreed with Mr. Joseph Morgan, minister as follows, viz: first to give him the use of the parsonage, on condition he stays three years; secondly, to build him a two story house, twenty-seven feet by twenty, the house to belong to his heirs if he die in the town; if he removes he shall pay the town the expence of building the house; third, to give him the first year £40, and plant and manure forty acres for him, and after the first year to give him £20, and to raise ten acres of winter grain for him yearly, to cut and cart his fire wood, and transport himself and family to Bedford free of expence. In a summary account of the state of the church in the province of New York, as it was laid before the clergy, convened October 5th, 1704, at New York; it is therein stated that "there is an independent church at Bedford where the minister designs to leave them; they are well affected to the church, and it is hoped when he is gone they will be in communion with her."<sup>b</sup>

The following year Col. Caleb Heathcoate informs the secretary of the Propagation Society, "that sometime prior to his coming into the Province, Rye and Bedford had a minister, one Mr. Denham, and afterwards one Mr. Jones at Bedford."<sup>c</sup>

A LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH,  
BEDFORD.

Install or call,	Ministers.
1681	Rev. Peter Prudden,
1688	Rev. Thomas Denham, <sup>d</sup>
Oct. 1689	Rev. Abraham Ambler,
1699	Rev. Joseph Morgan,
1704	Rev. Eliphalet Jones, <sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> November 14, 1699, the town agreed to give sixteen acres of ploughed land to Mr. Copp, in condition he would inhabit among them.

<sup>b</sup> See Church Rec. Francis L. Hawks, D. D. vol. i. No. 16.

<sup>c</sup> Church Record 1841, vol. i. No. 29.

<sup>d</sup> Styled in the Co. Rec. minister of the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ in Bedford.

<sup>e</sup> Son of the Rev. John Jones, of Fairfield, born at Concord, January 11, 1641.

The first regularly installed Presbyterian pastor of Bedford, was the Rev. William Tennent; this individual upon his first arrival in America, (in 1716,) settled at East Chester, A. D. 1720; the exact date of his removal to Bedford has not been determined; it probably took place in 1721.<sup>a</sup>

The Presbyterian Society was incorporated by virtue of an act of the legislature of this state "entitled an act to enable all religious denominations in this state to appoint trustees who shall be a body corporate, for the purpose of taking care of the temporalities of their respective congregations, and for other purposes therein mentioned, passed 6th of April, 1784, "to be known by the name of the trustees for the Presbyterian Church and congregation of Bedford, to be governed in discipline and worship according to the Directory of the now established Church of Scotland," first trustees Zebadiah Mills, Israel Lyon and Joseph Owen.<sup>b</sup>

LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH AT  
BEDFORD.

Install or call,	Ministers.	Vacated by
1721	Rev. William Tennent,	resig.
1740	Rev. Robert Sturgeon,	do.
1743	Rev. Samuel Sackett,	do. 1753
Jan. 1, 1769	Rev. Eliphalet Ball,	do. Jan. 1, 1769
Dec. 13, 1769	Rev. Samuel Mills,	do. May 18, 1786
May 18, 1786	Rev. John Davenport,	do. May 4, 1791.
Nov. 15, 1798	Rev. Josiah Henderson,	do. Nov. 15, 1803
Sept. 20, 1804	Rev. Ebenezer Grant,	ob. Sept. 6, 1821
April 16, 1828	Rev. Jacob Green, present minister.	

First elders of the church, Ebenezer Miller, and Jacob Smith, first deacon Ebenezer Miller.

CHURCH MEMORANDA.

A. D. 1826, communicants 141, baptisms 19,

<sup>a</sup> The Rev. William Tennent was the founder of the Log. College, Penn. See Biographical sketches of the founder by A. Alexander, D. D.—*Assembly Magazine*, May, 1805.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Incorp. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 4.

A. D. 1836 communicants, 191, baptisms, 6,  
 1846 ditto 194, ditto 7,

Present number of communicants in (1847,) 200.

The Bedford presbytery,<sup>a</sup> which was created in 1829 consists of the following churches, Bedford, Solers, South Salem, Poundridge, Rye, S. Greenburg, White Plains, Mt. Pleasant, Yorktown, North Salem and Greenburgh.

About half a mile north of the Presbyterian church, lies a small scattered hamlet consisting of two churches, an academy, two stores and several dwellings; through it the northern road to Cantetoe passes. In the northern part of this hamlet is situated St. Mathews Episcopal Church, a neat structure of brick, erected in 1807, by public subscription.

Bedford originally constituted one of the three districts of Rye parish, having been annexed thereto by the general acts of assembly, passed in 1693, 1696 and 1700. The first rector of the parish was the Rev. Thomas Pritchard;<sup>b</sup> from a letter addressed by this individual to the Venerable Propagation Society, dated November 1st, 1704, we learn that the Rev. Mr. Stewart was laboring as a missionary at Bedford.

The quota furnished by the Bedford precinct towards the Rector's tax in 1725 was £16, 2s. 0d, in 1745, £30,—— throughout the year 1728. The Rev. Timothy Wetmore officiated here, and the Rev. Mr. Lampson in 1745; at this date there appear to have been four hundred families within the two precincts of Bedford and North Castle. In 1753, the Rev. Timothy Wetmore informed the Propagation Society, "that the congregations at Bedford and North Castle were large and flourishing."

In the spring of 1762, the precincts of Bedford and North Castle were visited by the Rev. George Dibble and St. George Talbot, Esq. The latter gentleman, (says Mr. Humphreys,) willing to know the religious state of the people, desired Mr. Dibble to accompany him to Bedford, Crumpond and Peekskill, and to return by way of Croton and White Plains, which he did, and preached

---

<sup>a</sup> The earliest meeting of the Presbytery in America, is supposed to have taken place in 1705.

<sup>b</sup> See Rye.

in each of those places, and baptized ten children; he found no person of any denomination in any of these places except at Bedford, in each of them he met with several families professors of the Church of England.

St. George Talbot subsequently devised in trust, "certain sums of money," "for the use and benefit of the churches of North Castle and Bedford."<sup>a</sup>

"From letters received by Dr. Auchmuty, Rector of Trinity Church, and Mr. Livingston (executor of the late Mr. St. George Talbot,) dated December 8th, 1769, it appears that the heirs at law leave no method untried to defeat the purposes of Mr. Talbot's will and that by evasive practices in law, the cause is still undetermined."<sup>b</sup>

In 1771, Mr. John Livingston informs the Propagation Society, that with regard to Mr. Talbot's will the attorneys have judged it expedient to come to an agreement with the heirs of Mr. Talbot, by which the executors should pay them £1300, in full for their claim and demand on the real and personal estate. It will be seen, however, that the Church did not receive the legacy until the year 1803.

The Episcopal Church of Bedford was first incorporated on the 19th of April 1789, under the stile of "the Trustees of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the townships of Bedford and North Castle."<sup>c</sup>

In consequence of an act passed for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Church on the 17th of March, 1795; this church was again incorporated under the name and title of "the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United towns of Bedford and New Castle, the church at New Castle to continue by the regular name of St. George's Church." Charles Haight of New Castle, and William Miller, Esq. of Bedford, Churchwardens; Samuel Raymond, Gabriel Smith, David Haight, James McDonald, Marmaduke Forster, Gilbert Martin, Nicholas Haight and Samuel Smith

---

<sup>a</sup> "Which said money is now in possession of Lewis McDonald and others," extracts from will of St. George Talbot, Esq.

<sup>b</sup> Reports of Propagation Society.

<sup>c</sup> Incorp. of Religious Soc. Lib. A. 12.

vestrymen." Theodosius Bartow appears to have been minister of the united parishes at the time of election.<sup>a</sup>

At a meeting of the vestry November 12th, 1796, it was "ordered that William Miller, Esq., be empowered to commence and carry on a suit against Philip I. Livingston for money left by St. George Talbot to the churches of Bedford and New Castle."

At a meeting of the vestry held on the 3rd of March, 1803, "Mr. Miller informed the board that the money bequeathed to the united churches by the late St. George Talbot, had been recovered by a judgment obtained in the supreme court against Philip I. Livingston, and the said money after deducting charges will probably amount to about twenty-five hundred dollars." The vestry at the same meeting resolved to purchase a certain house and forty acres of land in Bedford, at the price of sixteen hundred and twenty-five dollars, for a glebe and parsonage; the purchase was subsequently made and a new parsonage erected thereon in 1822. In 1804, Trinity Church, New York, liberally endowed the united churches of Bedford and New Castle with the sum of one thousand dollars; also in 1808 the further sum of one hundred and fifty dollars.<sup>b</sup>

At a vestry meeting held on the 8th of December, 1806, it was resolved "that the residue of the bequest of St. George Talbot be appropriated towards defraying the cost of building a church in Bedford."<sup>c</sup>

The communion silver belonging to St. Matthew's Church, was the united gift of Mrs. Banyar and Ann Jay, on the 29th of October, 1810.

The service books were presented by Mrs. Ann Raymond of Bedford. In 1839 the church was repaired and new seated; the first delegate from this parish to the Diocesan convention in 1787, was Stephen de Lancey, Esq.

<sup>a</sup> Incorp. of Relig. Soc. Lib. A. 64.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. of Trinity Ch. N. Y. by Samuel Berrien, D. D.

<sup>c</sup> The church at New Castle having been found too much decayed for public worship, was taken down in 1839; from that time services have been entirely confined to Bedford.

HISTORY OF THE  
RECTORS OF BEDFORD.

Institution or call,	Incumbents,	by resig.
1704,	Rev. — Stewart, clericus,	ditto
1796,	Rev. Theodosius Bartow, Presb.	ditto
30th July 1804,	Rev. George Strebeck, Presb.	ditto
1809,	Rev. Nathan Felch, Presb.	ditto
16th June 1816,	Rev. George Weller, Deacon,	ditto
1819,	Rev. Samuel Nicholls, Presb.	ditto
12th Aug. 1838,	Rev. Alfred Partridge, pr. incum.	

NOTITIA PAROCHIALIS.

1745,	baptisms	14,	communicants	00
1810,	ditto	08,	ditto	10
1815,	ditto	19,	ditto	24
1844,	ditto	09,	ditto	88

The burying ground adjoining the church contains memorials to the families of the Amblers, Guions, Olmsteds, Collyers, Raymonds, Parks, Gardeners and Banks.

Within the before mentioned hamlet, near the junction of the Sing Sing and Bedford roads, stands the Baptist Church. The Baptist Society was first organized September 22d, 1798, seven of its members having received legal letters of dismissal from the Baptist Church of Stamford, to form a new society under the pastoral charge of Elder Jones; on the eighth of May 1802, elder Ezra Fountain was elected Pastor of this church, an office which he held with great acceptance until his death which took place November 26th, 1837. The Rev. Ezra Fountain was interred on his farm, at present occupied by John A. Miller, in this town, where a monument has been erected to his memory, which contains the following epitaph, written by himself:

“ A dying preacher I have been,”  
To dying creatures such as you,  
A dying preacher I remain,  
To all who come my grave to view.

It may be truly said of this good man, though dead he yet speaketh. Mr. Fountain was succeeded in the pastoral charge by



Elder Charles H. Underhill who continued for two years. Their successors have been Elder Samuel Covel, and Elder Nathan Reed, the present pastor is a licentiate from the Baptist Seminary of Madison County, New York. Present number of communicants, 250.

The Union Academy of Bedford occupies a prominent situation south east of the Baptist Church; its principal is Alexander G. Reynolds.

Near the hamlet, are situated the residences of William Hursell and Jabez Robertson, Esqrs.

To the south east lies the Hook farm, the property of Phinehas Barrett Esq., (formerly belonging to Col. James Holmes.) Upon the 5th of April, 1774, James Smith and Mary his wife sold to James Holmes, "all that messuage lying in Bedford, commonly called the Hook, containing seventy-three acres.

Col. James Holmes was the son of John and Jemima Holmes; his father John Holmes was a respectable farmer, a man of extensive real and personal property, a large proportion of which descended to him from his father John Holmes, who emigrated to this country from Beverly, Yorkshire, in England, about the year 1660, and was one of the original proprietors and settlers of this town. John Holmes, father of the said Col. James Holmes held many civil and military appointments. He was many years a town clerk, Justice of the Peace and Captain of the Militia, which appointments he held till the time of his death.

During the French war between France and Great Britain, in 1757-8, Col. James Holmes volunteered in the service of his country, and was in the great and destructive battle under the command of General Abercrombie, in which were nineteen hundred men killed and wounded. After the conquest of Canada he returned to Bedford.

Upon the commencement of hostilities between America and Great Britain, he was appointed by the New York Convention one of a committee of three, viz: Col. James Van Courtland, Capt. Montgomery, (afterwards Gen. Montgomery,) and himself, to proceed to examine the heights about Kingsbridge, and report where it would be advisable to fortify. They performed this duty and reported satisfactory. The same convention ordered four regi-

ments to be raised. The first was given to Alexander M'Dougal, the second to G. Van Schaick, the third to James Clinton, and the fourth to James Holmes. These regiments were immediately advanced to the northward. In 1777, he retired from the service of his country, owing to certain circumstances which had tended to dampen his military ambition, and returned to his farm. In the spring of 1778, he was arrested by order of the committee of public safety, and conveyed to Bedford.

He subsequently accepted the appointment of Lieut. Colonel of the corps of West Chester County refugees, in the British service; in this corps he remained till the end of the war. Colonel James Holmes died at New Haven, July, 1824; leaving issue by his wife Tamar, two daughters; Tamar, who married James Ronalds, father of William R. Ronalds, Esq., of New York, and Sally, the wife of Jeremiah Lounsberry of this town.<sup>a</sup>

The village of Bedford was burnt during the Revolutionary war, (by a party of British light horse on their route to Fairfield,) and much valuable property destroyed in its immediate vicinity, but the inhabitants continued firmly attached to the interests of their country.

On the 15th of July, 1779, General Heath having ascertained that the enemy's shipping had gone down towards New York, moved his troops and took a strong position between Ridgefield and Bedford, sending out patrols of horse and foot on all the roads.<sup>b</sup>

On the evening of the 29th of December, 1780, (writes General Heath,) a party of the enemy from Delancey's corps, consisting of about one hundred infantry and fifty horse, came up to North Castle where after a short halt they proceeded towards Bedford new purchase. Capt. Pritchard who was posted at Bedford with a company of continental troops, and some militia, immediately advanced towards them, attacked their van, who retreated, as did their main body. Capt. Pritchard pursued them as far as Youngs. It was said that one of the enemy was killed and several wound-

---

<sup>a</sup> Extracts from life of James Holmes, Esq., printed in 1815.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 270.

ed who were carried off in a wagon. Four oxen, and between thirty and forty sheep were retaken, eight or ten head of cattle were driven off; the captain sustained no injury.<sup>a</sup>

On the morning of the sixteenth, 1781, (continues the same authority,) "the enemy made an incursion from Morrisania, towards Bedford, and took Lieuts. Carpenter, Wright and Peacock, and five other inhabitants prisoners; burnt five houses, plundered and stript several other inhabitants, and returned; they were pursued by Capt. Pritchard, but could not be overtaken."<sup>b</sup>

One of the most prominent objects in the immediate vicinity of Bedford village, is the round hill called Aspêtong, celebrated for its beautiful views of the surrounding country, its summit affords a favorite resort for parties during the summer season.<sup>c</sup>

The road proceeding north from the village descends into the valley of the Beaver dam, (Cisqua,) watered by a beautiful stream of the same name, which rises in the adjoining town of Pound-ridge. In its progress to the Croton the Beaver dam is fed by the waters of broad and muddy brooks. By the process of gauging in 1833, (at a fair minimum,) the Beaver dam and Broad brook yielded four million nine hundred and sixty-three thousand four hundred and eighty gallons per diem.<sup>d</sup>

The former stream appears to have been in a peculiar manner the haunt of the beaver; hence the origin of the name Beaver dam. This timid animal, (says Van der Donck,) "always constructed its dwellings over running streams, having apertures in the lower stories which communicated with the water from which they could more easily retreat under water to places of safety which they have always prepared near their houses; these consist of a hollow or hole entwining under water from the side of the stream whereon their house was erected, and adjoining under the bank into which they retreat on the approach of danger, wherein they seem to be safe and secure that no person can molest them. Eighty thousand beavers (the same authority asserts,) were killed

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 268.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 274.

<sup>c</sup> 11th May, 1772, John Farnam conveys to James Holmes a lot of land lying in Bedford near a place called Aspetong.

<sup>d</sup> Report of water commissioners.

annually, during his residence of nine years in the New Netherlands."<sup>a</sup>

The beaver's favorite food was the bark of the willow, birch, and maple trees which still flourish on the banks of the Cisqua, (Beaver dam.) Rising above the banks of this stream on the west is an extensive ridge called the "Deer's delight."

It appears that the old road laid out to the vineyard purchase in 1739, "extended north from Harris's mill at the west side of Cantetoe ridge on the east side of "deer's delight," and so through to the purchase."<sup>b</sup>

Deer must have been very numerous here in 1656, for the same authority just quoted says "the land abounded with them every where, and their numbers appear to remain undiminished; we seldom pass through the fields without seeing deer more or less, and we frequently see them in herds; there are also white bucks and does, and others of a black colour. The Indians aver that the haunts of the white deer are much frequented by the common deer, and that those of the black species are not frequented by the common deer."<sup>c</sup>

The wolf appears to have abounded in proportion to the other wild game. So destructive had this ferocious animal become in 1694 that the town of Bedford offered "twenty shillings bounty for the killing of wolves."

In the northern part of this town is situated the residence and estate of the Jay family. Here the Hon. John Jay spent the latter part of his life. The house is delightfully seated on a rising ground backed with luxuriant woods. The surrounding scenery is exceedingly picturesque, particularly on the west overlooking the Kisco and Croton vallies, and the hills bordering the Hudson. Among these is the distant Dunderberg. A sunset view from this place is uncommonly grand. The interior of the mansion contains a number of excellent portraits. These consist of the Hon. John Jay, head by Stewart, Stephen Van Rensselaer, by ditto,

<sup>a</sup> Van der Donk's Hist. N. N. New York Hist. Soc. collect.

<sup>b</sup> Book of Co. Roads, Co. Clerk's office, lib. L. A. D. 1728.

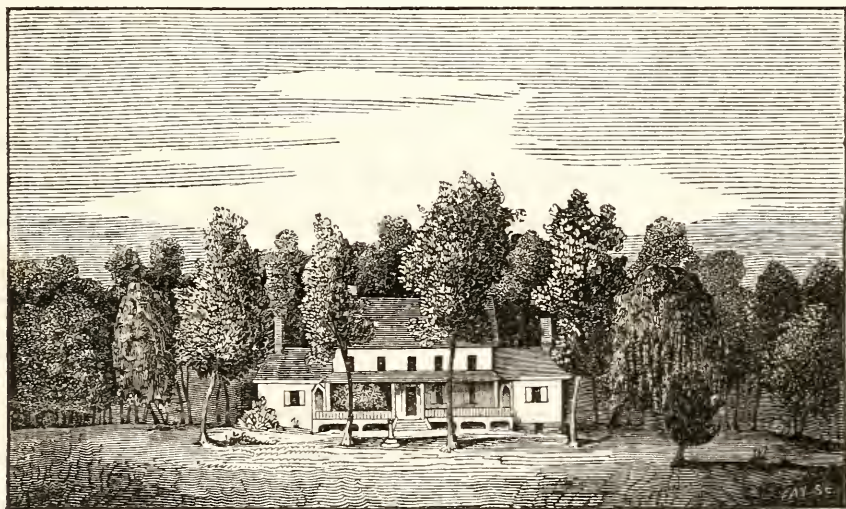
<sup>c</sup> Van der Donk's N. N.

Hon. Egbert Benson by ditto, Augustus Jay, copy from an old French picture, Mrs. Balch by West, and a bust of the Hon John Jay after a model by Carracio.<sup>a</sup>

The following notice of the death of the Hon. John Jay occurs in Hammond's Political History of the state.

"The venerable John Jay died on the 17th of May, at his mansion in Bedford, at the advanced age of eighty three years. Although he had been "long remembered," he was not entirely forgotten. The Supreme Court being in session in New York, the gentlemen of the bar, held a meeting, of which David B. Ogden was chairman, and John Suydam was secretary, and at which a committee was appointed, consisting of Greene C. Bronson, James Tallmadge, J. A. Spencer, D. S. Jones, G. Griffin, and J. J. Rosevelt, who reported among others the following resolution, which was unanimously adopted :

"Resolved that the members of this bar are impressed with deep grief upon the decease of their illustrious brother John Jay. They find, however, a consolation in the reflection, that his conduct through a long and useful life, has given a lustre to our profession, and to this bar ; and that while his character for pri-



Residence of the Hon John Jay.

<sup>a</sup> Frazee the sculptor executed several busts of this distinguished individual from the model of Carracio ; one of these was ordered by Congress for the Supreme Court of the U. S.

vate virtues and public worth has justly endeared him to the nation, his patriotism, his great talents as a statesman, and his great acquirements as a jurist, his eminent purity as a christian, and his probity as a man, all unite to present him to the public as an example whose radiance points to the attainment of excellence."

The memory of this great and good man will be embalmed in the heart of every true friend of liberty, virtue and the honor and prosperity of the state of New York and her civil institutions, as long as the history of this state and nation shall be known and read."<sup>a</sup>

A little east of the house flows Spruce Creek, the former division line between the vineyard and the Dibble purchases.

North east of Cautetoe lies the valley of the Peppeneghek, (Cross River,) celebrated for its picturesque beauty.

Whitlocksville is a small settlement in the north west corner of Bedford situated near the junction of the Croton and Cross rivers. Upon the latter stream are located the grist mill and clothier works of Warren Whitlock. The Cross River, (Peppeneghek,) is said to discharge at the rate of nine million one hundred and forty-two thousand four hundred gallons per diem.

The Methodist Episcopal Church of this place was first erected in 1837, and incorporated on the 25th of February the same year; Norman William Miller, Walter P. Lyon, Joseph Wilson, Joel W. Miller and Noah Smith, trustees.<sup>b</sup>

The settlement also contains a post office, three stores and twenty-five houses. The West Chester Rail Road passes a little east of the place; the Peppeneghek and the Cisqua intersect a mile to the eastward. Previous to the erection of the Croton dam, the shad fish annually ascended the river to Whitlocksville a distance of nearly thirty miles from the Hudson; trout are taken here in great abundance.

"The several tributaries of the Croton in this town supply a great abundance of mill seats. There is also a small stream that runs north from the village of Bedford to Long Island Sound

---

<sup>a</sup> Hammond's Political Hist. of N. Y. vol. ii. 310.

<sup>b</sup> Relig. Soc. Lib. B. 69.

(to which we have already alluded,) called the Mahanas river. The mills are numerous and more than equal to the wants of the inhabitants. The general surface of Bedford is elevated, and though broken by small hills, and valleys, has very little of waste ground. The arable, pasture, and meadow lands, are in very just proportion for a good farming country, and the whole is well watered by springs, brooks, and rivulets, the latter of a good size for mills; the summits of the hills afford many extensive and interesting prospects, but the hills are stony and hard to till though they yield good crops of grain, grass, and all the common fruits."

In the vicinity of Bedford sulphuret of iron, and the oxide of iron occur in beds of sand, also quartz and slate are found in numerous localities.

The following extracts are taken from the town records:<sup>a</sup>

"July, 1682, was held the first town meeting." "At a town meeting held March 17, 1686, the town by vote did choose Zachariah Roberts town clerk, for to record town matters and to keep the town books and papers."

The first independent election for town officers, took place on the 7th of April, 1784, when the following officers were chosen:

Peter Fleming.—*Supervisor.*

Philip Leek.—*Town Clerk.*

Lemuel Light.—*Constable and Collector.*

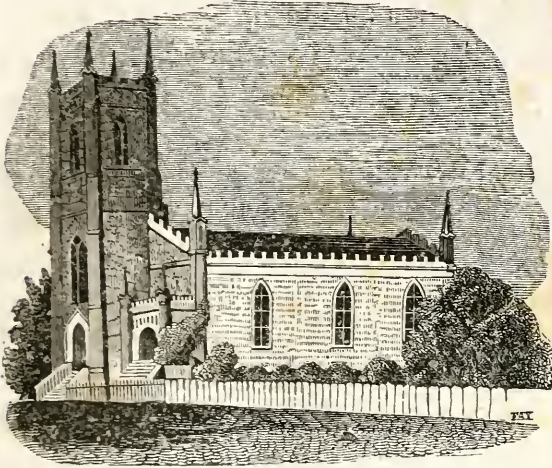
Philip Leek,	}	<i>Assessors.</i>
Richard Sackett,		
John Miller,		
Ephraim Raymond,		

James McDonald,	}	<i>Commissioners of Roads.</i>
Eli Tyler,		
Zebediah Mills.		

---

<sup>a</sup> The town records consist of four volumes, No. 1 entitled Record of the town, 1683. No. 2 the Laws and Orders of Connecticut Colony, &c., entered upon record by Zachariah Roberts, recorder, in the year 1699. No. 3 commences April 30, 1708. No. 4, 1786.

## CORTLANDT.



St. Peter's Church, Peckskill.

THIS town formerly belonged to the great manor of Cortlandt, which also comprehended the present townships of North Salem, Somers and Yorktown. The name itself is derived from the ancient family of the Van Cortlandt's, the mesne Lords and first

grantees from the Indians. Under the Mohegans or River Indians, Cortlandt-town appears to have been divided between the two chiefs of Sachus and Kitchawong, the former of whom exercised jurisdiction over the lands of Wishqua, Canopus, Wenneebees, Appamagh-pogh and Meahagh, a territory extending from the south side of Verplanck's Point to St. Anthony's nose in the Highlands, whilst the latter held authority over the lands of Kitchawan, lying south of Verplanck's Point, including Senasqua neck, (Teller's Point,) and the small island of Oscawana.

The Indian villages in their order were, first, Kitchawonk, situated near the mouth of the Croton, so called from the original name of the river. viz: "Kitchawan," a term which is descriptive of a large and swift flowing current. Croton, the present name of the same stream, is said to have been adopted from an illustrious sachem of that name who resided here at an early period.

"The first name of importance above the island (remarks Mr. Schoolcraft,) is Croton, a name of classic sound, but unquestiona-



bly derived from the Indian, though a corruption of the original, and not originally applied by them to the River.

In a deed dated 1685, which is quoted by Judge Benson, the river is called Kitchawan. "Croton as stated by the same authority is a corruption of the name of a chief who lived and exercised his authority at the mouth of this stream. It is clearly a derivative from Kenotin or Knoten, or as it is oftener used without the pronoun prefixed, Noten, meaning in either case the wind or a tempest. It is a man's name still common in the west and north."<sup>a</sup>

The Indian castle of Kitchawan (according to tradition) occupied a commanding position on the neck proper overlooking the Croton and Haverstraw bays, a little northwest of the manor house. This site was chosen for the purpose of protecting the fisheries, and overawing the neighboring tribes. A variety of Indian weapons are occasionally found in the neighborhood, consisting principally of battle-axes, javelins and arrow heads. The Indian burying ground is situated near the entrance of Senasqua Neck, (Teller's Point.) The sachem of Kitchawan in 1641, was Metsewakes.

"Upon the 10th July, 1641, appeared before the counsel, the following chiefs summoned by Oratan, chief of Hackiukesacky, agreeably to the conversation with him on the 27 of May, viz., Sowanare, chief of Weckquaeskek, and Metsewakes, chief of Ketchawangh, alias Slauper Haven; they expressed a desire to live on friendly terms with the Dutch and to detach themselves from the Esopus Indians."<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 22d of April, 1643, the chief of Hackiukesacky was delegated by the Indians of Kitchawan to conclude a peace with the Director General.<sup>c</sup>

In 1644, Mamaronack was chief of the Indians residing on the Kitchawan.<sup>d</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Pro. N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844, 100.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. ii. 220.

<sup>d</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 302.

A. D. 1645, Aepjen chief sachem of the Mohegans signed a treaty of peace in behalf of the Kitchawanghs.<sup>a</sup>

On the 15th of September, 1663, occurs the name of Meghtesewakes, chief of Kitchawan, and in 1699, that of Sackama Wicker.

The next Indian village north of the Croton, was Sachus or Sackhoes, which stood near the site of the present village of Peekskill. The chief of this place in the year 1682, was Sirham.

The early Dutch maps place the villages of Keskisko, (a name that partly survives in the Kisco River,) Pasquashic, and Noapain south of the Highlands.

The Wappinger Indians occupied the region of St. Anthony's nose and the Kittateny mountains, (Highlands.)<sup>b</sup>

The Indians are said to have been very numerous in and around Peekskill as late as 1740, especially during the fishing seasons.<sup>c</sup>

At an early period, Teller's Point or neck passed from the native Indian proprietors to William and Sarah Teller. "The point or peninsula, (says Judge Benson,) the northern chop of the bay or entrance into Croton River, the Skippers called Sarah's Point, the Indians gave it to William and Sarah Teller, husband and wife, and she survived him."<sup>d</sup>

On the 3d of June, 1682, occurs a sale from the Indian proprietors, Ackemak, Jangheor, Nawakies, Wettatane, Kacgara, Pewengen, Askawanes, Siggeres, Owarrewie, Aronjsack, Serram, Geckawock, Garhanck, Awoejhacias, Armawain, Ogkan, Nennafarick, Wapeken, Sepaactan, and Awe-maracktow, to Cornelius Van Burgum, consisting of all that parcel neck or point of land, with the marsh, meadow ground or valley thereto adjoining and belonging, situate, lying, and being on the east side of the North or Hudson's river, over against the Verdrida Hooke, commonly called and known by the name of Slaupers Haven, and by the Indians Navish, the meadow being by the Indians called Senasqua, being bounded by the said river and a certain creek called or known to the Indians by the name of Tanrackan and Sepperak,

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. Coll. N. Ser. vol. i. 276.

<sup>b</sup> Moulton's History of New York, p. 221.

<sup>c</sup> This is stated on the authority of Mr. Mandeville of Peekskill.

<sup>d</sup> Benson's Mem. of the state of N. Y. 47.

and divided from the main land by certain trees marked by the Indians, together with half the said creek, &c. &c., for and in consideration of a certain sum or quantity of Wampum and divers other goods, paid by Cornelius Van Burghum.<sup>a</sup>

It is certain that some time prior to 1748, Sarah Teller held the neck as tenant at sufferance under the Van Cortlandt family. A branch of the Teller family were early connected with the Van Cortlandt's by marriage. Andrew Teller in 1671 having married Sophia, daughter of the Right Hon. Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt.

The common ancestor of the Tellers was a Dutch clergyman of some distinction in the New Netherlands.

Upon the 30th of July, 1667, occurs an act of the English Governor and his council, concerning William Teller and his children, wherein the payment of eighty-five beavers is enforced as his daughter's share besides other portions to his remaining children; one of these was a son named Andries.<sup>b</sup>

The names of Jacob Teller en zyn huys vrow (and his wife) occur in the church books of Sleepy Hollow.

Upon the 14 of July, 1800, the heirs of William Teller, conveyed part of the neck to Elijah Morgan of Cortlandt-town; 6th of November, 1804, Elijah Morgan, jr., and Ann his wife re-sold the same to Robert Underhill; on the 16th of August, 1804, Robert McCord and wife conveyed another portion of the neck to Robert Underhill; upon the death of the latter individual the whole became vested in his two sons, the present proprietors of Croton Point.

In 1683, the Hon. Stephanus Van Cortlandt, purchased of the native Indian proprietors the territory of Meahagh, (Verplanck's Point,) and the lands east thereof called Appamaghogh as follows:


To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come Pewemine, Oskewans, Turham, Querawighint, Siecham, Jsighers and Prackises, all Indians, true and rightful owners and proprietors of the land hereinafter mention-


<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. p. 182.


<sup>b</sup> Surrogate's office, New York, 30.


ed, as for themselves and the rest of their relations send, greeting, KNOW YE that for and in consideration of the sum of twelve pounds in wampum and several other merchandises, as by a schedule hereunto annexed more at large, doth and may appear to them the same Indians in hand paid before the ensealing and delivering thereof, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, and for other divers causes and considerations, they, the said Indians have granted, bargained and sold, aliened, enfeofed and confirmed, and by these presents do fully, clearly and absolutely grant, bargain, sell, alien, enfeof, and confirm unto Stephanus Van Cortlandt of the city of New York, merchant, his heirs or assignees forever, all that certain tract or parcel of land situate, lying or being on the east side of the Hudson River, at the entering of the Highlands, just over against Haverstraw, lying on the south side of the creek called Tammoesis, and from thence easterly in the woods to the head of the creek called Kewightahagh, and so along said creek northerly to Hudson River, and thence westerly to the utmost point of the said tract of land, and from thence southerly along said Hudson River to the aforementioned creek, Tammoesis, which said tract or parcel of land known by the Indians by the name of Appamaghpogh and Meahagh, including all the lands, soils, meadows and woods within the circuit and bounds aforesaid, together with all, and singular the trees, timberwoods, under-woods, swamps, runs, marshes, meadows, rivulets, streams, creeks, waters, lakes, pools, ponds, fishing, hunting, fowling and whatsoever else to the said tract or parcel of land within the bounds and limits aforesaid, is belonging or in any wise appertaining without any restriction whatsoever, to HAVE AND TO HOLD the said parcel or tract of land, and all and singular other the premises and every part and parcel thereof unto the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees to the sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof of him, the said Stephanus his heirs and assignees forever, and they, the said Indians do for themselves their heirs and every of them consent, promise, and engage, that the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt his heirs and assignees shall and may from henceforth and forever lawfully peaceably and quietly have, hold, possess and enjoy the said tract or parcel of land, and all and singular the other the premises with their appurtenances without either let, hindrance, disturbance or interruption of or by them, the said Indian proprietors, or their heirs or any other person or persons claiming, or that shall hereafter, shall or may claim, by from under them or either of them, and that they shall and will upon the reasonable request and demand made by the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, give and deliver peaceable and quiet possession of the said tract and parcel of land and premises, or of some part thereof and in the room of the whole under such person or persons, as by the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt shall be appointed to receive the same, in witness whereof the said Indians Pewemind, Oskewans, Turham Querawighint, Siecham, Isighers, and Prackises, the Indian owners and proprietors aforesaid, have hereunto set their hands and seals in New York, this twenty-fourth day of August in the thirty fifth year of his majesties reign, Anno Domini, 1683.


Signed and delivered in presence  
of us, Francis Rambolett, Gulian  
Verplanck.


This is the mark of    
Pewemind,


This is the marke of    
Oskewans,

The mark of    
Siecham,

This is the mark of    
Isighers,

The mark of    
Prackises,

The mark of    
Turham,

The mark of    
Querewighnit.

A schedule or list of goods paid by Stephanus Van Cortlandt, in his deed expressed.

8 guns,	12 shirts,
9 blankets,	50 pounds of powder,
5 coats,	30 bars of lead,
14 fathom of Duffels,	18 hatchets,
14 kettles,	18 hoes,
40 fathoms of black Wampum,	14 knives,
80 fathoms of white Wampum,	a small coat,
2 ankers of rum,	6 fathom of stroud water cloth,
5 half vats of strong beer,	6 pair of stockings,
6 earthen jugs,	6 tobacco boxes.

This purchase was afterwards confirmed to Stephanus Van Cortlandt, to be holden of his majesty and his successors in common soccage according to the tenure of East Greenwich in England, the patentee paying yearly therefore (as a quit rent,) two bushels of good winter wheat.

The following year Thomas Dekay, Richard Abramsen, Jacob Abramsen, Sybout Harche, Jacob Harche and Samuel Dekay, "obtained liberty and licence to purchase of the Indians, (each of them,) three hundred acres of land, lying and being in the high lands by the north of Stephen Van Cortlandt's land, which is called by the Indians, Wenebees, lying between two creeks, over against the Thunder hill, (Dunderburgh,) on the east side of the river, &c. Signed Thomas Dongan.<sup>a</sup>"

The same year Thomas Dekay, Richard Abramsen, Jacob

---

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. fol. 189, date of license, 6th of March, 1684. The principal part of the above purchase is now covered by the farm of John McCoy.

Abramsen, Sybout Harche, Jacob Harche, and Samuel Dekay, purchased of the Indians, Sirham, sachem of Sachus, Pannskapham, Charrish, Askewaen, Pewinenien, and Sickham, eighteen hundred acres of land "situate on the highlands north of Stephanus Van Cortlandt's land, which is called by the Indians Wenebees, &c."

The above grantees on the 21st of April, 1685, made a second purchase of land from the same native proprietors consisting of :

"All that tract or parcel of land situate lying and being on Hudson's River at a certain place called by the Indians Sachus, and stretching by the north side of Mr Stephanus Van Cortlandt's land to the said river to another creek, and so runs up said creek in several courses to a certain tree marked with R, and from the said marked tree southerly by marked trees all along to a marsh to another marked tree, marked R, west up to the aforesaid creek which lies by said Mr. Stephanus Van Cortlandt's land, &c., &c."

Here followeth the schedule or particular of wampum and goods paid for the said land.

100 fathoms of white wampum,	15 bottles,
60 guilders of silver,	15 pair of stockings,
8 fowling pieces,	12 coopers knives,
8 blankets,	5 bullet moulds,
10 match coats,	15 axes,
8 brass kettles,	15 hoes,
6 stroud water coats,	40 knives.
50 yards of stroud water,	2 rolls of tobacco,
15 shirts,	3 lead ladles,
40 bars of lead,	100 Indian awls, <sup>a</sup>
15 earthen jugs cont. 50 lbs powder,	20 tobacco boxes,
1000 fish hooks,	200 needles,
3 pistols,	2 swords,
100 tobacco pipes,	8 coats,
1 anker of rum,	4 half vats of beer.

Signed sealed and delivered in the presence of Brant Schuyler, Levinus V. Schayck, George Brewerton.

The mark of  $\sphericalangle$  Weskhewen Sachem,

The mark of  $\sphericalangle$  Tupaine,

The mark of  $\sphericalangle$  Amterone,

The mark of  $\sphericalangle$  Shaphame.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Used in perforating wampum.

<sup>b</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. vol. v. 87.

A third sale from Sirham, Indian sachem of Sachus, and other Indians, occurs on the 25th of June, 1685, to Jacobus Dekay, &c.

“ Of all that tract or parcel of land, situate and being on the east side of Hudson’s River, commonly called and known by the name of Wishqua, beginning at a great creek, called by the Indians John Peake’s creek, it being in the mouth of the west side of the said creek and so running up along the said river to another small creek and fall, including all fresh and salt meadows within the said bounds, together with all, &c., &c., for the value of four hundred guilders, seawant.”<sup>a</sup>

The Indian territory of Sachus was subsequently confirmed by Royal Patent on the 23d day of December, 1685, to Teunis Dekay and his associates in the following manner :

Thomas Dongan, Lieut. Governor and Vice Admiral of New York, and its dependencies, under his majesty James the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, defender of the faith &c., Supreme Lord and proprietor of the colony and province of New York, and its dependencies in America, &c. To all whom this shall come, sendeth, greeting ; whereas, Teunis Dekay, Richard Abramsen, Jacob Abramsen, Sybout Harchie, Jacob Harchie, and Samuel Dekay, all of the city of New York, have by virtue of my order or lycense, bearing date the 6th day of March, Anno Domini, 1684–5, according to the law and practice of the said Province, for a valuable consideration purchased of the natives and Indian owners, their right, title, interest, clayme and demand of, in and to all that certain tract or parcel of land herein after mentioned and expressed, for their own proper uses and behoofs as by the Indian deed of sale, bearing date the 21st day of April, A. D. 1685, remaining upon record in the secretary’s office of the said province may more fully and at large appear ; and whereas Samuel Dekay, one of the purchasers is since deceased, and Jacobus Dekay his father hath since his decease desired that his said purchase and share may be confirmed unto his grand sonne, Jacob Dekay, to him, his heirs and assigns for ever. Now know ye that by virtue of my commission and authority devised unto me, and power in me residing, in consideration of the quit rent, hereinafter received, I have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do give, grant, ratify and confirm unto the said Teunis Dekay, Richard Abramsen, Jacob Abramsen, Sybout Harchie, Jacob Harchie, and Jacobus Dekay, jun., all that certain tract or parcel of land situate, lying, and being on Hudson’s river, at a certain place called by the Indians Sachus, and stretching by the north side of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. vol. v.

land up to the said river, to another creek, and so runs up said creek in several courses, to a certain tree marked with T R, and from the said marked trees southerly by marked trees all along to a marsh, to another tree marked with T R, west of the aforesaid creek which lyes by said Stephanus Van Cortland's land, including all the meadows both fresh and salt within said bounds containing in all 1800 acres, or thereabouts, together with all, and all manner of rivers, rivulets, runs, streams, waters, feedings, pastures, woods, underwoods, trees, swamps, moors, marshes, meadows, easments, profits and commodities, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, and all other appurtenances whatsoever, to the said tract or parcel of land within the bounds and limits, aforesaid belonging, or in any wise appertaining to have and to hold, the said tract or parcel of land, and all and singular other the premises unto the said Teunis Dekay, &c., their heirs and assigns for ever, to their sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof, of them the said Teunis Dekay, &c., and their heirs and assigns forever to be holden in free and common soccage according to the tenure of East Greenwich in the County of Kent in his majesties kingdom of England, yielding, rendering, and paying therefor, every year, for the use of our Sovereign Lord the King's majesty, his heirs or successors in such affair or affairs, as by him or them shall be appointed to receive the same, ten bushels of good winter merchantable wheat, yearly, on the five and twentieth day of March, at the city of New York. And for the better preserving the title of the above recited parcel of land and premises, I have caused these presents to be entered in the secretary's office, of this province. Given under my hand and sealed with the seal of the province at Fort James in New York, the 23d day of December, A. D. 1685.<sup>a</sup>

THOMAS DONGAN.

The above patent, commonly called "Ryck's Patent," passed by purchase to Hercules Lent, as appears by certain releases, the first bearing date 20th of April, 1715, wherein Jacob Abramsen, of ye upper Yonckers, one of the original patentees, for the consideration of £150, confirms Hercules Lent, yeoman, in all his right, title and interest in ye patent called Ryck Abramsen's Patent.<sup>b</sup>

On the 29th of December, 1729, Sybout Harchie Krankhyte, Hercules Johnse Krankhyte, and Jacobus Krankhyte, release to Hercules Lent "a certain tract of land on the east side of Hudson's river, at a certain place called by the Indians Sachus, and is bounded on the north, east, and south, by the manor of Cort-

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. Lib. A. fol. 114 to 117, Co. Rec. Lib. I. p. 145.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec., Lib. E., 157.



landt, and on the west by Hudson's river aforesaid, containing 1800 acres, reference being had to a certain patent granted by Thos. Dongan, &c. &c."<sup>a</sup> The following receipts are for quit rent, due on the Ryck Patent.

Received of Mr. Philip Van Cortlandt three hundred and eighty bushels of wheat for thirty eight years quit rent, due to his majesty from the within patent, and in full for the said time. Witness my hand this 28th of December, 1726.

Archibald Kennedy, *Rec. Gen.*

Received of Hercules Lent twenty bushels of wheat for two years quarter upon the within tracts in full to the 25th of March last. Witness my hand this 2d of May, 1729.

Archibald Kennedy, *Rec. Gen.*

In A.D. 1766, Hercules Lent, of Ryck's Patent, bequeathed his lands by will to his children in the following order :

"*Item.* I give and devise to my son Jacob all that farm he now lives on, containing 350 acres, lying and being, &c. on the southeast part of a tract of land formerly granted to my father, Ryck Abramsen Lent and others, which is commonly known by the name of Ryck's Patent, and by the Indian name of Sackhoes, to have and to hold, &c. To my son Hendrick all that farm I now live on, containing 350 acres, in the southwest part of Ryck's Patent.

To my son Abraham all that land he lives on, containing 350 acres, adjoining to Hudson's river, and on the south side of the aforesaid devised to my son Hendrick.

To my grandchildren, Abram Lamb, Jane Lamb, Ira Lamb, Rachel Lamb, and Rachel, wife of James Lamb, (the father and mother of the above children,) all that part of my lands and meadow situate, lying and being in Orange county, by Hudson's river, known by the name of Stony Point. To my daughter Catherine, wife of Hendrick de Ronde, lands by Stony Point."<sup>b</sup>

The descendants of the testator are still numerous in Cortlandt-town. Hercules Lent, a great grandson of the patentee, holds a portion of the patrimonial estate, and occupies the family home,

---

<sup>a</sup> The original document is in the possession of Mr. Nathl. Bedle, of Peekskill.

<sup>b</sup> Surrogate's Office, N. Y., No. 25, 337.

stead. On the west bank of the Annsville creek was situated the property of John Krankhyte, consisting of 300 acres.

The lands of Kitchawan, in this town, were conveyed by the native Indians in 1686 to Thomas Dongan, Captain General, and Governor-in-chief, and Vice Admiral in, and over, the province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, under his majesty James II., by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, King, defender of the faith, &c.

“To all whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting : Whereas, Emigrant, Askewans, Penarand, and Tagehkint, natives and principal owners of the tract of land commonly called or known by the Indian name of Kechtawong, did in and by their certain deed or writing, under their hands and seales, bearing date the day of August now last past, for the consideration therein mentioned, grant, bargain, sell, alien, enfeoffe and confirm unto me the said Thomas Dongan, my heires and assigns, all that tract or parcel of land situate, lying and being on the east side of Hudson’s river, within the county of West Chester, beginning at Kechtawong Creek, and so running along Hudson’s river northerly to the land of Stephannus Van Cortlandt, from thence to the eastwardmost end of the said Van Cortlandt’s land, and from thence to a great fresh water pond called Keakates, and from the said pond along the creek that runs out of the said pond into Kitchtawan creek, and so downward on the south side of the said creek to Hudson’s river, including all the land, soil and meadow within the bounds and limits aforesaid, together with, &c. And whereas I, the said Thomas Dongan, in and by a certain deed under my hand and seal, bearing date 12th day of October, did grant and sell over unto John Knights, of the city of New York, all my right and title in the same, &c.

I do, by these presents, ratify and confirm the same to John Knights, this 20th day of March, 1686.”

Upon the 20th of April, 1687, we find a conveyance from John Knight, gent., to his Excellency, Governor Dongan, of the same territory, called Kitchtawong.<sup>a</sup>

It will be seen hereafter that the royal patent of the manor of Cortlandt recites “sundry grants” made by Governor Dongan to the patentee. One of which was doubtless the above conveyance. Col. Stephanus Van Cortlandt subsequently received a confirmation for the same, from the Indians, bearing date August the 8th, 1699.

---

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec., Lib. A., 121.

“We, Sachima Wicker, sachem of Kightawonek, Koraghfall, Awoghran, Moninghme, a squaw, Marackeneh, a squaw, Poking, a boy, Wighquekameeck, quean, a boy, Massarcett, Howogharint, Johnny Taparinoek, Oghgniawe, Orraragquoek, Pagkerngkinck, Ravisson, Mighegaroe Tapugh, a squaw, Tap-pawahigh, a squaw, Aratissanck Maentigroo kaas, his Kapoaghpurmin Sawap-pawall, all right, just, natural owners and proprietors of all the land hereinafter mentioned, lying and being within the bounds and limits of the marriners of Cortlandt, &c. &c., have sold, for a certain sum of money, all that tract and parcel of land situate, lying and being in the manner of Cortlandt, in West Chester county, beginning on the south side of Kightawonek Creek, and so along the said creek to a place called Kewighecock, and from thence along a creek called Peppeneghek to the head thereof, and then due east to the limits of Connecticut, being the easternmost bounds of said manner, and from thence northerly along the limits of Connecticut aforesaid to the river Mattegtecos ten miles, and from thence due west to Hudson’s river, together with all the lands, soils, &c. &c.

	Her mark I Tapahuck, a squaw,
Sackima wee,	The mark of O Sawappen, a squaw,
sachem of Kichtawank, N	“ R Arahsant,
his mark.	“ X Maantick,
Corachpa, Y	“ A Kakiskagin, a squaw,
Wechrequa, A	“ Q Ackparum, a squaw,
Monrechro, M	“ V Oekququqrie,
a squaw,	“ D Oranack Rank
Manackawagh, a squaw, I	“ S Paghkinckinck,
Pooghkink, a lad 15 years of age, H	“ X Rawefen,
signer of the rights of his father,	“ O Michhacharo,
	“ O Papruch, a squaw,
	“ I Wighquaach kanno,
	“ N Quez, a youth 13 years old,
	“ — Masacott,
	“ J Koocparen,
	“ U Jonyeo,
	“ P Taparmuck.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of John Nanfan, A. Depeyster, James Graham, A. Livingston.”<sup>a</sup>

The Hon. Stephanus Van Cortlandt being now vested in the fee simple, the whole territory was by royal charter erected into the lordship and manor of Cortlandt, which, according to actual survey, contained eighty three thousand acres. It is said that the

---

<sup>a</sup> Book of Indian Deeds, Alb. warrant for survey, Lib. i., 88.

governor's fees on this occasion amounted to three hundred pieces of eight.

Over the extensive forests of Cortlandt (celebrated for their fat venison,) the lord of the manor was constituted, "the sole and only ranger, to have and enjoy all the benefits and perquisites, &c. that of right doth belong unto a ranger according to the statutes and customs of the realm of England."

The lords of Cortlandt also enjoyed the extraordinary privilege of sending a representative to the provincial assembly.

The whole manor was held by the feudal tenure of paying therefor yearly to the Crown, upon the feast day of the Annunciation of the blessed Virgin Mary, the rent of forty shillings.

#### THE ROYAL CHARTER.

Gulielmus Tertius Dei Gratia, Angliæ, Scotiæ, France et Hiberniæ, Rex, fidei defensor, &c. &c.

"To all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas, our loving subject, Colonel Stephanus Van Cortlandt, one of the members of our Council of our Province of New York, &c., hath by his petition presented unto our trusty and well beloved Colonel Benjamin Fletcher, Captain General and Governor-in-chief of our said Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, &c., prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain parcel and tract of land situate, lying and being upon the east side of Hudson's river, beginning on the north line of the manor of Phillipsburg, now in the tenure and occupation of Frederick Phillips, Esq., one of the members of our said Council, and to the south side of a certain creek called Kightawanck Creek, and from thence, by a due east line, running into the woods twenty English miles, and from the said north line of the manor of Phillipsburgh upon the south side of the said Kightawanck Creek, running along the said Hudson river northerly as the said river runs into the north side of a high hill, which high lands, commonly called and known by the name of Anthony's nose, to a red cedar tree, which makes the southernmost bounds of the land now in the tenure and occupation of Mr. Adolph Phillips, including, in the said northerly line, all the meadows, marshes, coves, bays and necks of land and peninsulas that are adjoining or extending into Hudson's river within the bounds of the said line, and from the said red cedar tree another due easterly line running into the woods twenty English miles, and from thence along the partition line between our Colony of Connecticut and this our Province, until you come into the place where the first easterly line of twenty miles doth come—the whole being bounded on the east by the said partition line between our said Colony of Connecticut and this our Province, and on the south by the north-

erly line of the manor of Phillipsburg to the southward of Kightawanck Creek aforesaid, and on the west by the said Hudson's river, and on the north from the aforesaid red cedar tree by the south line of the land of Adolph Phillips, and also of a certain parcel of meadow lying and being situate upon the west side of the said Hudson's river, within the said high lands over against the aforesaid hill called Anthony's nose, beginning on the south side of a creek called by the Indians Sinkapogh, and so along said creek to the head thereof, and then northerly along the high hills, as the river runneth, to another creek called Apinnapink, and from thence along the said creek to the said Hudson's river, which certain tract of land and meadow our said loving subject is now actually seized and possessed thereof, and doth hold the same of us by virtue of sundry grants heretofore made unto him by Col. Thomas Dongan, late Governor of our said Province, and whereon our said loving subject hath made considerable improvement, having been at great cost, charge and expense in the purchasing the said tract of land and meadows from the native Indians, as well as in the settling a considerable number of families thereon, and being willing to make some further improvement thereon, doth by his said petition further request and pray that we would be graciously pleased to erect the aforesaid tract of land and meadows within the limits and bounds aforesaid into a lordship or manor of Cortlandt, which reasonable request for the future encouragement of our said loving subject, we being willing to grant: *Know ye*, that of our special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said loving subject, Stephannus Van Cortlandt, all the aforesaid certain parcel and tracts of land and meadow within their several and respective limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and every of the messuages, tenements, buildings, barns, houses, out-houses, stables, edifices, orchards, gardens, inclosures, fences, pastures, fields, feedings, woods, underwoods, trees, timber, swamps, meadows, marshes, pools, ponds, lakes, fountains, waters, water courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, streams, brooks, creeks, harbors, coves, inlets, outlets, islands of meadow, necks of land and meadow, peninsulas of land and meadow, ferries, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, and the fishing in Hudson's river, so far as the bounds of the said land extends upon the same, quarries, minerals, (silver and gold mines only excepted,) and all other the rights, members, liberties, privileges, jurisdictions, pre-eminences, emoluments, to the afore recited certain parcels or tracts of land and meadows within their several and respective limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any ways appertaining or accepted, reputed, taken, known or occupied as part, parcel or member thereof, to have and to hold all the afore recited certain parcels and tracts of land and meadows within their several and respective limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and every of the messuages, tenements, buildings, barns, houses, out-houses, stables, edifices, orchards, gardens, enclosures, fences, pastures, fields, feedings, woods, underwoods, trees, timber, swamps, meadows, marshes, pools, ponds,

lakes, fountains, waters, water-courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, streams, brooks, creeks, harbors, coves, inlets, outlets, island of land and meadow, necks of land and meadow, peninsulas of land and meadow, ferries, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, and the fishing on Hudson's river so far as the bounds of the said land extends upon the said river, quarries, mines, minerals, (silver and gold only excepted,) and all other the rights, members, liberties, privileges, jurisdictions, pre-eminences, emoluments, royalties, profits, benefits, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the afore recited certain parcels or tracts of land and meadow within their several and respective limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any ways appertaining or accepted, reputed, taken, known or occupied as part, parcel or member thereof unto the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees, to the sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof of him the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assigns forever; and, moreover, *know ye*, that of our further special grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have thought fit, according to the request of our said loving subject, to erect all the afore recited certain parcels and tracts of land and meadows within the limits and bounds aforesaid into a lordship and manor, and therefore by these presents we do for us, our heirs and our successors, erect, make and constitute all the afore recited certain parcel and tracts of land and meadows with the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and every the above granted premises, with all and every of their appurtenances, into one lordship and manor to all intents and purposes; and it is our royal will and pleasure that the said lordship and manor shall, from henceforth, be called the lordship and manor of Cortlandt; and further, *know ye*, that we, reposing especial trust and confidence in the loyalty, wisdom, justice, prudence and circumspection of our said loving subject, do for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto our said loving subject, Stephanus Van Cortlandt, and to the heirs and assignees of him the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, full power and authority at all times forever hereafter in the said lordship and manor, one court leet and one court baron, to hold and keep at such time and times, and so often yearly as he or they shall see meet; and all fines, issues and ameracements at the said court leet and court baron, to be holden within the said lordship and manor, to be settled, forfeited or employed, or payable, or happening at any time to be payable by any of the inhabitants of or within the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, or the limits and bounds thereof, and also all and every of the powers and authorities hereinbefore mentioned, for the holding and keeping the said court leet and court baron from time to time, and to award and issue out the accustomed writs, to be issued and awarded out of the said court leet and court baron, to be kept by the heirs and assigns of the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt forever, or their or any of their stewards, deputed and appointed with a full and ample power and authority to distrain for the rents, services and other sums of money, payable by virtue of the premises and all other lawful remedies and means for the having, possessing, receiving, levying and enjoying the premises and every

part and parcel of the same, and all waifs, estrays, wrecks, deodands, goods of felons, happening, and being forfeited, within the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, together, with all and every sum and sums of money, to be paid as a post fine, upon any fine, or fines, to be levied of any land, tenements, or hereditaments within the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, together with the advowson, and right of patronage, and all, and every, the church and churches erected or established, or hereafter to be erected, or established in the said manor of Cortlandt; and we do by these presents constitute, and appoint, our said loving subject Stephanus Van Cortlandt, and his heirs and assigns, to be our sole and only ranger of the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, and to have, hold, and enjoy, all the benefits, perquisites, fees, rights, privileges, profits and appurtenances, that of right doth belong unto a ranger according to the statute, and customs of our realm of England, in as full and ample manner, as if the same were particularly expressed, in these presents, anything to the contrary hereof in any ways notwithstanding; and we likewise do further give, and grant, unto the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, and to his heirs and assigns, that all and every the tenants of him the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, within the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, shall and may at all times hereafter, meet together, and choose assessors within the manor aforesaid, according to such rules, ways, and methods, as are prescribed for cities, towns and counties within our said province by the acts of General Assembly, for the defraying the public charge of each respective city, town, and county aforesaid, and all such sum or sums of money so assessed and levied to collect, and pay, and dispose of for such uses as the acts of General Assembly shall establish and appoint; and further, of our said special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we do, by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto our said loving subject, Stephanus Van Cortlandt, and to his heirs and assignees forever, that the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees, shall and may, from time to time, from and after the expiration of twenty years next ensuing the date of these presents, return and send a discreet inhabitant in and of the said manor, to be a representative of the said manor in every Assembly after the expiration of the twenty years, to be summoned and holden within this our said Province, which representative so returned and sent shall be received into the House of Representatives of Assembly as a member of the said house, to have and enjoy such privileges as the other representatives returned and sent from the other counties and manors of this our said Province, have had and enjoyed in any former Assemblies holden within this our said Province, to have and to hold, possess and enjoy all and singular the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt and premises, with all their and every of their royalties and appurtenances unto the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees, to the sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof of him the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees forever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors in free and common soccage, as of our manor of East Greenwich,

in our County of Kent, within our realm of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year forever unto us, our heirs and successors, at our city of New York, on the feast day of the Annunciation of our blessed Virgin Mary, the yearly rent of forty shillings current money of our said Province, in lieu and stead of all other rents and services, dues, duties and demands whatsoever for the afore recited tracts and parcels of land and meadow, lordship and manor of Cortlandt and premises. In testimony whereof, we have caused the great seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed: witness our said trusty and well-beloved Colonel Benjamin Fletcher, our said Captain-General and Governor-in-chief of our Province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America, and Vice-Admiral of the same, our Lieutenant and Commander-in-chief of the militia and of all the forces by sea and land within our Colony of Connecticut, and of all the forts and places of strength within the same, in council at our fort in New York, the 17th day of June, in the ninth year of our reign, Anno Domini, 1697. Benjamin Fletcher, by his Excellency's command. David Jamison, Secretary.<sup>a</sup>

The following receipt for manorial quit-rent is endorsed, on the Royal Patent:

Received in quality, as Receiver General of this Province, this 16th day of August, 1720, of Mrs. Gertrude van Cortlandt, executrix of Stephanus van Cortlandt, deceased, the sum of eight pounds proclamation money in full of quit-rents, for all the lauds lying within the Manor of Cortlandt, to the 25th day of March last, pursuant to the within patent, as witness my hand.

J. BYVERLY, Collector.

Stephanus van Cortlandt, first lord of the Manor of Cortlandt, was the son of the Hon. Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt, immediately descended from one of the most noble families in Holland, their ancestors having emigrated thither, when deprived of the sovereignty of Courland.<sup>b</sup>

The orthography of the surname is properly Corte-landt; the first syllable Corte or Korte, meaning in the Dutch language short; <sup>c</sup> the second, landt, (land) literally the short land, a term expressing the peculiar form of the ancient Duchy of Courland in Russia.

Courland in Russia, (says Schiutzler,) formerly constituted a

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb., No. VII., 165.

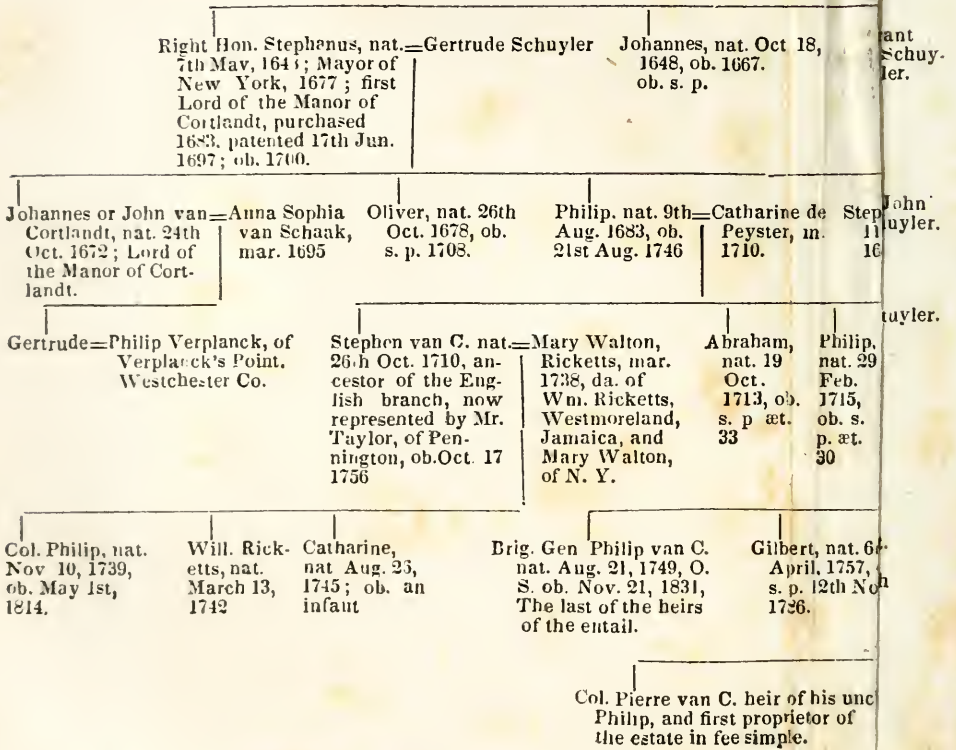
<sup>b</sup> Burke's Landed Gentry of England, vol. IV., 241.

<sup>c</sup> The use of the letter K in this word is modern, the C ancient.



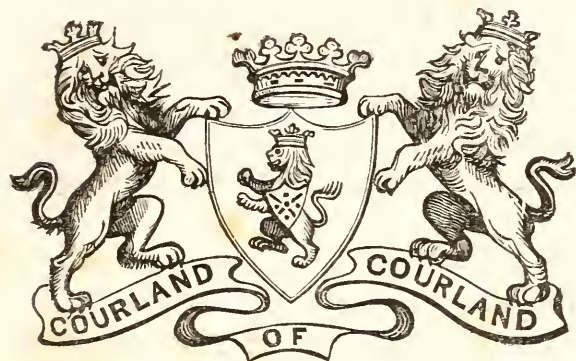


Ducal Arms.—Arg. a lion, rampant, gu. crowned or, for Courland, charged within a mantle lined ermine, surmounted with a crown. Family Arms.—Arg. thine



portion of Livonia, but was conquered by the Teutonic Knights in 1561. It subsequently became a fief of Poland. After the fall of that power it remained for a short time independent under its own Dukes, but in 1795 it was united to Russia.<sup>a</sup>

In the early part of the 17th century, we find the Dukes of Courland engaged in the military service of the United Netherlands. The Ducal troops are said to have rendered great assistance in the reduction of the towns of Karverden and Minden.



Ducal Arms of Courland.

The Dukes of Courland appear to have been represented in 1610 by the Right Hon. Steven van Cortlandt, then residing at Cortlandt, in South Holland, father of the above mentioned Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt.

Like his illustrious ancestors, Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt chose the military profession. As early as 1639, we find him attached to the military service of the Dutch West India Company. He subsequently emigrated to this country, and was soon after his arrival at New Amsterdam, advanced to the civil department as commissary of cargoes, at a salary of 30 guilders.

Of this individual, the historian of New Netherland remarks, "Oloff Stevensen, or Oloff Stevens van Cortlandt, as he subsequently signed his name, left the Company's service in 1648. On becoming a freeman he embarked in trade, built a brewery in New Amsterdam, and became wealthy. He was Colonel of the Burghery, or City train bands in 1619, in which year he was also appointed one of the nine men. He was one of the signers to the Remonstrance transmitted to Holland against the administration of Director Kieft, and the high-handed measures of Director Stuy-

<sup>a</sup> Schiutzler, La Russia, 585.

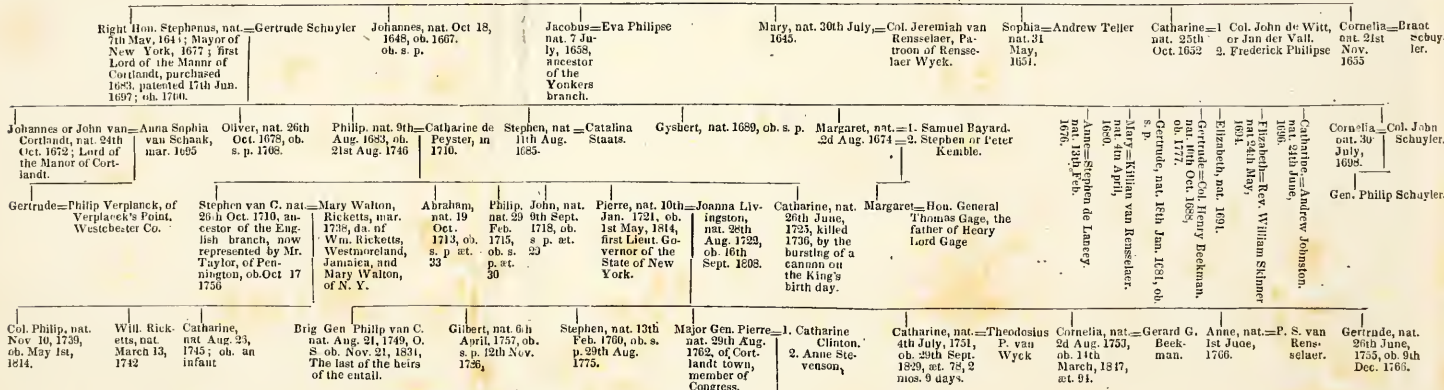
PEDIGREE OF VAN CORTLANDT OF CORTLANDT.

Ducal Arms.—Arg. a lion, rampant, gu. crowned or, for Courland, charged on the breast with an escutcheon, on which are placed the arms of the reigning Duke. Supporters.—Two lions crowned, or, the whole within a mantle lined ermine, surmounted with a crown. Family Arms.—Arg. the wings or arms of a wind-mill, saltierways sa. voided of the field, five estoiles gu. Crest.—An estoile gu. between two wings elevated arg.

Motto.—Virtus sibi munus.

Right Hon. Steven van Cortlandt, ob. at Cortlandt, South Holland.—

Right Hon. Oloff Stevensen, or Oloff Stevens van Kortlandt, =Annette Louckermans, da. of Covert as he subsequently signed his name; nat. at Cortlandt, Louckermans and Ariantje his wife, in South Holland, ob. cir. 1683. mar. 1642, ob. 1669.

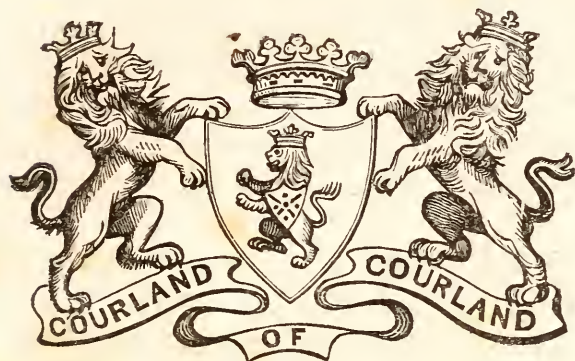


Col. Pierre van C. heir of his uncle =Catharine Beck, da. of  
Philip, and first proprietor of Theodrie Romeyn Beck,  
of the estate to fee simple. Esq. M. D. of Albany.

Pierre James Ste-  
venson  
Theod' Romeyn  
Catharine  
T. R.  
Anne Ste-  
venson.

portion of Livonia, but was conquered by the Teutonic Knights in 1561. It subsequently became a fief of Poland. After the fall of that power it remained for a short time independent under its own Dukes, but in 1795 it was united to Russia.<sup>a</sup>

In the early part of the 17th century, we find the Dukes of Courland engaged in the military service of the United Netherlands. The Ducal troops are said to have rendered great assistance in the reduction of the towns of Karverden and Minden.



Ducal Arms of Courland.

The Dukes of Courland appear to have been represented in 1610 by the Right Hon. Steven van Cortlandt, then residing at Cortlandt, in South Holland, father of the above mentioned Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt.

Like his illustrious ancestors, Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt chose the military profession. As early as 1639, we find him attached to the military service of the Dutch West India Company. He subsequently emigrated to this country, and was soon after his arrival at New Amsterdam, advanced to the civil department as commissary of cargoes, at a salary of 30 guilders.

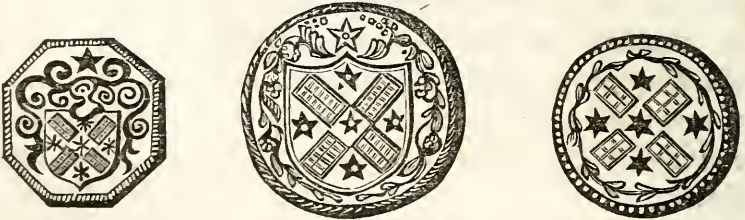
Of this individual, the historian of New Netherland remarks, "Oloff Stevensen, or Oloff Stevens van Cortlandt, as he subsequently signed his name, left the Company's service in 1648. On becoming a freeman he embarked in trade, built a brewery in New Amsterdam, and became wealthy. He was Colonel of the Burghery, or City train bands in 1619, in which year he was also appointed one of the nine men. He was one of the signers to the Remonstrance transmitted to Holland against the administration of Director Kieft, and the high-handed measures of Director Stuy-

<sup>a</sup> Schiutzler, La Russia, 585.

vesant. In 1654 he was elected Schepen of the city of New Amsterdam, and in 1655 appointed Burgomeester, which office he filled almost uninterruptedly to the close of the Dutch government. His place of residence was in Brouwer-straat, now Stone street. He had the character of being a worthy citizen, and a man most liberal in his charities." By his wife Ann Loockermans, "he had issue—seven children—Stephanus who married Gertrude Schuyler; Maria who married Jeremias van Rensselaer, 12th July, 1662; Catharine, who married first, John Derval, and secondly, Frederick Philips; Cornelia, who married Barent Schuyler; Jacob, who married Eva Philips; (ancestor of the Van Cortlandts of Yonkers;) Sophia, who married Andrew Teller, and John who died unmarried.

Oloff Stevens van Cortlandt died some time subsequent to 1683, leaving his son Stephanus, then a highly respectable merchant in New York."<sup>a</sup>

In 1664, the name of Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt, occurs as one of the six commissioners, appointed to meet the English Deputies at Governor Stuyvesant's house in the Bowery, to treat concerning the surrender of the colony. This individual subsequently signed the articles of capitulation. Among the wealthy



*Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt*

Autograph and Seals of Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt.

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 212.

citizens of New Amsterdam in 1653, occurs the name of Oloff Stevens, who contributed the sum of 150 guilders, or 60 dollars, towards putting the city in a state of defence.<sup>a</sup>

In a tax list for the city of New York, A. D., 1674, the estate of Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt is assessed at 45,000 guilders; his son's, Stephanus, at 5000 guilders.<sup>b</sup>

The Hon. Stephanus, (son of Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt,) was born on the 7th of May, 1643. This distinguished personage, upon the death of his brother-in-law, Jeremias van Rensselaer, A. D., 1675, became one of the three administrators of his estate, during the minority of Killian van Rensselaer, (then 12 years old.) Stephanus van Cortlandt had charge of the books, for which duty he received one hundred schepels of wheat.<sup>c</sup> In the year 1677 he was elected Mayor of the city of New York. He was also a member of the Governor's Council, and a Colonel in the provincial militia.

Stephanus van Cortlandt died in the year 1700, leaving by his wife Gertrude Schuyler, eleven children, who intermarried with the DePeysters, DeLanceys, Beeckmans, Skinners, Bayards, Johnsons, and VanRensselaers.

On the 14th of April, in the twelfth year of the reign of William the Third, King of England, &c., Stephanus van Cortlandt made and published his last will and testament as follows:

“ Know all men by these presents, that I, Stephanus van Cortlandt, of the city of New York, merchant, being distempered in body, but of good, sound and firm memory, praised be Almighty God therefor, do make, publish, and declare; this my last will and testament, (this 14th day of April, in the year of our Lord God and Saviour Jesus Christ, one thousand and seven hundred, in the twelfth year of the reign of our sovereign lord William the Third, King of England, Scotland and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c.,) in manner and form following, that is to say, I bequeath my soul into the hands of the Almighty God, my heavenly Father, from whom I received it, and by whom of his mere

<sup>a</sup> MS. Vol. City Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Moulton's Sketch of New Orange.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 212.

grace I trust to be saved and received into His eternal rest, through the merits of my dear Saviour and Redeemer Jesus Christ. My body, in hopes of a joyful resurrection, I commit to the earth, to be buried in such decent manner and form as my executrix hereafter named, shall think fit and convenient," &c.

Touching the distribution of what real estate it hath pleased God to endow me withal in this world, I devise to my eldest son Johannes van Cortlandt :

" All that neck and parcel of land on the east side of the Hudson River, at the entering of the highlands over against a certain place called Haverstraw, which is known to the Indians by the name of Meanagh, (Verplanck's Point,) separated from my other lands known to the Indians by the name of Appamaghogh, by a certain creek called Meanagh, and bounded on the other side by the creek that runs between my land and the land of Richard Abramse and others, together with the meadows that lie on said neck : to have and to hold said neck of land and premises, with their appurtenances, to the said Johannes, my son, his heirs and assigns forever. Item : I do give, devise and bequeath all my other lands, honours, mills, tenements, pastures, meadows, and their appurtenances, and other real estate whatsoever and wheresoever it be, unto my eleven children, by name Johannes, Margaret, Ann, Oliver, Mary, Philip, Stephanus, Gertrude, Elizabeth, Catharine, Cornelia, and to such other children as it shall please God to bless me with : to have and to hold unto them, their heirs and assigns, in equal proportions, according to their priority of birth, &c."\*

The above will was proved on the 2d day of June, A. D. 1700.

The will of Gertrude, his wife, bears date October, 1718. Upon the the 23d of December, A. D. 1706, Oliver van Cortlandt, one of the devisees of Stephanus, published his last will and testament, in which he devised all his right, title and interest, of and into his portion, to his ten surviving brothers and sisters, by which they became seized in fee of Cortlandt's Manor as tenants in common.

In the year 1730, (November 13th,) the aforesaid children and devisees drew up articles of agreement for the division of the Manor. Upon the 29th of May, 1733, a division was made of that part of the Manor situated north of the River Croton. It was not, however, until November the 4th, 1734, that a final partition, and

---

\* Surrogate's Office, N. Y. Lib. II. 78.



division, of the Manor took place between the surviving children and grandchildren of Col. Stephanus van Cortlandt, when they gave to each other releases in due form of law, viz.:

Philip Verplanck and Gertrude, his wife.

Mary Melin.

Samuel Bayard and Margaret, his wife.

Andrew Johnson, and Catharine, ditto.

Stephen de Lancey, and Anne, ditto.

Philip Van Cortlandt.

John Schuyler, and Cornelia, his wife.<sup>a</sup>

William Skinner, and Elizabeth, ditto.

The original partition deed is in the possession of Philip G. van Wyck, Esq. of Sing Sing. The share of each heir amounted nearly to 8000 acres.

By this partition of the Manor, the following lots were laid out to the devisees in Cortlandt town, viz.:

River lot No. 1, to Philip van Cortlandt; No. 2, Philip Verplanck, who married Gertrude, only daughter and sole heiress of Johannes van Cortlandt, one of the original devisees.

No. 3, William Skinner, who married Elizabeth van Cortlandt. This individual "was the first rector of St. Peter's Church, Perth Amboy; his real name was MacGregor, and he was among those of that clan, proscribed after the rebellion of 1715; he had received a superior education, and was endued with a strong mind; having received holy orders, he was appointed missionary to Amboy, in New Jersey, 1721, and died rector, A. D. 1757."<sup>b</sup>

No. 4, Stephen van Cortlandt; No. 5, Mr. Melin; No. 6, Stephen de Lancey; No. 7, Margaret Bayard, widow of Samuel Bayard; No. 8, Mr. John Schuyler: this lot had been sold prior to partition. North lot No. 1, Andrew Johnson. We have previously shown that Verplanck's Point, (by the will of Stephanus van Cortlandt,) passed to his son Johannes or John, whose daughter married Philip Verplanck.

In the year 1734, we find Philip Verplanck, of Cortlandt's Manor, and Gertrude, his wife, only daughter and heiress of Johan-

---

<sup>a</sup> The father and mother of Gen. Philip Schuyler.

<sup>b</sup> Whitehead's East Jersey, under the Proprietors.

nes van Cortlandt, the eldest son and heir of Colonel Stephanus, late of the city of New York, deceased, and John Lent, of the said manor, on the other part, bargaining, selling, devising, and leasing unto the said John Lent—

“ All that certain neck or tract of land and meadow, situate, lying and being in the manor of Cortlandt, being bounded on the east by the land commonly called Appamaghpogh, and a certain creek, called Meanagh, on the north by the land now belonging to Hercules Lent, and on the south and west by Hudson’s River, containing 1000 acres, the lessee yielding and paying therefor the yearly rent of one pepper-corn on the feast day of Saint Michael, the Archangel.”<sup>a</sup>

Above Verplanck’s Point extended the patent of Hercules Lent, bounded on the north by Magregaries’ creek.

Lot No. 9 was the property of Andrew Johnson, Esq. ; No. 10, the portion of Gertrude Beeckman : this lady possessed the highlands north of the Peekskill creek.

The division of the Manor, east of the river lots in this town, consisted of lot No. 1, distinguished by the name of the south lot, the property of Philip van Cortlandt, Esq. ; also, north lot No. 1, the property of Andrew Johnson, Esq. No. 1, south of the Croton, belonged to Philip van Cortlandt, from whom it passed to the Hon. Pierre van Cortlandt. The following advertisement, dated March the 18th, 1762, relates to the sale of the above lot. “ Conditions of sale of south lot No. 1 : 978 acres of land situated in the south-west corner of Cortlandt’s manor, and corner of north lot No. 6, belonging to the estate of Philip van Cortlandt, Esq., deceased, above mentioned, sometime posted in the New York Gazette, and now to be sold at public vendue, pursuant to an act of General Assembly, passed for that purpose and agreeable to a map hereunto annexed. Pierre Van Cortlandt, surviving executor of Philip, deceased, will give a title agreeable to the act of Assembly, &c. The lands are to be sold to the highest bidder, and the purchase money to be immediately paid as soon as the deeds are given. Dated Manor of Cortlandt, at the ferry house, near the mouth of Croton River.”<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. lib. G. 681.

<sup>b</sup> From the original document in possession of Philip G. van Wyck, Esq.

Upon the 30th of March, 1762, John de Milt and Susannah his wife, conveyed to Pierre van Cortlandt two tracts of land, the first being a part of lot No. 6, and the second lot No. 1 south of the Croton. The heirs of the above grantee still hold lot No. 1. Lot No. 2 belonged to Oliver de Lancey, and lot No. 3 to John Watts.

Philip van Cortlandt, the eldest surviving son of Stephanus, was born on the 9th of August, 1683. He married Catharine de Peyster, and on the failure of heirs male to his elder brother, John, continued the line of the family. Upon the death of Philip, (which took place 21st August, 1746,) his property became divided among his six children, viz., Stephen, Abraham, Philip, John, Pierre and Catharine. Stephen, the eldest, married Mary Walton Ricketts. Their descendants at present reside in England, and have intermarried with many members of the British nobility.<sup>a</sup>

The fifth son, Pierre van Cortlandt, ultimately became the oldest surviving representative of the Van Cortlandt family in America, and the heir at law of the entail.

Upon the breaking out of the revolutionary war, Pierre van Cortlandt was appointed president of the committee of public safety, and was subsequently elected lieutenant governor of this state. Throughout the trying period of the revolution, he appears to have been the principal administrator of the state government, (George Clinton being necessarily engaged in military duties.) His patriotic zeal rendered him so obnoxious to the enemy, that the British governor set a bounty on his head.

The following obituary notice of this illustrious individual occurs in the Gazette office of May 17, 1814:

“Pierre Van Cortlandt, early took an active part against every oppression of the British government upon the colonies. He was chosen into the first Provincial Congress, was a member of the committee which formed the constitution of this state, and was honored by the suffrages of his country at the first election under the new government with the station of lieutenant governor, and continued to be elected to that office for eighteen years successively. He was the friend and confident of that great patriot,

---

<sup>a</sup> The will of Philip Van Cortlandt was proved 17th November, 1748. Surrogate's Office, N. Y., No. XVI., 375.

George Clinton. In the revolution he shared the fate of the friends of their country; his family were obliged to abandon their homes in the manor of Cortlandt, and take refuge in the interior. Firm and undismayed in adversity; the ill success of our arms was a stimulus to greater exertions. He was one of those who, relying on the justice of their cause, put their trust in God and stood firm at the post of danger. In prosperity he was not too much elated, but held a temperate and uniform course, having in view only the independence of the United States and the safety of his country.

In the senate of this state he presided with dignity and propriety, nor ever suffered his opinion to be known until called upon constitutionally to decide; and his vote was then given with promptness, uninfluenced by party feelings, and evidencing the convictions of a sound and honest mind. In the year 1795 he declined a re-election as lieutenant governor, and retired into private life."

The Hon. Pierre van Cortlandt died on the morning of the first day of May instant, at his seat at Croton River in this town, in the 94th year of his age, leaving issue by his wife Joanna Livingston, Philip, Gilbert, Stephen, Pierre, Catharine, Cornelia, Anne and Gertrude.

Philip, the eldest son, was born in the city of New York on the first day of September, 1749. This individual was brought up at the manor house on the Croton, and subsequently received a liberal education in the vicinity of Coldingham, N. Y.

At the early age of nineteen he commenced business as a land surveyor; he had also the management of an extensive flouring mill and country store. Soon after the destruction of Lexington and Concord (by the British troops) he threw up business, and agreeing with his patriotic father in sentiment, determined by an appeal to arms, to obtain either liberty or death. In this intention he was strongly opposed by his tory relations, who used every effort to induce him to join their standard. Governor Tryon at the same time forwarded him a major's commission in the Cortlandt militia. This document he subsequently destroyed, and received in lieu thereof a lieutenant colonel's commission in the Continental service, bearing date June, 1775, signed John Hancock,

President of Congress. He continued to hold the above command in the 4th New York regiment until November the 28th, 1776, when he received from General Washington a colonel's commission in the 2d New York regiment. In this capacity he served at the battles of Stillwater and Saratoga. In both of these actions the New York regiment suffered severely. In the winter of 1778 he was ordered to protect the frontiers against the depredations of Brant, the Indian chief, who had destroyed much valuable property and murdered several of the defenceless inhabitants. In pursuance of these orders Col. van Cortlandt marched to Laghawack, where he posted his command. Soon afterwards having received fresh orders from the commander-in-chief, he was on the eve of marching when Brant, supposing he had left the neighborhood, prematurely set fire to an adjoining village. The colonel immediately started his whole command in hot pursuit. Upon the first tidings, however, of their approach, Brant fled to the neighboring hills. In his diary Gen. Philip van Cortlandt remarks, "As I approached him (Brant) he being on the hills, and seeing me leaning against a pine tree waiting for the closing up of my men, ordered a rifle Indian to kill me, but fortunately he over-shot me, the ball passing three inches over my head. I then pursued him, but could not overtake him, as he ran through a large swamp."

In the year 1779-80, Col. van Cortlandt was a member of the court that tried Gen. B. Arnold for improper conduct. His own views of the matter are thus recorded in his diary: "Gen. Arnold being under arrest for improper conduct in Philadelphia, while he commanded there, I was chosen one of the court-martial, Maj. Gen. Howe, President. There were also in that court four officers who had been at Ticonderoga when Col. Hazen was called on for trial, &c.; we were for cashiering Arnold, but the majority overruled, and he was finally sentenced to be reprimanded by the commander-in chief. Had all the court known Arnold's former conduct as well as myself he would have been dismissed the service," &c.

In the year 1780 Col. van Cortlandt was selected as one of the colonels to command a regiment of infantry under Major General La Fayette. A letter is still preserved in the family

from the Marquis de la Fayette to the colonel, dated *Light Camp*, 16th September, 1780, and the following from the commander-in-chief to Col. van Cortlandt :

SIR :—You will take charge of the clothing, the boats, entrenching tools, and such other stores as shall be committed to your care by the quarter master-general ; with these you are to proceed (Sir in the order they are mentioned) to Springfield by the way of Sufferan, Pompton, the Two Bridges, and Chatham. When you arrive at Springfield you will put yourself under the order of Major Gen. Lincoln, or any other your superior officers commanding at that place. You will also, if occasion should require it, alter the above route agreeably to orders from either Major General Lincoln or the quarter-master-general.

You will be particularly careful to collect all your men that are in proper condition to march, and will use your best endeavors to prevent desertion.

Given at King's Bridge this 25th day of August, 1781.

GEO. WASHINGTON.

At the battle of Yorktown, in Virginia, Col. van Cortlandt appears to have served on piquet guard ; for his conduct on this occasion he was advanced to the rank of brigadier general. To his care the commander-in-chief entrusted 700 British and Hessian prisoners of war, which he conducted in safety to Fredericksburg. During the spring of 1782 his camp on the Flat Fields was visited by General and Lady Washington.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the suspension of hostilities Gen. van Cortlandt retired to the manor house at Croton ; he was afterwards chosen one of the commissioners of forfeitures, and represented for sixteen years this district in Congress, declining re-election in 1811. Gen. van Cortlandt accompanied the Marquis de la Fayette in his tour of the United States in 1824. The general died at his house on the Croton November 21st, 1831, and with him expired the entail. By his will he bequeathed to his brother, Gen. Pierre van Cortlandt, 600 acres ; to his three sisters, Anne van Rensselaer, Cornelia Beeckman, and Catharine van Wyck, 200 acres each ; and his western lands to his nephew, the present Philip G. van Wyck of Sing Sing. The latter gentleman has since inherited

---

<sup>a</sup> Extracts from Gen. Philip van Cortlandt's diary in the possession of his nephew, Philip G. van Wyck, Sing Sing.

his mother's portion consisting of 200 acres on north lot No. 1, south of the Croton, together with 112 acres north of that river.

The first independent election for officers of the town of Cortlandt took place April 1st, 1788, when the following individuals were chosen officers for the year ensuing :—

Philip van Cortlandt, Supervisor.

Joseph Travis, Town Clerk.

Daniel Birdsall.	}	Poor Masters.
Nathaniel Brown,		
Pierre van Cortlandt,		

David Ferris, Constable.

John Paulding, Collector.

John Jones,	}	Fence Viewers.
Nathaniel Brown,		
John Paulding,		
Bariah Richardson,		
Abraham Merritt,		

Hercules Lent,	}	Commissioners of Highways.
Jonathan Ferris,		
Pierre van Cortlandt,		

Abraham Merritt,	}	Assessors.
Henry Lent, son of		
Hercules,		
Jarvis Dusenberry,		
Caleb Barton,		
John Haight,		

John Jones,	}	Pound Masters.
Henry Griffen,		
Abraham Merritt,		
John Paulding,		

Gerritt Storms,	}	Highway Masters.
Philip van Cortlandt,		
Elisha Hammon,		
Joshua Bishop,		
Thomas Conkling,		
John Garrison,		
Joseph Mandeville,		
Richard Curry, jun.,		
John Ferris,		
John Lee,		
Daniel Hall,		
Ludlow Haight,		
Sam'l. Field,		
Benj. McCord,		

- Peekskill, the principal village in Cortlandt town, is situated on the east shore of the Bay of the same name. This place com-

mands every advantage of river navigation, besides an extensive inland trade, of which it forms the depôt.

By the Mohegan Indians the place was called Sachoes, a term derived from the adjoining lands. The small stream intersecting the village was called by them Magrigaries.

The Dutch first denominated the village Peckskill from Jan Peck, one of their early navigators, who, mistaking the present Annsville creek for the proper passage through the race, ran his yacht ashore on the former. Here he subsequently erected a habitation and spent the winter.

The earliest settlement in this neighborhood commenced one mile north-east of Peckskill, on the property of Capt. John McCoy. The landing place was then at Pemart's dock, near the head of the tide waters of the creek.

On the 5th day of August, 1745, occurs a sale of land from Andrew Johnson and Isabella his wife, daughter of Stephanus van Cortlandt, to Caleb Hall and Palatiah Haws, consisting of a part of lot No. 2, situated in great front lot No. 9, beginning on south side of Peck's creek, containing 351 acres, excepting 16 acres of land conveyed by said Johnson to Mrs. Gertrude Beeckman.<sup>a</sup>

Fifteen years subsequent to the above sale, Andrew Johnson conveys to Caleb Hall, Joseph Travis and Palatiah Haws, "lands situated at a place called Peckskill."<sup>b</sup>

In the year 1764, Daniel Birdsall, Nathaniel Brown, Joseph Travis, and Capt. Isaac Conklin, commenced the settlement of the present village. At that early period there was little or no business transacted here. The first store was erected by Daniel Birdsall in the vicinity of middle dock, near the mill of Andrew Johnson, Esq. Captain Swim is said to have sailed the first sloop from Pemart's dock, A. D. 1773.

Peckskill now contains about 3,000 inhabitants, 250 dwelling houses, 1 bank, 10 churches of different denominations, 6 hotels and public houses, 30 stores, 2 tanneries, 2 soap manufactories, 1 hat, 2 cabinet, and 3 carriage manufactories. Also several iron foundries, some of which are very extensive and manufacture

---

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. G., p. 403.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. H., p. 344.



large quantities of stoves and plough castings, belonging to the Messrs. Thos. Southard, Taylor, Flagler & Co. ; Minor, Horton & Co. ; Reuben R. Finch & Co. ; C. A. Depew & Co. ; Whitney & Montanya ; Rikeman & Seymour, and Judson H. Gilbert & Son ; besides the salamander fire brick manufactory of Abraham M. Lord, and C. C. Queen's manufactory of portable blacksmith's forges. There are now owned in this village 1 steamboat engaged in transporting passengers and produce, 6 sloops besides a steamboat which runs daily to and from the city of New York, landing at Sing Sing, Tarrytown, Yonkers, &c. The Hudson river steamboats also land passengers several times daily at Caldwell's Landing, opposite Peekskill, affording almost hourly communication with the city of New York, by the aid of a steam ferry boat.

The village of Peekskill was incorporated A. D., 1839, under the style and title of the "Corporation of the Village of Peekskill." Its officers consist of a president and four trustees. The Peekskill Academy is a flourishing chartered institution, delightfully situated on Oak Hill. Near it is still standing the tree on which was hung, during the revolutionary war, Daniel Strang, the British spy.<sup>a</sup> "One Daniel Strang, (says Thatcher,) was found lurking about our army at Peekskill, and on examination enlisting orders were found sewed in his clothes. He was immediately tried as a spy from the enemy, sentenced to suffer death, and was executed accordingly."<sup>b</sup>

The most interesting evidence, (remarks a recent traveller,) that there is a spark of public spirit existing in this ancient settlement which will sooner or later burst into a flame, is to be found in the establishment of a high school, and the erection of a very neat, spacious and appropriate edifice for that purpose on a most delightful eminence, where the healthful and invigorating breeze from the towering mountains in the vicinity pours forth its medicinal influence, and where the soul alive to the sentiments of beauty, variety and sublimity, can view with rapture the variegated and picturesque scenery, the beautiful and expansive bay, the towering and gigantic Dunderberg, the "race," and

---

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Gazeteer.

<sup>b</sup> Thatcher's Journal.

the opening of the majestic Highlands. But my pen affords an altogether inadequate description of the scene.

Peekskill is certainly well situated for purposes of education, furnishing as it does facilities for communicating daily, nay, almost hourly, with the great city; and from my own personal inference, as well as the testimony of others, I doubt whether there is a place in the whole range of the Hudson, where health can be more conveniently sought, or more surely gained.

The academy was built with a capital stock of \$7000, divided into shares of five dollars each, and taken up principally by the inhabitants of the village. The principal, Mr. Albert Wells, is a very worthy, intelligent teacher. The present number of pupils is about sixty. Board is furnished in the same building to scholars whose parents do not reside in the village.<sup>a</sup>

Near the entrance of the village stands the Westchester Bank. This institution was first established in Peekskill in 1833, with a capital of \$200,000, and General Pierre van Cortlandt elected President. It is at present in a flourishing condition, and like the hills of Westchester, has so far stood firm and unmoved amid troublesome times. The stock has sold at almost as great an advance as ever the United States Bank stock did. The Westchester Bank declared its first dividend six months after its establishment. The bills contain a beautiful vignette representing the capture of André by the three farmers of Westchester County; besides a neat engraving of the Hon. Pierre van Cortlandt. There is also a bust of this individual in the bank, presented by his son, Gen. Pierre van Cortlandt.

The present board of directors consist of :

Pierre van Cortlandt,	Joseph H. Anderson,
James B. Travis,	Ebenezer Foster,
Philip Clapp,	Isaac Seymour,
Frederick W. Requa,	Jasper S. Odell,
Samuel Brewster,	Charles A. G. Depew,
Aaron Vark,	John Williams,
	James Bailey.

---

<sup>a</sup> Letters about the Hudson, p. 21, 22.

Isaac Seymour, Esq. has held the office of cashier with distinguished ability since the first organization of the institution.

The Episcopal Church of St. Peter's is a handsome gothic structure of wood, situated on the north side of the village. The interior contains a neat chancel, gallery, and organ. Against the north wall of the church is placed a marble tablet, inscribed as follows :

M. S.

ANN STEVENSON,

The affectionate and beloved wife of

Gen. PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT,

of this township and county,

who departed this life at Albany, March 20th, 1821,

translated by God to a kingdom of happiness and glory,

aged 46 years, 6 months and 16 days.

Early instructed by her pious mother in the doctrines and principles of the gospel, this excellent woman became exemplary as a communicant of the church when only thirteen years old, and continuing to be a sincere and humble follower of her Saviour, even unto her life's end, was endeared to all who knew her by her Christian virtues, and for a pure and devoted attachment to Christ's holy apostolic church, to the members of this congregation, who, as a memorial of her worth and mark of respect for her venerable consort and her only son, benefactors of this parish, have erected this tablet.

—◆—  
REQUIESCAT IN PACE.  
—◆—

There is a fine bell in the tower bearing the following inscription : " Cast by G. H. Holbrook, East Medway, Mass. 1841. Presented to Saint Peter's Church, Peekskill, Westchester County, New York, by Gen. Pierre van Cortlandt, August 29th, 1841." The marble font was the gift of his son, Colonel Pierre van Cortlandt.

The site of this church was formerly occupied by a military magazine, destroyed by the British army in 1777. Large quantities of grape shot have been found in the immediate vicinity. Adjoining the building on the south is situated the family vault of Ward B. Howard, Esq. (now president of the village corporation,) in which repose the mortal remains of his late wife, Lucia

Howard, daughter of the late Hon. Robert Johnston.<sup>a</sup> Also the remains of his nephew, William J. Mitchell, (son of the late Chauncey Mitchell, Esq.) who was unfortunately killed by the explosion of the steamer Gen. Jackson, off Verplanck's Point, June 7th, 1831.

This church was first incorporated 19th July, 1838, under the title of the "Wardens and Vestrymen of St. Peter's Chapel, in the village of Peekskill," on which occasion Pierre Van Cortlandt and Samuel Marks, were elected wardens, and Daniel D. Smith, Samuel T. Wood, John Collett, Elihu E. Baker, Alex. Fairly, Wm. B. Birdsall, Nicholas Cruger, and Isaac Seymour, vestrymen.<sup>b</sup>

A third incorporation occurs under the title of "St. Peter's Church of Cortlandt," 28th August, 1840.<sup>c</sup>

This church is annexed to a much older one of the same name, situated two miles north of the village, where occasional services are still performed.

The Dutch Reformed Church is a neat wooden edifice, surmounted with a spire of the same material, standing nearly south of the Episcopal Church. Above the entrance is a tablet inscribed—

The Van Nest  
Reformed Dutch Church,  
Founded A. D. 1839.

Abraham Van Nest and George Douglass, Esquires, appear to have been liberal benefactors towards the erection of this church. A silver communion service was also presented by the former individual. The first Reformed Dutch Church located in this village, stood on the hill west of the Episcopal Church, adjoining the Divin property. Nothing remains at present to mark its site, save a small enclosure containing a few interments. In this cemetery is a plain marble monument to the memory of Lieut. George McChain, which bears the following truly classical inscription, composed by the Hon. R. R. Pray, Chancellor of the State of Mississippi :

<sup>a</sup> Mrs. Howard died on the 8th of March, 1834.

<sup>b</sup> See Religious Soc. lib. B. p. 56.

<sup>c</sup> Lib. B. p. 60.

Interred.

Near this stone lie the remains of  
 GEORGE McCHAIN,  
 Lieutenant in the sixth regiment of the  
 United States Infantry, and distinguished  
 for his valour in the battles of Chippeway and  
 Bridgewater. In him were united the energy  
 of the soldier, with the easy politeness of the  
 gentleman. Impressed with the great truths  
 of religion, he was hospitably, gentle, sober, just,  
 and contemplative. From the ardour of his  
 love of country, he early devoted himself to her  
 service, where he was brave without vanity, and  
 magnanimous without ostentation. To  
 perpetuate the memory of so beloved a character,  
 his mourning friends have erected this humble stone,  
 a frail memorial of their veneration for his virtues,  
 and a faint testimony of their grief for a misfortune,  
 alas! indelibly engraven on their hearts.  
 He died on the 19th day of October, 1818,  
 Aged 32 years.

Also monuments to the memory of his father John McChain, one of the Westchester guides in the revolutionary war, and the Rev. Allen Blair, who departed this life June 14, aged 72 years; also Jane, wife of St. John Constant, who died April 2, 1817.

The Van Nest Reformed Dutch Church in Peekskill, was incorporated on the 3d of January, 1843, and called by the above name, "in consideration of the private virtues and public liberality of Abraham Van Nest of New York." The consistory also resolved to confide the management to a board of nine trustees. The following gentlemen were elected to this office, on the 16th of January, 1843: James Goetchius, William Leavins, John P. Cruger, Washington S. Whitney, J. Henry Ferris, Thomas Nelson, Hercules Lent, Charles A. G. Depew and N. S. Jacobs.<sup>a</sup>

The Presbyterian Church is situated on the south side of Margigaries brook, upon land the gift of Nathaniel Brown, Esq.

The first edifice was erected A. D. 1799; the principal benefactors towards which, were Stephen Brown, Esq., and his mother-in-law, Mrs. Hannah Brewer. In possession of the present Dr.

---

<sup>a</sup> Relig. Soc. Lib. B. 80, 82.

Brewer of this place is preserved an account of monies expended by Messrs Samuel Haight and Stephen Brown, in building the meeting house in Peekskill. Total expenditure £371 8s. 1d. dated Peekskill, 13 Sept. 1799.

Samuel Haight, }  
Stephen Brown, } *Trustees.*

During the ministry of the Rev. Silas Constant, a division took place in the congregation. The seceding party erected a new church, but subsequently became merged in the Reformed Dutch Church in 1826. The present building which was erected in 1845, is a handsome wooden structure, surmounted with a neat tower and spire; the former contains a large bell and clock. In the cemetery adjoining the church are monuments to Capt. Isaac Conklin, who departed this life, January, 13th, 1815, aged 68 years, Zebulon Philips, and Samuel Strang, M. D., and others. There are also inclosures belonging to the Brown, Bedle and Rundle families, in which numerous interments have been made. This church is in connection with the 2d New York Presbytery.

The following is a list of the pastors and supplies of this church from the year 1800. The Rev. Silas Constant, A. D. 1800; Rev. John Manly, Rev. Abraham Purdy, Rev. Andrew Thompson, Rev. Abner Brundage, Rev. John H. Leggett, A. D. 1825-7; Rev. Peter Lockwood, Rev. William Marshall, Rev. D. M. Halliday, present minister.

The Independent Presbyterian congregation in the village of Peekskill was incorporated 29th September, 1813; John Lent, John Constant, and Samuel Strang first trustees.<sup>a</sup>

The new school Presbyterian church of this place was first organized November 17, 1841, by a committee from the North River Presbytery.

The present church edifice was erected A. D. 1845, and dedicated to the service of God 9th of April, 1845; the society was incorporated by its present name July 29th, 1846. The first pastor was the Rev. Daniel Brown. This individual was installed May 4th, 1842. Mr. Brown died on the 8th of November, 1846,

---

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A. 102, 188.

and was succeeded by the Rev. Livingston Willard (present pastor) April 15th, 1847.

The Baptist society must have been established here at an early date; this appears from the following document, entitled an agreement made the 17th day of December, A. D. 1772, by and between the subscribers, as follows, to wit :

Whereas the society of people called Baptists, by way of voluntary subscription, have lately erected and built a house for public worship at or near a place called Peekskill, in the manor of Cortlandt, and as there is not as yet a sufficient sum of money raised to pay for the building said house, we the subscribers do agree upon and appoint Caleb Hall, of said manor of Cortlandt, to hire a sum of money sufficient to pay the deficiency ; and we jointly and severally promise, and oblige ourselves, our heirs, executors and administrators, to pay to the said Caleb Hall, his executors or administrators, one equal part of the sum that he shall so hire, according to the proportion of our first subscription: Provided that if there shall be money raised by way of subscription sufficient to pay the cost laid out in building said house, that the money so hired shall be paid out of the same. In witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands.

Caleb Hall, Sen.  
Isaac Horton, Sen.  
Daniel Hall,  
Richard Williams,  
Nathan Elliot,

John Poun,  
Joshua Horton,  
Caleb Hall, Jr.  
Nathan Brown,  
Oliver Yeomans.

The first Baptist church stood near General Pierre van Cortlandt's, directly on the spot now occupied by the district school-house.

The present society was organized in 1843, under the style and title of the First Baptist Church in Peekskill. The meeting house, which is valued at \$3,400, was erected August, 1847, and dedicated the 8th of April, 1847, to the service of Almighty God. On this occasion the Rev. W. R. Williams, D. D., delivered the dedicatory sermon. This church belongs to the senior Baptist association. Upon the 31st October, 1843, the Rev. Edward Conover was duly elected pastor ; this individual was succeeded, November 25, 1844, by the Rev. C. C. Williams. The present pastor is the Rev. P. Buel, who commenced his ministrations 23d August, 1846. The communicants belonging to this church average forty.

The Methodist Episcopal church in Peekskill was first incorporated 2d August, 1808; Bethune Washburn, Gilbert Weeks and John Spock, trustees.<sup>a</sup> The Methodist society must have been in existence, however, some time previous to the above incorporation, for on the 26th February, 1795, we find John Drake and Catharine his wife conveying three-quarters of an acre of land in this place to William Hallock, Thomas Clark, William Weeks, Abraham Travis and Stephen Newby, managers of the Methodist society. The present church edifice, erected A. D. 1837, occupies the site of a still older building erected in 1811: to it is attached a small grave yard. The communicants of this church number two hundred.

The Protestant Methodist society was first established here in 1827, and incorporated 23d November, 1836; John Spock, William R. Steel and Thomas Blackney trustees.<sup>b</sup>

The Wesleyan or Primitive Methodists originally belonged to the old Methodist society, from which body they seceded in 1839. Their first pastor was the Rev. John Miles. The church edifice was erected in 1839, and incorporated A. D. 1842.

The society of Friends was first organized here in 1804, and the oldest house erected in 1811, upon land given for that purpose by Nathaniel Brown, Esq.

One of the most interesting objects in the village of Peekskill is the old Birdsall residence, situated directly opposite the Bank. This house during the American Revolution was occupied occasionally by General Washington as head-quarters when the army happened to be stationed here. In this time honored mansion the visitor is still shown the sleeping apartments of Washington and his noble companion in arms La Fayette. The furniture occupies nearly the same position as at that day, and the old clock still marks the passing hour as it did seventy-seven years ago. The colored woman who waited upon the illustrious visitors died in 1844. The Rev. George Whitfield also preached in one of the parlors.

The village landing is pleasantly situated at the foot of a high bank, commanding a fine view of the Peekskill Bay, the Dun-

---

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A. p. 102.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. B. p. 47.



derbarrach, Rahway Hook, and the entrance to the Highlands; directly opposite is Caldwell's Landing in Rockland county, with which the Westchester shore is connected by a ferry. Across this ferry the American troops were frequently transported during the Revolution. In the vicinity of the landing there was formerly a silver mine in operation; the following register of its discovery occurs in the Secretary of State's office.

<i>No.</i>	<i>name of Discoverer.</i>	<i>In which County.</i>	<i>Recorded.</i>	<i>Book.</i>	<i>Page.</i>
	Gilbert Weeks.	W. C. Co., town of Cortlandt, within a quarter of a mile of Peekskill landing, on the north side of McGregory's brook silver ore.	March 16, 1796.	26.	190.

Numerous minerals are also found in this neighborhood, such as Epidote, Garnet, &c. Spheue is said to have been discovered near Peekskill in an aggregate of quartz. Sulphate of barytes exists in the region of Anthony's Nose.

Gregory's brook (sometimes called Magrigarie's creek,) rises in Magrigarie's pond, a few miles east of the village. This rapid stream, after flowing through a deep and wooded glen, empties into the Hudson near the landing place.

The romantic hills which abound in the immediate vicinity of Peekskill are many of them connected with stirring events during the revolutionary war. Among the most prominent is Gallows hill, famous as the spot where the spy Palmer was executed by order of General Putnam, whose laconic reply to Sir Henry Clinton, the British commander, deserves an enduring record. It appears that Clinton had sent up a flag of truce from New York, demanding the release of Edmund Palmer, his lieutenant, who had been detected as a spy in the American camp. The brief and emphatic answer of Putnam runs thus:

“*Head Quarters, 7th August, 1777.*”

“Sir: Edmund Palmer, an officer in the enemy's service, was taken as a spy lurking within the American lines. He has been

tried as a spy, condemned as a spy, and shall be executed as a spy ; and the flag is ordered to depart immediately.

ISRAEL PUTNAM."

" P. S.—He has been accordingly executed."

From this circumstance the hill derived its present appellation. The story of Palmer's sad fate is thus graphically described in the republican paper of Peekskill :—

" In the summer of the year 1780, and for some time preceding and following, on the southern and eastern sides of the hill, and along the rich valley which lies at its base, was quartered a division of the American army under the command of Gen. Putnam. Disaffection and treachery prevailed on every side ; men there were who from fear or from other base causes refused to take part on the side of virtue and patriotism, and remained as neutrals, wavering between each party, and acting as their personal safety seemed most to require. Many, calling themselves Whigs, were constantly endeavoring by covert means to blast the hopes and discourage the gallant few who were struggling at the side of liberty, by giving to their enemies that information of their situation and prospects which they had obtained by the most abject treachery. To destroy these evils required the greatest vigilance and severity on the part of the American commander. Early one morning, in the month of August, a party of the militia, three in number, brought a young man by the name of Palmer, whom they had taken on suspicion of his being a spy and having enlisting orders from Tryon, the British general then commanding in New York. The enormity of his offence was such, that if proved, it demanded the most vigorous punishment. A court martial was therefore immediately convened, and from the circumstances given to the court by those who arrested him, and the evidence of many of the country people, who gave an unfavorable account of his conduct, he was convicted and sentenced to be executed as a spy.

" The prisoner was a young man of athletic form, and possessed elegant attainments, had a wife and children then residing in Yorktown, the place of his nativity, and was connected with some of the most respectable families of West Chester. The most urgent intercessions were immediately made to obtain his release, but in vain ; the stern justice of Putnam was not to be overcome by any feelings of pity. The British general wrote a letter to the American commander, demanding his prisoner, and threatening him with vengeance if a compliance with his demand was not immediately acceded to ; but he received for answer that the prisoner was " taken as a spy, tried as a spy, convicted as a spy, and that he should be hung as a spy." Here the matter rested until the morning previous to his execution, when the wife of Palmer presented herself before the commanding officer in his tent. She had come there with her child in her arms, to throw herself with humble submission at the foot of the man who by a word, she thought, could relieve her aching heart of its load of mis-

ery. In the artless and winning eloquence of a bursting heart, she represented to him the awful situation in which she would be placed should the fearful sentence that had been passed upon her husband be carried into effect. She implored him, by every tie of affection that bound two young hearts together—for the sake of the infant she pressed to her bosom, who, if left fatherless, would wander through the world disgraced and an orphan—by his own feelings as a father and a husband, to have mercy on him who was all to her this world could bestow. Her tears, her deep distress and her passionate exclamations fell deep into the heart of the war-worn soldier; but they did not alter his stern resolve. With a dignity of purpose and a countenance that told how intense were the feelings then glowing within him, he told her he must die. Insensible she was carried from his presence and conveyed back to her friends. The following morning, at the hour appointed for his execution, on an enclosed spot of ground near the summit, on the eastern side of the hill, was seen a gallows rudely constructed of logs, with a rope appended thereto. The trees and fences were filled with men, women and children who had come far and near to witness the awful scene, and the prisoner was led out to the appointed spot where his last view of the world was taken, and prepare his mind for its sudden transit into eternity. It is but just to say, that whether hung guilty or innocent, he met his fate with the fortitude of a man. The body, after being suspended a suitable time, was taken down and given to his friends for interment.”

Such is the story of Gallows Hill. The sad fabric of logs which had been raised for his execution remained standing for several years after the war, an object of dread and superstition to the more ignorant of the country people whose daily avocations compelled them to pass it.<sup>a</sup>

The summit of Gallows Hill embraces a fine view of the river, the scenery of the race and surrounding country. The remains of Fort Look Out are situated on the adjoining hill. During the revolutionary contest, the village of Peekskill appears to have suffered severely from the enemy's incursions. “Before the British army took the field, for the third campaign of 1777, (says Mr. Smith) two enterprizes for the destruction of American stores were undertaken. Col. Bird landed with about 500 men at Peekskill, March 23, fifty miles from New York. The few Americans who were stationed as a guard at this place, on the approach of the British, fired the principal store-houses and retired. The loss

---

<sup>a</sup> Westchester and Putnam Republican, May 14, 1833.

of the provisions was considerable.”<sup>a</sup> “September, 1777, the enemy came out on both sides of the Hudson simultaneously in considerable force, consisting of from two to three thousand men, on which occasion the American barracks and store-houses, *and the whole village of Peekskill was sacked and burnt* and the country pillaged.”<sup>b</sup> The Weekly Mercury of Feb. 16th, 1778, (published by Hugh Gaines,) contains a letter from Commodore Hotham to Vice Admiral Lord Viscount Howe, which by his lordship was transmitted to all ships in service, &c., dated on board his Majesty’s ship the Preston, lying off Peekskill creek. Major Burr was stationed at Peekskill on the 21st July, 1777, when he received a lieutenant colonel’s commission in the continental army, and from this place the traitor Arnold likewise received his appointment to West Point, dated August the 3d, 1780.

In the village of Peekskill was born John Paulding, one of the American farmers who intercepted André the British spy, at Tarrytown, some fifteen miles below this place. For his services on this occasion the state presented him with a farm situated within the town of Cortlandt. The property now belongs to Jacob Strang.

The following abstract is taken from a deed given by Samuel Dodge, Daniel Graham, and John Hotham, commissioners of forfeitures for the middle district of New York, to John Paulding, of Cortlandt Manor :

For and in consideration of the services John Paulding, of Cortlandt Manor, in the County of Westchester, hath rendered his country, in apprehending and securing the British deputy adjutant Gen. Major André, who was returning to New York after having in the character of a spy concerted measures with the infamous Benedict Arnold, then commanding at the posts in the Highlands, for betraying the said posts into the hands of the enemy, and for his virtue in refusing a large sum of money offered by the said Major André as a bribe to permit him to escape ; and for and in consideration of the sum of five shillings lawful money of the State of New York, and for the further sum of twenty-five pounds ten shillings like lawful money of the said state, by the said John Paulding paid into the treasury of the said state, the said commissioners by virtue of the powers and authorities in and

---

<sup>a</sup> Military Repository, by Charles Smith.

<sup>b</sup> Burr’s Mem. Vol. 1, 180.

by the several acts to them given, hath by their deed bearing date on the 16th day of June, 1783, granted and sold unto the said John Paulding all that certain tract or parcel of land, situated in the manor of Cortlandt, in said county of Westchester, and state aforesaid, now in possession of said John Paulding, and is commonly known by lot No. 14 in great lot No. 1, containing 100 acres.

Also, another tract, part of farm No. 13, in great north lot No. 1, containing 21 acres. Also, another part of farm No. 13, in great lot No. 1, and is part of the land which Palatiah Haws purchased for Thomas Lee in Magragaria swamp, 10 acres. Also, another part of farm No. 15, a part of great north lot No. 1, 37 acres.<sup>a</sup>

168 acres, 16 rods of land, appraised for . . . . .	£529 10 0
Gratuity allowed by law . . . . .	500 0 0
	_____
Excess from him received . . . . .	£29 10 0

John Paulding died on the 18th of February, 1818. A few minutes before the patriot expired, he called Dr. Fountain, (his medical attendant,) to the bed side, and thus addressed him: "Doctor, please tell all those who ask after me, that I die a true republican." Paulding's remains repose beneath a handsome monument in the Episcopal grave-yard, two miles north of the village.

Upon the north side of Gallows Hill, by the road side leading from Peekskill to Albany, is situated the "Soldier's Spring," which derived its name from the following tragical incident:

"The British, who were in possession of Stony Point, and whose shipping lay in the bay of Haverstraw, resolved upon landing a portion of their men on Verplanck's Point, and from thence make a descent upon Peekskill. Their object in this expedition was to procure fresh provisions and to wake the energies of the Americans who were encamped in the village and in various places among the hills in its vicinity. In accordance with this resolve they effected a landing and proceeded without opposition to Drum Hill, an eminence which overlooks the village near its southern boundary. Here they commenced cannonading with two small field pieces which they had brought with them, while their light troops entered the village by another road higher up the river. The Americans unprepared, and withal too weak to resist so formidable a foe, were obliged after a short resistance to fly to the interior. Their enemies from the commanding points which they occupied, kept up a constant firing upon them as they sought the various avenues of retreat. It

---

<sup>a</sup> County Clerk's Office, Abstract of Sales, p. 137.

was at this period when a soldier in his flight stopped for a moment to refresh himself at the spring. While on his hands and knees in the act of drinking, a ball which struck on the eminence above him, glanced obliquely, and descending the road with rapid bounds, finished its course by shattering the thigh of the exhausted soldier, and burying itself in the ground beyond. Unable to move, he lay bleeding and in agony, until a wagon filled with provisions hastily collected by a bold and resolute man ere they left the scene of commotion passing by, he was perceived by those who followed after, who immediately picked him up and placed him thereon. They conveyed him as far as Fish-kill village, 19 miles distant; but loss of blood and the fatigue of his journey, prostrated the powers of nature; and though he received surgical aid, survived but a few hours."<sup>a</sup>

Two miles north of Peekskill is located the property and residence of General Pierre van Cortlandt, who derived his title to this portion of the ancient manor from his brother Gilbert, heir of his grand-aunt, Mrs. Gertrude Beeckman.

The situation of the Van Cortlandt estate is very fine, covering, as it does, some of the most graceful undulations of a hilly district, diversified with the richest scenery.

The old brick mansion erected A. D. 1773, occupies a very sequestered and romantic spot on the north side of the post road, immediately above the vale of Annsville. At one period of the revolution it was occupied by the American commander-in-chief as head quarters. Here also the Van Cortlandt family for some time found a safe asylum amid surrounding desolation. The interior contains a valuable collection of family portraits, consisting of Catharine, first wife of Gen. Pierre van Cortlandt, eldest daughter of George Clinton, Vice-President of the United States, by Aimes; General Pierre van Cortlandt, by Collins; Ann Stevenson, second wife of General Pierre van Cortlandt, by Aimes; Mrs. Magdalen Stevenson, mother of the above lady, by ditto; Nicholas Gilman, &c.

The bed rooms contain three curious pictures, of full length figures, representing John van Cortlandt as a boy, dressed in a long blue coat reaching to the knees, with large cuffs turned up to the elbows, knee breeches, scarlet stockings, high shoes and silver buckles; his right hand rests on a stag. Pierre, (af-

---

<sup>a</sup> Westchester and Putnam Republican, Aug. 1838.

terwards Lieutenant Governor,) in a scarlet coat, with white silk stockings ; a greyhound by his side. Abraham is depicted in a russet coat and red stockings, with high heeled shoes and buckles. These paintings are said to be over 115 years old. Besides the above, are portraits of George Clinton and lady, in crayons, by St. Menon Valdevieux.

Among the family silver, are two magnificent pitchers, inscribed as follows :—

Presented  
To General Pierre van Cortlandt,  
By the Directors of the Westchester County Bank,  
June, 1836.

In this house General McDougal posted his advanced guard, when the British took possession of Peekskill, March, 1777. The following account of the subsequent engagement with the enemy, is extracted from the Connecticut Journal of April 2d, 1777 :—

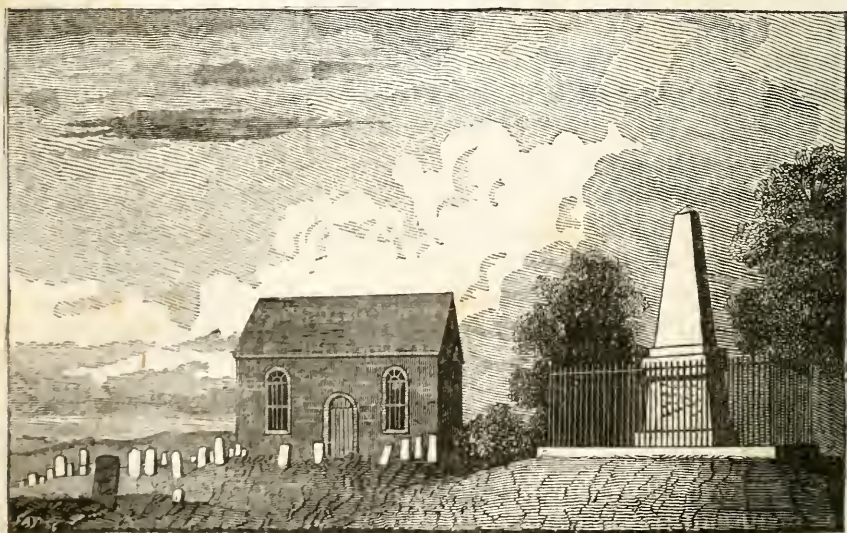
“ Fishkill, March 27.—Our post at Peek’s-kill, since the removal of the militia of the eastern states has been, in a manner, in a defenceless situation, there being only part of two regiments stationed there, under the care of Gen. McDougal, amounting to about 250 men. The enemy having received intelligence of this, formed an expedition thither, with a view to take or destroy the stores belonging to the continentals, that were deposited there. Accordingly, on Sunday last they appeared with a frigate, four transports and several other small vessels in the bay, and landed about 1000 men, with several pieces of cannon.

“ General McDougal not thinking it prudent to hazard a battle with such an unequal force, and not having reasonable advice of the enemy’s movement, was under the necessity of destroying their stores in order to prevent their falling into their hands, and retired about two miles into the pass in the highlands, carrying with him his baggage and military stores, his advanced guard being stationed at Cortlandt’s house in the valley. The enemy, the same day, took possession of the village, and remained close in their quarters until the next day in the afternoon, when a party of them, consisting of about 200 men, possessed themselves of a height a little south of Cortlandt’s. The general having received a reinforcement from Col. Gansevoort’s regiment, of about 80 men, under the command of Lieut. Col. Willet, permitted them to attempt to dispossess the enemy from that eminence. Col. Willet having accordingly made the necessary disposition, advanced with his small party with the greatest firmness and resolution, and made the attack. The enemy instantly fled with the greatest precipitation, leaving three men dead on the field, and the

whole body, panic struck, betook themselves to their shipping, embarking under cover of the night; and by the last accounts, they had sailed down the river. Before they embarked, they gave out they intended to stop at Tarrytown on their way down, and attempt to destroy our magazine of forage at Wright's mills. Upon their evacuating the place, Gen. McDougal took possession of his former quarters, and detached a party of men to watch their motions. The enemy on this occasion have been exceedingly disappointed, as they have not been able to carry off any stores left behind by our men, and no other flock than about forty sheep and eight or ten head of cattle, with which they were supplied by our good friends the tories. Never did troops exhibit more firmness and resolution than did our army on this occasion. Notwithstanding the disparity of numbers was great, and the measure absolutely necessary, it was with the utmost reluctance they retired to the pass. As usual, these heroes of Britain have burnt some houses, plundered the inhabitants of what they could conveniently take with them, frightened the women and children, and raised the spirits of their tory brethren in that quarter, but which, alas, as is always the case when unnaturally elevated, are now again proportionably depressed."

The old oak tree east of the Van Cortlandt residence, served the purpose of a military whipping post.

Upon the summit of a high knoll, south east of the Van Cortlandt residence, stands the Episcopal Church of St. Peter's. This humble structure was erected A. D. 1767. The site and the adjoining grave-yard were the gift of the Johnson family.



St Peter's Church and the Tomb of Paulding.



In the possession of Mr. James Brown, of Peekskill, is the following indenture, bearing date 23d of March, 1750, between Andrew Johnson, of Perth Amboy, East Jersey, of the first part, and Caleb Hall, Joseph Travis and Palatiah Haws, of the second :

Wherein the former party for the value of £5, conveys to the latter a parcel of land lying at a place called Peekskill, being a part of lot No. 8, beginning at the north east corner of the second parcel of land lately purchased of Joseph Taylor, by north side of Crumpond road, containing six acres, &c. : to have and to hold in trust for a school and burying place, and also for their executors and successors in trust, to the only proper use, benefit and behoof, and exercise of the public worship of God, and that it be for that purpose in the erecting and building of a meeting house or houses for the religious, (under the protection of our most gracious majesty,) either the Church of England, Presbyterian, Independents Baptists, or Congregational, &c. to erect and build a house for the religious exercise of the public worship of God, with a convenient yard thereto, for each or either of the above written denominations to them, the said Caleb Hall, &c., their heirs and successors, in trust for the neighborhood and inhabitants round about, from generation to generation for ever, and for no other use, purpose or intent whatsoever.<sup>a</sup>

Colonel Beverly Robinson endowed the united parishes of St. Peter's, on Cortlandt's manor, and St. Phillips' on the Highlands, with a farm of two hundred acres. This property was subsequently sold under an order of the Court of Chancery, and equally divided between the two churches. Out of these funds (aided by a liberal grant from Trinity Church, New York, amounting to \$1000) the present church was erected in Peekskill.

The following entry occurs in the bible belonging to this church, in possession of Isaac Seymour, Esq. :—

“The gift of Mrs. Susannah Robinson<sup>b</sup> to St. Peter's Church at Peekskill, which church was, by the desire of Beverly Robinson, Esq., Messrs. Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, Isaac Hatfield and Charles Moore, trustees, appointed by the subscribers to said church for directing and carrying on said building, and for securing it to the inhabitants as a place of public worship according to the establishment of the Church of England, on Sunday the 9th of August, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and sixty-seven, being the eighth Sunday after Trinity ; consecrated by the Rev. Doc-

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. lib. H. 339.

<sup>b</sup> This lady was the daughter of the Hon. Frederick Philips.

tor John Ogilvie, of New York, for the service of the Holy Trinity, according to the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England, as by law established, by the name of St. Peter's Church."

Upon the 18th of August, 1770, the church received the following charter from His Excellency, Cadwallader Colden, Lieutenant-Governor of the Province.

"George the Third, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c, to all to whom these presents shall come, greeting: Whereas, our loving subjects, Beverly Robinson, Charles Moore, Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, John Johnson, Joshua Nelson, Thomas Davenport and Henry Purdy, on behalf of themselves and sundry inhabitants on the upper part of the manor of Cortlandt, and the lower part of Philips' Patent, in communion of the Church of England as by law established, by their humble petition, presented on the 21st day of March now last past, to our trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esq., our Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America, in council did set forth that the petitioners have at a great expense and trouble erected a convenient house for a place of divine worship near Peekskill, to be according to the Church of England as by law established, and being very desirous of promoting the same, and settling a minister among them, did humbly conceive that if our said Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief would be pleased to take the matter into consideration, and to grant them a charter with such privileges, immunities and conditions as our said Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief should see fit, and that the said Beverly Robinson and Charles Moore may be appointed church wardens, and the said Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, John Johnson, Joshua Nelson, Thomas Davenport and Henry Purdy, vestrymen, in the charter by the name of the church wardens and vestrymen of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill. Now, we being willing to encourage the pious intentions of our said loving subjects, and to grant this their reasonable request, *know ye*, that of our especial grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have ordained, given, granted and declared, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, do ordain, give, grant and declare that the said petitioners and such other person and persons and their successors for ever as now are or shall hereafter from time to time be, as well of the Church of England as by law established, as members of the congregation of the said church in the herein above recited petition called St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and also contributors to the support and maintenance of a minister of the Church of England as by law established, to officiate in the said church for the time being, shall, with the rector of the said Church of St. Peter's for the time being forever hereafter be one body corporate and politic in deed, fact and name, by the name, style and title of the rector and members

of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and them and their successors by the same name. We do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, really and fully make, erect, create and constitute one body politic and corporate in deed, fact and name for ever, and will give, grant and ordain that they and their successors, the rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, by the same name shall and may have perpetual succession, and shall and may be capable in law to sue and be sued, implead and be impleaded, answer and be answered unto, defend and be defended in all courts and elsewhere in all manner of actions, suits, complaints, pleas, causes, matters and demands whatsoever, as fully and amply as any our liege subjects of our said province of New York may or can sue or be sued, implead or be impleaded, defend or be defended, by any lawful ways or means whatsoever; and that they and their successors by the same name shall be forever hereafter capable and able in the law to purchase, take, hold, receive and enjoy any messuages, tenements, houses and real estate whatsoever in fee simple for term of life or lives, or in any other manner howsoever for the use of the said church; and also any goods, chattels or personal estate whatsoever, provided always that the clear yearly value of the said real estate (exclusive of the said church and the ground whereon the same is built, and the cemetery belonging to the same) doth not at any time exceed the sum of one thousand pounds current money of our said province; and that they and their successors by the same name shall have full power and authority to give, grant, sell, lease and dispose of the same real estate for life or lives, or years or forever, under certain yearly rents, and all goods, chattels and personal estate whatsoever at their will and pleasure, and that it shall and may be lawful for them and their successors to have and use a common seal; and our will and pleasure further is, and we do hereby for us, our heirs and successors ordain and appoint that there shall be forever hereafter belonging to the said church, one rector of the Church of England as by law established, duly qualified for the cure of souls, two church wardens and six vestrymen, who shall conduct and manage the affairs and business of the said church and corporation in manner as hereafter is declared and appointed; and for the more immediate carrying into execution our royal will and pleasure herein, we do hereby assign, constitute and appoint Beverly Robinson and Charles Moore to be the present church wardens, and Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, John Johnson, Joshua Nelson, Thomas Davenport and Henry Purdy to be the present vestrymen of the said church, who shall hold, possess and enjoy their said respective offices until Tuesday in Easter week now next ensuing; and for the keeping up the succession in the said offices, our royal will and pleasure is, and we do hereby establish, direct and require that on the said Tuesday in Easter week now next ensuing, and yearly and every year thereafter forever on Tuesday in Easter week in every year, the rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, shall meet at the said church, and there, by the majority of voices of such of them as shall so meet,

elect and choose two of their members to be church wardens, and six others of their members to be vestrymen of the said church for the ensuing year, which said church wardens and vestrymen so elected and chosen shall immediately enter upon their respective offices, and hold, exercise and enjoy the same respectively from the time of such elections for and during the space of one year, and until other fit persons shall be elected and chosen in their respective places; and in case the church wardens or vestrymen, or either of them by these presents named and appointed, or who shall be hereafter elected and chosen by virtue of these presents, shall die before the time of their respective appointed services shall be expired, or refuse or neglect to act in the office for which he or they is or are herein nominated and appointed, or whereunto he or they shall or may be so elected and chosen, then our royal will and pleasure is, and we do hereby direct, ordain and require the rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, for the time being to meet at the said church, and choose other or others of their members in the place and stead of him or them so dying, or neglecting or refusing to act within thirty days next after such contingency, and in this case for the more due and orderly conducting the said elections, and to prevent any undue proceedings therein, we do hereby give full power and authority to and ordain and require that the rector and the said church wardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall appoint the time for such election and elections, and that the rector of the said church, or in his absence, one of the said church wardens for the time being, shall give public notice thereof by publishing the same at the said church immediately after divine service on the Sunday next preceding the day appointed for such elections, hereby giving and granting that such person or persons as shall be so chosen from time to time by the rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, or the majority of such of them as shall in such case meet in manner hereby directed, shall have, hold, exercise and enjoy such the office or offices to which he or they shall be elected and chosen, from the time of such elections until the Tuesday in Easter week thereon next ensuing, and until other or others be lawfully chosen in his or their place and stead as fully and amply as the person or persons in whose place he or they shall be chosen, might or could have done by virtue of these presents. And we do hereby will and direct that this method shall for ever hereafter be used for the filling up all vacancies that shall happen in either the said offices between the annual elections above directed, and our royal will and pleasure further is, and we do hereby, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant that as well the church wardens and vestrymen in these presents nominated and appointed as such, as shall from time to time be hereafter elected and chosen, as is herein directed shall have and they are hereby invested with full power and authority to execute their several and respective offices in as full and ample manner as any church wardens or vestrymen in that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or in this

our province of New York can or lawfully may execute their said respective offices ; and further our royal will and pleasure is, and we do, by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ordain and appoint that the rector and the said church wardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall and may from time to time, as occasion shall require, summon and call together at such day and place as they shall think proper, the said rector, church wardens and vestrymen for the time being, to meet in vestry, giving them at the least one day's notice thereof, and we do hereby require them to meet accordingly. And we do hereby give, grant, and ordain that the said rector and one of the said church wardens for the time being at least, together with the majority of the said vestrymen of the said church for the time being, being met in vestry as above directed, shall forever hereafter have, and they are hereby invested with full power and authority by the majority of their voices, to do and execute in the name of the rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, all and singular the powers and authorities herein before given and granted to the said rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, any wise touching or relating to such lands, messuages and tenements, real and personal estate whatsoever, as they the said rector and members of said church on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, shall or may acquire, for the use of the said church, and also in like manner to order, direct, manage and transact the general interest, business, and affairs of our said corporation, and also shall have full power and authority in like manner to make and ordain such rules, orders, and ordinances as they shall judge convenient for the good government and discipline of the members of the said church ; provided such rules, orders and ordinances be not repugnant to the laws of that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or of this our province of New York, but as or may be agreeable thereto, and that the same be fairly entered in a book or books to be kept for that purpose, and also in like manner to appoint the form of the common seal herein before granted, and the same to alter, break, and re-make at their discretion, and also in like manner to appoint such officer or officers as they shall stand in need of, always provided that the rector of the said church for the time being shall have the sole power of nominating and appointing the clerk to assist him in performing divine service, as also the sexton, anything herein before contained to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding, which clerk and sexton shall hold and enjoy their respective offices during the will and pleasure of the rector of the said church for the time being. And whereas there hath not yet been any minister presented or inducted to the said church, our royal will and pleasure therefore is, that until the said church shall be supplied with a minister of the church of England, as by law established, as is herein after mentioned, and also in case of every avoidance of the said church thereafter, either by the death of the rector thereof or otherwise, that the powers and authorities vested in the rector, church wardens and vestrymen in vestry, met as above men-

tioned, shall, until the said church be legally supplied with another incumbent, vest in and be executed by the church wardens of the said church for the time being, together with the vestrymen of the said church for the time being, by the name of the church wardens and vestrymen of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill ; provided always, the concurrence and consent of the major number of the whole vestrymen of the said church for the time being be had in every thing that shall in such cases be done by virtue hereof, and we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant that the patronage and advowson of the said church, and the right of presentation thereto, shall forever hereafter belong to and appertain, and is hereby vested in the church wardens and vestrymen of the said church for the time being, or the majority of them, forever, whereof one church warden shall always be one. And further we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and their successors forever, that this our present grant shall be deemed, adjudged and construed in all cases most favorably, and for the best benefit and advantage of the said rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and that this our present grant being entered on record, as is herein after particularly expressed, shall be good and effectual in the law to all intents, constructions and purposes whatsoever, against us, our heirs and successors, according to the true intent and meaning herein before declared, notwithstanding the not reciting, or mis-recital, not naming, or mis-naming of any the afore-said franchises, privileges, immunities, offices, or other the premises or any of them, and although no writ of *ad quod damnum* or other writs inquisitors or penalties hath or have been, upon this account, had, made, issued, or prosecuted, to have and to hold, all and singular, the privileges, liberties, advantages, and immunities hereby granted or meant, mentioned or intended so to be, unto them the said rector and members of St. Peter's Church, on the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and to their successors forever. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent, and the great seal of our said province to be hereunto affixed, and the same to be entered on record in our secretary's office in our city of New York, in one of the books of patents there remaining. Witness our said trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esq., our said lieutenant governor, and commander-in-chief of our said province of New York, and the territories depending thereon, in America, at our fort in our city of New York, by and with the advice and consent of our council for our said province, the 18th day of August, in the year of our Lord, 1770, and of our reign the 10th."<sup>a</sup>

The following year Governor Tryon granted a special charter, in virtue whereof, the trustees held a certain glebe of 200 acres of

---

<sup>a</sup> Albany Book of Patents.

land, given by Col. Beverly Robinson, for the use of the rector, officiating one half his time at St. Philip's in the Highlands.

The first incorporation of this church subsequent to the revolution took place 26th of April, 1791, under the style and title of the corporation of St. Peter's Church, Peekskill, and St Philip's Chapel in the Highlands. Joshua Nelson, Richard Arundell, Silvanus Haight, James Spock, Jarvis Dusenberry, vestry of St. Peter's Church, Peekskill. First trustees, William Ward, Caleb Ward, James Spock, Silvanus Haight, Caleb Morgan, Joshua Nelson, Richard Arundell, Jarvis Dusenberry. Signed 16th December, 1791.<sup>a</sup>

In 1793, William Denning and Pierre van Cortlandt were elected wardens.

William Denning and Jarvis Dusenberry were the first delegates from this parish to the Diocesan Convention in 1791.

*List of Ministers and Rectors.*

Instituted or elected.	Ministers and Rectors.	Patrons.	vacated by
A. D. 1771,	Rev. John Doty, Clericus,	wardens and vestry	per resig.
1792,	Rev. Andrew Fowler, A. B. Presb.	do	do
1796,	Rev. Samuel Haskell, Presb.	do	do
1807,	Rev. Joseph Warren, Presb.	do	do
1815,	Rev. Adam Empie, Presb.	do	do
1816,	Rev. Peter Ten Broeck, Presb.	do	do
1818,	Rev. John Urquehart, Presb.	do	do
1830,	Rev. Edward J. Ives,	do	do
1834,	Rev. James Sunderland, Presb.	do	do
1838,	Rev. William C. Cooley, Presb.	do	do
1840,	Rev. Moses Marcus, A. M. Presb.	do	do
June, 1843,	Rev. William Barlow, Presb.	do	do

*Notitia Parochialis.*

1807, baptisms 19, communicants 10, marriages 5.  
 1847, ditto 40,

If the members of St. Peter's Parish value this church as an in-

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A. 26.

teresting relic of the past, some speedy means should be taken to preserve it; otherwise it will soon perish.

The church yard which is extensive, contains several memorials to the Penoyers, Wards, Drakes, Ferris's, &c., &c. The oldest interment appears to have been Mary, wife of John Ward, who died on the 15th of September, 1765, in the 69th year of her age.

One of the tomb stones is inscribed with the following expressive sentence:

*"Eternity how long!"*

There is also a small enclosure belonging to the Birdsall family.

On the west side of the grave yard is situated the monument of John Paulding.

The following is the report of the select committee, appointed in pursuance of a resolution of the board,<sup>a</sup> passed the 4th day of December, 1826, during the mayoralty of the Honorable Philip Hone directing a monument to be erected to the memory of John Paulding, one of the captors of the British spy, André.

Your committee engaged Messrs. Francis and James Kain, to erect a monument of white marble, the materials of which were procured from their quarry, in the county of Westchester. It is of the most simple form, consisting of a pedestal, surmounted by a cone, showing an elevation of thirteen feet; the whole composed of the most massive materials, and fastened with iron cramps in such a manner as to resist the severity of the climate for ages to come.

The base of the monument covers a square of seven feet, surrounded by an iron railing, four feet in height, and two feet seven inches distant, inserted in a marble coping fourteen inches broad, comprehending a square of twelve feet two inches.

One side of the monument exhibits a fac-simile of the face of the medal, voted by the Congress of the United States to each of the captors of André, on the third day of November, seventeen hundred and eighty; the other of its reverse, both carved in bas-relief.

---

<sup>a</sup> Board of common council.



On the front of the pedestal is the following inscription :

Here repose the mortal remains of  
 JOHN PAULDING,  
 who died on the 18th day of February, 1818,  
 in the 60th year of his age.

---

On the morning of the 23d of September, 1780,  
 Accompanied by two young Farmers of the Co. of Westchester,  
 (Whose names will one day be recorded  
 On their own deserved monuments,)  
 He intercepted the British spy, André :  
 Poor Himself  
 He disdained to acquire wealth by the sacrifice of  
 HIS COUNTRY.  
 Rejecting the temptation of great rewards  
 He conveyed his prisoner to the American camp ;  
 And  
 By this act of noble self-denial,  
 The treason of Arnold was detected,  
 The designs of the enemy baffled ;  
 West Point and the American Army saved ;  
 And these United States,  
 Now by the Grace of God Free and Independent,  
 Rescued from most imminent peril.

---

The fourth side of the pedestal bears the following inscription :

THE CORPORATION  
 Of the City of New York,  
 Erected this Tomb,  
 As a memorial Sacred to  
 PUBLIC GRATITUDE.

The whole being completed with the exception of placing the cone on the pedestal, on the morning of the twenty-second of November, eighteen hundred and twenty-seven, the corporation proceeded in the steamboat Sandusky, to Peekskill, where they arrived at one o'clock, and were met by the Committee of Arrangements,<sup>a</sup> and a large concourse of the inhabitants of Westchester County, who had come to assist in the last honors, to the memory of their fellow citizen. Among them were many aged and venerable men, who passed through the perils of the revolution and shared its dangers with the deceased.

A procession was formed to the church yard, where the monument stands, about two and a half miles from the village of Peekskill, and the column being lowered to its place on the pedestal, William Paulding, mayor of the city of New York, addressed the assembled citizens as follows :

MY FRIENDS :—History bears testimony to the importance of the act we are here assembled to commemorate. The capture of André, while it prevented the most fatal disasters, and led to the most signal results, afforded at the same time a memorable example of the fidelity and patriotism of the yeomanry of these United States. As such it has always been viewed, and will appear in the eyes of posterity one of the most honorable achievements of our great revolutionary struggle.

It was in the year seventeen hundred and eighty.

There is not an aged man here present, but must remember that gloomy and disastrous period, when, if ever, the freedom of our country was almost a desperate hope. The money, the credit, the men, the means, and I may almost say, the sentiment necessary for continuing the great contest, were either quite exhausted, or fast melting away.

Hardship, ill success, and a miserable scarcity of every necessary of life, had checked present exertion, and produced almost a hopelessness of the future. Our little army, the last reliance of the country, was cooped up at West Point, almost the last refuge of liberty remaining. Had that army, with its illustrious commander, been treacherously surrendered, and that strong-hold given up to the enemy, the communication between Canada and New York, then in his possession, would have been open—the North and the South could no longer have co-operated with each other—the spirit of our people had been broken—the last stay of freedom destroyed, and the last ray of hope perhaps

---

<sup>a</sup> Generals Pierre van Cortlandt and Philip van Cortlandt, Daniel W. Birdsall, St. John Constant, Ward B. Howard, Benjamin Dyckman, Doctor Peter Goetchius, James Mandeville, and Doctor Samuel Strang.

extinguished. What the final issue might have been, God only knows; but we all know, the consequences would have shaken our good cause to its foundation. A plan for this purpose was agitated—matured—almost consummated by the treason of Arnold. To you it is not necessary to detail the particulars of this infamous and dangerous project, so familiar to the memory and hearts of our people. I see among you many venerable and aged men who bore a part in the struggle, and shared in the hardships, anxieties, dangers and sufferings of those dismal times. I see at the head of these, a faithful and gallant officer, still happily and honorably surviving to enjoy that invaluable freedom which his own efforts contributed to secure.<sup>a</sup> I see too, among them, one who was himself a companion and sharer in the virtuous act by which these imminent dangers were averted.<sup>b</sup>

If you wish for the story of this high achievement of honest, unpretending patriotism, ask it of him. He will tell it in such a way, as shall neither wrong the living or the dead. He will tell you of the capture of André, who from a spy, was elevated by a false estimate and a mistaken sympathy, into a hero and a martyr—of the temptations which had corrupted the second man in the nation's estimation, being rejected by the sons of the farmers of Westchester—of the delivery of the spy into the hands of the great good man of the age—of modern times—of all times whatever, and of their receiving his glorious approbation—of the applauses of the nation—and the thanks of that most illustrious body, the old Congress of the United States—the noblest reward which was ever bestowed on a private citizen. Lastly, my friends, he will tell you what a source of honest pride—of heart-felt pleasure—of unutterable happiness has it been to him, and will be to the last hour of his life, the reflection that he did his duty to his country in her hour of peril.

MY FRIENDS:—The man to whose mouldering remains and imperishable memory we are now paying the last honours, was born and brought up among us. Like many now present, he was the son of a plain country farmer, who cultivated his own fields with his own hands; and he received such an education only, as is now within the reach of every honest man's son in these United States. He had nothing to boast of but a vigorous, active, well-proportioned frame, a daring spirit, and an honest heart. His means and opportunities were only such as you all enjoy; and his example furnishes a lesson to you all, of what every one of you is capable of becoming, when the hour of danger arrives, and our country requires the aid of a virtuous patriotism. He is most peculiarly an example to you and yours. He belongs forever to the yeomanry of the United States, a class of men always honest and patriotic—always ready to defend that soil in whose products they share so liberally, and those rights in which they so amply participate.

Bear then in mind, my friends, and impress it on the hearts of your chil-

<sup>a</sup> General Philip van Cortlandt.

<sup>b</sup> Isaac van Wart.

dren, and upon all that shall nestle in old age under your withered branches, that as all are equally called upon to protect and defend their country, so there is not one of them all but may one day be placed in a situation like John Paulding, to confer a lasting benefit on his country, and like him, to merit and receive the highest and noblest of all earthly recompenses—the thanks and gratitude of his countrymen.

The assembly then separated, deeply impressed with the ceremony and the occasion.

All which is respectfully submitted.

Abrm. M. Valentine,  
John Agnew,  
John Lozier,  
Gideon Ostrander,  
Jameson Cox.

The Baptist burying ground is situated north of the Episcopal yard. Here is a memorial to Caleb Hall, who died October 1st, 1791, aged 91 years, beside other monuments.

The village of Annsville, in this town, is delightfully situated near the mouth of the Peekskill creek, one mile north of the village of Peekskill.

This place formed a part of the Indian territory of Wishqua. Here also was an Indian settlement. Upon the survey of the manor of Cortlandt, Annsville and lands adjoining constituted a portion of lot No. 10, the river portion of Mrs. Gertrude Beekman, daughter and devisee of Stephanus van Cortlandt.

Here are situated an extensive snuff factory, and a wire factory, both propelled by water power; also about 20 dwellings.

The scenery of the Peekskill creek is remarkably rich and diversified.

This stream rises 14 miles north of Annsville, in the town of Kent, Putnam County; south-west of Annsville, it receives the waters of the Canopus, (Sprout creek,) a current of water which derives its source from Horton's lake, called by the Indians the "Fire-fly lake," a name derived from that beautiful insect whose bright phosphorescence illumines the dark woods of a summer's evening. The Indian children of the West have the following exquisite chant to this flitting, white fire insect, as they denominate it:

"Fire-fly, fire-fly! bright little thing;  
Bright little fairy-bug, night's little king."

*Schoolcraft's Oneota.*

Near the banks of the Canopus, or Peekskill hollow, is situated the site of the old Continental village, which once contained barracks for 2,000 men. The following account of its destruction is given in the dispatches of Gen. Sir William Howe to Sir Henry Clinton, dated Fort Montgomery, October 9, 1777 :

“The little army consisting of about 3,000 men arrived off Verplanck’s Point, preceded by the galleys under the command of Sir James Wallace. On our appearance the enemy retired without firing a shot, leaving a 12-pounder behind them: and Sir James moved up to Peekskill creek to mark the only communication they had across the river on this side the Highlands.

“P.S.—Major Gen. Tryon was detached this morning with Emmerick’s chasseurs, 50 yagers, the royal fusiliers and regiment of Trumbach, with a three-pounder to destroy the *rebel settlement called the Continental village*, has just returned and reported to me, that he has burned the barrack for 1500 men, several store houses and loaded wagons. I need not point out to your excellency the consequence of destroying this post, as it was the only establishment of the rebels on that part of the Highlands, and the place from whence any body of troops drew their supplies.”<sup>a</sup>

The Cortlandt bridge crosses the mouth of the Peekskill creek near Annsville, on the road leading to Roa or Rahway Hook. The total length of this bridge, which is built of wood, is fourteen hundred and ninety-six feet. Upon the highest ground of Rahway Hook stands “Fort Independence Hotel,” lately erected by Col. Pierre van Cortlandt. From its elevated position this spot commands a most extensive prospect of the Hudson River and adjacent country. To the north rise the majestic Highlands, on the west the race and towering Dunderbarrack. To the south the waters of the Peekskill bay resemble a vast lake bounded by the mountains of Rockland and Stony and Verplanck’s Points, while on the east appears the village of Peekskill and the Cortlandt hills. The proximity of this place to the city, and the unequalled facilities of communication by steamboat, renders this

---

<sup>a</sup> Supplement to H. Gaines’ Military Gazette, Feb. 9, 1778, No. 1372.

hotel one of the most desirable residences in summer for families or individuals to be found on the banks of the Hudson. In the rear of the hotel are situated the remains of Fort Independence, whose history is so inseparably interwoven with the stirring events of the Revolution. A small portion of its embankments and trenches are yet to be discerned. The whole is shaded by a luxuriant grove of native pines. The solitude of this delightful spot is occasionally disturbed by the moaning of the wind amid the trees,

And hark! as it comes sighing through the grove,  
The exhausted gale a spirit there awakes,  
That wild and melancholy music makes.

Circuitous paths lead to the landing, while the table land to the east is heavily bordered with the ash, maple, cedar and towering oak.

The hotel is under the management of Mr. V. Truesdale.

Hudson, the discoverer of the North River, appears to have been much struck with the first sight of this high and mountainous region.

“It appears from his journal,” says Moulton, “that he was not inattentive to the rapid and astonishing elevation of a district of country which, in the course of less than sixty miles, increases from a few feet above the water level<sup>a</sup> to the lofty height of fifteen hundred feet.<sup>b</sup> Sailing leisurely, he had full opportunity to contrast the appearances of the opposite shores. On the left he had the sublime prospect of the pallisado rocks, whose dark columnar front, like a towering battlement, with here and there a projection like the salient angle of a bastion, presented perpendicular elevations from three to five hundred feet, and, ranging more than thirty miles uninterrupted, (except by the valley of the Nyack,) it at last exhibited an altitude of nearly seven hundred feet,<sup>c</sup> and then vanished from his sight on the remote, but still more elevated range of the High Tourn and Tourn Mountains. On the right he beheld a comparatively low but undulating border, which, in the luxuriance of autumnal foliage, afforded a striking contrast and a pleasing relief as he turned from the sublimity and barrenness of the opposite cliffs. Onward he perceived the river in its first course of thirty miles, very gradually widening until it suddenly presented the broad expanse of a bay (‘Tappaanse Zee.’) Then

---

<sup>a</sup> At Bergen Point.

<sup>b</sup> At the head of the Highlands.

<sup>c</sup> South peak of Vredideka Hook.

as he passed into another, (Haverstraw,) and viewed the insuperable barriers of mountains that lay before him, he considered his discovery terminated, until, in searching for a passage, he found one which proved to be the continuation of a river, now serpentine in its course, deepening and narrowing, until it brought him to 'where the land grew very high and mountainous.' Here he anchored for the ensuing night.<sup>a</sup> This was directly opposite West Point."

During the revolutionary war two British vessels were sunk in the race directly opposite Fort Independence. About thirty years since, several cannon were raised from these vessels by the aid of the diving bell.

In the northwest corner of Cortlandtown is situated "Antonie's Neus," or St. Anthony's Nose, a well known peak of the Highlands.

General Van Cortlandt, the present proprietor of the Nose, gives the following origin of that name:—

"Before the Revolution a vessel was passing up the river under the command of a Capt. Hogans. When immediately opposite this mountain, the mate looked rather quizzically, first at the mountain and then at the captain's nose. The captain, by the way, had an enormous nose, which was not unfrequently the subject of good natured remark; and he at once understood the mate's allusion. 'What,' says the captain, 'does that look like my nose?—call it then, if you please, Antony's Nose.' The story was repeated on shore, and the mountain thenceforward assumed the name, and has thus become an everlasting monument to the memory of the redoubtable Capt. Antony Hogans and his nose."<sup>b</sup>

The elevation of Antony's Nose is one thousand two hundred and twenty eight feet from the level of the river, and directly opposite Fort Montgomery Creek. From here to Fort Montgomery, which is now in ruins on the opposite side, a large boom and chain was extended during the revolutionary war, which cost about seventy thousand pounds sterling. It was partly destroyed by Gen. Sir Henry Clinton in October, 1777.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Moulton's Hist. N. Y., 238-39.

<sup>b</sup> See Washington Irving's story of the Dutch governor's voyage up the Hudson.

<sup>c</sup> Letters about the Hudson.

“In the year 1672 (says Dunlap) orders arrived to Governor Lovelace to put the Province in a state of defence. Upon this occasion a small fort was to be erected at Antony’s Nose, or near it, on the north river.”<sup>a</sup>

A tribe of Indians named the Wabingi occupied the highlands called by them Kettatenny Mountains. Their principal settlement, (designated Wickapy,) was situated in the vicinity of Antony’s Nose.<sup>b</sup>

Four miles south of Peekskill lies Verplanck’s Point. This place, called by the Indians Meahagh, was bounded on the east by the lands of Appamagpogh and the creek Meanagh, on the south by the same creek, on the west by the Hudson, and on the north by the creek Tammoesis.

Prior to 1683 the territory of Meahagh belonged to Siecham, sachem of Sachus and other Indians, who sold the same to Stephanus van Cortlandt. At the death of Stephanus it passed by will to his eldest son Johannes, and afterwards descended by marriage to Philip Verplanck, from whom the neck acquired its present appellation. This individual married Gertrude, only daughter and heiress of the above Johannes.

In 1734 Verplanck’s Point (consisting of one thousand acres) was held by John Lent, who paid therefor the yearly rent of one pepper-corn on the feast day of St. Michael, the archangel. The Verplanck’s subsequently sold the Point to the present proprietors, John Henry and others, for the sum of nearly \$300,000.

The Verplanck family descend from Abraham Jacobsen Verplanck, of New Amsterdam, whose son Gulian was a wealthy merchant of the same place in 1683. The son of Gulian was Philip Verplanck, of Verplanck’s Point.

This branch of the family is now represented by Philip Verplanck, Esq., of New Windsor, grandson of the last mentioned Philip.

The principal proprietors of the Point are John Henry, Esq., who holds five hundred acres, upon which is situated the old Verplanck residence; Mr. William Blakely, jr., Mr. John Stenson,

---

<sup>a</sup> Dunlap’s Hist. N. Y., vol. i., 127.

<sup>b</sup> Moulton’s Hist. N. Y., 271. See note.



also William Lyell, Esq., whose mansion is delightfully situated in the midst of the most beautiful woodland scenery. This gentleman married the widow of the late Beeckman Verplanck, Esq.

Verplanck's Point has ever been admired for the variety and exquisite beauty of its scenery; in some places it is thickly covered with luxuriant woods. The line of the Hudson River Rail Road passes through the "deep gut," a singular phenomena, which traverses the neck for some distance.

On the south side of the neck is situated a convenient steam-boat landing, post-office, two taverns, two stores, some fifteen or twenty dwelling houses, beside several extensive brick yards and lime kilns; also one Methodist and one Roman Catholic Church.

Near the western extremity of the Point is the site of Fort Fayette, which, July 22, 1779, was garrisoned by one thousand British troops, under the command of Gen. Vaughan. "Twenty-third of June, 1779," remarks Gen. Heath, "the British were now in possession of both the points at King's Ferry, and a number of transports had lain in the river for some time. The advanced posts of the Americans at this time, on this side, did not extend lower than Peekskill," &c.<sup>a</sup> "On the 27th," continues the same authority, "a deserter came in from Verplanck's Point, who reported that the British army, except five or six regiments, were to leave the Points, and were then embarking. Soon after, upwards of thirty sail of transports were seen, standing down the river. The British had a sloop at anchor off Peekskill Landing and a ship off the Dunderberg. Lest the enemy meant a deception, the Americans were ordered to lie on their arms, and a regiment extra was ordered to advance on the heights.

"On the 28th, three deserters, one a Hessian musician with his horn, came in from the enemy. They confirmed the testimony of the former deserter, that the body of the British army had left the Points."<sup>b</sup>

"On the 2d of July, Col. Rufus Putnam reconnoitered the enemy's positions at Verplanck's and Stoney Points."<sup>c</sup>

Subsequent to the brilliant attack and capture of Stoney Point

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 205.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 206.

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem.

under General Wayne, 13th of July, 1779, it was resolved to attack this post.

“Stoney Point, (says Gen. Heath,) having been taken with so much eclat to the American arms, Gen. Washington determined an attempt on Verplanck’s Point, on the east side of the Hudson, and opposite to Stoney Point. For this purpose Major General Howe with two brigades and some 12-pounders on travelling was ordered to proceed by the way of Peekskill, throw a bridge over the creek, move on the Point, and open batteries against the enemy’s works, while a cannonading and bombardment was kept up across the river from Stoney Point.”

July 17, 1779, at about 10 o’clock, A. M., General Heath while out reconnoitering, received by an express from Gen. Washington, orders to move as expeditiously as possible to Peekskill, where he would find Gen. Howe with two brigades. Gen. Heath was to take command of the whole, and carry into effect the orders which had been given to Gen. Howe. Gen. Heath returned immediately to the troops, and at 12 o’clock began his march towards Peekskill—marched until dusk 15 miles, when the troops halted and laid down to rest on the side of the road, the dragoons not unsaddling their horses.

At 3 o’clock the next morning, the troops resumed their march, and in the afternoon Gen. Heath received information from Gen. Howe by express that Gen. Clinton was in full march with his whole army towards Verplanck’s Point. An answer was returned, at what point the troops then were, and that they were marching as fast as the men could endure, and would continue so until they reached him. When the troops had advanced a little to the westward of Drake’s farm, Col. Mayland came up from Gen. Howe with information that a part of Clinton’s army were then above the new bridge on Croton River pushing for the Point; and that he was retreating from the Point as fast as possible. On this Gen. Heath ordered Gen. Huntington with his brigade and two field pieces to push forward as fast as the troops could march and keep in breath, and take a position on the high ground to the south of Peekskill which commands the road to the Point, and also that to the new bridge on Croton River; and ordered a regiment to file off to the right and secure the pass over the hills

between Drake's and Peekskill, and also ordered the flank guard on the left to be reinforced, and to send out small flank guards still further from its flank. The troops moving on with the utmost expedition to the ground which General Huntington had been ordered forward to secure. Every moment that passed, was expected to announce the commencement of an action between the advanced or flanking parties of the two armies; but it did not take place. At this moment Gen. Washington, having learnt how matters stood, and that possibly Gen. Clinton might attempt to push into the Highlands, sent an express to Gen. Heath, to move into the Highlands immediately, which was done, just after dark, the troops passing the night on Bald Hill. It was generally the opinion that if General Heath had not been at hand to advance in the manner he did, that Gen. Clinton by a forced march of his light troops, backed by his army, would have got in the rear of Gen. Howe, before he could have possibly gained the road at Peekskill, and between his army and a sally from the garrison of Verplanck's Point inevitably cut off the whole. Our troops at Stoney Point cannonaded and bombarded the enemy's works at Verplanck's during the whole day, and until near midnight. The post was then evacuated, and the Washington galley was blown up.<sup>a</sup>

On the 2d of October, 1779, the enemy, at Verplanck's Point, opened a number of pits about five feet deep, and from four feet over, with a sharp stake in the middle, around the outside of the abbatis.<sup>b</sup>

October 21st, 1779, three deserters came in from Verplanck's Point, and reported, that the enemy were on the point of evacuating their works. The officer commanding the advanced picket, soon after sent information that the works appeared to be on fire, and the shipping standing down the river. Major Waldbridge, who commanded the advanced picket, immediately sent a detachment to take possession of the works. Several loaded shells, left by the enemy in places where the fire would come at them, burst,

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 211.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 218.

but did no harm. The enemy left one horse, a few old entrenching tools, and some other trifles at the Point.<sup>a</sup>

Colonel Livingston held command of this post in 1780, when Arnold came there for the purpose of carrying on his treasonable correspondence with André.

Upon the south-west side of Verplanck's Point was situated King's Ferry, the ancient pass to Rockland. The old sign post placed at the head of the lane, leading to this ferry, bore the following direction:—

“DISHE HIS DI ROODE TOE DE KSHING'S FARRY.”

Upon the 30th of August, 1779, fifteen sail of the enemy lay at anchor near the King's Ferry.<sup>b</sup>

On the evening of September 22d, 1780, Major John André, the British spy, crossed the King's Ferry in company with Smith and the negro boy. William van Wert, the ferry-master on this occasion, afterwards testified at André's trial, “that Mr. Smith crossed King's ferry from Stoney Point to Verplanck's Point on the evening of a day in the week before last, in company with another man, and a negro boy was with him;—each of them had a horse. The day of the month I do not recollect. I have not seen the person since to know him. He had a black, blue or brown great coat on, a round hat, and *a pair of boots*. I did not hear any conversation pass between Mr. Smith and the person in the boat, neither did I hear Mr. Smith say which way he was going. Mr. Smith *seemed to hurry us a good deal*. Cornelius Lambert, Henry Lambert and Lambert Lambert, were boat-men along with me.”

Four or five miles below Verplanck's Point can be distinctly seen Smith's house, where the interview took place between André and Arnold, and where the latter gave the spy the fatal papers that proved his ruin.

In describing the scenery of this beautiful spot, Mr. N. P. Willis remarks: “It is not easy to pass and repass the now peaceful and beautiful waters of this part of the Hudson, without recalling to mind the scenes and actors in the great drama of the Revolution, which they not long ago bore on their bosom. The busy

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 221.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 216.

mind fancies the armed gun boats slowly pulling along the shore, and the light pinnace of the Vulture flying to and fro on its errands of conspiracy, and not the least vivid picture to the imagination is the boat containing the accomplished, the gallant André and his guard, on his way to death. It is probable that he first admitted to his own mind the possibility of a fatal result while passing this very spot. A late biographer of Arnold gives the particulars of a conversation between André and Major Tallmadge, the officer who had him in custody, and who brought him from West Point down the river to Tappan, the place of his subsequent execution: 'Before we reached the Clove, (a landing just below Verplanck's Point,) Major André became very inquisitive to know my opinion as to the result of his capture. When I could no longer evade his importunity, I remarked to him as follows: I had a much loved class mate in Yale College by the name of Hale, who entered the army in 1775. Immediately after the battle of Long Island, Washington wanted information respecting the strength of the army; he went over to Brooklyn, and was taken just as he was passing the out-posts of the enemy, on his return. Said I, with emphasis, do you remember the sequel of his story? Yes, said André, he was hanged as a spy, but you surely do not consider his case and mine alike? I replied yes, precisely similar, and similar will be your fate. He endeavored to answer my remarks, but it was manifest he was more troubled in spirit than I had ever seen him before.'"<sup>a</sup>

What a contrast does this scene present to the passage of the traitor himself, who, as soon as his villainy was ascertained, "mounted a horse belonging to one of his aids that stood saddled at the door, and rode alone, with all speed, to the bank of the river. He there entered a boat, and directed the carsmen to push out to the middle of the stream. The boat was rowed by six men, who, having no knowledge of Arnold's intentions, promptly obeyed his orders. He quickened their activity by saying, that he was going down the river and on board the Vulture with a flag, and that he was in great haste, as he expected Gen. Washington at his house, and wished to return as expeditiously as pos-

---

<sup>a</sup> American Scenery, by Bartlett and Willis.

sible to meet him there. He also added another stimulating motive, by promising them two gallons of rum, if they would exert themselves with all their strength. As they approached King's Ferry, Arnold exposed to view a white handkerchief, and ordered the men to row directly to the Vulture, which was now in sight a little below the place it had occupied when André left it. The signal held out by Arnold, while the boat was passing Verplanck's Point, caused Col. Livingston to regard it as a flag-boat, and prevented him from ordering it to be stopped and examined. The boat reached the Vulture unobstructed in its passage; and after Arnold had gone on board and introduced himself to Capt. Sutherland, he called the leader of the boatmen into the cabin, and informed him that he and his companions were prisoners. The boatmen, who had capacity and spirit, said they were not prisoners; that they came on board with a flag of truce, and under the same sanction they would return. He then appealed to the captain, demanding justice and a proper respect for the rules of honor. Arnold replied, that all this was nothing to the purpose; that they were prisoners and must remain on board. Capt. Sutherland, disdainful of a pitiful action, though he did not interfere with the positive command of Arnold, told the man that he would take his parole and he might go on shore and procure clothes and whatever else was wanted for himself and his companions. This was accordingly done the same day. When these men arrived in New York, Sir Henry Clinton, holding in just contempt such a wanton act of meanness, set them all at liberty."<sup>a</sup>

As soon as Washington had solved the mystery, "and the whole extent of the plot was made manifest, Hamilton was immediately ordered to mount a horse and ride to Verplanck's Point, that preparations might be made for stopping Arnold, should he not already have passed that post." "But Col. Hamilton's mission proved too late. It could hardly have been otherwise, for Arnold had got the start by six hours. He left his house about ten o'clock in the morning, and his treachery was not known to Washington till nearly four o'clock in the afternoon. When Hamilton arrived at Verplanck's Point, a flag of truce was

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, 241, 2, 3.

coming, or had come from the Vulture to that post with a letter from Arnold to Washington.”<sup>a</sup>

“The case of Col. Livingston is worthy of notice. He commanded at Verplanck’s Point, and from the proximity of his post to the enemy, and several concurring circumstances, might be very fairly presumed to have been either directly or indirectly concerned in Arnold’s manœuvres. By a very laconic letter, Washington ordered that officer to come to him immediately. Livingston expected, at least, a severe scrutiny into his conduct, being fully aware, though conscious of his innocence, that circumstances were unfavorable. But Washington made no inquiries into the past, nor uttered a syllable that implied distrust. He told Col. Livingston that he had sent for him to give him very special orders, to impress upon him the danger of his post and the necessity of vigilance, and to communicate other particulars, which could only be done in a personal interview. In conclusion he said it was a source of gratification to him, that the post was in the hands of an officer, whose courage and devotedness to the cause of his country afforded a pledge of a faithful and honorable discharge of duty. Let the reader imagine the grateful emotions of Col. Livingston, his increased esteem for his commander, and the alacrity with which, under such an impulse, he went back to his station of high trust and danger.”<sup>b</sup>

One of the most interesting associations connected with this spot, is the recollection, that here were located the head-quarters of General Washington.

“On my return from the southward in 1782,” says the translator of Chastellux, (who has thought proper to withhold his name,) “I spent a day or two at the American camp at Verplanck’s Point, where I had the honor of dining with General Washington. I had suffered severely from an ague which I could not get quit of, though I had taken the exercise of a hard trotting horse, and got thus far to the northward in the month of October. The General observing it, told me he was sure I had not met with a good glass of wine for some time—an article then very rare—but that my dis-

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks’ Life of Arnold, p. 249.

<sup>b</sup> Sparks’ Life of Arnold, p. 253.

order must be frightened away. He made me drink three or four of his silver camp cups of excellent Madeira at noon, and recommended to me to take a generous glass of claret after dinner; a prescription by no means repugnant to my feelings, and which I most religiously followed. I mounted my horse the next morning, and continued my journey to Massachusetts, without ever experiencing the slightest return of my disorder.

“The American camp here presented the most beautiful and picturesque appearance. It extended along the plain, on the neck of land formed by the winding of the Hudson, and had a view of this river to the south. Behind it the lofty mountains, covered with woods, formed the most sublime back-ground that painting could express. In the front of the tents was a regular continued portico, formed by the boughs of the trees in full verdure, decorated with much taste and fancy. Opposite the camp, and on distinct eminences, stood the tents of some of the general officers over which towered predominant that of Washington. I had seen all the camps in England, from many of which drawings and engravings have been taken; but this was truly a subject worthy the pencil of the first artist. The French camp, during their stay in Baltimore, was decorated in the same manner. At the camp at Verplanck's Point we distinctly heard the morning and evening gun of the British at Kingsbridge.”

The curiosity seizes with avidity upon any incidental information which fills up the bare outline of history. The personal history of Washington more particularly, wherever it has been traced by those who were in contact with him, is full of interest. Some of the sketches given by the Marquis of Chastellux, who passed this point of the Hudson on his way to Washington's head-quarters below, are very graphic.

“The weather being fair on the 26th,” he says, “I got on horseback, after breakfast, with the General. He was so attentive as to give me the horse I rode on the day of my arrival. I found him as good as he is handsome; but, above all, perfectly well broke and well trained, having a good mouth, easy in hand, and stopping short in a gallop without bearing the bit. I mention these minute particulars, because it is the General himself who breaks all his own horses. He is an excellent and bold



horseman, leaping the highest fences, and going extremely quick, without standing upon his stirrups, bearing on the bridle, or letting his horse run wild; circumstances which our young men look upon as so essential a part of English horsemanship, that they would rather break a leg or an arm than renounce them.

It was off Verplanck's Point that Hudson's vessel, the Half-Moon, came to an anchor on the 1st of October, 1609.<sup>a</sup>

"Here he was visited by the native Highlanders,<sup>b</sup> who came flocking to the ship, expressing their wonder and astonishment to behold a vessel so superior to their canoes, and weapons so much more terrible than their own. Anxious to carry away to their friends some part of this floating world of wonders, and not satisfied with the trifles they received in return for skins, one of the canoes with one man in it lurked about the stern with a thievish tardiness, notwithstanding he was warned off. Watching an opportunity, he at length crawled up the rudder into the cabin window, and stole a pillow and a few articles of wearing apparel. The mate, little anticipating that justice, though slow, is sure, and would follow him even to the arctic circle, shot at the poor pilferer, and killed him. The rest fled, panic struck, and in their precipitance some leaped into the water. The ship's boat was manned and sent to recover the articles: one of those who had leaped into the water got hold of the boat for the purpose of overturning it, as was thought, but the cook stood ready with his sword, and with one blow cut off one of his hands, and he was drowned. This was the first Indian blood shed during the voyage. With this mighty revenge for a trifling injury, they returned to the ship, and weighed anchor near Teller's Point, off the mouth of Croton River, near the entrance into Tappan Sea."

Parsonage or Montrose's Point, is separated from Verplanck's Point on the north by the creek Meanagh. This Point was originally granted by the Van Cortlandts to the Dutch Reformed Church of Cortlandt manor. Some time subsequent to the revo-

---

<sup>a</sup> Moulton & Yates Hist. N. Y., page 271.

<sup>b</sup> The Wickapy Indians, whose principal settlements were in the vicinity of Antony Nose.

lutionary war, the title of the church becoming involved, the property was sold to satisfy quit-rent. The Point, however, again reverted to the Dutch Church, who disposed of it to various individuals, from whom it descended by purchase to the present proprietors, James Talbot, Esq., and Col. John King.<sup>a</sup>

The first Dutch Church in this town, stood on the Brotherson farm at Verplanck's Point, now owned by Mr. John Henry. This edifice was standing in 1793. Prior to its erection the members of the Reformed Dutch Society appear to have attended services at the Sleepy Hollow Church, for the following list of communicants occurs in the records of that church, dated April 21st, A. D., 1717, entitled a continuation of the persons, members living in the manor of Cortlandt, and Patent of Capt. Dekay and Ryck Abrahamsen. First, Sybout Herricksen Krankheyt and Geertje his wife, Jan Corne van Texel and Annetje his wife, Francoy de Paw, Mathys Brouwer and Marrietje his wife, Nathan Beesly and Esther his wife, Catharine van Texel, wife of Hendrick Lent, Geertje Brouwer, wife of Samuel Brouwer, Hendrick Lent and Cornelia, his wife, William van Texel and Trynje his wife, Annetje Sybout, wife of Jan Beesly, Maria de Paw, wife of Abram Lent, Aeltje Brouwer, wife of Jeurisen Wall; Theunis Kranckhyt, and Sophye his wife; William Teller, and Marrietje his wife; Jeremy Gennoyss, and Annetje his wife; Marrietje Blauvelt, wife of Ryck Lent; and Elizabeth, the wife of Cornelis Michgrelzen."

Belonging to the Reformed Dutch Church of Cortlandtown is a manuscript volume entitled "Kerkelyk Aanteken boek voor De Mannour van Cortlandt," (that is, A Church Register for the Manor of Cortlandt,) containing a list of baptized infants, to which is appended the names of the parents and witnesses, &c. The first entry occurs June 3d, 1729; baptized Teunis, the son of Hendrick Brower and Jannetje Crankheit.

The 28th day of June, 1760, ordained as consistory Hermanus Gardinier, Abraham van Tessel, as elders, and Abraham Lent as deacon, &c. From this it is evident, that a distinct society was organized on Cortlandt's Manor as early as 1729. The old church must have been erected soon after.

---

<sup>a</sup> This gentleman is the well known author of "Travels in South America."

The present church of Cortlandtown is situated southeast of Verplanck's Point, near the edge of the Albany and New York Post road. It is a neat building of wood, with a tower and cupola, but its interior contains nothing worthy of particular notice. In the cemetery surrounding the church are several monuments to the Lents, Montross's, Brinckerhoffs, &c. &c. Also a plain headstone inscribed as follows:—

“ Sacred  
to the memory of  
Dr. PETER GOETCHIUS,  
who died the 21st of Sept., A.D. 1828,  
aged 70 years, 5 months,  
and 20 days,  
having been for 35 years an elder  
of the Reformed Dutch Church in  
Cortlandtown, and died, as he lived,  
a Christian.

“ ‘ The silent tomb and rising hillocks show’  
The way, the end of mortals here below ;  
But silent tombs nor hillocks can affright  
The soul of him whose ways are just and right.  
How calm the righteous man with God his friend ;  
Peace crowns his life, and happiness his end.’ ”

The following minutes are extracted from the records of the New York Classis :

Flatbush, April 24, 1792, the Rev. Classis “ appointed the Rev. Mr. Jackson<sup>a</sup> to visit the congregation at the Cortlandt's manor between this and the next session, and to report to Classis the state of that congregation.”<sup>b</sup>

September 4, 1792, Mr. Jackson reports to Classis that he has fulfilled his commission, and finds the congregation have lost their church, diminished in number, and greatly dispersed.

Resolved, that Mr. Jackson shall again visit them as soon as convenient between this and next spring to organize the con-

---

<sup>a</sup> To this individual, (under God,) the Reformed Dutch Church in Cortlandtown is indebted for her re-establishment and present success.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, Vol. I., 110.

sistory, and do any thing in his power to collect the congregation.<sup>a</sup>

April 30, 1793, Rev. G. A. Kuypers and Rev. Peter Stryker, each with an elder, appointed by Classis to visit the vacant congregations at Cortlandt's manor as soon as possible, in order to organize a consistory, &c. &c. Rev. Mr. Brush and Brouwer ordered to preach in their absence in their pulpits, and after they have accomplished their mission to repair to the same place, and preach there at least each one Sabbath.<sup>b</sup>

September 2, 1794, ordered that Mr. Jackson visit the congregation of Cortlandt's manor the second Lord's day September instant; also, that Mr. Schoonmaker visit said congregation once in the meantime between this and next meeting.<sup>c</sup>

Also ordered, that the Rev. Mr. Sickels in the course of this fall visit Peekskill, and apply to the Classis of Albany for recommendations to visit their vacancies.

1797, Rev. Mr. Lowe reports that he has fulfilled his mission to Cortlandt.

Mr. Abeel appointed<sup>d</sup> 1798. Mr. Abeel reports that he has fulfilled his appointment.

Ordered, that the candidates now under the care of this Classis supply each one Sabbath at Cortlandt town, and that Mr. Jackson preach and administer the Lord's Supper once during said time.

May 8, 1800, a call made out by the church at Cortlandt town upon the Rev. William Manly, was laid before the Classis for approbation. Upon reading the same, it was found to be in due form, and subscribed by three elders and four deacons, but not authorized by any minister as the moderator of the call. Dr. Peter Goetchius, one of the subscribing elders, appearing before the Classis, attested to his own signature and that of each of the other subscribers, and gave sufficient reasons why a neighboring minister could not assist in completing this document. It was approved and endorsed.<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, vol. i., 113.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, vol. i., 123.

<sup>c</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, vol. i., 143.

<sup>d</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, vol. i., 187.

<sup>e</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, vol. i., 221.

The Dutch Reformed Church of Cortlandt town was incorporated 30th December, 1794; first trustees, William Lent, Peter Goetchius, Hercules Lent; elders Abraham Lent, Benjamin Dyckman, Jacobus Kronkhite, deacons.<sup>a</sup>

To this church is annexed the Van Nest Reformed Dutch Chapel at Peekskill.

Prior to the year 1801, supplies were obtained weekly from New York.

## LIST OF MINISTERS.

Date of instalment.	Ministers.	Vacated by.
April, 1800, - - -	Rev. William Manly. <sup>b</sup>	Death.
March 27, 1810, - -	“ Abraham Hoffman.	
October 21, 1831, - -	“ R. Kirkwood.	
July, 1836, - - -	“ Cornelius de Pew Westbrook, present minister.	

At a short distance below Verplanck's Point is situated Boscobel House, the late residence of Staats Morris Dyckman, Esq., at present occupied by his grand-daughter Elizabeth, wife of Col. John P. Cruger. The house is built in the French style, and occupies a very pleasant spot on the brow of a high hill, overlooking the river and adjacent country. The grounds surrounding the mansion are greatly enriched with luxuriant woods and plantations. The beautiful island of Oscawana forms a portion of the Cruger estate.

Staats Morris Dyckman, the former proprietor, was the fifth son of Jacob Dyckman of Philipsburgh, and the protégé of Gen. Staats Morris; he was also, for many years, the private secretary of Sir William Erskine, in which capacity he attended the latter to Europe. Sir William died in 1795, leaving a large and valuable property to his secretary. Soon after the death of his friend, Mr. Dyckman returned to his native country, purchased the Boscobel estate, and erected the present mansion. The library formerly contained a valuable collection of books, (amounting to 6,000 volumes,) which were accidentally destroyed by fire.

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A., 78.

<sup>b</sup> Brother of General Manly.

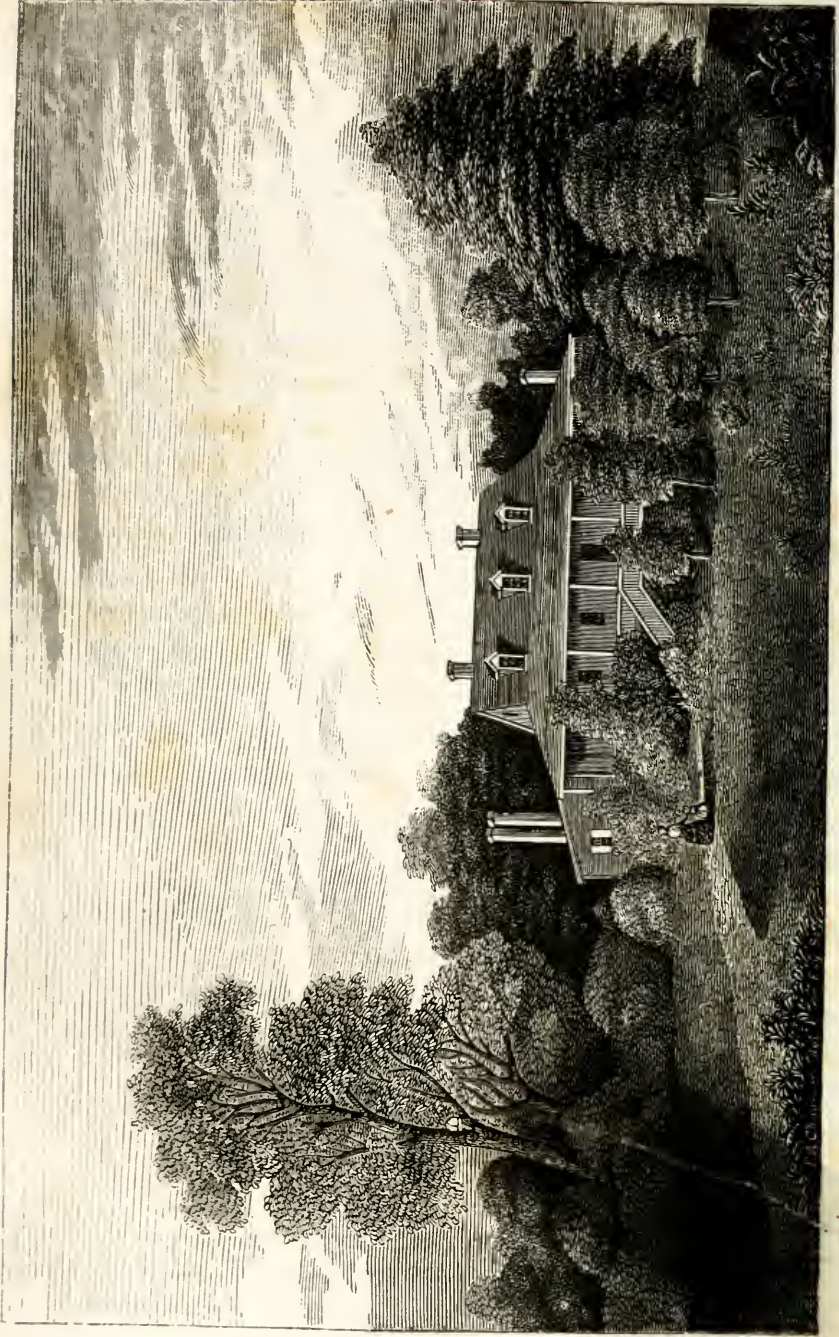
In the vicinity of Boscobel house is situated the small hamlet and landing of Crugers, a name derived from the Cruger family, who have long possessed estates in the immediate neighborhood. A small mountain stream enters the Hudson at this place, called the Mill brook, upon which stood the manorial mills, long since superseded by Ramsay's mill. Above Crugers, crowning the bold banks of the mountain torrent, is situated the Cortlandt furnace, which has given name to an extensive tract of forest, (consisting of 1500 acres) called the furnace woods.

In the year 1760 a mining company was established in England, and German miners employed for the purpose of obtaining and smelting iron ore in this vicinity. It would appear, however, that the ore was not found here in sufficient abundance, for, at a vast expense, we find it subsequently transported from the Queensbury mine, in the forest of Dean, Rockland county, (by the route of King's ferry,) and smelted in this furnace.

But even in Rockland County the ore was not found in sufficient quantities to render it of any importance, so that prior to the Revolution, the enterprise was wholly abandoned, and the property sold to Mr. John Ramsay whose daughter married John Cruger, father of Nicholas, the present proprietor of the furnace woods. Mr. Benjamin Odell occupies the Ramsay residence and mill. The Cruger mansion is delightfully situated near the landing commanding from its elevated position, most extensive views of the river. The present occupant is the Hon. Nicholas Cruger, who, for several years represented this County in assembly.

The Cruger family emigrated to this country at a very early period of its settlement, and descend from the Hon. Henry Cruger, Mayor of Bristol, (England) father of Nicholas Cruger. The latter individual is the grandfather of the Hon. Nicholas Cruger, Col. John P. Cruger, and Henry Cruger, Esq. Croton village in this town, is situated on the north side of the Croton river, near its confluence with the Hudson: it contains one Methodist Church, one tavern, two stores and fifteen dwellings. Here is a convenient landing known as Collabergh landing, from whence steamboats and sloops ply to the city of New York, and other places on the Hudson river. Here is also situated the Cort-





CORTLANDT MANOR HOUSE.



landtown post office.<sup>a</sup> To the east of Croton village, the Collabergh mountain, a high ridge encompassed by woods, towers far above the surrounding hills, at the foot of which is situated the Collabergh pond. Near the mouth of Croton river stands the Cortlandt manor house, late the residence of Gen. Philip van Cortlandt, but now in possession of Col. Pierre van Cortlandt, his nephew. This venerable mansion was built soon after the erection of the manor by Johannes van Cortlandt, oldest son of Stephanus van Cortlandt, first lord of the manor of Cortlandt. The basement story still retains the old embrasures for fire arms, and the steep flight of steps in front, powerfully reminds the visitor of those sanguinary times, when its noble owners never knew when they were secure from the inroads of the savages, but in proportion to the strength and security of their habitations. The front commands the most extensive and beautiful views of the Croton bay and Hudson river, with the additional interest of a lawn and neat garden, laid out at the foot of the building. It is sheltered on the north by a high hill covered with luxuriant forest trees. The approach to the house is by a road formed on the banks of the Croton river.

The entrance hall is adorned with several stag's heads, the only remains of that wild race which anciently spread from the Hudson to Connecticut.

The library contains together with a valuable collection of books, several interesting autographs, viz: a poetical effusion of Mrs. Madison, wife of his excellency, President Madison, addressed, for Mr. Pierre van Cortlandt, jun :

Happy the man, and he alone,  
Who, master of himself, can say,  
To day at least hath been my own,  
For I have clearly lived to-day.

[D. P. Madison.]

Next occurs a letter from Gen. Lafayette to Charles King, Esq.

---

<sup>a</sup> New York Gazetteer.

*La Grange, September 28, 1832.*

This letter, my dear sir, will be delivered by Mr. Fiorelli, a young Italian sculptor, a refugee patriot, nephew to the gentleman whom I introduced to you in 1824. I recommend him to your good advice and beg you to accept the best wishes and regards of your obliged and affectionate friend.

LAFAYETTE.

There is also an original letter from Gen. Washington, dated Mount Vernon, April 3d, 1797, to Mrs. Clinton, near which, is the following, "Mrs. Washington presents her compliments to Mrs. Clinton, and finding that Congress will, contrary to their usual practice on Saturdays, assemble to-morrow, proposes to Mrs. Clinton to visit the Federal building, at six o'clock to-morrow afternoon if it should be convenient to her. Friday afternoon."

In the same apartment, is a fine bust of the Hon. Pierre van Cortlandt, from the original painting by Jarvis; and a portrait of General Pierre van Cortlandt, executed in crayons, by Valdemut, 1797. Also the silver mounted pistols of the Lieut. Governor.

The entire suite of apartments on the principal floor are painted to imitate oak wainscoating. In the dining room are several family portraits, viz: Dr. Beck of Albany, Pierre van Cortlandt and Catherine van Cortlandt.

What a variety of illustrious visitors may fancy summon up and set down in this ancient mansion. At one time the illustrious Franklin, seated in the parlour, upon seeing Gen. Pierre van Cortlandt, (then a boy,) walk in with a handfull of prickly pears, requested a few of the pins as he was shortly going to France and would like to exhibit in that country pins of domestic manufacture.

At another, we have the neighboring tenantry assembled on the lawn, while the eloquent Whitfield addresses them from the piazza.

The year preceding the commencement of hostilities between the mother country and her colonies, His Excellency, William Tryon, and suite, paid an unlooked for visit here, of which Gen.

Philip van Cortlandt thus speaks : " I remember Governor Tryon came in a vessel bringing his wife and a young lady, who was a daughter of the Hon. John Watts, a relation of my father, and Col. Edmund Fanning, his friend and secretary ; and after remaining a night, he proposed a walk, and after proceeding to the highest point of land on the farm, being a height which affords a most delightful prospect, when the governor commenced with observing what great favors could be obtained if my father would relinquish his opposition to the views of the king and parliament of Great Britain, what grants of land could and would be the consequence, in addition to other favors of eminence, consequence, &c. My father then observed that he was chosen a representative by the unanimous approbation of a people who placed confidence in his integrity to use all his ability for their benefit and the good of his country as a true patriot, which line of conduct he was determined to pursue. The governor then turned to Col. Fanning and said, " I find our business here must terminate, for nothing can be effected in this place, so we will return ;" which they did by taking a short and hasty farewell, and embarked on board the sloop and returned to New York. This was in the year 1774."<sup>a</sup>

Much valuable property was destroyed in this vicinity by the great Croton flood of 1840, caused by the giving way of the dam, on which occasion the river (directly opposite the mansion) rose suddenly to the height of eight feet above the ordinary tide level. At the wire mills, half a mile distant, it exceeded fifty feet.

A long walk leads through the old garden or pleasance to the ancient ferry house. This building was occupied by a continental guard during the Revolution, and occasionally favored with the presence of Washington and other distinguished military officers.

The following orders from the Baron de Kalb bear date,

" Camp near Croton Bridge, 19th July, 1778.

" Colonel Malcolm's regiment is ordered to march at 2 o'clock to-morrow morning to the fort at West Point, on Hudson's River, with the regiment commanded by Lieut. Col. Parker, which is to

---

<sup>a</sup> Gen. Phillip van Cortlandt's Diary.

join on the road near Croton Bridge. The commander of the two regiments (Col. Burr) will make all convenient dispatch, marching ten miles a day, as water and ground will admit.<sup>a</sup>

The BARON DE KALB."

During the winter of 1782, Captain Daniel Williams, of the New York levies, (stationed on the lines,) having just returned from an excursion to Morrisania, was surprised by a party of the enemy's horse, in a barn near the ferry house. George McChain, who behaved with the utmost gallantry on this occasion, was killed; the rest of the party effected their escape on the ice.

A beautiful lane leads from the ferry-house east to the Croton bridge, which crosses the river a short distance from Joseph Bayley's wire manufactory. Below the bridge the river is seen expanding into a wide bay, ornamented with picturesque islands, points of land, and lofty banks, covered with clusters of rich foliage. On the evening of October the 1st, 1609, Henry Hudson anchored the Half-Moon at the mouth of the Croton. The bay was once famous throughout the country as the favorite resort of vast flocks of canvass back ducks, and shoals of shad fish.

The Van Cortlandt Cemetery is situated on the summit of a hill west of the mansion. Here is a marble tomb erected to the

Memory of the Honorable  
PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT,  
late Lieutenant-Governor of the  
State of New York,  
and President of the Convention that  
framed the Constitution thereof during  
the Revolutionary war with Great Britain.  
He departed this life on the first day of  
May, in the year of our Lord 1814, in the  
ninety-fourth year of his age.  
He was a patriot of the first order, zealous to  
the last for the liberties of his country;  
A man of exemplary virtues; kind as a neighbor,  
fond and indulgent as a parent; an honest man—  
ever the friend of the poor;

---

<sup>a</sup> Burr's Mem., vol. i., 131.

respected and beloved.

The simplicity of his private life was that  
of an ancient Patriarch.

He died a bright witness of that perfect  
love which casts out the fear of death,  
putting his trust in the living God, and  
with full assurance of salvation in the  
redeeming love of Jesus Christ, retaining  
his recollection to the last, and calling upon  
his Saviour to take him to himself.

Near the Lieutenant-Governor are interred the remains of his illustrious son, Gen. Philip van Cortlandt, who died November 21st, 1831, aged 82; and Johanna van Cortlandt, wife of the Hon. Pierre van Cortlandt, daughter of Gilbert and Cornelia Livingston, born at Kingston, in the county of Ulster, the 28th day of August, 1722, died at her residence at Croton, on the 16th of September, 1808, aged 87 years, &c. Also a tomb bearing the following inscription:—

Sacred  
To the memory  
of  
GERARD G. BEEKMAN,  
born  
September 19, 1746,  
In the city of New York ;  
died  
June 22d, A.D. 1822,  
at his seat  
In the town of Mount Pleasant,  
County of West Chester,  
aged  
73 years, 9 months, and 3 days.

Beside the above tombs, there is a small pedestal surmounted with a chaste urn, inscribed as follows:—

To the memory of  
CATHARINE,  
wife of Col. PIERRE  
VAN CORTLANDT, JUNR.,  
and eldest daughter of

George Clinton, Esqr.,  
Vice-President of the  
United States.

“The memory of the just is blessed;”  
Prov. 10: 7.

May death's best slumbers occupy thy urn—  
The heap that hides thee nature's livery wear;  
O be thou sacred in the silent bourne,  
Till time rolls round the great Sabbatic year.

born at New London  
the 5th November, 1770,  
she deceased at her  
residence, Peekskill,  
on the 10th January, 1811,  
aged 40 years, 2  
months and 5 days, &c. &c.

Likewise a marble obelisk to the memory of Anne van Cortlandt, wife of Gen. Pierre van Cortlandt:—

“She is not dead, but sleepeth.”

Also monuments to Stephen, Gilbert and Gertrude van Cortlandt.

To the west of the cemetery, at the entrance of the neck proper, stood the Indian castle or fort of Kitchawan, one of the most ancient fortresses south of the Highlands. The narrow pass which it occupied was well protected on the north by Indian Swamp, and on the south by the salt meadows. It is said to have been erected at a very early date by the sachem Croton, as a convenient rendezvous for the assembling of his war and hunting parties, and also for the object of commanding the rich treasuries of the Hudson and the wide estuary of the Croton. We have previously shown that Matsewakes was chief sachem of Kitchawan as early as 1641.

At a short distance east of the fort, on the south edge of Haunted Hollow, is situated the Indian burying-ground of Kitchawan. Nothing can be more romantic and beautiful than its locality, “a clear proof of the good taste of those who selected and consecrated it for that object.” There was formerly a current belief in the

neighborhood that the forms of the ancient warriors still haunted the surrounding glens and woods. The apparitions have been named, in consequence, "The Walking Sachems of Teller's Point." The road from the Manor House to Croton Landing passes along the edge of Haunted Hollow.

In connection with the above, another tradition deserves to be recorded, which asserts that several of the river tribes had a severe and sanguinary conflict with the Indians inhabiting the Point, which resulted in the defeat of the former; and, further, that the large mound or barrow near the entrance of the Point was erected over the dead who fell upon that memorable occasion. Be this as it may, indubitable evidence exists that a struggle must have taken place here at some time, from the fact, that vast quantities of warlike weapons have been found in the immediate vicinity of the fort.

A rural lane, bordered with luxuriant forest trees, leads from the main, called Enoch's Neck, to the Point proper, originally called by the Indians Senasqua, and by the English Sarah's or Sarak's Point, a name derived from Sarah Teller, wife of William Teller, former proprietor. This lane passes immediately below the site of the Indian castle.

The Italian villa of R. T. Underhill, M.D., stands upon an elevated position near the extremity of the latter, commanding a very extensive view of the Hudson River (nearly twenty-seven miles in length) and adjacent country, in which Vredideka Hook forms a noble feature to the southwest. The basement of the building is constructed of Ashlar marble, cut in Sing Sing; the upper portion consists of stuccoed brick. The whole edifice is in admirable keeping with the adjoining vineyards and surrounding scenery.

R. T. and William A. Underhill, the present proprietors of the Point proper, are the sons of Robert Underhill, Esq., fifth in descent from the famous Lord John Underhill, High Constable of the North Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island.

The woods of Teller's Point afford a safe retreat for thousands of crows, (*corvus corone* Linn.) which here, unmolested and unwatched by the cruel farmer and gunner, have from time im-

memorial enjoyed an extensive "roost." Daily, towards sunset, may be seen approaching this sylvan abode,

"The blackening trains of crows to their repose."

[Burns.]

When the Croton dam gave way in the fall of 1840, the wild, hurrying torrent, as it approached nearer and nearer, is said to have sent a savage roar through these woods, causing the very watch-dogs to howl for fear.

A large fish pond lying east of Dr. Underhill's residence is conjectured to have originally formed the bed of the Croton River, from the fact that trunks of trees have been discovered four or five feet beneath its muddy sediment.

The southern declivities of the Point towards the Croton Bay are covered with extensive vineyards of Catawba and Isabella. The table land also embraces luxuriant orchards and vineyards. The whole of the latter cover nearly an area of forty acres.

Two thousand one hundred and fifty-four shad, and seven thousand herring, have been taken at single lifts in the adjoining waters. During the winter season vast flocks of coot and black duck frequent the shores of the Croton and Haverstraw Bays.

There are numerous Revolutionary incidents connected with Croton or Teller's Point deserving of notice. It was off the western extremity that the Vulture sloop of war came to anchor on the morning of the 21st of September, 1780, having brought up André for the purpose of holding an interview with Arnold;<sup>a</sup> and here she expected to have awaited his return—but soon after the spy had embarked for the opposite shore, a barge filled with armed men from the Vulture was seen approaching Teller's Point; whereupon, George Sherwood and John Petterson, who were in the vicinity, seized their arms and hastened to the shore, resolved in their own minds that the enemy should not land without opposition. For this purpose they concealed themselves behind the large rocks which still lie on the beach; and as the barge came sweeping along towards the shore, Petterson fired.

---

<sup>a</sup> See Greenburgh.



His aim had been well directed, for an oar was seen to fall from the hands of one of the men on board, and much confusion was observed among them. A second shot, from Sherwood, compelled them to return, which they did under a cover of canister and grape shot from the Vulture, directed to that part of the beach where Sherwood and Petterson were concealed. The cannonade from the Vulture drew the attention of the people of Cortlandtown to the scene of action. The Vulture lying in a position to be distinctly seen from Verplanck's Point, and the distance of country between it and the point on the Westchester shore, and likewise from Stony Point; the town of Haverstraw, and the point where André and Arnold held their conference in Rockland County; the grounds upon both sides of the river for many miles in extent sloping gradually towards the river—gave the inhabitants a full view of the scene of action.

The inhabitants on the Westchester side had been upon the lookout, for they apprehended an attack under cover of the night. There were more, however, who entertained the opinion that it would be brought on before sunset, until Petterson and Sherwood commenced their fire. Many of them now hastened to the scene of action with a field-piece, which they had obtained of Col. Livingston, who was in command at Verplanck's Point; and after erecting their little battery on the Point, they opened a well-directed fire against the Vulture. They soon compelled her to slip her cable and hoist sail. This circumstance prevented André from returning to New York by water.

“No sooner (says Sparks) had André and Arnold arrived at Smith's house, than a cannonade was heard down the river. It was discovered to be against the Vulture, which, although distant several miles, was in full view, and for a time seemed to be on fire. It had been reported to Colonel Livingston by messengers from Teller's Point, that the vessel was so near the shore as to be within reach of cannon-shot, and that the inhabitants were likewise apprehensive boats would land and commit depredations. Col. Livingston accordingly sent from Verplanck's Point a party with cannon, who fired upon the Vulture and compelled her to remove from the position she had held during the night, and drop farther down the river till she was beyond reach of the shot.

André beheld the scene from the windows of Smith's house with anxious emotion ; at length the firing ceased, and he resumed his wonted spirits and composure."<sup>a</sup>

Upon another occasion, " while Enoch Crosby the Westchester spy was on duty in the vicinity of Teller's Point, a British sloop of war came up the river, and anchored in the stream opposite the Point. With an unconquerable predilection for stratagem, our hero immediately concerted a plot, for the sole purpose, as he says, of affording " a little sport for his soldiers." He accordingly proceeded down to the Point, accompanied by six men, five of whom, besides himself, concealed themselves in the woods, which grew a short distance from the shore, while the other paraded the beach so as to display La Fayette's uniform in so conspicuous a manner, as to attract the notice of the officers on board the vessel.

The enemy swallowed the bait ; and a boat soon put off from the sloop of war, manned with eleven men, under the command of a lieutenant, to make a prisoner of this one yankee, who precipitately fled into the woods as the barge approached the shore. The Englishmen followed, threatening to shoot the fugitive unless he stopped and surrendered.

As soon as the pursuers had passed his own little party, which were scattered in various directions, Crosby exclaimed,

" Come on my boys ! now we have them !"

At this signal, every man sprang up in his place, with a shout that made the welkin ring ; making at the same time such a rustling in the bushes, that the British, thinking themselves surrounded by a superior force, surrendered without resistance. On the next day they were marched to Fishkill, and confined in the old Dutch church."<sup>b</sup>

16th of October, 1799, (remarks Gen. Heath,) fourteen seamen were taken prisoners by Capt. Hallet's company of New York militia, two days before on the North River, near Teller's Point.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Sparks life of Arnold, 206.

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem: 22.

<sup>b</sup> Barnum's spy unmasked, p. 149, 150.

The surface of this town is hilly, and on the north west mountainous. The soil consists principally of sand and gravelly loam; it is abundantly supplied with rivulets and springs of water. The general growth of wood, is oak of all kinds, chestnut, hickory, elm, black and white ash, birch and pine.

EAST CHESTER.<sup>a</sup>

THIS township is situated ten miles south of White Plains, twenty miles north of New York, one hundred and forty from the city of Albany, and four east of the Hudson; bounded, north by Scarsdale, east by Pelham and New Rochelle, south by West Chester, and west by Yonkers. It is about seven miles long, nor thand south, and near two and a half miles wide. On the west it is washed by the Bronx river, (Aguehung) and on the east by Hutchinson's (Aqueanounck,) or East Chester creek, which enters a large bay of the same name, in the south east angle of this town.<sup>b</sup>

East Chester, was at first called Hutchinsons, and subsequently, "*The Ten Farms*," an appellation derived from its ancient division among ten proprietors. The present name was conferred as early as 1666.

The lands of East Chester, were formerly included in the Indian grant of 1640, whereby the Indians conveyed to the Dutch, all the territory situated between the town of Greenwich and the North River.

Upon the 14th of November, 1654, Thomas Pell obtained a second grant from the aboriginal proprietors, which also embraced the present township. Twelve years later we find the inhabitants of East Chester confirmed in all their rights by the Mohegan Sachems, Gramatan, Woariatapus, Annhooke, (alias Wampage,) and Porridge.

The undivided lands, which were a long time in controversy between the two towns of East and West Chester, appear to have been held by the Indians up to a late period of our colonial history. The aboriginal names of Coranases and Conoval, frequently occur in the early deeds of this town.

---

<sup>a</sup> This name, Chester, says Camden, "comes plainly from the Roman Castrum." Camden's Britannia.

<sup>b</sup> See N. Y. Gazeteer.

Indian wigwams formerly occupied the site of Daniel Morgan's residence, bordering the Aqueanouncke (Hutchinson's) river, and the mill of Stephen Anderson upon the same stream.

Vast quantities of arrow and spear heads are found in every portion of this district, showing that it was once a great hunting country. The Indians were extravagantly fond of the chase, "their first hunting season always commencing as soon as the wild herbage began to grow up in the woods."<sup>a</sup>

Deer must have been incredibly numerous in the ancient forests of East Chester, as we invariably find the wolf infesting the same section of country.

Upon the 10th day of February, 1672, it was agreed (by the inhabitants of East Chester,) "that the town wolfpits which Mr. Pinckini and John Hoyt hath made, shall be, and is also illegal in the glan (glen,) where they are situated, and that the inhabitants, do see to fill them up." Seven years later it was decided by vote, that the inhabitants pay ten shillings for every wolf that is killed within the limits of East Chester, for the year ensuing. These orders show conclusively that this ferocious animal was then very troublesome.

So common and mischievous were wolves (at this early period,) throughout the county, that we find the provincial assembly compelled to issue the following order for their destruction, entitled, an act for destroying of wolves within this colony :

"Forasmuch as divers inhabitants of this colony have suffered many grievous losses in their stock, both of sheep and neat cattle, for the prevention of which, and encouragement of those who shall destroy wolves in the said colony, and that the breed of wolves within this colony may be wholly rooted out and extinguished, be it enacted, &c., that in the COUNTY OF WEST CHESTER, twenty shillings for a grown wolf killed by a Christian, and ten shillings for such a wolf killed by an Indian, and half that sum respectively for a whelp."<sup>b</sup>

The remains of a large wolf-pit are still to be seen in the Win-

<sup>a</sup> Vanderdoncks N. N., N. Y. His. Soc. 207.

<sup>b</sup> Acts of Col. Assembly N. Y. p. 47.

ter Hill burying-ground, situated upon the property of Mr. Robert Purdy. Tradition asserts, that over one hundred years ago the original settlers used to hunt bears and deer in the Long Reach patent, (situated on the northwest side of this town,) and they were accustomed to provide themselves with thirty days provision.

The following grant, under the hand and seal of Thomas Pell, occurs in 1664, to James Euestis, Philip Pinckney, and others.

Know all men by these presents, that I, Thomas Pell, have granted to James Euestis and Philip Pinckney, for themselves and their associates, to the number of ten families, to settle down at Hutchinsons, that is where the house stood at the meadows and uplands, to Hutchinson's River, they paying according to ye proportion of the charges which was disburs't for the purchase, and other necessary charges, only liberty to have the disposing of two lotts upon the same terms with them, because that I might provide them some tradesmen for their comfort, as a smith, or weaver, or what else with their approbation. Witness my hand, this 24th of June, 1664.<sup>a</sup>

THOMAS PELL.

The above grantees appear to have emigrated from Fairfield, Connecticut, to this place, for, in the year 1649, we find the following names recorded in the town books of Fairfield, viz.: James Euestis, Philip Pinckney, John Tompkins, Moses Hoit, Samuel Drake, Andrew Ward, Walter Lancaster, Nathaniel Tompkins, Samuel Ward, &c. These individuals subsequently took an active part in the affairs of East Chester.

The following covenant was drawn up in 1665, for the future government of the proprietors, entitled :

Articles of agreement betwixt us whose names are underwritten,  
A. D. 1665.

Imprimis, that we, by the grace of God, sett down on the tract of land lying betwixt Hutchinson's brook, where the house was, until it comes unto that river, that runneth in at the head of the meadow.

2. That we endeavour to keep and maintain christian love and sivill honesty.

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec.

3. That we faithfully counsell what may be of infirmity in any one of us.

4. Plainly to deal one with another in christian love.

5. If any trespass be done, the trespassed and the trespasser shall chuse two of this company, and they a third man if need be required, to end the matter, without any further trubell.

6. That all and every one of us, or that shall be of us, do pay unto the minister, according to his meade.

7. That none exceed the quantity of fifteen acres, until all have that quantity.

8. That every man hath that meadow that is most convenient for him.

9. That every man build and inhabit on his home lot before the next winter.

10. That no man maks sale of his lot before he hath built and inhabited one year, and then to render it to the company, or to a man whom they approve.

11. That any man may sell part of his alotment to his neighbour.

12. That no man shall engrosse to himself by buying his neighbour's lot for his particular interest, but with respect to sell it if an approved man come, and that without much advantage, to be judged by the company.

13. That all public affairs, all bridges, highways, or mill, be carried on jointly, according to meadow and estates.

14. That provision be endeavoured for education of children, and then encouragement be given unto any that shall take pains according to our former way of rating.

15. That no man shall give entertainment to a foreigner who shall carry himself obnoxious to the company except amendment be after warning given.

16. That all shall join in guarding of cattel when the company see it convenient.

17. That every man make and maintain a good fence about all his arable land, and in due time a man chosen to view if the company's be good.

18. That every man sow his land when most of the company sow or plant in their fields.

19. That we give new encouragement to Mr. Brewster each other week, to give us a word of exhortation, and that when we are settled we meet together every other weeke, one hour, to talk of the best things.

20. That one man, either of himself, or by consent, may give entertainment to strangers for money.

21. That one day, every spring, be improved for the destroying of rattle snakes.

23. That some, every Lord's day, stay at home, for safety of our wives and children.

24. That every man get and keep a good lock to his door as soon as he can.

25. That a convenient place be appointed for oxen if need require.

26. If any man's meadow or upland be worse in quality, that be considered in quantity.

27. That every man that hath taken up lots shall pay to all public charges equal with those that got none.

That all that hath or shall take up lots within this tract of land mentioned in the premises shall subscribe to these articles.

Thomas Shute  
The mark of

The mark of  
X

O

Nathaniel Tompkins,

Nathaniel White,

Philip Pinkney,

William Haidon's mark, H

The mark of X Joseph Joans,

The mark of John Gay, I G

John Hoitt,

John A. Pinkney,

James Eustis,

The mark of John Tompkins, O

The mark of X Daniel Godwin,

Richard Shute,

The mark of X William Squire,

The mark of John Hollind, I H

David Osburn,

Moses Hoitte,

John Goding,

Richard Hoadley,

Samuel Drake,

The mark of Henry X Ffowlir,

John Jackson,

John Emory,

Moses Jackson,

The mark of John Drake, I D

John Clarke,

This is a true copy according unto the originall, transcribed by me. Richard Shute, this 23d day of Nov. '68.

In 1668, the inhabitants of Eastchester obtained a further



grant from the native Indians, Ann-hooke and others. This sale was confirmed by royal patent the same year :

“ Richard Nicholls, Esq., Governor General under his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York and Albany, &c. &c., of all his territories in America, to all whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting : whereas there is a certain plantation upon ye maine, lying within ye limits and bounds of Westchester, belonging to ye north riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, situate and being in ye north part of ye limits of ye said town, which said plantation is commonly called and known by ye name of ten farms, or Eastchester, and is now in the tenure and occupation of several freeholders and inhabitants, who having heretofore made lawful purchase thereof, have likewise manured and improved a considerable part of ye lands thereunto belonging, and settled several families thereupon ; now for a confirmation unto ye said freeholders, and inhabitants in their enjoyment and possession of ye premises, Now know ye, by virtue of ye commission, and authority, unto me given by his royal highness, I have ratified, confirmed, and granted, and by these presents, do ratifie, confirm. and grant, unto Philip Pinckney, James Euestis, and William Hoyden, as patentees for and in ye behalf of themselves, and their associates, their heirs, executors, and assignees, all ye said plantation, with ye lands thereunto belonging, lying within ye bounds and limits hereafter exprest, viz., that is to say, bounded to the east and ye north, east, by a certain river commonly called Hutchinson’s River, which runs in at ye head of ye meadow, and is ye west bounds of Mr. Pell’s patent, to ye south by a certain creek, the mouth whereof openeth to ye south-east, including ye meadows heretofore called Hutchinson’s Meadows, and ye upland, to ye now known and common path coming up from Westchester, to take in also of ye upland between Hutchinson’s and Rattlesnake Brook, from the said path to ye extent of half a mile north-west from ye path, to plant, or otherwise to manure, as they shall see cause ; ye remainder to lye in common between you and ye inhabitants of Westchester, at ye end of which half-mile to be bounded by Rattlesnake Brook, till you come to ye head thereof ; from thence striking a north-east line to Hutchinson’s River aforementioned, ye certain bounds of this plantation aforesaid are described, and so hereafter are to be reputed and taken, any former order, conclusions, or agreement, to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding, together with all woodlands, where is meadows, pastures, messuages, waters, creeks, lakes, brooks, fishing, hawking, hunting, fowling, and other profits, commodities, emoluments, and hereditaments, to the said land and premises, within ye limits and bounds aforementioned, described, belonging, or any otherwise appertaining ; and ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs, executors, and assignees, shall likewise have the commonage, and liberty for range or food for cattle, from ye head of Hutchinson’s Brook aforesaid, for about eight English miles ; to run north-west on the woods as far as Bruncker’s River, or so far as they shall not encroach or entrench upon any other

patent by me given or granted : To HAVE AND TO HOLD all ye singular ye said lands and hereditaments and premises, with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof, to ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs, executors and assignees, to ye proper use and behoof of ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs and executors and assignees, forever ; moreover, I do hereby grant and confirm unto ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs, executors and assignees, that their plantation shall continue and retain ye name of EASTCHESTER, by which name and stile it shall be distinguished and known in all bargains, deeds, records and writings ; likewise, they shall have ye privileges of electing out of their own numbers some discreet person yearly to bear the office of a deputy constable, to keep his majesties peace, and to compose, if possible, all private business by arbitration amongst themselves, but that in all other matters they have relation to ye town and court of Westchester, they the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, executors and assignees, rendering and paying such duties and acknowledgments as now are or hereafter shall be constituted and established by ye laws of this government, under ye obedience of his royal highness, his heirs and successors. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, New York, on ye Isle of Manhattans, ye ninth day of March, in ye nineteenth year of ye reign of our Sovereign Lord Charles ye Second, by ye grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, defender of ye faith, and in ye year of our Lord God, 1666.<sup>a</sup>

“ RICHARD NICOLLS.

“ Recorded by order of ye Governor,  
the day and year above written.

“ MATTHIAS NICOLLS, Secretary.”

Subsequently the three patentees made the following declaration of trust in behalf of their associates :—

“ These may certify that we, viz. Philip Pinkney, James Eustis and William Hoyden, having a certain tract of land granted and confirmed unto us by patent, being granted and confirmed by Colonel Richard Nicholls, then Governor in New York, being granted to us, viz. Philip Pinkney, James Eustis and William Hoyden, and our associates—the above mentioned Philip Pinkney, James Eustis and William Hoyden do, by these, resign up our particular interest that we have by patent, or which was granted and confirmed unto our associates, who have owned and subscribed unto the observation of a covenant, with this provisal, that they observe all conditions of our grant ; 2ndly, that they with us, and we with them, perpetuate, our and each of our interests of land, and maintain our and their enjoyments ; 3rdly, that we, with the major part of the inhabitants that are associated, have the disposing of land, but

---

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb.

not they without us—we that are associated accordingly as our names are herein inserted :—

Philip Pinkney,  
William Haiden,  
John Hoitte,  
James Eustis,  
Richard Shute,

David Osborne,  
Samuel Drake,  
John Embury,  
John Jackson,  
Moses Jackson,

Moses Hoitte.”

Upon the 9th of March, 1666, Robert Doughty purchased several parcels of land belonging to William Haiden, situated within the limits of Eastchester Patent. In 1667 the inhabitants of this town united with those of Long Island in protesting against the Duke's laws.<sup>a</sup> The province of New York was retaken by the Dutch on the 30th of July, 1673. Upon this occasion we find the deputies of Oostdorp, alias Westchester, and the adjacent hamlet of Eastchester, offering to submit themselves to the government of the States General and the Prince of Orange; in return for which they were commanded “to nominate, by their inhabitants, a double number as magistrates for the aforesaid villages.”<sup>b</sup> Subsequently the following order was issued by the Lords, Commanders, and Honorable Council of War of the New Netherlands, residing in Fort William Hendricke.

“Whereas, by a former order it was thought fit that the two towns of West and Eastchester should be brought under one court of judicature, consisting of three schepens, or magistrates—that is to say, out of the town of Westchester two, and one out of the town of Eastchester; and that the inhabitants of the said respective towns should make choice each of a double number—the which, by them, hath been accordingly executed, and returned, and made unto us,—we have made choice of magistrates of the said towns, to continue for the space of one whole year next ensuing the date hereof, viz.,

For ye town of Westchester, { Joseph Palmer,  
do do Eastchester, John Hoitte,  
do do Eastchester, Edward Waters.

And the said persons are hereby required with all possible expedition to appear before us, and to take the oath, &c. &c. Dated at Fort William Hendricke, 27th of August, 1673.<sup>c</sup>

Cornelius Euerstend,  
T. Youngs,  
Jacob Banckers.

<sup>a</sup> Thompson's History of Long Island.

<sup>b</sup> Eastchester Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec., vol. xxiii., 273.

In 1676 Nathaniel Tompkins, of this town, was directed by Governor Andross "to seize all stray horses within the jurisdiction of West and Eastchester that are without marks, and bring them to the constable or justice of the peace."<sup>a</sup>

At this period the standard prices of grain and other marketable produce were as follows:—

Merchantable winter wheat,	5s. 0d.
Summer wheat,	4s. 6d.
Merchantable barley,	4s. 0d.
Rye,	3s. 6d.
Peas,	3s. 0d.
Indian corn,	2s. 6d.

Certain difficulties having arisen with regard to the boundaries of Eastchester Patent, Mr. Philip Pinckney was appointed on the 30th of October, 1677, "to go to our governor to meet Mr. Justice Pell, Esq., where it is intended that our governor is to decide any difference that may arise betwixt us concerning the bounds of our Patent."<sup>b</sup>

In the year 1681 Capt. Phillip Pinckney, Samuel Drake, senior, and Moses Hoit, were chosen to treat with the Indians about their lands. "And so if they can agree, in behalf of the rest of the inhabitants, with the said Indians, concerning the purchase and pay of the said land, &c., these three men above mentioned to be together in the design."

"Also it is further agreed that the said Indian purchase shall be paid, answerable unto every man's proportion of land in the east division already laid out, &c."<sup>c</sup>

The following land list occurs in 1682, containing the names and rates of the resident freeholders:—

Samuel Drake,	30½	Walter Lancaster,	22
Nathaniel Tompkins,	23½	Richard Shute,	44
Capt. Will. Haiden,	40	Henry Fowler,	25
William Pinckney,	40	John Tompkins,	24
Richard Hoadley,	24	John Wharford,	24
William Gray,	8½	Samuel Godin,	23½

<sup>a</sup> Eastchester Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.

John Pinckney,	25 $\frac{1}{4}$	John Vaille,	6 $\frac{1}{2}$
John Drake,	24 $\frac{1}{4}$	Samuel Godin,	5 $\frac{1}{4}$
Moses Hoit,	45	Walter Webelly,	8
John Clarke,	13		

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Eastchester, held December 1st, 1683, it was resolved, that Nathaniel Tompkyns, John Drake, and Richard Shute, should go into the woods with the Indians, "and mark out certain lands within the patent of Eastchester, and go and know what the said Indians do ask for the said lands, and bring report to the rest of the inhabitants."

On the 1st of March, 1686, Captain William Haiden and Moses Hoit, sen., were chosen by the inhabitants of Eastchester to go to treat with the Westchester townsmen in defence of our land, granted to us by patent."

On the 16th of January, 1698, occurs the following entry in the town records:—"There being several inhabitants of Westchester come to invade us (the inhabitants of Eastchester) in the property, of our lands, by way of molestation, the town did inform the above said persons that they should not proceed to lay out any land, or mark any trees, or to set any marks, as by sufficient testimony will appear."

In the Secretary of State's office, at Albany, there is a map of the disputed territory, entitled "A draft of the lands in controversy between the inhabitants of Westchester and the inhabitants of Eastchester, joyn'd with William Peartree, &c., surveyed and laid downe per Augustine Graham, surveyor, &c."

The vacant lands were situated on the west side of Rattlesnake Brook, in the northwest corner of the present town, and amounted to 3,308 acres. From their peculiar shape they obtained the name of the "*Long Reach*."

In 1696, "at a meeting of the freeholders, and commonalty of the borough town of West Chester, they did give and grant unto Col. Caleb Heathcote, the liberty of the stream of Hutchinson's river, or creek, lying by the "*Ten Farms*," within the limits and bounds of the patent of the borough town of Westchester

aforesaid, known by the name of Eastchester, for to erect a mill or mills thereon.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 23d day of December, A. D. 1700, we find the Indians confirming the inhabitants of Eastchester in their possession.

Be it known unto all to whom these presents may come, or concern; whereas the inhabitants of Eastchester did formerly purchase a certain tract of land of the natives, in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred sixty and six, and part of the same being not as yet satisfied, the said tract of land being butted and bounded as is hereafter expressed, viz. east, and south-east by a certaine river commonly called Hutchinson's river, which runs in at the head of the meadows, on the west bounds of Mr. Pell's patent, and southerly to Hutchinson's brook, and from the head thereof, northwest to Brunckses his river, and so from the head of Hutchinson's river, northwest to Brunckses river, and so all the land betwixt Hutchinson's and Brunckses river, according as aforementioned, now know ye, that we, Woariatapus, Annhook, and Porrige, do owne, that we have received full satisfaction of Richard Shute, John Drake, and Henry Fowler, in the behalf of the rest of the inhabitants of Eastchester aforesaid, for the said tract of land, and we the abovesaid Woariatapus, Annhook, and Porrige, do by these presents, confirm unto the said Richard Shute, John Drake, and Henry Fowler, in the behalf of the rest of the inhabitants of Eastchester aforesaid, their heirs and assigns for ever, and we the above said Woariatapus, Annhook, and Porrige, will warrant and defend the same from all incumbrances whatsoever, of any person or persons laying claime, right, title, or demand, unto any part or parcel of the abovesaid tract of land, above mentioned, in witness whereof, we the said Woariatapus, Annhook, and Porrige, have hereunto put to our hands and seales, this third day of Dec. in the 12 year of his majesties reign, A. D. 1700.

Signed, sealed, and delivered in presence of us, Robt. Bloomer, George Copping, David Whitlock.  
Gramatan Sachem,

The mark of ✕  
Woariatapus  
The mark of AH Ann Hooke,  
Porrige.

The same year it was resolved by the inhabitants of this town, "that Edmund Ward shall have and hold 60 acres of land, in consideration that the said Edmund Ward do pay the Indians purely, and clear the said town of, and from the said pay, when need be, &c.

---

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Rec.

The Indian purchase to be paid for as follows, viz., 14 guns, 12 coats, 12 Indian kettles, 12 Indian axes, 4 adzes, and 4 barrels of cider; this agreement entered into by me, Richard Shute, recorder in Eastchester.

On the 6th of April, 1705, Patthunck, Sagamore, Hopescoe alias Porrige, Anne Hook, and Elias, Indian proprietors, sold to George Booth, joiner, of the city of New York, and his associates,

“All that our right of land which is not yet lawfully purchased, lying and being from the land which is now in dispute betwixt Westchester and Eastchester, and so running along by Broncks’s river to Hutchinson’s river, and bounded on the north by Eastchester lyne, to have and to hold, &c.”

Upon the 22d of Sept. 1703, the following letters patent were issued under the great seal of the Province, to Colonel William Peartree and his associates.<sup>a</sup>

“Anne by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, &c., the queen, defender of the faith, &c.; whereas, it appears, that our beloved cousin, Edward Viscount Cornbury, had granted to Col. William Peartree, Col. Jacobus van Cortlandt, Joseph van Horne, Capt. John Drake, Thomas Pinckney, Joseph Drake, Edmund Ward, Henry Fowler, and Roger Barton, a grant for a tract of land in Westchester Co., beginning at Hutchinson’s brook, at the end of the half mile mentioned in Eastchester patent, and so up the said Hutchinson’s brook, as the brook runs to the head thereof, and from thence, northwest to Brunckses river, and so up the said Brunckses river, as the river runs, till it comes to bear with the head of Hutchinson’s river, due southeast to a chesnut tree, marked, and so down the said Hutchinson’s river as the river runs, till it comes to the northeast, and southwest line of Eastchester patent, and so down southwest, along the said line, to the head of Rattlesnake brook, and from thence down the said brook as the brook runs to the aforementioned half mile of Eastchester patent, and from thence westerly to the above said Hutchinson’s brook, where it began: KNOW YE, that we have ratified the said grant to the above mentioned persons, reserving what has been granted to Westchester, 23 of Sept. in the 7th year of her majesty’s reign, A. D. 1703.<sup>b</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> This individual was Mayor of the city of N. Y. in 1703, and for many years senior warden of Trinity Church, in that city.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. No. — p. 380.

In 1724, the inhabitants of East Chester appear to have held a quit-rent on the patent of Jacobus van Cortlandt, and others, &c.<sup>a</sup>

The following items relate to the election of town officers from 1672 to 1783.

On the 13th of February, 1672, Samuel Drake was voted in constable for the year ensuing.

April 24th, 1673, the inhabitants nominated William Haiden, for the first man to be presented to our commander for our magistrate.

Mr. John Hart was elected magistrate, A. D. 1673.

This 24th day of August, 1673, the inhabitants have nominated William Haiden, for the first man to present to our commander for a magistrate, and John Hoitte for the ground man. Upon nomination also this same day we have forthwith agreed that our desire is, that Mr. John Pell may be proposed to our commander for the year as a skoutte.

The same year Richard Shute, was chosen town recorder.

In 1686, John Pinckney appears as supervisor; Richard Shute, clerk of the town court; Joseph Drake, constable; William Haiden, Samuel Drake and Philip Pinckney, town commissioners; William Haiden and John Pinckney, representatives.

In 1691, John Pinckney, supervisor.

The following election took place in 1776-7.

Stephen Ward, supervisor; Samuel Sneden, town clerk; Charles Guion, collector; Solomon Drake and Moses Drake, assessors; Thomas Farrington, Joshua Ferris, Joseph Gedney, overseers of roads; Thomas Pinckney and William Fowler, overseers of fences; Edmund Ward and John Sneden, viewers of fences; Stephen Ward and William Fowler, pounders.

The first independent election for town officers took place on the 22d of December, 1783, under the superintendence of Stephen Ward and Ebenezer S. Burling Esq. &c., (in accordance with an

---

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. No. 2.



act of the legislature passed October 23, 1779,) when the following persons were elected.

Ebenezer Burling, Esq., supervisor; Charles Ward, town clerk; William Crawford, jun., constable and collector; Thomas Pinckney, Jacob Hunt, Daniel Learing and John Wright, assessors; Charles Guion, Elisha Shute and James Morgan, overseers of roads; William Crawford and James Morgan, pounders; William Crawford and Charles Guion, to take care of public edifices.<sup>a</sup>

The public lands of Eastchester are now managed by a board of trustees, according to an act of the legislature passed May 11th, 1846.<sup>b</sup>

The village of Eastchester is situated in the south east angle of the town, at the head of the Eastchester bay, fifteen miles from the city of New York; it contains about three hundred and fifty inhabitants, fifty dwelling houses, one Episcopal and one Methodist church, post office, three taverns, four stores, and one grist mill. There is also a convenient landing,<sup>c</sup> from whence sail several sloops trading with the New York market.

The first settlement in this town appears to have been commenced near the Indian path, (subsequently known as the Westchester path or Kingsbridge road,) leading to the wading place, cir. 1664, at a spot called Hutchinson's. "That is where the house stood at the meadows and uplands to Hutchinson's river."<sup>d</sup> In 1666 it was by royal charter enacted, "That the plantation shall continue and retain ye name of EASTCHESTER, by which name and style it shall be forever hereafter distinguished and known, &c."

The early planters in order to concentrate their dwellings as much as possible, (so as to protect themselves and families,) laid

<sup>a</sup> Town Records.—The town books consist of three volumes; the first commencing on the 13th of February, 1672; 2d vol. in 1693; 3d vol. at a much later period.

<sup>b</sup> Laws of N. Y. 69 session, chap. 185-208.

<sup>c</sup> At an early period called Sillick's landing, A. D. 1676.

<sup>d</sup> Extracts from Pell's grant.

out the original farms in narrow strips called home lots, which radiated from the village fort in all directions.

At a meeting of the inhabitants, held Oct. 16th, 1675, it was resolved, "That we will forthwith fit William Haiden's house by his land, soe as that it may, by God's helpe and blessing, answer our honorable governor's order and our own preservation. At the same time John Jackson, Richard Hoadley and Samuel Drake, jun. were chosen to stake out the place as aforementioned for the said fortification ; also John Jackson and Richard Shute were chosen to the constable to be overseers for the carrying on the said works ; and it was further agreed, that for a man's day's work, (provided he do an honest day's work,) he shall be allowed two shillings and sixpence a day, for a man, and for their cattle, cart, or tackling to do the work, or four oxen, shall be allowed six shillings a day, for two oxen, five shillings per day, and so begin the said work on Thursday next, it being the 17th of this instant, A. D. 1675."<sup>a</sup> The above structure (commonly called the General Fort) was erected by the village farmers, on the hill north-west of Mr. Philemon Fowler's residence.<sup>b</sup> The ruins of this Fort were distinctly visible thirty years ago.

Upon the 1st day of Dec. 1675, Samuel Drake, sen. was appointed by the inhabitants of Eastchester "to appear at the honorable Court of Sessions against Mr. Pell, concerning Eastchester work as not being a fort."<sup>c</sup>

By the governor's orders it appears to have been dismantled the following year, for on the 4th of Sept. 1676, we find the inhabitants agreeing "to employ a man to tear or to take down the stockadoes according to our governor's order ; also on the same occasion, Richard Shute was chosen to go to Westchester to hire or make an agreement with John Hudson to carry the stockadoes of Eastchester down to Yorke."<sup>d</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. vol. 1.

<sup>b</sup> This gentleman who has for nearly half a century filled the office of senior warden of St. Paul's Church, Eastchester, is a descendant of Henry Fowler, one of the original patentees of this town.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>d</sup> Town Rec.

Near the fort, was located the general fold, into which all cattle were driven nightly for protection. The fold appears to have been constructed sometime prior to 1684.

The first school-house was erected in 1683, for at a public meeting of the inhabitants, held on the 15th of October of that year, it was ordered, "that a school-house be erected upon a site between the property of Richard Shute and William Haiden, and encouragement given to Mr. Morgan Jones to become the school-master."<sup>a</sup>

This building occupied the site of the present village school-house. Thus the ground has been used for this purpose one hundred and sixty-four years.

In 1685 it was agreed to build a town house, fourteen feet long and twelve feet broad, and to set it up by the highway side between the houses of Captain William Haiden and Richard Shute.

Beside the home lots, the proprietors held equal shares in the planting lands, (situated on the west side of Rattlesnake brook,) the commons, or Conoval meadows, and the sheep pasture.

At a town meeting, held 21st February, 1705, the inhabitants did agree by vote, "that all the land below Annhooks brook, and also a strait line from the old meadow to the head of Rattlesnake brook, beside all the land between Hutchinsons brook, an Rattlesnake brook, to the extent of the half mile shall be for a perpetual sheep pasture."<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 30th of May, 1707, John Drake and Edmund Ward were chosen sheep-masters by the freeholders of Eastchester.

The town and village of Eastchester were distinguished, in our early colonial annals, for the active part they took in favor of Governor Leisler; for we find "Leisler's party strengthened on the 3d of June, 1689, by the addition of six captains and four hundred men in New York, and a company of seventy men from Eastchester, who had all subscribed on that day a solemn declaration to preserve the Protestant religion and the fort of New York for the Prince of Orange and the Governor whom the Prince might appoint as their protector."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Town Rec. vol. ii.

<sup>c</sup> Smith's History of New York, English edition, p. 59.

The pleasant village green in front of St. Paul's Church was formerly used as a general training ground for this section of the county, and here, too, the county elections were not unfrequently held. The following article is taken from the New York Weekly Journal of Monday, Dec. 24th, 1733, "containing the freshest advices, foreign and domestic :"—

*Westchester, Oct. 29th, 1733.*

"On this day Lewis Morris, Esq., late chief justice of this province, was, by a majority of voices, elected a representative from the county of Westchester. \* \* Election of great expectation: the court and country's interest was exerted (as is said) to the utmost. I shall give my readers a particular account of it, as I had it from a person that was present at it. Nicholas Cooper, Esq., high sheriff of the said county, having, by papers affixed to the church of Eastchester and other public places, given notice of the day and place of election, without mentioning any time of the day when it was to be done, which made the electors on the side of the late judge very suspicious that some fraud was intended—to prevent which, about fifty of them kept watch upon and about the green at Eastchester (the place of election) from 12 o'clock the night before till the morning of that day. The other electors, beginning to move on Sunday afternoon and evening, so as to be at New Rochelle by midnight, their way lay through Harrison's Purchase, the inhabitants of which provided for their entertainment as they passed each house in their way, having a table plentifully covered for that purpose. About midnight they all met at the house of William Le Count, at New Rochelle, whose house, not being large enough to entertain so great a number, a large fire was made in the street, by which they sat till daylight, at which time they began to move. They were joined on the hill at the east end of the town by about seventy horse of the electors of the lower part of the county, and then proceeded towards the place of election in the following order, viz. : First rode two trumpeters and three violins; next four of the principal freeholders, one of which carried a banner, on one side of which was affixed, in gold capitals, 'King George,' and on the other, in golden capitals, 'Liberty and Law;' next followed the candidate, Lewis Morris, Esq., late chief justice of this province, then two colors, and at sun rising they entered upon the green of Eastchester, the place of election, followed by above three hundred horse of the principal freeholders of the county (a greater number than had ever appeared for one man since the settlement of that county.) After having rode three times round the green, they went to the houses of Joseph Fowler and — Child, who were well prepared for their reception; the late chief justice was met, on his alighting, by several gentlemen who came there to give their votes for him. About 11 o'clock appeared the candidate of the other side, William Forster, Esq., schoolmaster, appointed by the Society for Propagation of the Gospel, and lately made, by commission from

his Excellency, (the present governor,) Clerk of the Peace and Common Pleas in that county, which commission, it is said, he purchased for the valuable consideration of one hundred pistoles, given the governor : next him came two ensigus, borne by two of the freeholders ; then followed the Honorable James De Lancey, Esq., chief justice of the province of New York, and the Honorable Frederick Phillipse, Esq., second judge of the said province and baron of the exchequer, attended by about a hundred and seventy horse of the freeholders and friends of the said Forster and the two judges : they entered the green on the east side, and, riding twice round it, their word was ' No Land Tax.' As they passed, the second judge very civilly saluted the late chief justice by taking off his hat, which the late judge returned in the same manner, some of the late judge's party crying out ' No Excise ;' and one of them was heard to say (though not by the judge) ' No Pretender ;' upon which, Forster, the candidate, replied, ' I will take notice of you :' they, after that, retired to the house of — Baker, which was prepared to receive and entertain them. About an hour after, the high sheriff came to town finely mounted, the housings and holster caps being scarlet, richly laced with silver, belonging to —. Upon his approach, the electors on both sides went into the green where they were to elect, and after having read his majesty's writ, bid the electors proceed to the choice, which they did, and a great majority appeared for Mr. Morris, the late judge ; upon which, a poll was demanded, but by whom is not known to the relator, though it was said by many to be done by the sheriff himself. Morris, the candidate, several times asked the sheriff upon whose side the majority appeared, but could get no other reply but that a poll must be had, and accordingly, after about two hours delay in getting benches, chairs and tables, they began to poll. Soon after, one of those called Quakers, a man of known worth and estate, came to give his vote for the late judge. Upon this, Forster, and the two Fowlers, Moses and William, chosen by him to be inspectors, questioned his having an estate, and required of the sheriff to tender him the book to swear, in due form of law, which he refused to do, but offered to take his solemn affirmation, which both by the laws of England and the laws of this province was indulged, to the people called Quakers, and had always been practised, from the first election of representatives, in this province, to this time, and never refused ; but the sheriff was deaf to all that could be alleged on that side ; and notwithstanding that he was told by the late chief justice, and James Alexander, Esq., one of his Majesty's council, and counsellor at law, and by William Smith, Esq., counsellor at law, that such a procedure was contrary to law, and a violent attempt of the liberties of the people, he still persisted in refusing the said Quaker to vote, and in like manner did refuse seven and thirty Quakers more—men of known and visible estates. This Cooper, now high sheriff of the said county, is said not only to be a stranger in that county, but not having a foot of land, or other visible estate in it, unless very lately granted, and it is believed he has not where withall to purchase any. The polling had not been long continued before Mr. Edward

Stephens, a man of a very considerable estate in the said county, did openly, in the hearing of all the freeholders there assembled, charge William Forster, Esq., the candidate on the other side, with being a Jacobite, and in the interest of the Pretender, and that he should say to Mr. William Willett (a person of good estate and known integrity, who was at that time present and ready to make oath to the truth of what was said) that true it was he had taken the oaths to his Majesty, King George, and enjoyed a place in the government under him, which gave him bread; yet notwithstanding that, should — James come into England, he should think himself obliged to go there and fight for him. This was loudly and strongly urged to Forster's face, who denied it to be true; and no more was said of it at that time. About eleven o'clock that night the poll was closed, and it stood thus:—

For the late chief justice,	231
“ Quakers,	38
	<hr/>
	269
For William Forster, Esq.,	151
For difference,	118
	<hr/>
	269

So that the late chief justice carried it by a great majority, without the Quakers. Upon closing the poll the other candidate, Forster, and the sheriff wished the late chief justice much joy. Forster said he hoped the late judge would not think the worse of him for setting up against him, to which the judge replied, he believed he was put upon it against his inclinations, but that he was highly blamable, and who did or should know better for putting the sheriff, who was a stranger, and ignorant in such matters, upon making so violent an attempt upon the liberty of the people, which would expose him to ruin if he were worth £10,000 if the people aggrieved should commence suit against him. The people made a loud huzza, which the late chief judge blamed very much, as what he thought not right. Forster replied, he took no notice of what the common people did, since Mr. Morris did not put them upon the doing of it.

The indentures being sealed, the whole body of electors waited on their new representative to his lodgings with trumpets sounding, and violins playing, and in a little time took their leave of him. Thus ended the Westchester election to the general satisfaction.

New York, November 5th. On Wednesday, 31st October, the late chief justice, but now representative, for the county of Westchester landed in this city about five o'clock in the evening, at the ferry stairs. On his landing he was saluted by a general fire of the guns from the merchant vessels lying in the road, and was received by great numbers of the most considerable merchants and inhabitants of this city, and by them, with loud acclamations of the people as

he walked the streets, conducted to the Black Horse tavern, where a handsome entertainment was prepared for him at the charge of the gentlemen who received him, and in the middle of one side of the room was fixed a tablet with golden capitals, "KING GEORGE, LIBERTY, AND LAW."<sup>a</sup>

The road which passes through the village green on the north side of the church, was formerly called the Kingsbridge turnpike. This road appears to have been first opened in 1671, as we find in that year, "Mr. John Pell, and Mr. John Richbell appointed to lay out the new road to New England, through Eastchester."<sup>b</sup> The Kingsbridge road was the first stage route established between New York and Boston in 1732. "The coach, which would at the present time be thought an extremely slow one, was fourteen days in the journey, carrying news to and fro once a month."<sup>c</sup>

Beneath the shade of the venerable locusts (which still adorn the green,) stood the village stocks, erected in 1720.<sup>d</sup> Embedded in the bark of one of the trees may be seen the iron staple to which culprits were formerly attached and publicly whipped. Upon the green, between the locust trees and the present church yard, stood the old parish church, built by the Independents, about 1699. This edifice was destroyed by fire at an early period of the Revolution.<sup>e</sup>

The first settlers of Eastchester, like the people in general of that day, paid early attention to religion, to the support of the gospel, and the institutions of the church to which they belonged. The Congregational church in this place was gathered in 1665; for, in that year it was ordered: "That all and every one of us, or that shall be of us, do pay unto the minister according to his mead," also, "that we give new encouragement to Mr. Brewster each other week, to give us a word of exhortation."<sup>f</sup> A. D. 1670,

<sup>a</sup> New York Weekly Journal, 1733, No. viii.

<sup>b</sup> Assize Rec. Alb.

<sup>c</sup> Bridgman's Hort. Rep. 1846.

<sup>d</sup> The stocks consisted of a rude wooden instrument, firmly secured in the ground, into which the offenders' hands and feet were locked. It was once a common mode of punishment, but since the Revolution has fallen into disuse.—*Editor*.

<sup>e</sup> The fact that the old church once stood upon the green is conclusive evidence that this property is still vested in the church.

<sup>f</sup> See Covenant.

it was further enacted: "That whereas we being a society of christians living together, have agreed that all those of our association shall join together in meeting on Lord's days to tell about the worship of God; it was also resolved that whereas Moses Hoyt being deserter, and being behind, and not seeming to be willing to contribute unto our minister, whereupon the inhabitants of Eastchester have agreed that the said Moses shall be presented unto the next Court of Sessions," &c.

Upon the 29th of July, 1674, Richard Shute was chosen for to go to our honored governor as a representative from the village of Eastchester, upon the occasion that we may have the Rev. Ezekiel Fogge to be established and confirmed by our honorable governor, and also the humble request to have the liberty or grant to build a Chapel of Ease, and not to be paying toward Westchester church's building."

The following day, at a public meeting of the inhabitants of Eastchester, it was resolved by vote, "to go jointly unto Westchester, and so speake with the Rev. Mr. Fogge, by reason we heard that Mr. Fogge did express himself to be desirous, and also willing to live and settle among us in Eastchester; in consideration whereof, we are willing to manifest our acceptance to embrace his good company, and shall provide for his present comfort, and likewise for his future livelihood."

Upon the 5th of September, 1677, it was agreed, "that if it be the will of God to bring a minister to settle among us we pay him £40 a year, for his subsistence, and also provide him a house and land for his use during the time he stays here as our minister. At this meeting it was resolved to send Philip Pinckney and Samuel Drake, sen., as representatives to Westchester to the town meeting to treat with that town for the providing a minister."

The 31st day of March, 1678, was appointed by the inhabitants of Eastchester, "to be kept as a day of fasting and prayer, that it will please Almighty God to withdraw his judgments from us. As in some measure, according to our honored governor's order to keep the said day in the best manner we can attain unto.



Mr. Pinckney appears to have been selected to carry on the said day of humiliation."

It was further agreed on the same occasion, "that we will meet together on Sabbath days, for time to come to celebrate the worship and service of God, in the best manner that we can attain unto."

It was also decided by vote, "that we will pay towards the carrying on the said Sabbath days services, by a free will offering for the year ensuing, the following sums :

	s. d.		s. d.
William Haiden,	14 0	John Tompkins,	08 0
Richard Shute,	12 0	Will. Gregier,	05 0
Nathaniel Tompkins,	10 0	Henry Fowler,	04 0
John Pinckney,	10 0	Henry Creward,	02 0
Richard Hoadly,	10 0	Samuel Drake,	15 0
John Drake,	10 0		

Upon the 17th of December, the inhabitants of Eastchester agreed to pay £40 a year unto Mr. Morgan Jones, minister of Newtown, L. I. That is to say, to be paid unto the said minister, for his encouragement to administer the word of God unto us, as our minister; and that we the said inhabitants, do engage to pay the abovesaid sum of £40 in good provincial pay, at the price according to the same of this government; provided, that the said Mr. Jones do come and live among us, and perform the office of a minister, and to pay it by vote."

Feb. 11th, 1680, we find the Rev. Morgan Jones, officiating in the village of Westchester.<sup>a</sup>

During the year 1684, Eastchester appears to have been united with Westchester in the support of a pastor, for, in the spring of the same year, it was resolved, "that the justices and vestrymen of West and Eastchester, and Yonkers, do accept of Mr. Warham Mather as our minister for one whole year."<sup>b</sup>

At a public meeting of the inhabitants, held Sept. 5th, 1685,

<sup>a</sup> See Westchester.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Rec.

it was resolved to contribute the following salary towards the maintenance of a minister.

	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
Daniel Drake, jr.	1	0	0	William Gray,	0	10	0
Richard Shute,	1	5	0	John Clarkson,	0	5	0
Moses Hoite,	1	0	0	Thomas Norton,	0	6	0
Richard Hoadley,	0	15	0	John Shute,	0	5	0
John Pinckney,	1	0	0	Thomas Pinckney,	0	5	0
John Drake,	0	15	0	Walter Lancaster,	0	10	0
John Wearford,	0	15	0	Thomas Keurkin,	0	7	0
Cornell Goding,	0	12	6	do. junr.	0	5	0
Henry Fowler,	0	13	8	John Coe,	0	10	0
John Joan,	0	10	0				
Nathaniel White,	0	10	0				

This present testifieth, that we whose names are above written, do engage to pay the said several sums by us, every particular man, to pay as abovesaid, unto Mr. Morgan Jones, for the carrying on the work of the ministry for this present year ensuing."

The following entry occurs in the records of Newtown Long Island, "Whereas, I, Morgan Jones, have officiated for some time as a minister in Newtown, without any agreement for a salary, upon the promise of some particular persons of the town, to allow me some small recompense, of their own accord, I do hereby acquit and discharge the town of all salary, moneys, goods, or wares, which I might claim. Aug. 28, 1686. Morgan Jones."<sup>a</sup>

This must have been preparatory to his removal and settlement in East or Westchester.

The Rev. Morgan Jones was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Goding, who received instructions to "read" in the Bible, and other good sermon books, and so to carry on the Sabbath exercises (in Eastchester) according to the Hon. Colonel Fletcher's order.

On the 30th of Nov., 1692, the inhabitants of Eastchester,

<sup>a</sup> Thompson's Long Island, vol. ii. 140.

agreed to pay the following sums towards the support of Mr. Goding.

Henry Fowler offers one bushel of good winter wheat.

John Tompkins	3 0	John Drake	4 0
John Clark	2 0	John Pinckney	5 pecks of Indian corn.
Joseph Drake	4 0	William Gray	2 0
Thomas Pinckney	3 0	John Shute	3 0
Isaac Taylor	2 0	Benj. Taylor	2 0
Thomas Shute		4 6.	

Upon the 9th of May, 1693, it was resolved that a meeting house should be built, and Captain William Haiden, John Drake, John Pinckney, Richard Shute, and Henry Fowler, sen. were appointed overseers to superintend the work."

On the 31st of July, 1696, it was determined to lighten the meeting house by a lantern to every seat of the same. The following is a plan of the meeting house, with the names of pew-holders, as represented in the town records.<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Justice Pinckney, Richard White, Thomas White, John White, Mates Fowler, The south side belong to this.	Henry Fowler, sen. John Pinckney, Moses Hoit, sen. Moses Hoit, jun. John Haute, Robert Stonith, John Lancaster, East to this.
Capt. John Drake, Ensign Drake, John Tompkins, Nathan'l Tompkins, Mr. Will. Chaterton, a place of John Clark, South side to this.	Isaac Taylor, Isaac Lawrence, Edward Hancock, Thomas Vail, Jeremiah Fowler, Isaac Odell, John Coe, Joseph Coe, West to this.

<sup>a</sup> There is a tradition in the Pinckney family, that one of its early members presented the land to the church, embracing the present green, church-yard and adjoining property, for which they enjoy the privilege of free interment.

By an act of Provincial Assembly, passed 11th of May, 1697, the parish of Westchester was divided into four several districts, viz. Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and the manor of Pelham.<sup>a</sup>

In August, 1699, we find the inhabitants of the precinct of Eastchester petitioning the Governor, Council and General Assembly, in behalf of themselves, and for their neighbors in Yonkers and the Mile Square, to be taken off from the parish of Westchester, and to have liberty to call a minister of their own."

On the 26th of December, 1699, it was resolved, at a public meeting held in Eastchester, "to haste and erect the said meeting house, and that it shall be finished at or before the 31st of May, in the year of our Lord 1700, and in case the said work be not finished, that then John Drake and Jeremiah Fowler shall set men at work and finish the said work on the town account.

The same year a lot was provided for the minister, and £30 appropriated annually for his salary, which sum was ordered to be raised upon all rateable estates. Mr. Henry Fowler at the same time was directed to "write a letter unto Mr. Morgan containing our proceedings."

Upon the 14th of October, 1700, we find Mr. Henry Fowler, sen. authorized by the inhabitants to proceed to New York to petition the General Assembly for the calling and settling a minister with ourselves, and that we may be freed from Westchester in the ministry."

12th of King William, III. A. D. 1700, occurs an act of the General Assembly, declaring that

"Whereas since the passing of said act, (that of 1699,) it has been found inconvenient, to the great discouragement of religion and the public worship of God, for the inhabitants of Eastchester to travel to Westchester aforesaid at the preaching of God's word. Wherefore the said inhabitants and freeholders of the town of Eastchester have by their humble petition to the House of Representatives, now convened in General Assembly, most humbly prayed that it might be declared and enacted. and it was enacted, 1st. That the said town of Eastchester in the county of Westchester be henceforth and for ever here-

---

<sup>a</sup> Acts of Assembly, from 1691 to 1725.

after separated from the parish of West and Eastchester, lower Yonkers and the manor of Pelham.

“2d. It was further enacted (by the authority aforesaid) that the said town of Eastchester, &c. be and hereby is declared to be and remain for ever a distinct parish from the parish of Westchester, &c. by the name and style of the parish of Eastchester in the county of Westchester, provided that the freeholders and inhabitants thereof do maintain a good orthodox Protestant minister in the said town of Eastchester, &c.”<sup>a</sup>

June the 12th, 1700, “the town exchanged land with Mr. Joseph Morgan, pastor of the church in Eastchester.”

“At a public town meeting called by order of the inhabitants, Oct. 4th, 1700, the said inhabitants directed Mr. Henry Fowler and Richard Shute, (with the rest of the intended church,) to write unto the reverend ministers in New England concerning the ordination; they having the assistance of the Rev. Mr. Morgan. Also, that Mr. John Pinckney, Henry Fowler and Richard Shute, shall write unto his Excellency for his approbation, that he will be pleased to induct our minister the Rev. Joseph Morgan; at the same time Joseph Drake and John Shute, were chosen to hire a man to build a pulpit on the town account.”  
 “Upon the 3d of April, 1702, John Drake and Thomas Pinckney were authorized to agree with a carpenter to make a pulpit, and set up the gallery and repair the window shutters, &c.”

John Tompkins, jun., was also chosen “to beat the drum constantly every Lord’s day if occasion require, and at other times when it is needful, and to keep the drum in repair, and the said inhabitants do promise to pay him therefor 9 pence a piece every one.”

In a summary account of the state of the church in the province of New York, as it was laid before the clergy, convened October 5th, 1704, at New York, by the appointment of his Excellency Edward Lord Viscount Cornbury and Colonel Francis Nicholson, it was stated, that “There is one independent congregation at Eastchester whose minister designs to leave there, whose congregation upon his departure are resolved to join with the church.”<sup>b</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Laws of N. Y. 1700, chap. xc. 40.

<sup>b</sup> Church Record, vol. i., No. 16.

Col. Caleb Heathcoate, in a letter to the secretary of the venerable Society for Propagating the Gospel in foreign parts, dated Manor of Scarsdale, November 9th, 1705, thus writes; "and thirdly, one Mr. Morgan, who was minister of Eastchester, promised me to conform."<sup>a</sup>

To Mr. Morgan appears to have succeeded the celebrated William Tennent, who officiated here for a short time only, from whence he removed to Bedford.<sup>b</sup>

A LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH,  
EASTCHESTER.

<i>Instituted</i>	<i>Ministers.</i>	<i>Vacated by</i>
1665-6,	Rev. — Brewster,	Resignation,
1675,	" Ezekiel Fogge,	ditto
1684,	" Warham Mather,	ditto
1686,	" Morgan Jones,	ditto
1692,	" Samuel Goding,	ditto
1700,	" Joseph Morgan,	ditto
<i>cir.</i> 1720,	" William Tennent,	ditto

About 1703-4, the Congregational church of this place became merged in the Episcopal, (at that time the established religion of the colony,) which clearly appears from the following notice of the Rev. John Bartow, first Episcopal rector of the parish: "Besides Westchester, (observes Dr. Hawkins,) at which he resided, Mr. Bartow officiated once a month at Eastchester, and occasionally at Yonkers. The population of Westchester was about 550, that of Eastchester 400, who, being Presbyterians, obtained an act by which they were formed into a separate parish, and obtained a minister of their own persuasion, but on Mr. Bartow's coming among them "they were so well satisfied with the liturgy and doctrine of the church, that they forsook their minister and conformed to the Church of England."<sup>c</sup>

The following memoranda occurs in the vestry book of St. Peter's Church, Westchester.

January 12th, 1702. "It was resolved by the justices and vestrymen, that there shall be raised £50 for the minister's mainte-

<sup>a</sup> Church Rec vol. i. No. 29.

<sup>b</sup> See Bedford.

<sup>c</sup> See Westchester.

nance, and poor of the parish, (the quota furnished by Eastchester was £7 13s.) to be paid unto the church wardens at or before the 15th of December, next ensuing." The name of Joseph Drake appears in the list of vestrymen.

On the same occasion, Edward Avery late constable of Eastchester produced a receipt from the Rev. John Bartow, for the minister's rate in the year 1703, stating that he had paid Mr. Bartow the sum of seven pounds thirteen shillings, for his collecting.<sup>a</sup>

On the 23d of December, 1707, it was resolved to raise the sum of five pounds towards purchasing boards for Eastchester church.<sup>b</sup>

In 1703 Capt. John Drake and Edmund Ward were appointed to go to New York to ask concerning the settling the minister according to a warrant granted by General Heathcoate, for the good of the county.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 20th of March, 1703, it was agreed that "Judge Drake, Moses Fowler, and Isaac Taylor should have full power to hire a man to repair ye meeting house in Eastchester, and in making a pulpit and pew seat, (reading desk) and further to sell and make other seats in the same as far as the boards that are already bought will go."<sup>d</sup> In 1713 the Rev. John Bartow contributed £9 6s. 6d. towards rectifying the pews and seats in East and Westchester.<sup>e</sup> During the year 1728, the Rev. Thomas Standard (rector of Westchester) officiated here every other Sunday, and *publicly catechised the children*. This year there appear to have been fifty children, and thirty communicants.<sup>f</sup> In 1745 Mr. Standard informs the society that the parishes of East and Westchester are in a thriving and growing state." The Rev. Mr. Milner, his successor in 1764, reported to the Propagation Society, "That the people of Eastchester have laid the foundation of a new church of stone, seventy-one feet by eighty-eight,

---

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid.

<sup>c</sup> Hawkins Hist. Notices of the Church of England, 276. MS. Letters in the Lambeth collection, England, vol. xx. 109.

<sup>d</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>e</sup> Ibid.

<sup>f</sup> Propagation Soc. Rep.

in the room of a small decayed wooden building erected in the infancy of the settlement." Throughout the years 1766, 7, and 8, the Rev. Samuel Seabury (afterwards bishop of Connecticut,) officiated in Eastchester.

Occasionally the French clergy of New Rochelle must have performed services in this parish, as we find the following entry on the records of Trinity Church, New Rochelle.

"Cet aujourd'hui le 5 mars, 173 $\frac{5}{8}$ , baptisé à East Chester, William Fowler, fils de Joseph Fowler et de Madame Sarah sa femme agé d'environ six mois, et présenté au saint baptême par Ezekiel Halstead, son oncle et par Sarah Fowler, sa mère, Parrain et Marraime.  
P. STOUPPE."

The parsonage formerly stood on the Alstine property, directly north of the present church. Here the Rev. Thomas Standard resided for many years.<sup>a</sup>

St. Paul's Church, Eastchester, was first incorporated on the 12th of March, 1787, in pursuance of an act of the legislature passed April 6th, 1784; on which occasion Thomas Bartow, John Wright, Isaac Ward, Elisha Shute, Lewis Guion, and Philip Pell, jun., were unanimously elected trustees. This church was again incorporated 4th of October, 1795, by the style and title of "St. Paul's Church in the town of Eastchester."<sup>b</sup> William Popham and Lancaster Underhill, churchwardens. Philip Pell, Lewis Guion, Isaac Ward, John Reed, Isaac Guion, Abraham Valentine, William Pinckney and William Crawford, vestrymen.

We have previously shown, that the present church was erected in 1764, by the inhabitants of this town, situated in a pleasant valley (bordering the Aqueanouncke.) It presents from the neighboring hills, a very picturesque appearance. On the west end is a neat tower, containing a bell, which bears the following inscription.<sup>c</sup>

· THE GIFT OF THE REV. THOMAS STANDARD,  
1758." "LESTER & PACK FECIT."

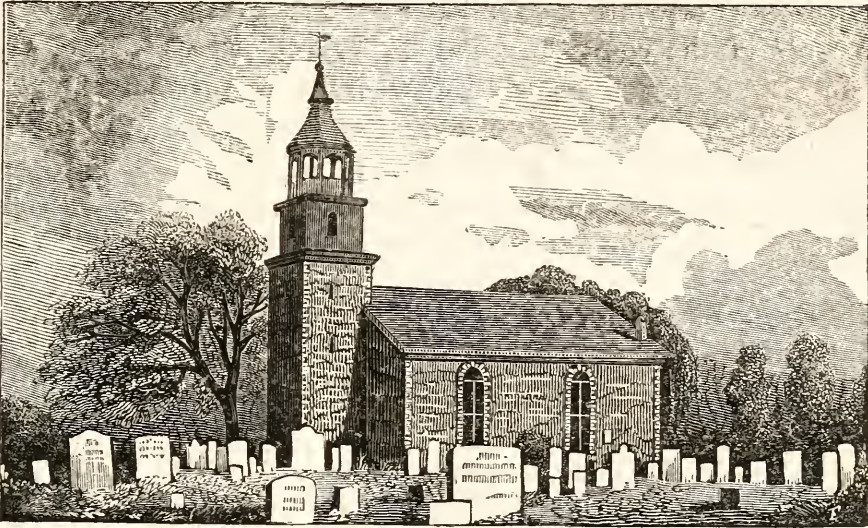
<sup>a</sup> It appears that as early as 1699 a lot was provided for the minister.

<sup>b</sup> In pursuance of an act passed for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the state of New York, 17th March, 1795.

<sup>c</sup> Immediately above the tower door are inscribed the initials of the principal benefactors, viz. P. R. P., P. P., D. V., also a tablet bearing the date of erection 1765.



Beneath the chancel floor, repose the remains of the Rev. Thomas Standard, former rector of the parish, and Anne his wife.<sup>a</sup>



St. Paul's Church, Eastchester.

The chandelier and organ, were the gift of George Rapelje, Esq.

The communion silver consists of a flaggon, two chalices, and paten.

The former bears the following inscription :

TO  
St. Paul's Ch., Eastchester, N. Y.  
In memory of  
MRS. MARY GREGG,  
obt. Janry. 2d, 1844.  
Æ 71 years.

The chalices are inscribed as follows : 1st. St. Paul's Church, Eastchester, N. Y., from Mrs. John Quincy Adams, 1829.

2d. The gift of Frederick van Cortlandt. "St. Paul's Church, Eastchester, N. Y., A. D. 1829."

---

<sup>a</sup> On the erection of the present edifice, their bodies were removed from the old church which stood near the locusts.

During the American Revolution, services appear to have been suspended here, and the congregation dispersed. At this period the church was used as an hospital, and subsequently served the purposes of a court house. The following entry occurs in the records of the court of Common Pleas. At a court of Oyer and Terminer and general jail delivery, held at the church at Eastchester, in and for the county of Westchester, on Tuesday, the 12th day of June, in the year of our Lord, 1787. Present, the Honorable Richard Morris, Esq., Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Judicature, for the state of New York.

Stephen Ward,	} Justices of Oyer and Terminer and General Jail Delivery, for the county of Westchester.
Jonathan G. Tompkins,	
Ebenezer S. Burling,	
Benjamin Stevenson,	

Immediately after the Revolution, the inhabitants of Eastchester appear to have associated themselves with the parish of Yonkers, under the charge of the Rev. Elias Cooper. This connection was dissolved about 1798. From the year 1800, to cir. 1837. Eastchester was alternately united to Westchester and New Rochelle; but for the last ten years it has supported its own incumbent.

The village grave yard which lies on the south and west side of the church, is one of the most extensive in the county.

The earliest tombstones bear the following inscriptions:

R. S. D.	Here	H D I D
DECEMBER	is	—
14. 1704.	the body	N 20
	of THOMAS	1711
	PINCKNEY died	
	ye 1 1732 E. G. 71.	

On the north side of the church is a marble tomb, inscribed as follows:

THERESE BOULLAND  
DE BESANSON

who departed this life  
the 5th of October

1805

aged 29 years,

wife of

JOSEPH F MANGIN  
DE DOMPAIRE

Major of the engineers of the  
General staff of  
St. Domingo.

surmounted with the arms of Boulland, viz. arg. a chev. between three quarter foils, surmounted by a coronet; supporters, two lions rampant regardant.

There are vaults in this yard belonging to the Pell, Gregg, Drake, Sands, Prime, Cain, Masterton and Morgan families.

The following is a catalogue of the ministers and rectors of this parish, from the year 1703.

LIST OF MINISTERS AND RECTORS.

Instituted or called.	Incumbents.	Vacated by
1703	Rev. John Bartow, Clericus,	per mort.
1726	Thomas Standard, Clericus,	do
1764	John Milner, Clericus,	do
1766	Samuel Seabury, Clericus,	per resig.
1787	Andrew Fowler, Presb.	do
5 July, 1790	Theodosius Bartow, Presb.	do
1794	Elias Cooper, Presb.	do
Aug. 1795	John Ireland, Presb.	do
18 Jan. 1800	Isaac Wilkins, D. D. Presb.	do
1817	Revaud Kearney, Presb.	do
1818	Lewis P. Bayard, Presb.	do
14 Oct. 1826	Lawson Carter, Presb.	do
1837	John Gregg, Presb.	do
1838	Robert Bolton, Presb.	do

Instituted or called.	Incumbents.	Vacated by
1846	Edwin Harewood Presb.	do
22 Aug. 1847	Henry E. Duncan, Deacon, present incumbent. <sup>a</sup>	

## NOTITIA PAROCHIALIS.

A. D. 1728, 30 communicants.

1817, 48 do 45 baptisms.

1819, 60 do 7 do

1847, 35 do 15 do

The first delegates from this parish to the Diocesan Convention, in 1787, were Philip Pell, sen., and Thomas Bartow.

From the church records we extract the following curious item:—

“At a meeting of the vestry, held at the house of William Crawford on Saturday, the 7th of May, 1791—present Stephen Ward, Abraham Valentine, John G. Wright, Isaac Ward, Lewis Guion, and Thomas Bartow—

“Marcus Christian, the sexton to the church in Eastchester, was sent for and examined respecting the bell’s being rung on Saturday, the 30th of April, on the family of James Bogart’s moving out of this place; which charge he denied, and, on his examination, said he was lame, in bed, and was not at the church on that day. He was further examined on his former conduct, on his selling licure in the belfrie of the church, on a training day, which he acknowledged. Whereupon they did agree he was not worthy to keep the keys of the church, or to be employed as sexton; upon which, he delivered the key and was dismissed the service.”<sup>b</sup>

The Methodist Episcopal church in the village of Eastchester was first organized in 1836, and incorporated the same year by the name and title of “the Methodist Episcopal church in the town of Eastchester;” Thomas Griffin, Peter Bertine, Josiah Sickles, Nicholas Duff, and Gilbert Underhill, trustees.<sup>c</sup> The church was erected in 1837.

This portion of Westchester county appears to have suffered severely during the war of the Revolution, and was constantly

---

<sup>a</sup> This individual is a lineal descendant of the first Episcopal Rector of the parish, his mother being a daughter of the late Augustus Bartow; great grandson of the Rev. John Bartow.

<sup>b</sup> Church Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec., Lib. A. 54.

the scene of marches, points of defence, and skirmishes. Here, also, the lawless "skinner" and "cow boy" practised their black deeds of rapine unmolested.

In October, 1776, a skirmish took place in this town between the patriots, on their route from King's Bridge to Westchester, and the enemy under Lord Howe.

For some time the Connecticut troops were billeted in the village.

On the 3d of October, 1779, "Lieut. Gill, of the American dragoons, patrolling in Eastchester, found a superior force in his rear, and no alternative but to surrender or cut his way through them; he chose the latter, and forced his way, when he found a body of infantry still behind the horse. These he also charged, and, on his passing them, his horse was wounded, and threw him, when he fell into the enemy's hands. Two of the lieutenant's party, which consisted of twenty four, were killed, and one taken prisoner; the rest escaped safe to their regiments.<sup>a</sup>

In the vicinity of the village a detachment under the command of General Parsons, fitted out in sleighs, (returning from an enterprise against the enemy at Morrisania,) were overtaken and almost entirely cut to pieces by a party of British light horse.<sup>b</sup>

The small stream that waters the western part of the village of Eastchester, was formerly known as Rattlesnake Brook. An early town order required "the inhabitants to meet together one day in the spring, for the destruction of this dangerous reptile."<sup>c</sup> In 1721 Nathaniel Tompkins was permitted to erect a fish wair on Rattlesnake Creek, "to ye advantage of himself to catch ye fish that swimmeth therein, for ye space of ten years from this date, providing he put it up at once."<sup>d</sup>

Near the mouth of the brook is situated the tide mill of Mr. Robert Reed. The cottage commands an extensive view of the winding creek and the high grounds of Pelham. The adjoining property formed a portion of the ancient planting grounds of Eastchester. Further to the southwest lies Black Dog Brook,

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem., 218.

<sup>b</sup> Hugh Gaines' Gazette.

<sup>c</sup> As late as 1775, a rattlesnake was killed near the brook, measuring some six feet.

<sup>d</sup> Town Rec., 1 Feb., 1696-7. John Pell, senr., had the privilege of erecting a mill on this brook.

sometimes called Hutchinson's Brook. This stream constitutes a portion of the southern line of the township.

Upon the western shore of Hutchinson's Creek (north of Reed's mill) is located the village landing already alluded to.<sup>a</sup>

In the southwest corner of Eastchester lies the estate of the late George Faile, Esq., at present occupied by his widow, formerly the property of Fleetwood Marsh, Esq., a native of Dutchet, Buckinghamshire, England, for many years a freeholder of this town. The situation of the estate is very fine, commanding all the various undulations of a hilly district.

The house, seated upon rising ground, overlooks the valley to the southeast, Eastchester Creek, and the distant waters of the Sound.

The adjoining property on the west belongs to Mrs. Givans, widow of the late Robert Givans, Esq. The mansion is surrounded by extensive plantations and ample woodlands. The latter affords a favorite rendezvous or head-quarters for vast flocks of crows, which receive every protection from their generous benefactress. The noise created by them, in their assemblage and re-ascension in the morning, is incredible, causing the woods to re-echo with a thousand reverberations.

In the immediate neighborhood are the properties of the Hon. Effingham C. Schieffelin and Alfred Seton, Esq. The residence of the latter gentleman occupies the summit of a high ridge overlooking the valley of Eastchester on the east.

There is a remarkable rock in this vicinity, well worthy of the stranger's notice, marked with the rude impression of a human foot, seven inches in length.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> During the revolutionary war, a British sloop was captured in this creek by a party of whale boatmen.

<sup>b</sup> About half a mile from the fort "on Montauk point," says Mr. Prime, "in a south-easterly direction, is a granite rock imbedded in the ground, on the upper surface of which is the apparent impress of a *human foot*."

"The figure is as perfect and distinct as would follow from the pressure of the left foot, upon some cohesive substance, except being deficient in a toe; a deficiency not at first sight apparent, and discernible only by inspection. No artist could have chiselled a more perfect resemblance. The impression is still fresh, and without the least appearance of injury from time. There are two other tracks less per-



Arms, ar. a cr

John Lawrence emigrated from England to the colony of New Amsterdam in 1641; one of the first patentees of North Hempstead, L. I., 1644; a resident of Westchester, 1644; deputy to Hartford from Gov. Stuyvesant in 1663; mayor of New York and member of the Gov. Council at the time of his death in 1699; judge of the Supreme Court. Nat. 1618; will dat. 1698.

Widow  
brother  
in  
magist  
ob 16

Thomas, joint patentee with his father, ancestor of the Eastchester branch. Francina Smith widow of M. Smith.

Thomas, justice of the peace for Bergen co. from 1702-1713, judge of court of C. P., ancestor of N. J. branch. Frances Edsall Isaac, nat. from Longchester, Cir. 1730.

Isaac, nat 1687, ob. cir. 1768. 1 Widow Ward. 2 Ruth Owens.

—Mary, ob 1714, —John Williams.  
—Rachel, ob 1717, —Jenks.

1 Isaac, nat 1724. Keziah Pell, nat. 1729, ob. 25 March, 1795. 2 Jesse, nat Dec 9, 1727, ob. Feb. 14, 1801.

—George.  
—Ruth — Benjamin Corsa.  
—Sarah — Abram Hatfield.  
—Phila — W. L. Totten.  
—Mary — Cornelius Leggett.  
—Joshua — Rachel Taylor.  
—Joseph — Mary Pell.  
—Benjamin.  
—David.  
—Thomas, nat 9 April, 1752, ob. 10 March 1835.  
—Martha Hunt, nat. 7 Sep. 1742, ob. Feb 7, 1835.



Within a short distance of the village are situated the estates of Mr. Thomas Runisey, and John R. Hayward, Esq. the latter gentleman represented (in 1846) this county in Assembly.<sup>a</sup>

Most of the farms in this neighborhood now cover the old Lawrence property, which at one period embraced nearly five hundred acres. A portion of it was called Virginia from its beautiful appearance. The earliest proprietor (of this estate) was Isaac Lawrence, Esq. who originally emigrated from Long Island to Eastchester, cir. 1689. On the 12th of May, 1690, Isaac Lawrence was chosen by the inhabitants of this town, one of the pound-masters for the year ensuing. In 1700, he appears to have been town treasurer, and in 1721 his name occurs in the list of the grand jurors for the county of Westchester. Isaac Lawrence died about 1730, leaving three sons, the eldest of whom was Isaac Lawrence, grandfather of the present Augustus Lawrence, Esq. This gentleman has for many years filled the office of justice of the peace for the town of Eastchester.

The Lawrences of Westchester county, New Jersey, and Long Island, descend from three brothers who emigrated from Holland to the colony of New Amsterdam in 1641. John, William and Thomas Lawrence were originally from the county of Lancaster, England, and left their native country at the commencement of those political troubles which preceded the rebellion, and death of Charles I.”<sup>b</sup>

The Pinckney estate in this town originally embraced the properties of Mr. Jesse Lyon, Joseph Disbrow, Henry Slayman, Alfred H. Duncombe, and Benjamin Underhill, Esq.

The Pinckney residence, which stood a little to the south-west of Mr. Lyon's, appears to have been a favorite resort for officers

fect and distinct; the one in the Indian field, and the other west of Fort Pond. The heel of the foot is towards the east in all of them, as though formed in passing to the west. Excepting that they are the footsteps of the evil spirit, no record or tradition pretends to give their story. They existed at the first settlement by the whites, and were a subject of pawwa to the Indians.” [N. S. Prime's Hist. of L. I.]

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Hayward purchased of the executors of the late Richard Shute. In 1671, James Eustice and others were appointed to lay out land for Richard Shute (ancestor of Richard above mentioned) near Rattlesnake brook,

<sup>b</sup> For a further account of this family, see pedigree.

PEDIGREE OF LAWRENCE OF EASTCHESTER.

Arms, ar. a cross, raguly, gu Crest, a demi-turbot, tail upwards. Motto, Quero, Invenio.

Lawrence of Lancashire, England.

John Lawrence emigrated from England to the colony of New Amsterdam in 1611; one of the first patentees of North Hempstead, L. I. 1614; a resident of Westchester, 1644; deputy to Hartford from Gov. Stuyvesant in 1661; mayor of New York and member of the Gov. Council at the time of his death in 1699; judge of the Supreme Court Nat 1718; will dat. 1698.

William emigrated to America with his brother, one of the first patentees of Flush- ing in 1645, proprietor of Lawrence neck, magistrate of Flushing under the Dutch, ob. 1690.

Elizabeth Smith of Smithtown, da. of Richard, patentee of Smithtown; this lady afterwards married Sir Philip Carteret, Gov. of New Jersey. From her Elizabeth- town takes its name.

Thomas, one of the patentees of New- town 1666; proprietor of Hell-gate neck, a major in Leisler's forces, 1690; died at Newtown, July 1703.

Thomas, joint patentee with his father, ancestor of the Eastchester branch.

Francina Smith widow of M. Smith.

William, member of the Gov. Council from 1702-1706.

John, high sheriff of Queens co. 1698; commander of a troop of horse, ancestor of the Newtown branch.

Jonathan who removed to Westchester, ancestor of the Westchester branch, and probab y of Rockland co. branch, ob ante 1724.

Thomas, justice of the peace for Bergen co. from 1702-1713, judge of court of C. P., ancestor of N. J. branch.

Isaac, nat. 1666-7, removed from Long Island to Eastchester, cir. 1689, ob. cir. 1730.

Anna Squire. = 2 Esther Casiffe.

John nat. 1668 ob. 1732, removed to Cortlandt's patent, 1730.

Elizabeth. = 2 Mary Westchester.

Jacob of = Lydia Westchester.

Jonathan.

Richard.

Thomas, will dat. 13 May, 1752; lib. 18 p. 202.

Isaac, nat 1687, ob cir 1768 = 1 Widow Ward, = 2 Ruth Owens.

John.

Jacob whose descendants are living at Westchester.

Mary.

Jacob.

Deborah.

Hannah.

Mary, ob = John Williams, 1714.  
Rachel, ob = Jenks, 1717.

1 Isaac, nat 1724.  
= Keziah Pell, nat 1733, ob 25 March, 1793.

2 Jesse, nat Dec 9, 1727, ob. Feb. 14, 1801.  
= Elizabeth Vandostern.

3 Joseph killed by a fall from his horse prior to the Revolution.  
= Mary, nat = Phillimon H cir 1760. Foster.  
= Ruth, nat Jan 17, 1639, ob. Oct 17, 1639, see d.

4 Gilbert, nat 1738, ob. July 17, 1817.  
= Kismet Myres.  
= 2 Mrs. Magdalene Myres.

5 Aaron, nat 1816.  
= 1 Jane Law, nat 1819, ob 18 Aug. 1785.  
= 2 Craft, ob 1829.

6 Stephen.  
= 1 Anna, nat April 22, 1729, ob Aug. 12, 1796.  
= Nehemiah Hunt, nat ob July 24, 1712.

7 Anna, nat 1730, ob 1816.  
= 1 Margaret, nat 1738, ob 1816.  
= 2 Mrs. Magdalene Myres.

8 Aaron, nat 1780, ob 1816.  
= 1 Jane Law, nat 1819, ob 18 Aug. 1785.  
= 2 Craft, ob 1829.

9 Stephen.  
= 1 Anna, nat April 22, 1729, ob Aug. 12, 1796.  
= Nehemiah Hunt, nat ob July 24, 1712.

10 Stephen.  
= 1 Anna, nat April 22, 1729, ob Aug. 12, 1796.  
= Nehemiah Hunt, nat ob July 24, 1712.

11 Stephen.  
= 1 Anna, nat April 22, 1729, ob Aug. 12, 1796.  
= Nehemiah Hunt, nat ob July 24, 1712.

12 Stephen.  
= 1 Anna, nat April 22, 1729, ob Aug. 12, 1796.  
= Nehemiah Hunt, nat ob July 24, 1712.

Thomas, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Mary, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 John, nat 1724, ob 1816.

3 Joseph, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Mary, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 John, nat 1724, ob 1816.

4 Jesse, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Elizabeth, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 John, nat 1724, ob 1816.

5 Gilbert, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Kismet, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Mrs. Magdalene, nat 1724, ob 1816.

6 Aaron, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Jane, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Craft, nat 1724, ob 1816.

7 Stephen, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Anna, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Nehemiah, nat 1724, ob 1816.

8 Gilbert, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Kismet, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Mrs. Magdalene, nat 1724, ob 1816.

9 Aaron, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Jane, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Craft, nat 1724, ob 1816.

10 Stephen, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Anna, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Nehemiah, nat 1724, ob 1816.

11 Stephen, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Anna, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Nehemiah, nat 1724, ob 1816.

12 Stephen, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Anna, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Nehemiah, nat 1724, ob 1816.

13 Stephen, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Anna, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Nehemiah, nat 1724, ob 1816.

14 Stephen, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 1 Anna, nat 1724, ob 1816.  
= 2 Nehemiah, nat 1724, ob 1816.

Phineas = Thos. Boston.

Within a short distance of the village are situated the estates of Mr. Thomas Runisey, and John R. Hayward, Esq. the latter gentleman represented (in 1846) this county in Assembly.<sup>a</sup>

Most of the farms in this neighborhood now cover the old Lawrence property, which at one period embraced nearly five hundred acres. A portion of it was called Virginia from its beautiful appearance. The earliest proprietor (of this estate) was Isaac Lawrence, Esq. who originally emigrated from Long Island to Eastchester, cir. 1689. On the 12th of May, 1690, Isaac Lawrence was chosen by the inhabitants of this town, one of the pound-masters for the year ensuing. In 1700, he appears to have been town treasurer, and in 1721 his name occurs in the list of the grand jurors for the county of Westchester. Isaac Lawrence died about 1730, leaving three sons, the eldest of whom was Isaac Lawrence, grandfather of the present Augustus Lawrence, Esq. This gentleman has for many years filled the office of justice of the peace for the town of Eastchester.

The Lawrences of Westchester county, New Jersey, and Long Island, descend from three brothers who emigrated from Holland to the colony of New Amsterdam in 1641. John, William and Thomas Lawrence were originally from the county of Lancaster, England, and left their native country at the commencement of those political troubles which preceded the rebellion, and death of Charles I.”<sup>b</sup>

The Pinckney estate in this town originally embraced the properties of Mr. Jesse Lyon, Joseph Disbrow, Henry Slayman, Alfred H. Duncombe, and Benjamin Underhill, Esq.

The Pinckney residence, which stood a little to the south-west of Mr. Lyon's, appears to have been a favorite resort for officers

feet and distinct; the one in the Indian field, and the other west of Fort Pond. The heel of the foot is towards the east in all of them, as though formed in passing to the west. Excepting that they are the footsteps of the evil spirit, no record or tradition pretends to give their story. They existed at the first settlement by the whites, and were a subject of pawwa to the Indians.” [N. S. Prime's Hist. of L. I.]

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Hayward purchased of the executors of the late Richard Shute. In 1671, James Eustice and others were appointed to lay out land for Richard Shute (ancestor of Richard above mentioned) near Rattlesnake brook.

<sup>b</sup> For a further account of this family, see pedigree.

of the British army during the Revolutionary war. In front of this mansion Henry Pinckney was shot before the eyes of his family, (by a party of soldiers,) whilst endeavoring to effect his escape on horseback, April 2d, 1780.

The Pinckneys of Eastchester descend from Philip Pinckney, one of the first ten proprietors and patentees of this town, who originally emigrated from Fairfield, cir. 1663-4. Philip Pinckney was a lineal representative of the Pinckneys of England, whose ancestor Gilo de Pincheni or Pinckenie came into that country in the train of William the Conqueror. The Pinckney estate is watered on the east by the Aqueanouncke, (Hutchinson's river,) and its tributary called Ann Hook's brook, from the Indian chief of that name.

The Drakes were also extensive proprietors in this town; the old estate called Nonsuch being bounded on the west by the Bronx, on the north by the Yonkers road leading to Swain's mill, on the east by the White Plains turnpike, and on the south by the Hunt's Bridge road. The property is now owned by various individuals. It is somewhat curious, that the only portion of the original estate at present vested in the Drake family, is the site now occupied by the barns and out-buildings of the late Moses Drake. This individual was the son of Benjamin Drake, third in descent from Samuel Drake, Esq. of Fairfield, one of the first ten proprietors of Eastchester in 1664.

On the 9th of Sept. 1650, Samuel Drake received a grant of land from the freeholders of Fairfield.

Upon the 8th of Feb. 1677, Samuel Drake of Eastchester sold unto his son Samuel Drake, three separate parcels of land lying in Fairfield.<sup>a</sup>

The will of Samuel Drake, sen. bears date May 30th, 1676.<sup>b</sup> Samuel Drake is presumed to have been a son of John Drake who emigrated to Boston in 1630, and finally settled in Windsor Conn., from whence his son Samuel removed to Fairfield.

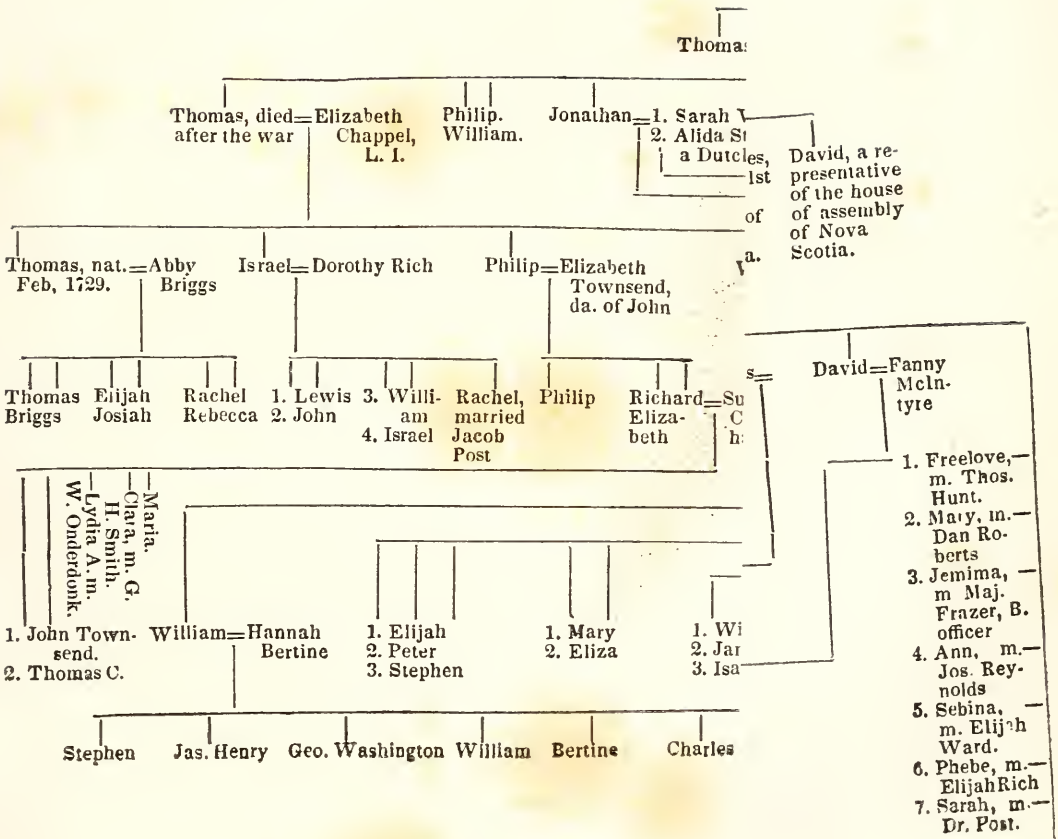
The Drake family are of great antiquity, and descend from the old house of Drake of Ashe, Devonshire, England, a branch of

---

<sup>a</sup> Fairfield town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Surogate's office, N. Y. vol. iii. 47.

To face page 156, vol. i.



of the British army during the Revolutionary war. In front of this mansion Henry Pinckney was shot before the eyes of his family, (by a party of soldiers,) whilst endeavoring to effect his escape on horseback, April 2d, 1780.

The Pinckneys of Eastchester descend from Philip Pinckney, one of the first ten proprietors and patentees of this town, who originally emigrated from Fairfield, cir. 1663-4. Philip Pinckney was a lineal representative of the Pinckneys of England, whose ancestor Gilo de Pincheni or Pinckenie came into that country in the train of William the Conqueror. The Pinckney estate is watered on the east by the Aqueanouncke, (Hutchinson's river,) and its tributary called Ann Hook's brook, from the Indian chief of that name.

The Drakes were also extensive proprietors in this town; the old estate called Nonsuch being bounded on the west by the Bronx, on the north by the Yonkers road leading to Swain's mill, on the east by the White Plains turnpike, and on the south by the Hunt's Bridge road. The property is now owned by various individuals. It is somewhat curious, that the only portion of the original estate at present vested in the Drake family, is the site now occupied by the barns and out-buildings of the late Moses Drake. This individual was the son of Benjamin Drake, third in descent from Samuel Drake, Esq. of Fairfield, one of the first ten proprietors of Eastchester in 1664.

On the 9th of Sept. 1650, Samuel Drake received a grant of land from the freeholders of Fairfield.

Upon the 8th of Feb. 1677, Samuel Drake of Eastchester sold unto his son Samuel Drake, three separate parcels of land lying in Fairfield.<sup>a</sup>

The will of Samuel Drake, sen. bears date May 30th, 1676.<sup>b</sup> Samuel Drake is presumed to have been a son of John Drake who emigrated to Boston in 1630, and finally settled in Windsor Conn., from whence his son Samuel removed to Fairfield.

The Drake family are of great antiquity, and descend from the old house of Drake of Ashe, Devonshire, England, a branch of

---

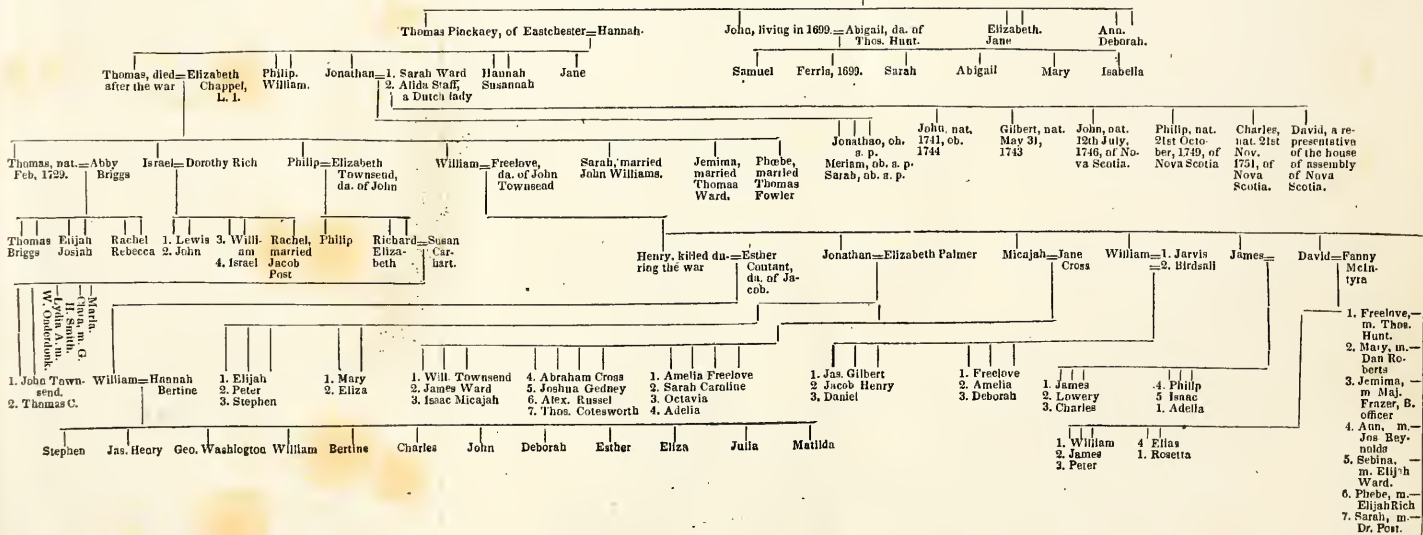
<sup>a</sup> Fairfield town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Surogate's office, N. Y. vol. iii. 47.

## PEDIGREE OF PINCKNEY OF EASTCHESTER.

Arms. or, four fusils in fesse gules. Crest, out of a ducal coronet or, a griffen's head ppr.

Philip Pinckney, one of first the patentees of Eastchester, 1664=







which gave birth to the illustrious Sir Francis Drake. The name is supposed to be derived from the heraldic wivern. The arms of the family, which is another name for the fabled dragon of antiquity ; draco or drago being the Roman name. As late as the time of Sir Francis Drake, writers called him the Dragon. Of this family was Joseph Rodman Drake, the poet, and the late Charles Drake, M. D.<sup>a</sup>

Opposite Mrs. Drake's is situated the property of the late Elisha Shute, whose ancestor Thomas Shute is named in the covenant of 1665. Richard Shute, the son of Thomas, was for many years recorder of this town. Elisha Shute was the father of the late Richard Shute, whose five sons are still living in the town.

The representatives of James Eustis another of the ten proprietors in 1664, are also numerous in East and Westchester.

On the west side of the town (at Hunt's Bridge, on the Bronx) is located the Eastchester Railroad depôt.

About two miles and a half north of this place is situated Bronx Mill, the property of James P. Swain, Esq., formerly known as Underhill's Mill. The Bronx River here affords a fine water power to an extensive grist mill and screw manufactory. The building is a large and handsome structure of stone, four stories high, and measures forty feet by eighty. The machinery is of the best kind, and the water is sufficient to carry the mill throughout the year, which enables it to grind at all seasons.

The course of the Bronx immediately below the mill is said to have been formerly changed by a large beaver dam, which those industrious animals had erected near the foot of Mr. Underhill's garden. Beaver Pond lies directly north of the mill ; vast quantities of trout, roach, suckers, and other fresh water fish, are bred yearly in the Bronx. In 1825 Canvas White, Esq., engineer, employed by the New York Water Works' Company, reported to the directors of that corporation, that he would recommend taking the waters of the Bronx at Underhill's Bridge, estimating that 9,100,000 gallons of water might be delivered in the city daily, and that the whole expense would not exceed \$1,450,000.<sup>b</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Genealogical and Biographical account of the family of Drake, by Samuel G. Drake. Boston, 1845.

<sup>b</sup> Corporation Doc. Report for 1833, doc. xxxvi., 375.

The mill and adjoining property, at an early period, belonged to the late Lancaster Underhill, who lived to the remarkable age of 98. Throughout the trying period of the Revolution, this individual resided on his farm, and appears to have suffered severely both in person and estate. During many a severe winter night he lay concealed beneath the body of an ox cart, (which he had taken the precaution to cover with hay,) and on each returning day blessed his good fortune that his house had escaped the flames. Near the mill is located the Bronx Railroad depôt, distant about four and a half miles south of White Plains.

Upon the Long Reach, in this town, are situated the farms and residences of John Townsend, Esq., (former sheriff of the county, and senator for the second district in 1821,) Alexander Pirnie, Mr. Headly, Alexander Masterton, Abijah Morgan, Charles Morgan, and Mr. Pinckney, &c.

The whole of this elevated district commands extensive views of the Sound and surrounding country. In the immediate vicinity stands Marble Hall, the site of which is celebrated in our Revolutionary annals. From the petition of Jonathan Ward (one of the former proprietors of this place) to Congress in 1825, we learn, "that at the commencement of the Revolutionary war, Stephen Ward (the petitioner's father) resided in Eastchester, and county of Westchester, seven miles south of White Plains; that the British troops took possession of the city of New York and the southern part of the county of Westchester, in the autumn of 1776; that in consequence of which, the said Stephen Ward left his residence, consisting of a large and valuable dwelling, barn, and sundry other buildings; that between this period and the autumn of 1778, those buildings were occupied, a large portion of time, by the American troops, at which place there were several engagements between them and the British; that in November, 1778, a large body of the British forces, commanded by General Tryon, made an excursion as far as Ward's house, and, by the general's orders, totally destroyed, by a fire, the buildings, with considerable other property."<sup>a</sup>

In the spring of 1776 Captain Archibald Campbell, with a strong

---

<sup>a</sup> Amer. State Papers, No. cccclxv., 654. See Simcoe's Mil. Journal, p. 92.

force of the enemy, surprised a Continental guard (under the command of Captain Delavan) stationed at Ward's house. After an offer of surrender had been made by the Americans, a shot was fired from one of the windows, which, unfortunately, killed Captain Campbell.<sup>a</sup> The British, seeing their commander fall, instantly forced the house, and, no resistance being made, revenged his death by killing upwards of twenty on the stairs and in the adjoining rooms; a few effected their escape by jumping out of the back windows. The dead, who fell upon this occasion, were interred among the locusts on the west side of the road.<sup>b</sup>

The Hon. Stephen Ward, who occupied this property prior to the Revolution, was the son of Edmund Ward,<sup>c</sup> and grandson of Edmund Ward, of Fairfield, Connecticut, who removed to Eastchester at a very early period. In 1700 the inhabitants of this town granted to Edmund Ward fifty acres of land, in consideration that he pay the Indians for the same. These lands were situated on the Long Reach, for the name of Edmund Ward occurs in the Long Reach Patent, granted to Wm. Peartree and others A.D. 1708.

The Honorable Stephen Ward, above mentioned, was for many years a judge of the county, and a firm patriot throughout the Revolution. At an early period he appears to have been proscribed by the loyalist party, and a bounty set upon his head.

The following epitaph is inscribed on his tombstone in Eastchester church yard :

IN  
MEMORY OF  
STEPHEN WARD, ESQ.  
WHO DIED 8TH DEC'R., 1797,  
AGED 67 YEARS, 9 MONTHS AND 17 DAYS.

Sons of America !

Mourn for your country, she has lost a friend  
Who did her rights and liberties defend.  
May rising patriots keep those rights secure,  
And hand them down to latest ages pure.  
Mourn too, ye friends and relatives who knew  
His worth, his kindness, and his love to you.

<sup>a</sup> The shot is said to have been fired by Lieut. Paddock.

<sup>b</sup> The old Ward house stood directly on the site of the present Marble Hall, and is said to have closely resembled it in all its proportions.

Edmund Ward was for many years a member of the Colonial Assembly.

But duty bids us all resign, and say,  
Thy will be done, who gave and took away.

By his wife Ruth Gedney, the Hon. Stephen Ward left issue eight sons and four daughters; the fourth son was the late Jonathan Ward, surrogate of the county of Westchester, and a delegate to the convention that framed the late constitution of this state in 1821.<sup>a</sup>

In the vicinity of Marble Hall are situated the two valuable marble quarries of Elijah Morgan & Co., and George Hall. The former supplied the material for the construction of the New York custom house, and is now fulfilling a heavy contract for the city hall, Brooklyn.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the eastern side of Long Reach lies the estate of the late James Somerville, Esq.,<sup>c</sup> (a native of Roxburghshire, Scotland,) for a long period one of the associate judges of the county, and a well known and respected free-holder of this town. The Somerville property (at present occupied by Archibald Somerville, brother of the late judge,) formerly belonged to David Williams; and was given him by the state, upon the 16th of June, 1783, "for and in consideration of the services of David Williams<sup>d</sup> of Cortlandt manor, in the county of Westchester, hath rendered his country in apprehending and securing the British deputy adjutant general, Major John André, who was returning to New York, after having, in the character of a spy, concerted measures with the infamous Benedict Arnold, then commanding at the posts in the Highlands, for betraying the said posts into the hands of the enemy, and for his virtue in refusing a large sum of money offered by the said Major André as a bribe to permit him to escape, &c., and consisted of all that certain tract or parcel of

<sup>a</sup> Also a member of the state senate in 1806.

<sup>b</sup> The Winter Hill burying ground in this neighborhood contains some ancient memorials to the Hodens and Hunts. One of the headstones is inscribed "S. 1719," another, "Mary Hoden, deceased March ye 10th, 1731.

<sup>c</sup> James Somerville was the son of Archibald Somerville, M. D., of Melrose, Roxburghshire, (whose family originally came from Berwickshire, in the same kingdom,) a lineal descendant of Sir Gualter de Somerville, Lord of Wichnour, one of the companions of the Norman conqueror.

<sup>d</sup> For a full account of this individual see Hist. of Schoharie County, N. Y.



To face page 161, vol. i.

Arms.—A

Edmund  
Cont  
ches  
1712  
fice.

Edmund Ward, member of the=Pl  
Colonial Assembly; will da-  
ted 12th Feb 1731. Surro-  
gate's Rec. No 11, 276.

Edmund, of Eastchester, to whom=Phæbe  
his father bequeathed a silver  
hilted sword; ob. 1805. Fowler Hon. Stephen, Ju  
of Westchester  
1730, ob Dec.

1. Edmund=... 2. John 3. Wil- 4. Moses=... 5. Elijah 6. Richard=... 7. Step  
1. Phæbe  
2. Miriam

Jonathan 1. Oliver 4. Stephen 1. Phæbe 1. Horatio Ann  
2. William 5. John 2. Miriam 2. Alfred

Stephen, nat. Philip Pell, Jeffer- Margaret Sarah=Benj. Ruth Glorianna=  
April 8, son County, N.Y. Mary Wright Julia

Charles, nat April Sally Ann, nat. June Jane  
11, 1802, ob. 10, 1800, ob. June Emeline, nat.  
June. 1809

Moses=Elizabeth John, nat.=Sarah James, nat.=Esther Thomas, n  
nat. Towns- 26 June, Morgan 21 April, Fowler 22d March  
June 3, end 1778 1780, ob 23 Aug 1838 1785, ob s.

Moses, of=Ann, da. of Philip, William=... The  
Sing Job Sher- ob. s. p.  
Sing wood.

Isaac Abijah, Nathaniel, Maj. Gen. Fran=James Sally=Will Thomas Mary  
ob. s. p. Aaron, of ces Pugs- Ann Carpen-  
Sing Sing ley

Hannah=Elijah Elizabeth Ann=Levi Rebecca=Dr. Scrib- Jemima=Georg  
Wash- burn Shute ner, of Tar- rytown, ob. 1847. wood  
burn

Free-  
love  
Pinc-  
kney

land situate in the town of Eastchester, late in the possession of Edmund Ward, amounting to 252½ acres.<sup>a</sup>

The above mentioned Edmund Ward, was the only brother of the Hon. Stephen Ward. During the Revolution, Edmund appears to have sided with the loyalists, for which he lost his property under the confiscation act of 1782. His second son John Ward, was an officer in the Loyal American regiment, "and entered (remarks Sabine) the military service of the Crown as early as 1776. During the war, he was frequently in battle. The loyal Americans went to New Brunswick, in 1783; and when in the course of that year the corps was disbanded, he settled at St. John as a merchant. He filled various public stations, and for many years enjoyed the appellation of the father of the city. At the time of his decease, he was not only the senior magistrate of the city and county of St. John, but the oldest merchant and half pay officer in New Brunswick. Mr. Ward was a gentleman of noble and venerable appearance. He died in 1846, in the ninety-third year of his age. His remains were taken to Trinity Church, "where the impressive funeral service of the Church of England was read, and were subsequently interred in the new burial ground, followed to the grave by one of the largest and most respectable funeral processions ever seen in this city; including in distinct bodies, the justices of the peace for the city and county of St John, the common council of the city headed by his worship the Mayor, and his honor the Recorder, the members of the legal profession, (the barristers being in their gowns) at the head of whom, was his honor Mr. Justice Carter, supported by the Honorable the Attorney General, and Solicitor General, the grand jury for the city and county, then attending the Circuit Court, and the officers and men of the New Brunswick regiment of artillery of St. John, as well as a vast concourse of other citizens, all anxious to pay the last sad tribute of respect, to one who was so intimately associated with the early history of the country, &c."<sup>b</sup>

The Ward family originally came from Kent, England, and

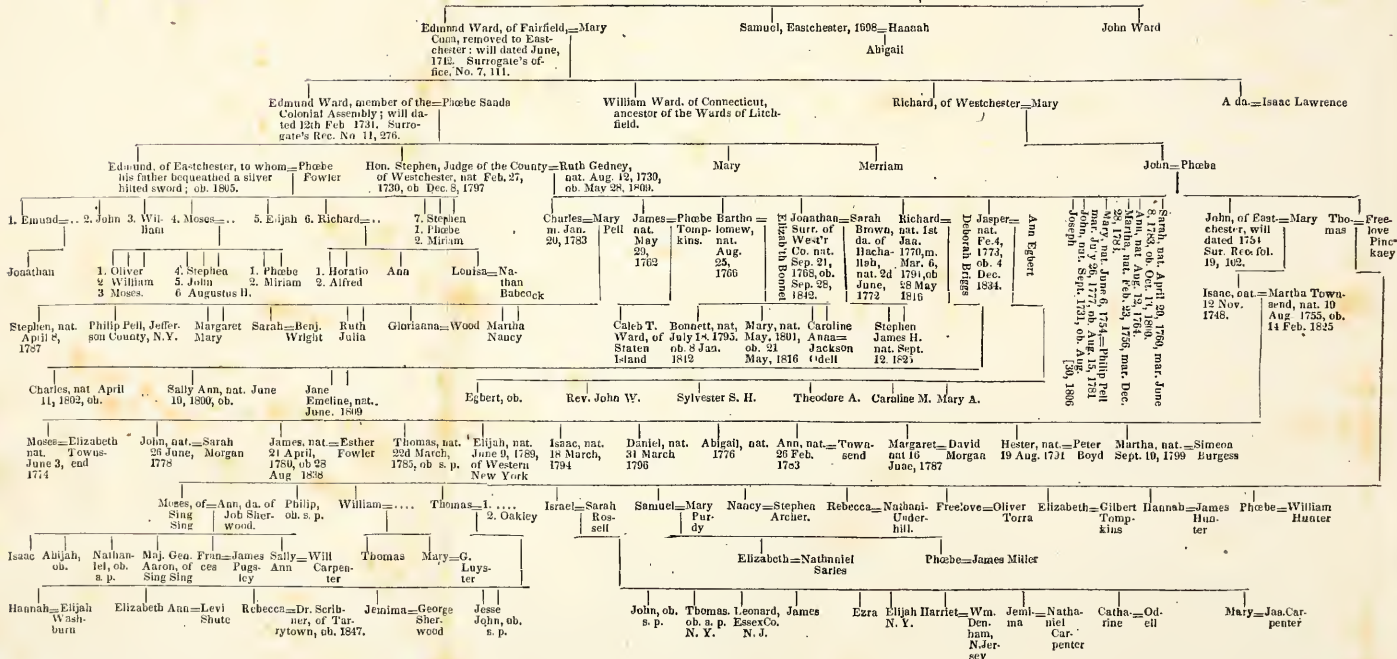
<sup>a</sup> Abstract of Sales of Confiscated Estates, 138.

<sup>b</sup> Sabine's Hist. of Amer. Loyalists, 673.

PEDIGREE OF WARD OF WESTCHESTER CO.

Arm. — Az. a cross, patonce, or. Crest. — A wolf's head, erased, or. Motto. — Non nobis solum.

Andrew Ward, of Watertown, Mass. freeman, 1634, accompanied the first settlers to Connecticut, and was elected a magistrate in 1636; removed to Long Island in 1643; a resident of Fairfield, Conn. in 1649.





land situate in the town of Eastchester, late in the possession of Edmund Ward, amounting to  $252\frac{1}{2}$  acres.<sup>a</sup>

The above mentioned Edmund Ward, was the only brother of the Hon. Stephen Ward. During the Revolution, Edmund appears to have sided with the loyalists, for which he lost his property under the confiscation act of 1782. His second son John Ward, was an officer in the Loyal American regiment, "and entered (remarks Sabine) the military service of the Crown as early as 1776. During the war, he was frequently in battle. The loyal Americans went to New Brunswick, in 1783; and when in the course of that year the corps was disbanded, he settled at St. John as a merchant. He filled various public stations, and for many years enjoyed the appellation of the father of the city. At the time of his decease, he was not only the senior magistrate of the city and county of St. John, but the oldest merchant and half pay officer in New Brunswick. Mr. Ward was a gentleman of noble and venerable appearance. He died in 1846, in the ninety-third year of his age. His remains were taken to Trinity Church, "where the impressive funeral service of the Church of England was read, and were subsequently interred in the new burial ground, followed to the grave by one of the largest and most respectable funeral processions ever seen in this city; including in distinct bodies, the justices of the peace for the city and county of St John, the common council of the city headed by his worship the Mayor, and his honor the Recorder, the members of the legal profession, (the barristers being in their gowns) at the head of whom, was his honor Mr. Justice Carter, supported by the Honorable the Attorney General, and Solicitor General, the grand jury for the city and county, then attending the Circuit Court, and the officers and men of the New Brunswick regiment of artillery of St. John, as well as a vast concourse of other citizens, all anxious to pay the last sad tribute of respect, to one who was so intimately associated with the early history of the country, &c."<sup>b</sup>

The Ward family originally came from Kent, England, and

---

<sup>a</sup> Abstract of Sales of Confiscated Estates, 138.

<sup>b</sup> Sabine's Hist. of Amer. Loyalists, 673.

claim descent from William de la Ward, who flourished temp. Henry II. 1154 to 1189.

The first member in this county appears to have been Andrew Ward,<sup>a</sup> of Watertown, Mass., who accompanied the early settlers to Connecticut, and was elected a magistrate in 1636; he subsequently removed with the Rev. Richard Denton to Hempstead, L. I. In 1649, we find him residing at Fairfield, Connecticut. His sons were Samuel, of Eastchester, John, and Edmund the grandfather of the former proprietor of the Somerville estate.

In the northern part of this town are situated the residences of James Morgan<sup>b</sup> and William Silliman, Esq. Immediately north of the latter stood the old Tredwell mansion, the head quarters of Lord Howe, when the British army lay encamped in the vicinity.<sup>c</sup>

The farm of Mr. John Bates completes the northern boundary of this town.

Upon Hutchinson's river are situated the saw and grist mills of John Tompkins and Stephen Anderson; the latter gentleman, besides his mill, carries on a large rope and cord manufactory.

The general surface of Eastchester is hilly and somewhat stony, the soil chiefly consisting of a fertile loam, there is, however a good proportion of interval and meadow land upon the rivers. The town is well watered throughout, both by springs and streams. The growth of wood and timber resembles that of other towns in general; oak of various kinds, hickory, chesnut, white wood, ash, walnut and pine, &c.

"Among the most important minerals" of Eastchester, ("in an economical point of view,) may be ranked the dolomitic marble,<sup>d</sup> which occurs abundantly in various places, and is extensively employed as a building material. Pyroxene occurs every where in the dolomite."<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> For further particulars of this family see genealogy.

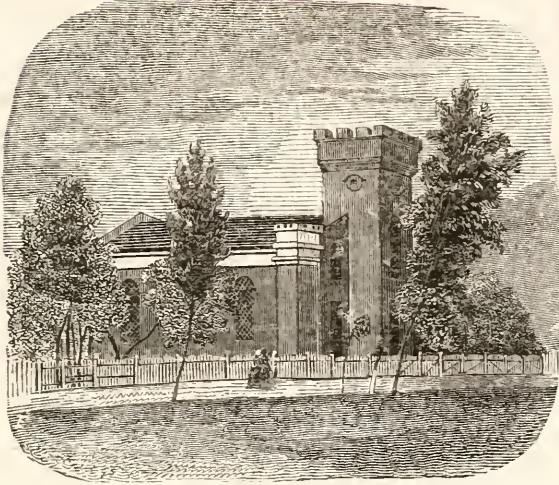
<sup>b</sup> See genealogy.

<sup>c</sup> From John Tredwell this property passed to the late Capt. Joseph Skinner, who died October 20, 1836, aged 70 years.

<sup>d</sup> Dolomite, magnesian carbonate of lime.

<sup>e</sup> Geological survey of the state, 1840.

## GREENBURGH.



Christ Church, Tarrytown.

IN the Dutch language Grein (Grain) burgh (borough,) literally the Grain town. In some of the early deeds called Lawrences plantation, a name undoubtedly derived from one of its original proprietors.

At the period of the Dutch discovery, this

Dutch discovery, this town formed a part of the Indian territory of Wikagyl, as laid down in the Dutch carte of 1614.<sup>a</sup>

The aboriginal name of the town itself was Weckquaskeek; afterwards varied to Wechquæesqueeck and Wiequæshook; in pure Algonquin, Weec-quæes-guck, the place of the bark kettle.<sup>b</sup>

Opposite Tappaan, (says De Vries, in 1640,) lies a place called Wichquaesqueeck.

Van Tienhoven describing the same spot<sup>c</sup> remarks: "Wichquaesqueeck, on the North River, five (twenty) miles above New Amsterdam, is a right good and suitable land for cultivation, contains considerable maize land which the Indians planted, rising from the shore. In the interior the country is flat and mostly even, very abundantly watered with small streams and running

<sup>a</sup> See Dutch carte, Secretary of State's office, Alb.

<sup>b</sup> Schoolcraft's paper, Pro. N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844.

fountains. This land is situate between two rivulets called Sint-sinck and Armonck, lying between the East and North rivers. "Bedenkinge over het aenvaerden van de landeryen in N. Nederland."<sup>a</sup>

To a large current of water which descends through the village of Dobb's Ferry and falls into the Hudson at the upper landing, the Indians gave the name of Weghqueghe or Wysquaqua, by the English called afterwards Wickers creek or William Portugues creek.

At the mouth of this beautiful stream the powerful tribe of the Wichquaesqueecks, had erected a village which was standing in the time of Nicholas Johannes Visschers, (Nicholas John Visschers,) for in his map of Novum Belgium, published at Amsterdam, 1659,<sup>b</sup> he calls it Wickquaskek, a name which was also applied to the surrounding lands as already shown. The site of this ancient village can still be traced on the neighboring banks by the numerous "*Indian shell beds*," which in some places are found to vary from two to three feet in depth. Another Mohegan village occupied the site of Tarrytown, called in the Algonquin, Alipkonck, "Anneebikong? place of leaves or rich foliage."<sup>c</sup> "Above Weckquaskeck says Schoolcraft, was the village of Alipkonck, that is "a place of elms."<sup>d</sup>

On the map of "Novum Belgium" it is also styled Alipconck, which clearly shows it was standing in 1659.

From the bark of the white elm (*ulmus Americana*) the Indian manufactured his light canoe.<sup>e</sup> This tree is also celebrated for the elegance of its foliage.

As early as 1644 there were three entrenched castles belonging to the Weckquaskecks.<sup>f</sup> One of these strong-holds was

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 240.

<sup>b</sup> See copy of Visscher's map engraved by Thomas Starling, Wilmington Square, London, 1833; from the original, in the possession of S. Converse, New York.

<sup>c</sup> Schoolcraft's Ethnology. Oneota.

<sup>d</sup> Proceedings of N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844.

<sup>e</sup> These canoes of bark were sewed together with thongs made from the dry sinews of the deer. One of them was capable of holding from twelve to fourteen men, or one hundred and fifty bushels of corn.

<sup>f</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 299.

still remaining in 1663, and garrisoned with eighty warriors.

The first sachem of Weckquaskeek; of whom we have any account, was Mongockonone, who appeared in behalf of this place, A. D. 1644, at Fort Amsterdam.

This chief must have held his authority under the high sachem of the Mohegans, for on the 30th of August, 1645, we find Aepjen, chief sachem of the Mohegans, appearing in behalf of Weckquaskeek before the Director General and Council at Fort Amsterdam.<sup>a</sup>

Eighteen years later Oratam, chief of Hackinkishacky, summoned the chiefs of Weckquaskeek before the Council. Upon the death of Mongockonone, (who doubtless fell in one of the Indian wars so frequent in that stormy period,) Pounpahowhelbshelen appears to have inherited the chieftainship. This individual sanctioned the sale of lands called Ubiequaeshook to Petrus Stuyvesant, A. D. 1649.<sup>b</sup>

The chief of Weckquaskeek in the year 1660 was Ackhough, who is called the chief and counsellor of Weckquaskeek.

In 1663 we have the names of Toawenare, sachem of the same place, and Souwenaro his brother. Also the same year occurs the name of Schowmenarack. In 1680 the chiefs were Weskora or Weskomen and Goharius his brother. And one year later Wessickenaiuw, sachem of Weckquaskeek, and Conarhand-ed his brother.

The descendants of the aboriginal proprietors appear to have been very numerous in this town, A. D. 1731, nearly half a century after their last sale to Frederick Philips.

In 1746 there were two Indian villages situated in the vicinity of Hart's corners; one stood on the farm of Mr. James Mc Chain, whilst the second crowned the summit of Indian Hill, the property of Mr. John Tompkins. Even as late as 1755 the banks of the Hudson were thickly populated by the Indians,

---

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. 2 series, vol. i. 276.

<sup>b</sup> Pennekeek, sachem in Achtercol, stated on the 16th July, 1649, (before the Director and Council,) that the tribe named Raritans residing before at Weckquaskeek, had no sachem, &c. Alb. Rec. vol. vii. 252.

particularly south of Tarrytown in the vicinity of Mr. James Ackers.

The cruel murder of an aged warrior of this town, Sept. A. D. 1626, plunged the Dutch colony into a long series of wars. It appears that "one of the neighboring tribe of Wickwasqueeck Indians had come, with his nephew and another of his nation, to the Dutch fort to sell some beaver skins. He was met, unfortunately, by three of Minuit's farm servants, who not only rifled the Indian of his property but murdered him in cold blood. The nephew of the unfortunate man, who was then a mere youth, was a witness to this outrage. He returned home brooding over the wrong, and vowed to take vengeance when he should arrive at the years of manhood; a vow he too faithfully fulfilled years afterwards, the Dutch having neglected to expiate the crime by a suitable present of wampum, in conformity with the customs of the redmen, or to punish the murderers, as justice and good policy demanded."<sup>a</sup>

Sept. A. D. 1641, the boy had now attained the age of manhood. "His uncle's spirit was still unappeased—his murder was unavenged. His voice was heard in the roaring of the storm—in the rustle of the leaves—in the sighing of the winds; and full of the conviction that that spirit could not find rest until vengeance should be had, the young Weckquaeskeeck sought for a victim to offer to the manes of the dead. Shrouding his evil purpose under the cloak of a friendly or business visit, he called at the house of one Claes Cornelisz Smits, the "raadmaker,"<sup>b</sup> an aged settler resident on the west side of the river, under pretence of making some purchases. The old man suspecting no harm, (for the Indian had been in the habit of working for his son,) set some food before him, and proceeded to get from a chest, in which it lay, the cloth which the other wished to purchase. The moment he stooped, the savage seized an axe, struck him dead, and then withdrew, having rifled the house of all its contents.

---

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 105.

<sup>b</sup> Raadmaker (wheelright.)

“ This aggression on an old and helpless man excited, when it became known, considerable feeling at Fort Amsterdam.”<sup>a</sup>  
 “ Director Kieft promptly demanded satisfaction from the chief”<sup>b</sup>  
 of the Weckquaskecks. “ But the sachen” (who was doubtless Mongockonone) “ refused to make any atonement. He was sorry that twenty Christians had not been immolated; the Indian had but avenged, after the manner of his race, the murder of a relative whom the Dutch had slain nearly twenty years before. On receipt of this answer, armed parties were sent out to retaliate, but they returned, having effected nothing.”<sup>c</sup>

Aug. 29, 1641, it was proposed to wait “ until the hunting season, when it was suggested that two expeditions should be got up; one to land in the neighborhood of the ‘ Archipelago,’ or Norwalk Island—the other, at Weckquaskeck.”

Notwithstanding the impatience of Kieft to attack the Weckquaskecks, he could not obtain the consent of his council until Feb. 18, 1642. Having now received their sanction, “ he ordered Hendrick Van Dyck, ensign in the Company’s service, who had been already over two years stationed at New Amsterdam, to proceed with a force of eighty men against the Weckquaskecks, to execute summary vengeance upon that tribe, with fire and sword.

To ensure complete success, the expedition was placed under the direction of a trusty guide, who professed to be intimately acquainted with the homes and haunts of the savages. This party started in the fore part of March, and pushed actively forward towards the Indian village; but fortune favored the red man. The night set in clouded and dark; and when the expedition reached Armenpèral,<sup>d</sup> Van Dyck called a halt, notwithstanding the entreaties of his men to push on, ere the savages

<sup>a</sup> O’Callaghan’s Hist. N. N. p. 240, 1.

<sup>b</sup> O’Callaghan’s Hist. N. N. p. 241. Journal van Nieuw Nederlant, Hol. Doc. v. 314. De Vries corroborates the statements in the text.

<sup>c</sup> O’Callaghan’s Hist. N. N. p. 242.

<sup>d</sup> Armenpèral supposed to be the west branch of the Sprain river, which flows in the rear of Dobb’s Ferry.

should have warning of their approach. An hour and a half was thus lost ; the guide then missed his way, whereupon Van Dyck lost temper, and made a retrograde movement to Fort Amsterdam, whither he returned without having accomplished the object for which he had been detailed. The expedition however was not without its effect. The Indians had observed, by the trail of the white men, how narrowly they had escaped destruction, and therefore immediately sued for peace, which Cornelis van Tienhoven concluded with them, in the course of the spring" of 1642, "at the house of a settler named Jonas Bronk, who resided on a river to which he gave his name, situate east of Yonkers, in the present county of Westchester."

One of the conditions of the above treaty was the surrender of the murderer of Clas Smits, dead or alive ; a condition which however was never fulfilled, owing either to unwillingness or inability on the part of the Indians."<sup>a</sup>

"Feb. 7th, 1642, winter came, and while the earth was yet buried in snow, a party of armed Mohawks, some eighty or ninety in number, made a descent upon the Weckquaskecks and Tappaen Indians, for the purpose of levying tribute."<sup>b</sup>

"At the approach of these formidable warriors of a braver Huron race, the more numerous but cowering Algonquins crowded together in despair, begging assistance of the Dutch. Kieft seized the moment for an exterminating massacre. In vain was it foretold that the ruin would light upon the Dutch themselves. In the stillness of a dark winter's night, the soldiers at the fort, joined by freebooters from Dutch privateers, and led by a guide who knew every by-path and nook where the savages nestled, crossed the Hudson," (into Pavonia, New Jersey, whither the unsuspecting Weckquaskecks and Tappaens had fled from Manhattan,) "for the purpose of destruction. The naked and unsuspecting tribes could offer little resistance ; the noise of musketry mingled with the yell of the victims. Nearly a hundred

---

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 249, 50.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 264.



perished in the carnage. Day break did not end its horrors ; men might be seen, mangled and helpless, suffering from cold and hunger ; children were tossed into the stream, and as their parents plunged to their rescue, the soldiers prevented their landing, that both child and parent might drown."a Beside these thirty more were murdered at Corlaers Hook on Manhattan Island while sunk in repose.

"This unjustifiable outrage led to consequences almost fatal to the Dutch. It estranged the Long Island Indians, the warmest of their friends, who now formed an alliance with the River Indians, whose hate knew no bounds when they discovered that it was the Dutch, and not the Mohawks, who had attacked them at Pavonia and Corlaers Hook. The tomahawk, the fire-brand, and scalping knife, were clutched with all the ferocity of phrensy, and the war-whoop rang from the Raritan to the Connecticut, for eleven tribes of savages proclaimed open war against the Dutch. Every settler on whom they laid hands was murdered—women and children dragged into captivity ; and though the settlements around Fort Amsterdam extended, at this period, thirty English miles to the east, and twenty-one to the north and south, the enemy burned the dwellings, desolated the farms and farm-houses, killed the cattle, destroyed the crops of grain, hay, and tobacco, laid waste the country all around, and drove the settlers, panic-stricken, into Fort Amsterdam. ' Mine eyes saw the flames of their towns,' says Roger Williams, ' the frights and hurries of men, women and children, and the present removal of all that could to Holland.'b The assassins, says Bancroft, were compelled to desire a peace, which was covenanted with the River Indians the 22d of April, 1643. " This was principally brought about by the Dutch Patroon de Vries, and not by Roger Williams, as some of the New England historians claim."c

This peace proved unsatisfactory, for we find the Indians again taking up arms.

a Bancroft's Hist. U. S. ii. 289, 90.

b O Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 270. Rhode Island Hist. Rec. iii. 156.

c O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 276, note.

“15th Sept. 1643, it was resolved by the Dutch to renew the war, either by force or stratagem, against the River Indians.”<sup>a</sup>

“A. D. 1644, some of the Stamford people having surprised an Indian village and taken some prisoners; one of them an old man, proposed to the Dutch, in hopes of obtaining a reward “to lead any of their troops against the Weckquaesqueecks, who are said to be entrenched in three castles, at the north. Lieutenant Baxter and Sergeant Cock were, thereupon, ordered to proceed under the guidance of this old man, with sixty-five men against this tribe. But this party was in no way more fortunate than those which had already gone on similar expeditions. They found the castles of the Indians formidable in construction, and well adapted for defence. They were built of five inch plank, nine feet high, and bound around with thick beams, and studded with port holes. Though it was calculated that thirty Indians could hold out, in one of these, against two hundred soldiers, strange to tell, the whole were found uninhabited. The Dutch, thereupon, burnt two of these strongholds, reserving the third as a point to retreat to, in case of necessity. From this place they next marched between thirty and forty miles further, but discovered nothing save a few huts.”<sup>b</sup>

April 6, 1644. The spring approaching made our river Indians again anxious for peace, which was brought about by the intervention of Capt. John Underhill. “Mamaranack, chief of the Indians residing on the Kicktawane, or Croton River; Mongockonone, Pappenoharrow, from the *Weckquesqueecks* and Nochpeem; and the Wappings from Stamford, presented themselves, in a few days, at Fort Amsterdam, and having pledged themselves, that they should not henceforth commit any injury, whatever on the inhabitants of New Netherland, their cattle and houses, nor show themselves except in a canoe, before Fort Amsterdam, should the Dutch be at war with any of the Manhattan tribes; and having further promised to deliver up Pacham the chief of the Tamkitekes,” (who resided in the rear of Sing Sing,) “peace

---

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. p. 285.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 298.

was concluded between them and the Dutch ; who promised, on their part, not to molest them in any way.”<sup>a</sup>

The fall of the same year, 1644, we find the “eight men” or council of the director, thus complaining to the directors of the Dutch West India Company at home.

A semblance of peace was attempted to be patched up last spring with two or three tribes of savages towards the north by a stranger,<sup>b</sup> whom we, for cause shall not now name, without one of the Company’s servants having been present, while our principal enemies have been unmolested. This peace hath borne little fruit for the common advantage and reputation of our lords, &c. ; for so soon as these savages had stowed away their maize into holes, they began again, to murder our people in various directions. They rove in parties continually around day and night, on the Island of Mannhattans, slaying our folks, not a thousand paces from the forts, and ’tis now arrived at such a pass, that no one dare move a foot to fetch a stick of fire wood, without a strong escort.<sup>c</sup>

“The spring of 1645, brought with it as usual, another desire for peace, on the part of the River Indians.” “This was brought about by Kieft and his counsellor, La Montagne.” “To make suitable presents to the Mohegans or Mahicanders in token of the ratification of this peace, Kieft was obliged however to borrow money” from Adriaen vander Donck, sheriff of Rensselaerswyck, afterwards Patroon of Colendonck, (Youkers,) and others.<sup>c</sup>

On the occasion of this treaty, which took place 30th August, 1645, “Aepjen, chief of the Mohegans, spoke for the Wappinecks the *Wechquaesqueecks*, the Sintsings, and the Kitchewancks ; these, with others, seated themselves, silent and grave, in front of Fort Amsterdam, before the Director General and his council, and the whole commonalty ; and there, having religiously smoked the great calumet, concluded in “the presence of the sun and

<sup>a</sup> O’Callaghan, p. 303.

<sup>b</sup> Captain John Underhill.

<sup>c</sup> Hol. Doc. 111, 206, 222.

<sup>d</sup> Vanderdonck’s New Neth. N. Y. Hist. Soc. trans. (2 ser.) 1st, 27 Vol.

ocean," a solemn and durable peace with the Dutch; which both the contracting parties reciprocally bound themselves honorably and firmly to maintain and observe."a

The ratification of this important treaty terminated, a re-establishment of good understanding with the natives commenced, for, on the 14th of July, 1649, we find the Director General, Petrus Stuyvesant, purchasing lands in this town, in behalf of the Dutch West India Company.

"On this day, the date underwritten, appeared before the noble Lords, the Director General, and the council, *Megtegichkama, Oteyochgue, and Weg-takockken*; the right owners of the lands lying on the North River of New Netherland, on the east shore, called *Ubiequaeshook*, in the breadth through the woods, till a certain kil called *Sewegrat*, diverging at the East River, from thence northward and southward to a certain kil named *Rechawes*, the same land lying betwixt two kils, one-half woods, and betwixt the North and East Rivers; so that the western half to the aforesaid is still remaining; and the other easterly half, with a south and north direction, middle through the woods, the aforesaid owners acknowledged; that with the consent of the chief Sachem, they have sold the parcel of land, and all their oystering, fishing, &c., unto the noble Lord Petrus Stuyvesant, Director General of New Netherland, for, and in consideration of certain parcels of merchandize which they acknowledge to their satisfaction to have received into their hands and power, before the passing of these presents, viz. :

6 Fathom cloth for jackets.	10 Knives.	1 Gun
6 Ditto seawant (wampum.)	10 Harrow teeth.	2 lbs. lead.
6 Kettles.	10 Corals or beads.	2 lbs. powder.
6 Axes.	10 Bells.	2 Cloth coats.
6 Addices.		

In consideration of which, the before-mentioned owners do hereby the said land convey, transport, and give over, to the aforesaid (noble Lords the Director General, and his successors in full, true, and free ownership: To the said land, we the grantors, neither now nor hereafter, shall ever present any claim for ourselves, or our heirs and successors, desisting by these presents from all action, either of equity or jurisdiction, but conveying all the same to the said Director General and his successors, to do therewith as it may seem proper to them, without their, the grantors, or any one of them, molesting the grantee of the aforesaid land, whether in his property or his family. It is also agreed that the most westerly half, just as the Lord Director pleases, shall go with

---

a O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 356.

this for as many goods as in \* \* \* \* can be paid ; and they the grantors, promise at all times to induce their rulers on the North River, to talk the matter over, and not to sell to any without the knowledge of the Lord Director General ; the grantors promising this transport firmly, to maintain as in equity they are bound to do. Witness these presents, by them respectively signed in the Fort Amsterdam, in New Netherland, this 14th day of July, A. D., 1649. <sup>a</sup>

The mark of Ponupahan helghelen.

The Mark of Westakochken.

The mark of

The mark of

Attest by the Chief Sachem

The sachems of this town subsequently committed further depredations, and probably armed several of the sixty four war canoes that attacked and ravaged the country around Manhattan during the absence of Stuyvesant in 1655.<sup>a</sup>

For on the 6th of March, 1660, we find Ackhough, the chief and counsellor of *Weeckquaesqueeck*, appearing in the city of New Amsterdam, before the Director General and Council, to treat for peace.<sup>b</sup>

On the 10th of July, 1663, during the negotiation between Connecticut and the Dutch, a furious war was raging in the neighborhood of Esopus. The insurgent tribes were headed by five warlike chiefs, viz., Pennyraweck, Sewekenamo, Wapperonk, Caelcop, and Mekarowe, who threatened not only the extinction of the Dutch villages, but also their allies, the *Weeckquaesqueecks*. In dread of the threatened invasion, we find the chiefs of this town repairing to New Amsterdam on the 26th of July, 1663. "Souwenaro, sachem of Weeckquaesqueeck, came of his own accord, with his brother, and asserted that he was warned by a Wappinger Indian that the Esopus Indians intended to come down, within five or six days, with forty or fifty men to kill them, with the Dutch of New Harlaem and other places, and those of the New Village: he told them he, with his people, took therefore their flight near Harlaem. He notified them of it, and why they came, so that those of New Harlaem should not be intimidated.

"He said, further, that he warned those at New Harlaem, and requested we would do the same to the people in that neighborhood, and warn those on the general's farm (Bowery). Souwenaro also stated that his people were only eighty strong which could bear arms, and that they had, consequently, left their fort at Weeckquaesqueeck, and had retired into the woods to defend themselves."<sup>c</sup>

This war with the Esopus Indians lasted till November, 1663, when a peace was concluded. In the fall of the same year, Sept. 15, 1663, appeared in the fort, Schoumenarack, chief of Weec-

<sup>a</sup> Bancroft's Hist. U. S. ii. p. 299.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. xxi. 247.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. xxi. p. 247.

quaesqueeck, soliciting for himself and his men to go fishing unmolested near the village of Harlaem, which was granted on condition that they shall not come with arms near the Dutch dwellings, and that it may be known, with full certainty, that they were his savages, and not some of Esopus; so was delivered to him a seal (signet) of the Dutch Company, printed on wax, in small billets, which might be shown in meeting Dutchmen, on the day as above.

*Note.*—There were delivered to him twelve seals, viz. :—

For those of Weecquaesqueeck, whose chief is Sawwesach, four.

To Kitchtawangh, whose chief is Currupin, four.

Kiskingthing and Sint Sinck have no chiefs, but are considered to belong to those savages.<sup>a</sup>

On the 21st of October, 1663, we find the chiefs of Weecquaesqueeck, united with those of Sint Sinck and Kitchtawang, in a war with the Dutch.<sup>b</sup> The armistice of November appears to have restored tranquillity. During the summer of 1662, "Connecticut purchased of the Indians all the lands on the seaboard as far west as the North River."<sup>c</sup> Thus a second time was this territory ceded by the sachems of Weecquaesqueeck. Upon the confiscation of the property of the Dutch West India Company, 15th of June, 1665, the New Netherlands passed to his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York; and these lands being within the province of New York, formed a part of the North Riding of Yorkshire. In consequence, Connecticut ceased to hold any jurisdiction.

The next grantee, under the sachems of Weecquaesqueeck, was the Hon. Frederick Philipse, of East Friesland, in Holland, who had emigrated to New Amsterdam at an early period. The first grant to Philipse occurs on the 10th of December, 1681.

"From the Indians Cobus, Oramaghqueer, Betthunsk, Sjoghweena-men, Wenraweghien, Saijgadme, and Togtquanduck, of all those lands beginning on the north side of a creek called Bisightick, and so ranging along said river northerly to the lands of the said Frederick Philipse, and thence alongst the

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. xviii. 446.

<sup>c</sup> Bancroft's Hist. U. S. ii. 312.

<sup>d</sup> This refers to a former purchase.

said land, north-east and by east until it comes to and meets with the creek called Neppizan, if the said creek shall fall within that line, otherwise to extend no further than the head of the creek or kill called Pekantico, or Pueghan-duck, and then southerly alongst said river Nippizan if the same shall fall within the said line as aforesaid, or else in a direct line from the head of the said creek or kill called Peckantico, until it comes opposite the said first mentioned creek called Bisightick, and from thence westerly to the head of the said creek Bisightick and alongst the same to the North or Hudson's river,"<sup>a</sup> &c. &c. This purchase embraced the north-west portion of the town, and a part of Mount Pleasant. It was attested by

W The mark of Wessickenaeuw Sachem of Wesquaskack.

Witness the mark of ☉ Clause the Indian.<sup>b</sup>

V The mark of Ghoharius for himself, Cobus, and Toghquanduck.

W The mark of Wramaghaqueer.

Z The mark of Petthunck.

O The mark of Sjogheveen.

\ The mark of Wearaweghein.

/ The mark of Sayjaenw.

Here follows a schedule or particular account of the wampum and other goods paid by Frederick Philipse for the said land.

10 fathom of duffils,	2 iron potts,	6 howes,
10 blankets,	5 earthen cans	12 axes,
8 gunns,	12 steeles to strike fire,	9 kettles,
7 shirts,	2 coopers' adds,	40 knives,
1 anker of rum,	2 half vatts of beere,	6 brass tobacco boxes,
25 lbs. of powder,	70 fathom of wampum,	6 coates,
10 bars of lead,	7 pair of stockings,	2 drawing knives.

The second sale to Philipse embraces lands situated south of the former, bearing date the 13th of April, 1682.

"Beginning at the south side of a creek called Bisightick, and so ranging along Hudson's river, southerly to a creek or fall called by the Indians Weghquegsike, and by the christians called Lawrence's plantation; and from the mouth of the said creek or fall, upon a due east course, to a creek called by the Indians Nippiran, and by the christians Youncker's kill; and from thence along the west side of the said creek or kill, as the same runs to lands formerly bought."

In presence of Emient, Sachem of	Siapham,
Kicktawongh,	Goharis,
Conarhande, brother of Wassekanew,	Teattanqueer,
Aramaghaqueer,	Wearaquaeghier,

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. v. 54.

<sup>b</sup> This individual appears to have acted as interpreter upon the occasion.



A schedule or particular of the wampum and other goods paid by Frederick Philipse to the Indians, the owners and proprietors of the above land.

100 fathoms of white wampum.	30 barrs of lead,	20 boxes,
12 fathom black ditto,	12 shirts,	2 ankers of rum,
12 ditto of duffills,	12 pair of stockings,	2 1-2 vatts of beere,
12 blankets,	30 hows,	3 drawing knives,
12 kettles,	8 fathom of stroud wa- ter cloth,	2 coopers adds,
10 guns,	8 coates,	10 yearthen juggs,
50 lb. of powder,	50 knives,	10 axis, <sup>a</sup>

Upon the 6th of September, 1682, Frederick Philipse purchased of the native Indians :

“ All that tract of land situate, lying and being on the east side of Hudson’s river, beginning on the north side of the land belonging to the Younckers kill, or Wepperhaem, at a great rock called by the Indians Sigghes,<sup>b</sup> and from thence ranging into the woods eastwardly to a creek called by the Indians Nepperha, and from thence along the said creek northerly till you come to the eastward of the head of a creek called by the Indians Weghqueghe, being the utmost bounds of the lands formerly bought of the Indians, &c., &c., attested by

Waramanhanck,	Esparamogh,	Anhock,
Maeintighro,	Mightereameck,	Sakissjenogh,
	Aghwarowes.	

The schedule of the goods, &c., &c., paid by the grantee.

4 guns,	6 pair of stockings,	2 ankers of rum,
4 fathom of wampum,	10 bars of lead,	4 shirts,
4 blankets,	3 kettles,	2 fathom of cloth,
6 fathom of duffills,	12 lbs. of powder,	1 adze,
	1 drawing knife. <sup>c</sup>	

The last purchase made by Philipse in this town, (on the 5th of June, 1684,) includes the land situated between the Saw Mill and Bronx river, viz. :

“ All that tract or parcel of land, situate, lying, and being, to the eastward of the land of the said Frederick Philipse, between the creek called Neppiran, or the Younckers kill, and Bronck’s river, beginning (on the north side) at the northerly bounds of the Younckers land, and from thence along the aforesaid

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. v. 57.

<sup>b</sup> See Younckers ; also Philipsburgh Patent.

<sup>c</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. v. 64. This deed includes the southern part of Greenburgh, from the northern line of Yonkers to Dobb’s Ferry.

creek Neppiran, however it runs, till you come to the most northerly bounds of the said Frederick Philipse's land, and from thence north-east into the woods, to Broncks's river, and from thence along Broncks's river so far as it runs southerly to the eastward of the Younckers land aforesaid, and from thence with a westwardly line to the aforesaid Younckers kill or Neppiran, together with all the lands, &c., &c.

Sepham,  
Ghoharin,  
Kakinsigh,  
Enhoak,

Arradppanint,  
Kawanghis, an Indian squaw,  
Niepack,  
Kewightakin,

Teatangcom.

A schedule or particular of goods, &c., paid to the grantors.

130 fathom of white wampum,	10 spoons,
12 guns,	2 knives,
14 fathom of duffils,	12 pair of stockings,
12 blankets,	15 hatches,
8 coats,	10 hoes,
6 kettles,	10 earthen jugs,
6 fathom of stroud water,	10 iron pots,
16 shirts,	4 1-2 vatts of beere,
25 lbs. of powder,	2 ankers of rumme,
20 bars of lead,	2 rools of tobacco. <sup>a</sup>

The above sales covered the present township of Greenburgh, and subsequently formed a portion of Philipsburgh manor.

These lands remained in the Philipse family, until the attainder of Colonel Frederick Philipse, A. D. 1779, when they became vested by forfeiture in the people of this state. Under the commissioners they were parcelled out for small sums, to the Van Tassels, Van Warts, Odells, Lawrences, Posts, Archers, Harts, Ackers, Dyckmans and Requas, former tenants of the manor in pursuance of the act of 1784. Many of their descendants still occupy the patrimonial estates in fee simple.

The earliest entry relating to town officers occurs in the old town and manor book, entitled "the town and manor of Philipsburgh for to keep the town redesstors, 1742."

The first Tuesday in April, is chosen Abraham Martlinghs for the clerk of the town and manor aforesaid, at the town meeting, for chussen all other assessors in the town.

---

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. v. 79.

In 1742, the first Tuesday in April is chosen four assessors for the manor of Philipsburgh, viz: Joseph Geddenie and Gerret van Wart, jun. For constable and collector is chosen Jocqhem van Wart. Pound master is Elbert Airsse. Frederick Philipse appears to have been supervisor in 1752. The first independent election held in 1778, is thus recorded. "Being a memorandum of all the public officers appointed and chosen at a town meeting held as usual on the manor, the 7th day of April, 1778, and in the second year of our independency."

Joseph Paulding,—*Supervisor.*

Joseph Requaw,—*Town Clerk.*

Peter Bant,—*Constable.*

Jacob Van Wart, sen., } *Overseers of the poor.*  
James Requaw, }

Gersham Sherwood, } *Assesors.*  
Thomas Buess, }

Within the township of Greenburgh are located several pleasant villages.

Hastings occupies a romantic situation on the east bank of the Hudson, at the mouth of a beautiful glen. The country rising above the margin of the river with great boldness, is luxuriantly ornamented with wood. A steep descent leads to the village landing and hotel, from which extensive views are obtained of the Hudson. The winding stream that buries itself in the adjoining ravine, supplies valuable water privileges for the chemical and button works of Mr. Sheckler, a brass factory, and the celebrated axle manufactory of Mr. Saunders.

The advantages presented by the river, combined with the healthfulness of the situation, has rendered Hastings a favorite resort for New York citizens during the summer season.

The site of the present village nearly covers the old Post estate, formerly owned by Peter Post, who occupied it during the

revolutionary war. The house (a small stone edifice) is still standing. Immediately subsequent to the revolution, this building was used as a tavern, and became celebrated as the rendezvous of cock-fighters, and hard drinkers. Since that period, it has been transformed into the present neat cottage.

On the east side of Edgar's Lane, (a continuation of the Albany Post Road,) stands the mansion of Anthony Constant, Esq., formerly the residence of William Edgar. It is a fine wooden edifice, surrounded by rich plantations of cedar, fir and locust trees, and commands delightful views of the river, and adjacent hills. Judge Constant is the son of Col. Joseph Constant, and grandson of the Rev. Silas Constant, of York Town.

A. D. 1776, a skirmish took place in Edgar's Lane between a body of Hessians, commanded by Lieut. Wurtz, and a troop of Sheldon's horse, under the following circumstances. Col. Sheldon having received information from his spies, that the enemy were preparing an incursion into this vicinity, left his quarters at New Castle, and led by Isaac Odell, a trusty guide, followed the by-roads to this place, where he ascertained from Peter Post, that the Hessians had not yet passed. Enjoining secrecy upon Post, the Colonel ambuscaded his horse in the adjoining cedars, which he had barely done, when the Hessians rode up, and demanded of Post, if he had seen the rebels. The Hessians, deceived by his answer, were proceeding in full gallop through the lane, when a shrill whistle rang through the air, instantly followed by the impetuous charge of Sheldon's horse. Panic stricken, the enemy fled in every direction, but the fresh horses of the Americans carried their gallant riders wherever a wandering ray disclosed the steel cap, or the brilliant accoutrements of a Hessian. A bridle path leading from the place of ambush to the river was strewn with the dead and dying, while those who sought safety in the water were captured, cut to pieces or drowned. The conflict, so short and bloody, was decisive. One solitary horseman was seen galloping off in the direction of Yonkers, and he alone, wounded and unarmed, reached the camp of Col. Emmerick in safety. Here he related the particulars of the march, the sudden onset and retreat.

Astonished and maddened with rage, Emmerick started his

whole command in pursuit. Poor Post was stripped for his fidelity, and after having a sufficient number of blows inflicted upon his person, left for dead. The lane, half a mile in length, has been since used as a race course. The former residence of Van Burgh Livingston, Esq. is agreeably situated near the river, a short distance north of Hastings. The estate is at present owned by Mr. Stephen Archer, who purchased it of Mr. Livingston.

The remains of the ancient military fort at Dobb's Ferry is situated a little south-west of the Livingston residence. The form of the embankment is somewhat in the shape of a horse shoe. From its elevated position, it overlooks the ferry beneath, and the magnificent scenery of the Hudson River. This fort appears to have been a post of great importance during the revolutionary war, for it not only commanded the passage of the river, but also the opposite ferry to Paramus, on the Jersey shore.

"On the 19th of July, 1781, (says Thatcher,) the British frigates that passed up the North River, a few days since, took advantage of wind and tide, to return to New York. A severe cannonade commenced from our battery, at Dobb's Ferry, where the river is about three miles wide. They were compelled literally to run the gauntlet. They returned the fire as they passed, but without effect. On board the Savage, ship-of-war, a box of powder took fire, and such was their consternation, that twenty people jumped into the river, among whom was a prisoner on board, who informs us that he was the only man who got on shore, all the rest being drowned. He reports also, that the Savage was several times hulled by our shot, and was very near sinking."<sup>a</sup>

The remains of a second redoubt are still visible on the property of Frederick W. Paulding, Esq. The village of Dobb's Ferry, one mile north of Hastings, is prettily seated on the rising hills of Greenburgh, opposite the northern termination of the Palisades and the village of Tappan. This place derives its present name from the ancient family of the Dobbs, who have been long settled here, and also from the fact that they were the early ferry-men. In the year 1698, there was living in this vicinity Jan Dobs en zyn huys vrou (and his wife,) Abigail, both members of

---

<sup>a</sup> Thatcher's Military Journal, 259. See Heath's Mem. 76, 294.

the Dutch Church, Sleepy Hollow. Thomas, their son, was born on the manor, A. D. 1712.

20th September, 1729, occurs a record in the church books at Sleepy Hollow, of a marriage between William Dobs, born in Philadelphia, and Lea van Waert, a native of the same place. They were perhaps Swedes, originally from the Delaware. Jeremiah Dobs, former proprietor of the ferry, left issue by Jane le Vines, besides two daughters, two sons, Jeremiah and Peter. Several sons of the latter are still living in Greenburgh.

The Indian name of this place, as already shown was, Weecquæs-guck, literally "*the place of the bark kettle.*" The aboriginal settlement appears to have been located at the mouth of the Weghqueghe or Wicker's creek, (William Portuguese creek.) This beautiful stream arises from two distinct springs, situated on the lands of E. W. Waldgrove and Frederick B. Wilsie, both of which, running nearly west, unite soon after crossing the Albany post road; here, commingled, they flow through a rocky glen enclosed between high wooded banks. Passing under the arch of the Croton aqueduct, the waters again appear rushing over their stony bed until their further progress is checked by the mill dam. Here a pipe of nine hundred feet in length conveys the water to the neighboring mill, affording a fall of thirty feet to an overshot wheel.

In the vicinity of the upper dock, the ravine opens and displays a splendid view of the Hudson River. The road, passing through the gap of the Greenburgh hills west of the Saw Mill Valley, follows the course of the ancient Indian path, which formerly led to the village of the "*Bark Kettle,*" at the mouth of the Weghqueghe, or Wysquaqua Creek.

The lower landing and ferry are situated some distance south of the creek at the foot of a steep bank. Here is a neat hotel, kept by Mr. Shadrach Taylor, for the convenience of passengers by the ferry, and the daily steamboats that touch at this dock.

Dobb's Ferry was distinguished, during the Revolution, as the scene of active military operations. To this fort, October 9, 1776, General Heath ordered Colonel Sargent, with 500 infantry, 40 light horse, Capt. Horton, of the artillery, with two 12 pounders,

and Captain Crafts, with a howitzer, to watch the movements of the enemy up the river.<sup>a</sup>

To this place the British army retreated after the battle of White Plains, closely followed by reconnoitering parties of the Americans. On the 7th of November, 1776, the enemy commenced foraging for grain and hay, and driving in cattle.<sup>b</sup>

On the 29th of January, 1777, General Lincoln's division of the Continental army was ordered to Dobb's Ferry.<sup>c</sup>

This ferry was selected by General Arnold and Major André as the place of their first meeting. "André's letter to Sheldon, (observes Mr. Sparks, in his Life of Arnold,) when divested of its disguise, will be seen to have had no other object than to communicate the intelligence that he should be at Dobb's Ferry at a certain time. He presumed the letter would be sent to Arnold, who would understand its meaning, and conduct his plans accordingly. So it turned out. Arnold left home on the afternoon of the 10th, went down the river in his barge to King's Ferry, and passed the night at the house of Joshua H. Smith, who resided about two miles and a half from the Ferry, near the road leading to Haverstraw. Early the next morning he proceeded to Dobb's Ferry, at which place André had arrived, according to his appointment, accompanied by Colonel Beverly Robinson, to whom the secret had already been entrusted by Sir Henry Clinton, probably at the suggestion, or at least with the knowledge of Arnold. An accident occurred which prevented the interview, and was near putting an end to the plot itself. When Arnold was approaching the point of destination by water, he was fired upon by the British gun boats stationed in that part of the river, and so closely pursued that his life was in danger, and he was on the point of being taken prisoner. By some oversight the boats had not been withdrawn, or it may have been expected that Arnold would come with a flag, which appears not to have been the case.

"Having landed on the west side of the river, he went down to the Ferry, where he remained till night. Whether André and Robinson were at the landing place on the opposite side, or

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath. Mem. 69.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. 84.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid. 113.

whether they came up from New York in a vessel and remained on board, has not been ascertained; but, at any rate, no meeting took place.

“Not forgetting his accustomed caution, Arnold wrote a letter to General Washington while at Dobb’s Ferry. His passage down the river had been in so public a manner, that it could not fail to be known and he feared suspicions might be raised concerning his motives and objects. Filling up the principal part of his letter with matters of some importance appertaining to his command, he said, as if accidentally, that he had come down to that place, in order to establish signals, which were to be observed in case the enemy ascended the river, and also to give additional directions respecting the guard-boats, and to have a beacon fixed on a hill, about five miles below King’s Ferry, which would be necessary to alarm the country. These reasons were plausible, and afforded apparent proofs of his vigilance, rather than grounds for suspecting any sinister design.

“Being foiled in this attempt to mature his scheme of treachery, he left Dobb’s Ferry a little after sunset, went up the river in the night, and reached his quarters at Robinson’s House before morning. André and Colonel Robinson returned to New York.”<sup>a</sup>

When Arnold left André, (the day previous to his capture at Tarrytown,) after delivering the treasonable papers, “André (continues Mr. Sparks) supposed he was to be sent on board the *Vulture*, as will appear by the following extract, which he wrote after his capture. ‘Arnold quitted me,’ said he, ‘having himself made me put the papers I bore between my stockings and feet. Whilst he did it, he expressed a wish, in case of any accident befalling me, that they should be destroyed; which I said of course would be the case, as, when I went into the boat, I should have them tied about with a string and a stone. Before we parted, some mention had been made of my crossing the river, and going another route; but I objected much against it,

---

<sup>a</sup> Spark’s *Life of Benedict Arnold*, 180, 181, 182. An account of the second interview will be found in *Cortlandtown*.



and thought it was settled, that in the way I came, I was to return.'

"Arnold left him, and went up the river to head-quarters. Before he departed from Smith's house, he urged Smith to go back with André to the Vulture as soon as it should be dark; yet the matter seems to have been undecided, for he wrote and gave to Smith two passports, (dating them 'Head-Quarters,') one authorizing him to go by water, and the other by land.

"The former was in these words: 'Joshua Smith has permission to pass with a boat and three hands, and a flag, to Dobb's Ferry, on public business, and to return immediately.'"<sup>a</sup>

After the trial of André at Tappan, and his letters and those of Washington, as well as the proceedings of the board of examination, had been received by Sir Henry Clinton, then in New York, it was resolved by Clinton and a board of general officers, "that a deputation of three persons should proceed to the nearest American out-post, furnished with evidence to prove Major André's innocence, and to impart information which Sir Henry Clinton thought would place the question in a different light from that in which it had been viewed by the American board. The persons delegated on this mission were General Robertson, Andrew Elliot, and William Smith. They were accompanied by Beverly Robinson as a witness in the case, and were fortified in their estimation, but weakened in reality, by a long explanatory and threatening letter from Arnold to General Washington. The commissioners went up the river in the Greyhound schooner, with a flag of truce, on the first of October. Notice of the intended visit and its objects had been already communicated by Sir Henry Clinton to Washington; and when the vessel anchored at Dobbs' Ferry, General Greene was there, having been deputed by Washington to hold the interview on his behalf. The person sent on shore by the British commissioners brought word back, that General Robertson only would be permitted to land, and that General Greene was then in readiness to receive him.

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Benedict Arnold, 209-10.

The conference was opened by Robertson, who paid some compliments to the American general, and expressed the satisfaction he had in treating with him, on an occasion so interesting to the two armies and to humanity. Greene replied, that it was necessary for them to know at the out-set on what ground they stood: that he was not there in the character of an officer; that he was allowed by General Washington to meet him as a private gentleman, but that the case of an acknowledged spy admitted of no discussion. Robertson said his design was to state facts, which he hoped would have their due weight, in whatever character he might be supposed to speak.

He then entered largely into the subject, endeavoring to show, first, that André landed under the sanction of a flag; secondly, that he acted wholly by the directions of Arnold; from both of which positions it was inferred, that he could not in any just sense of the word be regarded as a spy. The facts having all been examined by the board of officers, and being well understood, this new statement of them made no change in Greene's opinion or impressions; and when Arnold's testimony was introduced, he said the Americans would believe André in preference to Arnold. General Robertson said, that no military tribunal in Europe would decide the case of André to be that of a spy, and he proposed to refer the question to Count de Rochambeau and General Knyphausen. Other considerations were urged by him, not so much in the way of argument as on the score of reciprocal benefits and humanity. He added that he should confide in General Greene's candor to represent in the fairest light to General Washington the arguments he had used; that he should stay on board all night, and hope in the morning to take back with him Major André, or an assurance of his safety.<sup>a</sup>

"The British commissioners waited till morning, as General Robertson had proposed, and at an early hour they received a note from General Greene, stating that he had communicated to Washington the subject of the conference, but that it had pro-

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 71, 2, 3.

duced no change in his opinion and determination. This intelligence was astounding to Robertson; for he had written to Sir Henry Clinton the evening before, that he was persuaded André would not be harmed. How he got this impression is not easily discovered, since he represented General Greene as obstinately bent on considering André as a spy, and resisting all his arguments to the contrary.

Nothing more could be done by the commissioners. That no measure might be left untried however, General Robertson<sup>a</sup> addressed the following letter to General Washington, dated

*Greyhound Schooner, Flag of Truce,  
Dobbs' Ferry, Oct. 2, 1780.*

SIR:—A note I had from General Greene leaves me in doubt if his memory had served him to relate to you, with exactness, the substance of the conversation that had passed between him and myself on the subject of Major André. In an affair of so much consequence to my friend, to the two armies, and humanity, I would leave no possibility of a misunderstanding, and therefore take the liberty to put in writing the substance of what I said to General Greene. I offered to prove by the evidence of Colonel Robinson and the officers of the Vulture, that Major André went on shore at General Arnold's desire, in a boat sent for him with a flag of truce; that he not only came ashore with the knowledge and under the protection of the General who commanded in the district, but that he took no step while on shore, but by the direction of General Arnold, as will appear by the enclosed letter from him to your Excellency. Under these circumstances I could not, and hoped you would not, consider Major André as a spy, for any improper phrase in his letter to you.

The facts he relates correspond with evidence I offer, but he admits a conclusion which does not follow. The change of clothes and name was ordered by General Arnold, under whose direction he necessarily was while within his command.

As General Greene and I did not agree in opinion, I wished that distinguished gentlemen of knowledge of the law of war and nations, might be asked their opinion on the subject, and mentioned Monsieur Knyphausen and General Rochambeau. I related that a Captain Robinson had been delivered to Sir Henry Clinton as a spy, and undoubtedly was such; but that it being signified to him that you were desirous that the man should be exchanged, he had ordered him to be exchanged.

I wished that an intercourse of such civilities as the rules of war admit of might take off many of its horrors. I admitted that Major André had a great

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 275, 6.

share of Sir Henry Clinton's esteem and that he would be infinitely obliged by his liberation: and that if he was permitted to return with me, I would engage to have any person you would be pleased to name set at liberty.

I added that Sir Henry Clinton had never put to death any person for a breach of the rules of war, though he had, and now has, many in his power; under the present circumstances much good may arise from humanity, much ill from the want of it, if that could give any weight. I beg leave to add that your favorable treatment of Major André, will be a favor I shall ever be intent to return to any you hold dear.

My memory does not retain with the exactness I could wish, the words of the letter which General Greene showed me from Major André to your Excellency. For Sir Henry Clinton's satisfaction I beg you will order a copy of it to be sent to me at N. Y.

I have the honor to be your Excellency's  
Most obedient and humble Servant,  
JAMES ROBERTSON.

"This letter could have produced no effect, even if it had not arrived too late; for it touched upon no points which had not already been examined and decided. The commissioners returned to New York."<sup>a</sup>

André was executed at 12 o'clock the same day.

"On the night of the 3d of August, 1781, about 11 o'clock, the British and American guard boats met in the river near Dobb's Ferry, when a considerable firing ensued; the Americans had one man badly wounded, who died soon after. The damage sustained by the enemy was not known." 7th August, 1781, in the morning, about two o'clock, the American army was awakened by the firing of cannon at Dobb's Ferry. It appeared that two of the enemy's gun boats had come up as high as the ferry, probably to endeavor to seize some vessels or boats. On finding they were discovered, they fired four cannon, but to no effect. Four cannon were discharged at the boats from the battery, on which they went down the river.<sup>b</sup>

Beides the two redoubts, there must have been a military block house erected here; for, on the 17th March, 1781, we find Major Graham ordered out with a detachment of 150 men for its

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' life of Arnold, 276.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 295.

relief, on which occasion, the garrison on both shores were doubled.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the suspension of hostilities, May 3, 1783, General Washington, His Excellency Governor Clinton, and General Sir Guy Tarleton, (the British commander,) and their respective suites, met here. The two former came down the river in barges; the latter ascended the river in a frigate. Four companies of light infantry performed the duty of guards on this memorable occasion.<sup>b</sup>

Near the junction of the Albany Post, and Saw Mill river road, is situated the Presbyterian Church, sometimes called by way of distinction, the lower Greenburgh Church. This society was organized on the 11th of April, 1825. Present at its first meeting of the clergy, the Rev. Samuel Robertson, Rev. Mr. Weeks, and the Rev. Mr. Wells, of New Rochelle. Of the members, Perez Jones, Peter Nodine, James Odell, Elizabeth Lefurge, Van Burgh Livingston, and Harriett Livingston.

The present edifice was erected, A. D. 1827. Principal contributor, Van Burgh Livingston, elder of the church.

LIST OF CLERGY AND SUPPLIES.

Install or call.	Ministers.	vacated by
1825	Rev. Chester Long,	resig.
1831	Rev. David Remington,	do
1832	Rev. Mark Mead,	do
1834	Rev. Hosea Ball,	do
1838	Rev. George Walker,	do
1841	Rev. Samuel Kellogg, present Pastor.	

Elders.

Deacon.

1825, Perez Jones,

1825, James Odell.

Van Burgh Livingston.

*Church Notes.*

1835	Total number of communicants, 37,	bapt., 7
1846	do do 67	do 6

First delegate to Presbytery, Van Burgh Livingston, Esq.

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 277.

<sup>b</sup> "The tour of duty having fallen to our regiment, we marched from Nelson's point, on the 24th, crossed the river at King's Ferry, and on the 25th, encamped near the block house at this place." August 5th; "flags are passing and repassing from this post to New York and back, every day." Thatcher's Mil. Journal, 310.

Previous to the year 1843, this church was connected with the Upper Greenburgh and White Plains churches. The burial ground on the east side of the church, contains monuments to the Browns, Ackers, Lockwoods, Lefurges, Wilsies, Dyckmans, and Storms.

Zion Church stands upon the highest ground in the village near the Albany post road.

The wonderfully extensive views which this elevated spot commands on every side, are better seen than described.

The building which is constructed of stone, is in the Gothic style.

The ground which it occupies, was the gift of Van Burgh Livingston, Esq. Its erection took place A. D. 1833, during the incumbency of the late Alexander Crosby, A. M., at that time Rector of the parish.

This gentleman was succeeded by the Rev. William Creighton, D. D. The present incumbent is the Rev. W. G. Higher.

There are two or three interments in the grave yard surrounding this church, of members belonging to the Noble, Bowdoin and Irving families.

Immediately in the vicinity of Dobb's Ferry, and contiguous to the river, is the residence and estate of James Hamilton, Esq., son of the Hon. Alexander Hamilton. This place formerly belonged to the Odell family. Jonathan Odell, father of the distinguished Colonel John Odell, was residing here in the autumn of 1776, when the British army, after retiring from White Plains, encamped in the neighborhood.

The enemy, upon their final retreat to New York, arrested Mr. Odell and four of his neighbors, as prisoners of war. On their arrival in the city, they were consigned to the provost. Here four of them died of poison, said to have been administered in their food. Jonathan Odell escaped through the kindness of a friend, who daily brought him provisions. Each of the sufferers had sons in the continental army, which was the cause of this inhuman treatment.

Bordering the river in the same vicinity, is the cottage of George Schuyler, Esq.

About two miles south of Tarrytown, a winding lane leads to

Sunny Side, the residence of the Hon. Washington Irving. "There is scarcely (observes Mr. Downing,) a building or place more replete with interest in America than the cottage of Washington Irving, near Tarrytown. The legend of Sleepy Hollow, so delightfully told in the sketch book, has made every one acquainted with his neighborhood, and especially with the site of the present building there celebrated as the 'Van Tassel House,' one of the most secluded and delightful nooks on the banks of the Hudson. With characteristic taste, Mr. Irving has chosen this spot, the haunt of his early days, since rendered classic ground by his elegant pen, and made it his permanent residence. The house of 'Baltus Van Tassel' has been altered and rebuilt in a quaint style, partaking somewhat of the English cottage mode, but retaining strongly marked symptoms of its Dutch origin. The quaint old weathercocks and finials, the crow-stepped gables and the hall paved with Dutch tiles, are among the ancient and venerable ornaments of the houses of the original settlers of Manhattan, now almost extinct among us. There is also a quaint keeping in the cottage, and grounds around it, that assists in making up the chain of the whole; the gently swelling slope reaching down to the water's edge, bordered by prettily wooded ravines, through which a brook meanders pleasantly, and threaded by foot paths, ingeniously contrived, so as sometimes to afford secluded walks, and at others to allow fine vistas of the broad expanse of river scenery."<sup>a</sup>

Over the porch, is the following inscription :

Erected  
 Anno 1650,  
 Rebuilt by  
 Washington Irving,  
 Anno 1835.

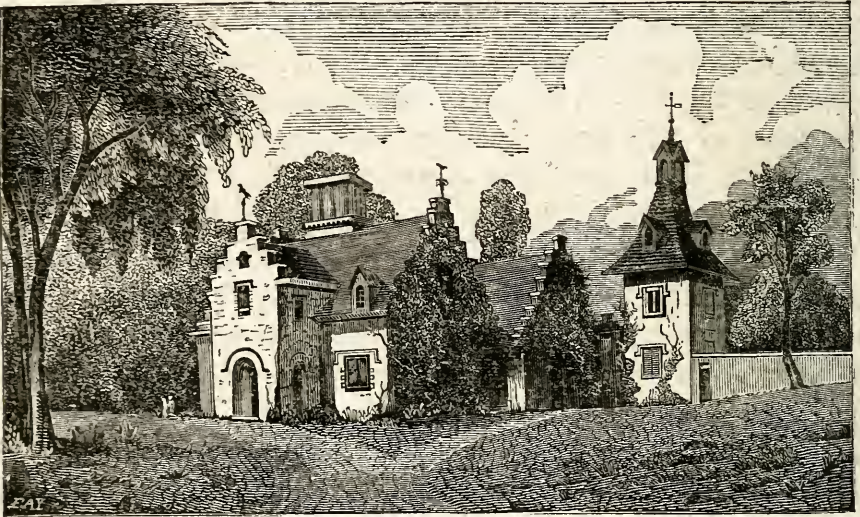
GEO. HARVEY,  
 Architect.

---

<sup>a</sup> Downing's Rural Architecture, 335.

Above the peaked turret of the portal, glitters a horse in full gallop, once the weathercock of the great Van der Hyden palace at Albany; the other upon the eastern gable formerly surmounted the Stadt House of New Amsterdam.

The interior is in perfect harmony with the exterior design of this quaint and venerable edifice. In the library are preserved the elbow chair and writing desk of Diedrich Knickerbocker.



Sunny Side, the residence of the Hon. Washington Irving.

“Van Tassel House” occupies the site of “Wolfert’s Roost,” which was built by Wolfert Ecker, an ancient Dutch burgher of this town.

In 1697, we find recorded the name of Jan Ecker, first accepted deacon of the Dutch Church, Sleepy Hollow, which office he appears to have held for several years. By his wife, Magdalentje Jan Ecker, left issue Wolfert, Cornelis and others.

The will of Wolfert Ecker bears date 1753, “wherein he bequeaths to his son, Stephen, a cow, or the worth thereof, more than the others, for his birth right, and to the child of his grandson, Wolfert Ecker, son of Sybout, twenty shillings, beside other bequests to the remainder of his children, viz. Sybout, Abram and Maretje.”<sup>a</sup> A branch of this family still resides in the neigh-

<sup>a</sup> Rec. Surrogate’s Office, N. Y. lib. xix. 29.



borhood. From the Eckers, this property passed by marriage to the gallant family of the Van Tassels, who figure so conspicuously in the writings of Diedrich Knickerbocker.

During the stormy period of the revolution, it belonged to "Jacob Van Tassel, or Van Texel, as the name was originally spelt, after the place in Holland, which gave birth to this heroic line." The following graphic sketch of the exploits of this redoubtable hero, is taken from the chronicle of the Roost:

"The situation of the Roost is in the very heart of what was the debateable ground between the American and British lines, during the war. The British held possession of the city of New York, and the island of Manhattan, on which it stands. The Americans drew up towards the highlands, holding their head-quarters at Peekskill. The intervening country, from Croton River to Spiting Devil Creek, was the debateable land, subject to be harried by friend and foe, like the Scottish borders of yore. It is a rugged country, with a line of rocky hills extending through it like a back bone, sending ribs on either side; but among these rude hills are beautiful winding valleys, like those watered by the Pocantico and the Neperan. In the fastnesses of these hills, and along these valleys, exist a race of hard-headed, hard-handed, stout-hearted Dutchmen, descended of the primitive *Nederlanders*. Most of these were strong whigs throughout the war, and have ever remained obstinately attached to the soil, and neither to be fought nor bought out of their paternal acres. Others were tories, and adherents to the old kingly rule; some of whom took refuge within the British lines, joined the royal bands of refugees, a name odious to the American ear, and occasionally returned to harrass their ancient neighbors.

"In a little while, this debateable land was overrun by predatory bands from either side; sacking hen-roosts, plundering farm houses, and driving off cattle. Hence arose those two great orders of border chivalry, the *Skinners* and the *Cow Boys*, famous in the heroic annals of Westchester county. The former fought, or rather marauded, under the American, the latter under the British banner; but both, in the hurry of their military ardor, were apt to err on the safe side, and rob friend as well as foe. Neither of them stopped to ask the politics of horse or cow, which they drove into captivity; nor, when they wrung the neck of a rooster, did they trouble their heads to ascertain whether he were crowing for Congress or King George.

"While this marauding system prevailed on shore, the Great Tappan Sea, which washes this belligerent region, was domineered over by British frigates, and other vessels of war, anchored here and there, to keep an eye upon the river, and maintain a communication between the various military posts. Stout galleys, also armed with eighteen pounders, and navigated with sails and oars, cruised about like hawks, ready to pounce upon their prey.

“All these were eyed with bitter hostility by the Dutch yeomanry along shore, who were indignant at seeing their great Mediterranean ploughed by hostile prow; and would occasionally throw up a mud breast work on a point or promontory, mount an old iron field-piece, and fire away at the enemy, though the greatest harm was apt to happen to themselves, from the bursting of their ordnance; nay, there was scarce a Dutchman along the river, that would hesitate to fire with his long duck gun at any British cruiser that came within his reach, as he had been accustomed to fire at water fowl.

I have been thus particular in my account of the times and neighborhood, that the reader might the more readily comprehend the surrounding dangers in this, the heroic age of the Roost.

It was commanded at the time, as I have already observed, by the stout Jacob van Tassel. As I wish to be extremely accurate in this part of my chronicle, I beg that this Jacob van Tassel, of the Roost, may not be confounded with another Jacob van Tassel, commonly known in border story by the name of “clump-footed Jack,” a noted tory, and one of the refugee band of Spiting Devil. On the contrary, he of the Roost was a patriot of the first water, and, if we may take his own word for granted, a thorn in the side of the enemy. As the Roost, from its lonely situation on the water’s edge, might be liable to attack, he took measures for defence. On a row of hooks above his fire-place reposed his great piece of ordnance, ready charged and primed for action. This was a duck, or rather goose-gun, of unparalleled longitude, with which it was said he could kill a wild goose, though half way across the Tappan Sea.<sup>a</sup> Indeed, there are as many wonders told of this renowned gun as of the enchanted weapons of the heroes of classic story.

In different parts of the stone walls of his mansion he had made loop-holes, through which he might fire upon an assailant. His wife was stout-hearted as himself, and could load as fast as he could fire; and then he had an ancient and redoubtable sister, Nochie van Wurmer, a match, as he said, for the stoutest man in the country. Thus garrisoned, the little Roost was fit to stand a siege, and Jacob van Tassel was the man to defend it to the last charge of powder.

He was, as I have already hinted, of pugnacious propensities, and, not content with being a patriot at home, and fighting for the security of his own fire-side, he extended his thoughts abroad, and entered into a confederacy with certain of the bold, hard-riding lads of Tarrytown, Petticoat Lane and Sleepy Hollow, who formed a kind of holy brotherhood, scouring the country to clear it of skimmers and cow-boys, and all other border vermin. The Roost was one of their rallying points. Did a band of marauders from Manhattan island come

---

<sup>a</sup> The goose gun is still in existence, having been preserved for many years in a hollow tree. It is now in the possession of Mr. Caleb Brush, of Grove street, New York, who married the celebrated heroine, Laney van Tassel.

sweeping through the neighborhood, and driving off cattle, the stout Jacob and his compeers were soon clattering at their heels ; and fortunate did the rogues esteem themselves if they could but get a part of their booty across the lines, or escape themselves, without a rough handling. Should the moss troopers succeed in passing with their *cavalgada*, with thundering tramp and dusty whirlwind, across King's Bridge, the holy brotherhood of the Roost would rein up at that perilous pass, and, wheeling about, would indemnify themselves by foraging the refugee region of Morrisania.

When at home at the Roost, the stout Jacob was not idle ; he was prone to carry on a petty warfare of his own, for his private recreation and refreshment. Did he ever chance to espy, from his look-out place, a hostile ship or galley anchored or becalmed near shore, he would take down his long goose-gun from the hooks over the fire-place, sally out alone, and lurk along shore, dodging behind rocks and trees, and watching, for hours together, like a veteran mouser intent on a rat hole. So sure as a boat put off for shore, and came within shot, bang went the great goose-gun, a shower of slugs and buck-shot whistled about the ears of the enemy, and, before the boat could reach the shore Jacob had scuttled up some woody ravine, and left no trace behind.

About this time the Roost experienced a vast accession of warlike importance in being made one of the stations of the water-guard.

This was a kind of aquatic corps of observation, composed of long, sharp canoe-shaped boats, technically called whale boats, that lay lightly on the water, and could be rowed with great rapidity. They were manned by resolute fellows, skilled at pulling an oar or handling a musket. These lurked about in nooks and bays, and behind those long promontories which run out into the Tappan Sea, keeping a look-out, to give notice of the approach or movements of hostile ships. They roved about in pairs, sometimes at night, with muffled oars, gliding like spectres about frigates and guard-ships riding at anchor, cutting off any boats that made for shore, and keeping the enemy in constant uneasiness. These musquito cruisers generally kept aloof by day, so that their harboring places might not be discovered, but would pull quietly along, under shadow of the shore, at night, to take up their quarters at the Roost. Hither, at such time, would also repair the hard-riding lads of the hills, to hold secret councils of war with the "ocean chivalry ;" and in these nocturnal meetings were concerted many of those daring forays, by land and water, that resounded throughout the border.

The chronicle here goes on to recount divers wonderful stories of the wars of the Roost, from which it would seem that this little warrior nest carried the terror of its arms into every sea from Spiting Devil Creek to St. Anthony's Nose ; that it even bearded the stout island of Manhattan, invading it at night, penetrating to its centre, and burning down the famous De Lancey house, the conflagration of which makes such a blaze in revolutionary history. Nay, more ; in their extravagant daring, these cocks of the Roost meditated a nocturnal descent upon New York itself, to swoop upon the British commanders,

Howe and Clinton, by surprise, bear them off captive, and perhaps put a triumphant close to the war.

This doughty Dutchman (continues the sage Diedrich Knickerbocker) was not content with taking a share in all the magnanimous enterprises concocted at the Roost, but still continued his petty warfare along shore. A series of exploits at length raised his confidence in his prowess to such a height, that he began to think himself and his goose-gun a match for anything. Unluckily, in the course of one of his prowlings, he descried a British transport aground, not far from shore, with her stern swung toward the land, within point blank shot. The temptation was too great to be resisted: bang! as usual, went the great goose-gun, shivering the cabin windows, and driving all hands forward. Bang! bang! the shots were repeated. The reports brought several sharpshooters of the neighborhood to the spot: before the transport could bring a gun to bear, or land a boat, to take revenge, she was soundly peppered, and the coast evacuated. She was the last of Jacob's triumphs. He fared like some heroic spider, that has unwittingly ensnared a hornet, to his immortal glory perhaps, but to the utter ruin of his web.

It was not long after this, during the absence of Jacob van Tassel on one of his forays, and when no one was in garrison but his stout hearted spouse, his redoubtable sister Nochie van Wurmer, and a strapping negro wench called Dinah, that an armed vessel came to anchor off the Roost, and a boat full of men pulled to shore. The garrison flew to arms—that is to say, to mops, broomsticks, shovels, tongs, and all kinds of domestic weapons, for, unluckily, the great piece of ordnance, the goose-gun, was absent with its owner. Above all, a vigorous defence was made with that most potent of female weapons, the tongue. Never did invaded hen roost make a more vociferous outcry. It was all in vain. The house was sacked and plundered, fire was set to each corner, and in a few moments its blaze shed a baleful light far over the Tappan Sea. The invaders then pounced upon the blooming Laney van Tassel, the beauty of the Roost, and endeavored to bear her off to the boat. But here was the real tug of the war. The mother, the aunt, and the strapping negro wench, all flew to the rescue. The struggle continued down to the very water's edge, when a voice from the armed vessel at anchor ordered the spoilers to let go their hold. They relinquished the prize, jumped into their boats, and pulled off, and the heroine of the Roost escaped with a mere rump-ling of the feathers."

"Shortly after the catastrophe of the Roost, Jacob van Tassel, in the course of one of his forays, fell into the hands of the British, was sent prisoner to New York, and was detained in captivity for the greater part of the war."<sup>a</sup>

Immediately north of Van Tassel house is the residence of

---

<sup>a</sup> Knickerbocker Magazine.

Philip R. Paulding, Esq. delightfully seated on a bold bank of the Hudson ; it commands from its elevated position, the noblest prospects of the river, while the view to the east is terminated by the lofty hills of Greenburgh. The edifice is constructed of Sing Sing marble, after the designs of Alex. J. Davis, Esq. In its details, both externally and internally, the most minute attention has been paid to a careful correspondence with the best examples of the Tudor era. Among the most remarkable features of the building, deserves to be noticed, the admirable porte cochère, or covered entrance for carriages, and a superb library ornamented with a lofty ceiling of carved timber.

The Paulding family have long been residents of this town. As early as 1712, we find Joost Pauldinck accepted deacon of the Dutch Church. The name of Joost Pauldinck occurs in a conveyance from William Odell of Rye, A. D. 1667.

In 1709 Joost Pauldinck appears to have been residing at Westchester. The father of the present proprietor is William Paulding, Esq. mayor of the city of New York in 1827. The patriot John Paulding who captured the British spy Major Andre was of this family.

The next object worthy of notice is the elegant and secluded villa of Henry Sheldon, Esq. This building is in the rural Gothic style and presents a very beautiful and picturesque exterior, combined with every accommodation and convenience of internal arrangement. No pains have been spared in laying out the adjoining grounds and plantations. A small stream running through a deep and woody glen has been obstructed in various places by rock work, and thus forms several artificial cascades. Some close walks, winding by the stream, conduct to a large fall situated at the glen's mouth. The scenery about the fall is extremely fine, embracing a lovely view of the Hudson river. The old Van Weert mill has been transformed into a Swiss cottage and boat house. The Van Weert family were the first occupants of this estate under the Philipses, and subsequently became its possessors in fee. In 1698 there appears to have been three married brothers of this ancient family living in Philipsburgh, who claimed descent from the illustrious house of Van Weert in Holland, viz. Joacham van Weert and Christyntje his wife, Gerredit van Weert and Cathalyne his wife, Jacob van

Weert and Bieltitje his wife. Gerredit van Weert left issue, Jan van Weert, father of Isaac, who sold this property to Mr. Sheldon.

The village of Tarrytown is pleasantly situated in the lap of the Greenburgh hills, overlooking the Hudson at the widest point of the Tappan Zee, which is here nearly three miles across.

Tarwe town, the old orthography of the Dutch word tarwe, (wheat) "the wheat town," probably so called from the abundant culture of that grain in this vicinity.

Here was an Indian village in 1659,<sup>a</sup> styled by the aborigines Alipconck, that is the place of elms. It seems more than probable that this ancient settlement occupied a hill at the south end of the present village. This opinion is somewhat confirmed by the circumstance that the whole ground is covered with shells, in some places to the depth of two or three feet. It is presumed that these "*shell beds*" generally indicate the site of Indian habitations.

Upon the same spot are situated the remains of the old military redoubt from whence the gallant water guard cannonaded the Vulture sloop of war, as she lay grounded on the ballast reef. The site of the Indian village and redoubt belong to Mr. Hart, who purchased of the Dutch Church.

The Dutch settlement of Tarwetown commenced soon after Philips purchase in 1680. The first dwellings appear to have been erected near the water's edge; for the convenience of shipping which found here a fine natural harbor. Prior to 1775 a dock had been constructed, and several houses erected near it. In 1776, the village consisted of twelve dwelling houses. At the present day there are over one hundred dwellings, five churches, three hotels and taverns, seven stores and an extensive brick yard. The steamboats Columbus, Mountaineer and Arrow make daily trips from this place to the city of New York. A number of sloops are also owned here, which run to various places on the river. Among others the Katrena van Tassel, Harvey P. Farrington, and the Farmer's Daughter, by Gilbert Requa. The principal

---

<sup>a</sup> Visscher's map Nov Belgii.

hotels are the Franklin House kept by Mr. H. Wilson, (a favorite retreat for visitors during the summer season,) and the ancient tavern stand of Martin Smith, another well known resort of travellers. Near the water's edge, in the vicinity of the landing, is situated the residence of General William Paulding. This house was erected previous to the Revolution, by his father William Paulding, Esq. From its proximity to the water it was frequently the object of the enemy's fire; the marks of their cannon balls are still visible on its walls.

Upon a commanding position, north of the village, is seated the Irving Institute; a classical boarding school for young gentlemen. William P. Lyon, A. M., principal and proprietor. This institution was founded in the spring of 1838. The *location* is, perhaps, the most desirable that could be selected for the purposes of education in this vicinity. The *site* is half a mile from the village landing, and about twenty-five miles distant from New York, with which there is daily communication. The *edifice* is a commodious brick building with wings, and a large rear building for the school. The *grounds* embrace several acres, affording abundant opportunity for healthy sports, and are quite retired from the village.



Irving Institute, Tarrytown.

Christ Church, Tarrytown, is a neat Gothic edifice of brick, pleasantly located in the main street.

This church was erected in 1836, and consecrated to the service of Almighty God by the name and style of Christ's Church,

Tarrytown, September, 1837. The whole structure is valued at \$8000.

On the north side of the chancel are two marble slabs bearing the following inscriptions:

IN  
memory of  
KATHARINE KEMBLE,  
Born October, 1765,  
and departed this life the  
16th day of July,  
A. D. 1843,  
Sister to MARIA PHILIPS.  
“ In death they  
were not  
divided.”

IN  
memory of  
MARIA<sup>a</sup> PHILIPS,  
(Relict of Frederick Philips,<sup>b</sup>)  
of Philipstown, Putnam County,  
NEW YORK,  
who departed this life the 13th day of  
November, A. D. 1839,  
aged 68 years.

Her remains rest within the walls of  
the Tower of this Church.

The memory of the just is  
blessed.—Prov. x. 7.

The Rev. William Creighton, D. D., first and present incumbent.

Upon a commanding eminence, nearly in front of the Episcopal church, stands the mausoleum of the Cobb family. The lower portion consists of a broad marble base, containing apartments for two sarcophagi, and likewise an upper receptacle for coffins, the whole surmounted by a neat obelisk.<sup>c</sup>

The Reformed Dutch church is situated immediately above the former, on the road leading to Sing Sing. This building is also constructed of brick. The front presents a collonnade of the Ionic order, surmounted with a wooden tower and spire. This church was erected A. D. 1837, and is in union with the old Dutch church at Sleepy Hollow.

<sup>a</sup> Maria Kemble and her sister were nieces of the Honorable Viscount Gage.

<sup>b</sup> Son of Philip Philipse, proprietor of the Philipstown patent, and grandson of the Hon. Frederick Philipse, Lord of the Manor of Philipsburgh.

<sup>c</sup> This structure has been recently erected for Capt. Nathan Cobb, now a resident of this village, formerly and for many years a most efficient and successful commander in the Liverpool packet line from New York.—*Irving Banner*.



Above the entrance is placed the following inscription.

“Reformed Dutch Church.”

Erected A. D. 1837.

In all places where I record

my name I will come

unto thee and I will bless thee.

*Exodus xx. 24.*

The first pastor of this church was the Rev. George Dubois, who was succeeded by the Rev. Joseph Wilson, present minister.

The Methodist society of Tarrytown was first organized by the Rev. Mr. Witsell of Haverstraw, A. D. 1831. The present church was erected in 1840. Since that period it has been attached to the Bedford circuit.

The Asbury Methodist Episcopal church in this village was erected A. D. 1837.

There is also a Baptist church, of which the Rev. Charles Underhill is the present pastor.

Mr. Christopher Collins, the first projector of the Erie canal in 1805-6, was for several years a resident of this place, and lies interred in the grave yard at Sleepy Hollow.

Tarrytown is far famed as the place where Major André, adjutant general of the British army, was captured by Paulding and his associates upon the 23d of September, 1780. The circumstances which led to the arrest of the spy were as follows:

Major John André had been long negotiating with the American general, Arnold, to put the British general, Clinton, in possession of West Point. “This post, says Major General Greene, (who, it must be remembered, was president of the court that tried André,) is a beautiful little place lying on the west bank of the Hudson, a little below where it breaks through the chain of mountains called the highlands. Its form is nearly circular, in half of its circumference defended by a precipice of great height, rising abruptly from the river, and on the other by a chain of rugged, inaccessible mountains. It is accessible by one pass only from the river, and that is narrow and easily defended, while on the land side it can be approached only at two points by roads that wind through the mountains and enter it at the river bank

on the north and south. Great importance had always been attached to this post by the Americans, and great labor and expense bestowed upon fortifying it. It has been well called the Gibraltar of America. The North river had long been the great vein that supplied life to the American army, and had the enemy obtained possession of this post, besides the actual loss in men and stores, the American army would have been cut off from their principal resources in the ensuing winter, or been obliged to fall back above the Highlands, and leave all the country below open to conquest, while the communication between the eastern and western states would have been seriously interrupted if not wholly excluded. Arnold therefore well knew the bearing of this post upon all the operations of the American army, and afterwards avowed his confident expectation, that had the enemy got possession of it, the contest must have ceased, and America been subdued.

The British general, Clinton, also appears to have appreciated the value of this post, and it is probable that the purchase of it had been arranged with Arnold some months prior to the detection of the plot. It was when Washington marched to Kingsbridge, with a view to the attempt on New York, and when he had mustered under him every man who could carry a musket, that he placed Arnold in command of a corps of invalids at West Point.

The commander-in-chief had offered him a command suitable to his rank and reputation in the army, but he made the unhealed state of his wounds, and some other causes, the pretext for declining it, as the negotiations for the surrender of West Point had already commenced. Soon after the relinquishment of the enterprise against New York, a meeting was concerted to take place between the American commander-in-chief and the French military and naval commanders. Hartford, on the Connecticut river was the place assigned for their meeting; the object was to consult on their future joint operations. Upon the departure of Washington for this meeting Greene was placed in command of the main army. This was on the 17th of September, 1780. On the eighteenth Admiral Rodney arrived in New York with such an overwhelming reinforcement to the British navy as must have

set the consultations at Hartford all at nought. From that time Greene's communications to the president of congress are full of the hurried preparations going on at New York for some important enterprize ; little did he, or any other person suspect to what point that enterprize was directed.

It appears that General Greene had established a regular communication for obtaining intelligence from the city by spies ; and his correspondents in that place were at a loss whether the expedition was intended for Rhode Island or Virginia. To one or other of these places the enemy had been careful to throw out hints, or exhibit appearances, that the expedition was directed.

Yet Greene was not deceived, for in a letter of the 21st (just two days before the discovery of the plot) to General Washington he writes, " Colonel \_\_\_\_\_ communicated the last intelligence we have from New York ; since that I have not been able to obtain the least information of what is going on there. Though we have people in from three different quarters, none of them returning, makes me suspect some *secret* expedition is in contemplation, the success of which depends altogether upon its being kept a secret.

The British commander had now become sensible that no time was to be lost, as most probably, on the return of Washington from Hartford, he would assume the command in person at West Point, or confide it to Greene. The present, therefore, was the most favorable time that would ever present itself."<sup>a</sup>

" André was accordingly dispatched in the Vulture sloop of war, to hold a personal conference with General Arnold. The Vulture ascended the Hudson river on the 20th, as far as Teller's Point, and came to anchor at the mouth of the Haverstraw bay. Here Andre eagerly awaited some opportunity to acquaint Arnold with his arrival. An occasion for so doing presented itself the next day. A white flag was displayed at Teller's Point, by some of the country people, which being interpreted as they wished, the captain of the Vulture sent off a boat with a flag, which was fired upon as soon as it approached the shore. This gave Andre the opportunity he desired, as it was a proper sub-

---

<sup>a</sup> See Barnum's Spy Unmasked.

ject for a remonstrance to the commanding officer, and a flag with a letter was accordingly dispatched. The letter was dated on the 21st Sept.; it was in the handwriting of André, signed by the captain of the vessel, and countersigned "John Anderson." (André's assumed name.) This flag was sent to Verplanck's Point. Arnold arrived just as the boat returned to the Vulture. The letter was handed to him and of course fully understood; thereupon, he hastened to prepare Smith for a visit to the enemy's vessel on the approaching night. Crossing from Verplanck's to Stony point, he made all the requisite arrangements respecting the boat that Smith would want, and then proceeded to his quarters to remove the difficulty which had occurred respecting boatmen. The guard boats had received orders not to stop Smith, and he also possessed the countersign for the next night, which was the word "Congress." In the morning Smith brought his tenant, Samuel Colquhoun to a conference with Arnold, who requested him to accompany his landlord on a visit that night to the Vulture." The man at first refused, but at last consented to go with his brother, Joseph Colquhoun and Smith. They were directed by Arnold to muffle the oars, and thus prepared, about midnight, the boat arrived at the Vulture. The noise made by the officer on watch, and the sailors in their hailing the boat, was heard below, and a boy sent up with orders that the man should be shown into the cabin, supposing him to be Arnold. Smith descended, and found his old acquaintance Beverly Robinson. A letter from Arnold was presented to the Colonel, in which he said, "This will be delivered to you by Mr. Smith, who will conduct you to a place of safety. Neither Mr. Smith nor any other person shall be made acquainted with your proposals, if they (which I doubt not) are of such a nature, that I can officially take notice of them, I shall do it with pleasure. I take it for granted, Colonel Robinson will not propose anything that is not for the interest of the United States, as well as of himself. "Smith had likewise two papers signed by Arnold, which he showed to Robinson; one, a permission to pass and repass with a boat to Dobb's Ferry, the other a permission to Joshua Smith, Mr. John Anderson and two servants, to pass and repass the guards near King's ferry at all times." By these papers,

Colonel Robinson understood that Arnold expected André to come on shore. Smith was left with the captain of the vessel for about a quarter of an hour, when Robinson returned with a person whom he introduced as Mr. Anderson. He excused himself from going ashore, but *this person* would go in his stead, and was competent to the transaction of the business. André, although in his uniform, was so completely enveloped in a blue great coat, that Smith (if we believe his assertions) did not suspect his real name or character.

Smith and André descended into the boat, where the Colquhouns awaited them. They were landed at the foot of a mountain called the Long Clove, on the western margin of the river, about six miles below Stony point. The Vulture lay between the place and Teller's Point. Here Arnold was in attendance on horseback, with another horse brought by a servant of Smith's. It was perfectly dark, and Smith knowing the spot designated by Arnold, groped his way up the bank, and found the commander of West Point concealed among the trees and bushes.<sup>a</sup>

Smith was sent back for his companion, and having introduced him, was requested to retire to the boat, where he remained ill at ease and watchful, while the Colquhouns conscience-free, slept soundly through the remainder of the night. The conference appeared unnecessarily long to Mr. Smith, and he retraced his way to give notice of the approach of morning, and the necessity of departing before daylight appeared.

The conspirators had exhausted the night and their business was not yet completed. It was agreed that the boat should be dismissed, and sent up the river. André consented to mount a led horse brought to the Clove with Arnold, and to accompany him to Smith's house, there to remain through the day, and return to the sloop of war next night. It was still dark, and, as André asserts, the voice of the sentinel demanding the countersign, was the first indication to the adjutant-general that he was within the American lines. About the break of day, the conspirators arrived at Smith's house. He had proceeded with the boat to Crown

---

<sup>a</sup> Smith's words are, "hid among the firs."

Island in Haverstraw creek, and dismissing the Colquhouns joined Arnold. To the alarm of the group, a cannonade was very soon heard, and from the window, André beheld that the Vulture was in peril from the guns, and saw her obliged to weigh anchor and stand down the river. In an upper apartment in Smith's house, the spy and the traitor viewed this unexpected incident, and Sir Henry Clinton's adjutant general, no doubt, felt for a time, that the net prepared for others, was closing around him. It is to be supposed, that the commander of West Point reassured him, and after breakfast, Smith left him to finish "the plot of treachery" between them; it was understood that Arnold was to receive a stipulated sum. The day fixed upon, André was to return to New York, and the British troops (already embarked under the pretence of an expedition to the Chesapeake,) were to be ready to ascend the river. Arnold was to weaken the post of West Point by such a disposition of the garrison, as would yield it an easy prey to the troops brought against it.

Every preliminary was settled, and the spy furnished with all the papers explanatory of the condition of the post, and the manner in which its force was to be rendered unavailable, and its garrison betrayed to death or captivity. André required to be put in safety on board the Vulture; to this Arnold assented, and although a different route was proposed, yet André supposed he was to be sent on board the attending sloop of war. Before Arnold left Smith's house, he urged him to go with André on board the Vulture as soon as it was dark; but, as if to provide for obstacles, he sent two passes for Smith; the one a permission to go "with a boat, three hands and a flag to Dobb's Ferry, on public business, and return immediately;" the other, to pass the guards to the White Plains, and return. To this was added a third, as follows: "Head Quarters, Robinson's house, Sept. 22d, 1780. Permit Mr. John Anderson to pass the guards to the White Plains, or below, if he chooses; he being on public business, by my direction.—B. Arnold, M. Gen." A miserable day was passed by the spy in solitude, and when evening came, Smith positively refused to go again on board the Vulture, neither had he engaged any person to row the boat. The reason he gave was an attack of the ague, but this did not prevent him,

as will be seen, from accompanying André on horse-back in his nocturnal journey, or from crossing the river with him. Thus André was compelled to take the route Smith chose, which was to cross the river, and proceed in the direction of White Plains. The uniform coat of the adjutant general was left at Smith's house, and with a coat of Smith's, covered by the dark great-coat, with "a wide cape and buttoned close to his neck," André was equipped for the journey. Accordingly in the morning, he and Smith proceeded to King's Ferry.

On the way, Smith endeavored to draw his companion into conversation, but without success. He was reserved and thoughtful. On the contrary, Smith accosted several of his acquaintances on the road, and even stopped at a sutler's tent, and joined in discussing a bowl of punch, while André walked his horse slowly to the ferry alone, and there waited Smith's arrival.

As they passed through the works at Verplanck's Point, Smith rode up to Colonel Livingston's tent, while André, and a servant who attended him, (a negro of Smith's,) rode on. To the Colonel's inquiries, Smith said he was going up the country, and took charge of letters for General Arnold and Governor Clinton. He excused himself from stopping, as a gentleman waited for him whose business was urgent. He then overtook his charge, and they proceeded until between eight and nine at night, "when they were hailed by the sentinel of a patrolling party. This was near Crompond, and about eight miles from Verplanck's Point. The sentinel ordered them to stop, and Smith dismounted, gave the bridle of his horse to his servant, walked forward, and inquired who commanded the party. He was answered, 'Captain Boyd,' who, overhearing the conversation, immediately appeared. The captain was unusually inquisitive, and demanded of him who he was, where he belonged, and what was his business. Smith answered these questions promptly, adding that he had a pass from General Arnold, and desired not to be detained. The captain was not yet satisfied, but inquired how far he meant to go that night; to which he replied, as far as Major Strang's or Colonel Drake's; but this only increased the embarrassment, for the captain informed him that Major Strang was not at home, and Colonel Drake had removed to another part of the country.

Captain Boyd then said that he must see the passport, and, it being dark, they went to a house at a small distance to procure a light. André began to be a little alarmed, and advanced with reluctance towards the house, till he was encouraged by Smith, who assured him that Arnold's pass would certainly protect them.

And so it proved; for the pass was expressed in positive terms, and there was no room to doubt its genuineness or its authority.

The Captain was afterwards more bland in his manner, but the ardor of his curiosity was not diminished. He took Smith aside, and begged to be informed of this important business which carried him down so near the enemy's lines, and induced him and his companion to travel so dangerous a road in the night. As an apology for this inquiry he manifested a good deal of concern for their safety, telling him that the cow-boys had recently been out, and were believed then to be far up the country, and he advised him by all means not to proceed till morning. Smith prevaricated as well as he could, saying to Captain Boyd, that he and his fellow-traveller, whom he called Mr. Anderson, were employed by General Arnold to procure intelligence, that they expected to meet a person near White Plains for that purpose, and that it was necessary for them to go forward as expeditiously as possible.

Upon this statement Captain Boyd seemed more anxious than ever, magnified the perils to which they would be exposed by travelling in the night, and recommended anew that they should turn back to one Andreas Miller's, who lived but a little way off, and at whose house they might lodge. Smith's courage was somewhat damped by these representations, and he went and told the tale to André, counselled with him as to the steps they ought to take. It is probable, also, that he had fears of exciting suspicion, if he hesitated in resisting the Captain's zeal, expressed so earnestly in their behalf. André, as it may well be imagined, not being very easy in his present situation, was for going on at all events. When Smith found his fears unheeded and his eloquence unavailing, he called in the aid of Captain Boyd, and inquired of him which was the safest road to White Plains. Boyd considered both roads perilous, but believed the one through North Castle the least so, for the lower party, or cow-boys, infest-



ed the Tarrytown road, and had lately done mischief in that quarter. He used various arguments to dissuade them from going farther that night, to which Smith listened with open ears, and he resolved against the will of André, to trespass on the hospitality of Andreas Miller.

They met with a welcome reception, but coming at a late hour to an humble dwelling, their accommodations were narrow, and the two travellers were obliged to sleep in the same bed.

According to Smith's account, it was a weary and restless night to his companion. The burden on his thoughts was not of a kind to lull them to repose; and the place of his retreat so near the watchful Captain Boyd and his guard, was hardly such as would impress upon him a conviction of perfect security.

At the first dawn of light he roused himself from his troubled slumber, wakened the servant, and ordered the horses to be prepared for an early departure.

Having solicited their host in vain to receive a compensation for the civilities he had rendered, they mounted and took the road leading to Pine's bridge,"<sup>a</sup> which crosses the Croton River on the way to North Castle. "The countenance of André brightened when he was fairly beyond the reach of the patrolling party, and, as he thought, he left behind him the principal difficulties in his route. His cheerfulness revived, and he conversed, in the most animated and agreeable strain, upon a great variety of topics. Smith professes to have been astonished at the sudden and extraordinary change which appeared in him, from a gloomy taciturnity to an exuberant flow of spirits, pleasantry, and gay discourse. He talked upon poetry, the arts, and literature; lamented the war, and hoped for a speedy peace."<sup>b</sup> As they passed Major Strang's house, two miles below Yorktown church, they were observed by its inmates, who supposed them to be Continental officers. "In this manner they passed along, without being accosted by any person, till they came within two miles and a half of Pine's Bridge. At this place Smith had determined to end his journey in the direction of White Plains. The Cowboys, whom he seemed anxious to avoid, had recently been above

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' *Life of Arnold*, 214, 215, 216, 217.

<sup>b</sup> *Ibid* 217.

the bridge, and the territory below was considered their appropriate domain. The travellers partook of a frugal breakfast together at the house of a good Dutch woman, who had been plundered by three marauders, but who was yet enabled to set before them a repast of hasty pudding and milk.<sup>a</sup> This being dispatched, Smith divided his small stock of paper money with André, took a final leave, and, with his servant, hastened back to Peekskill, and the same evening to Fishkill, where he had left his family four days before, at the house of his brother-in-law. On his way, he took the road leading to Robinson's house, where he called on General Arnold, and dined. He gave an account of André's progress, and mentioned the place where he left him, with which Arnold appeared well pleased. It is to be understood, however, that Smith had not, at this time, as he always affirmed, any knowledge of André's true character, and that he supposed his name to be John Anderson.

The *Cow-boys* were a set of people, mostly, if not wholly, refugees, belonging to the British side, and engaged in plundering cattle near the lines, and driving them to New York. The name indicates their vocation. There was another description of banditti, called *Skimmers*, who lived, for the most part, within the American lines, and professed attachment to the American cause; but, in reality, they were more unprincipled, perfidious and inhuman than the Cow-boys themselves; for these latter exhibited some symptoms of fellow feeling for their friends,—whereas, the Skimmers committed their depredations equally upon friends and foes.

By a law of the State of New York, every person refusing to take an oath of fidelity to the state was considered as forfeiting his property. The large territory between the American and British lines, extending nearly thirty miles from north to south, and embracing Westchester county, was populous and highly cultivated. A person living within that space, who took the oath of fidelity, was sure to be plundered by the Cow-boys; and if he did not take it, the Skimmers would come down upon him, call

---

<sup>a</sup> This was not a Dutch woman, as the historian supposes, but Mrs. Sarah Underhill, wife of Isaac Underhill, of Yorktown, whose grandson, Edward Borough Underhill, still owns the house.—EDITOR.

him a tory, and seize his property as confiscated by the state. Thus the execution of the laws was assumed by robbers, and the innocent and guilty were involved in a common ruin.

It is true the civil authority endeavored to guard against these outrages, so far as it could, by legislative enactments and executive proclamations; but, from the nature of the case, this formidable conspiracy against the rights and claims of humanity could be crushed only by a military arm. The detachments of Continental troops and militia, stationed near the lines, did something to lessen the evil, yet they were not adequate to its suppression, and frequently this force was so feeble as not to afford any barrier to the inroads of the banditti.

The Skinners and Cow-boys often leagued together. The former would sell their plunder to the latter, taking in exchange contraband articles brought from New York. It was not uncommon for the farce of a skirmish to be acted near the American lines, in which the Skinners never failed to come off victorious; and then they would go boldly to the interior with their booty, pretending it had been captured from the enemy while attempting to smuggle it across the lines.

Such was the social condition of that part of the county through which André was now to pass alone, for nearly thirty miles, before he could be perfectly secure from danger; for, although every step diminished the chances of untoward accidents, yet there was no absolute safety till he was beyond the limits of this ill-fated neutral ground."<sup>a</sup>

"But André had the American general's pass to produce to the one, and his true character to protect him from the other. Still he could not but feel that his situation was one of peril. The remarks he had heard from the captain of the patrol on the preceding night, seems to have induced the adjutant-general to take the Tarrytown road, as the one most frequented by the Cow-boys; for it was understood by Smith that he would proceed toward White Plains. Upon what apparently chance circumstances the fate of individuals, and armies, and states, appears to depend! Had this bearer of ruin to thousands proceeded on the road at first

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, 218, 19, 20, 21.

intended, he probably would have accomplished the treason in safety to himself; but a few words uttered at random by the American officer, to Smith, respecting the danger of the road nearest the Hudson, determined the spy to turn that way, as most frequented by his friends,—and by that heaven-directed turn, impending ruin was averted, and the lives of thousands saved." From Pine's Bridge, the adjutant-general of the British army followed the Crum Pond road, which passed the house of Mr. Staats Hammond. The son of this gentleman, David Hammond, of North Castle, is still living, (1847,) at an advanced age. He relates, that on the day Andrié was taken, he was standing at the door of his father's residence, upon the Crum Pond road, when he observed a person approaching on horseback, leisurely walking his horse. As he rode up, he observed the stranger to be closely enveloped in a light blue swan's down cloak, with high military boots, and a low crowned and broad brimmed hat on his head. The animal he bestrode was a beautiful bay, bitted with a handsome double snaffle bridle; the mane, particularly about the head, being thickly matted with burs. The stranger immediately asked for a drink of water. It deserves to be noticed, in connection with this incident, that Mr. Hammond's father, who was laying, at the time, badly wounded on the floor, caught a glimpse of the stranger, whom he pronounced to be a spy, from the fact of his being enveloped in the manner described.

David Hammond, having procured a drinking vessel, accompanied by his sister, led the way to the adjoining well. Here the girl drew the water, which was offered to the stranger, who requested David to hold the bridle whilst he drank. After satisfying his thirst, he turned toward Mrs. Hammond, and asked the distance to Tarrytown; she replied, "Four miles." "I did not think it was so far," said he.

At Chappaqua, in the vicinity of Underhill's tavern, the spy encountered several Quakers. From them he again inquired the road, at the same time asking whether any troops were out below, &c.

At the foot of the Chappaqua roads the adjutant general selected that which leads to the river. Following this, he came out in the Albany post road, near the village of Sparta. He had now

securely passed about eleven miles of the neutral ground, and approached within a few hundred yards of the Hudson without interruption, and probably felt himself beyond the reach of detection.

A little north of Tarrytown, the road crosses a small brook, (now called the André brook.) A few rods from this spot a period was put to the journey of the spy and the progress of the treason.

On this fated morning some of the inhabitants of Westchester had by agreement taken their arms, and proceeded to the neighborhood of this brook and bridge, to prevent cattle from being driven down towards New York, and to seize as a loyal prize any such cows or oxen as might be destined for his majesty's troops by their friends. This patriotic band of seven had volunteered of their own account to go upon this expedition the day previous, Sept. 22, 1780. John Yerks, (still living in the town of Mount Pleasant aged eighty-eight,) says that he proposed this excursion to John Paulding, both of them being at that time stationed in North Salem. The latter at first objected, but upon further consideration volunteered his services, provided they could induce a sufficient number to accompany them. This Yerks assured him could be easily accomplished and offered to procure the men; while Paulding should obtain the necessary permit from the commanding officer. Yerks had in the meantime enlisted three volunteers, viz. Isaac See, James Romer and Abraham Williams. Paulding soon after returned with the permit, accompanied by his friend Isaac Van Wart. The party now consisting of six, took the direct road for Cross river. Here they were joined by David Williams from Bedford. From Cross river they proceeded to Pleasantville, formerly Clark's Corner, where they halted for the night. From a lady by the name of Mrs. Powell, (who had recently arrived at this place from Morrisania,) the volunteers ascertained that the British horse from Long Island, New Jersey and New York, had advanced from the Island into the neighborhood of Boar hill, Yonkers.

Whilst André slept at Crumpond, our volunteers turned into a hay barrack, (then standing a few yards from the present Methodist Church,) at Pleasantville.

Up by times on the next morning, the party followed the windings of the Saw Mill valley to the house of Capt. Jacob

Rormer, where they obtained breakfast and a basket well provided for their dinner. From this place they marched to the hill immediately above Tarrytown. Here it was agreed that three of the number, viz. Paulding, Van Wart and David Williams should go below, whilst the remaining four should watch the road above, with the full understanding, (according to Yerks,) that whatever might be taken should be equally divided among the whole band.

The upper party were stationed two hundred yards east on the hill above the lower party, the latter being concealed in the bushes near the post-road.

At Smith's trial, (which was by a court martial, and commenced the day after André's examination, Paulding and Williams gave the following testimony. Paulding said, "myself, Isaac van Wart and David Williams, were lying by the side of the road about half a mile above Tarrytown, and about fifteen miles above Kingsbridge, on Saturday morning between nine and ten o'clock, on the 23d of September. We had lain there about one hour and a half, as near as I can recollect, and saw several persons we were acquainted with, whom we let pass. Presently one of the young men who were with me said, 'There comes a gentleman-like looking man who appears to be well dressed and has boots on, and whom you had better step out and stop, if you don't know him. (The party must have observed André rising the hill out of Sleepy Hollow; when first observed, he was walking his horse.) On that, I got up and presented my firelock at the breast of the person and told him to stand, and then I asked him which way he was going? 'Gentlemen,' said he, 'I hope you belong to our party.' I asked him what party. He said 'the lower party.' Upon that, I told him I did. Then he said 'I am a British officer out of the country on particular business, and I hope you will not detain me a minute;' and to show that he was a British officer he pulled out his watch, upon which I told him to dismount. He then said, 'My God! I must do any thing to get along,' and seemed to make a kind of laugh of it, and pulled out General Arnold's pass, which was to John Anderson to pass all the guards to Whiteplains and below; upon that he dismounted. Said he, 'Gentlemen, you had best let

me go, or you will bring yourselves into trouble, for your stopping me will detain the General's business, and said he was going to Dobb's Ferry to meet a person there, and get intelligence for General Arnold.'

"Upon that I told him I hoped he would not be offended, that we did not mean to take any thing from him. And I told him there were many bad people who were going along the road, and I did not know but perhaps he might be one." Mr. Paulding said further that he asked the unknown gentleman his name and he answered "John Anderson." That on seeing General Arnold's pass he should have let him go, if he had not previously said he was a British officer; (there was yet another circumstance which tended greatly to increase their suspicions, viz. that his pass was for White Plains and not the Tarrytown road;) and that when he pulled out his watch, he understood it as a confirmation of that assertion, and not as offering it to him.

Mr. Williams confirmed the above statement with these particulars. "We took him into the bushes, and ordered him to pull off his clothes, which he did; but on searching him narrowly we could not find any sort of writings. We told him to pull off his boots, which he seemed indifferent about, but we got one boot off, and searched in that boot and could find nothing. But we found there were some papers in the bottom of his stocking next to his foot, on which we made him pull his stocking off, and found three papers wrapped up. Mr. Paulding looked at the contents, and said he was a spy. We then made him pull off his other boot, and there we found three more papers at the bottom of his foot within his stocking."

The following letters and documents were found in the stockings of Major André.

#### THE ANDRE PAPERS.

From the originals in the possession of Colonel Beekman,<sup>a</sup> of Flatbush, Long Island.

---

<sup>a</sup> Col. Beeckman is the grandson and lineal descendant of Governor George Clinton.

## No. 1.—PASS.

[Endorsed,]

Pass from General Arnold, dated September 20, 1780, to Joshua Smith and Mr. John Anderson, to pass the guards at King's Ferry.

*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,  
September 20, 1780.*

Permission is given to Joshua Smith, Esquire, a gentleman, Mr. John Anderson, who is with him, and his two servants, to pass and re-pass the guards near King's Ferry at all times.

(Signed,)

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

## No. 2.

[Endorsed,]

SEPT. 22, 1780.

Pass to Joshua Smith to pass to White Plains.

*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,  
September, 22d, 1780.*

Joshua Smith, Esq. has permission to pass the Guards to the White Plains, and to return, being on public business, by my direction.

(Signed,)

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

## No. 3.

[Letter endorsed to]

“Thomas Smith, Esq. Havershaw.”

*Robinson's House, Sept. 25th, 1780.*

DEAR BROTHER :—I am here a prisoner, and am therefore unable to attend in person. I would be obliged to you if you would deliver to Captain Cairns, of Lee's Dragoons, a British Uniform Coat, which you will find in one of the drawers in the room above stairs. I would be happy to see you. Remember me to your family.

I am, affectionately, yours,

(Signed,)

JOSHUA H. SMITH.

Thomas Smith, Esq.

## No. 4.

[Endorsed,]

*Memo.*

Hennirut, [a word not intelligible.]

Elijah Hunter.

Mr. I. Johnson, B. R—r.

Mr. J. Stewart, to the care of Joshua Smith, Esq. to be left at Head Q's.

Isaac Adams, 5 ,, 5 ,, 5.



## No. 5.

[Endorsed,]

Gen'l Arnold's permission to Joshua Smith.

21 Sep. 1780.

to Dobb's Ferry,

&amp;c. &amp;c.

*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,**Sept. 21, 1780.*

Permission is granted to Joshua Smith, Esq. to go to Dobb's Ferry with three Men and a Boy in a Boat with a Flag to carry some Letters of a private Nature for Gentlemen in New York and to Return immediately.

(Signed,)

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

N. B.—He has permission to go at such hours and times as the tide and his business suites.

B. A.

## No. 6.

[Endorsed,]

Sep. 22, 1780.

Pass to Joshua Smith to pass to Dobb's Ferry.

*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,**Sept. 22, 1780.*

Joshua Smith, Esq. has permission to pass with a Boat and three hands and a flag to Dobb's Ferry on Public business and to return immediately.

(Signed,)

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

## No. 7.

[Endorsed,]

Arnold to John Anderson—Pass.

22d Sept. 1780.

*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,**Sept. 22, 1780.*

Permit Mr. John Anderson to pass the Guards to the White Plains, or below, if He Chuses, He being on Public Business by my Direction.

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

## No. 8.

[In Arnold's hand-writing.]

[ Gustavus to John Anderson." ]

“ The following document is one of the highest importance to the British, inasmuch as “ *in case of alarm,*” it made the British—who would have caused the alarm—fully acquainted with the

disposition of all the American forces in that vicinity, and thus enable them to conduct an attack to the best advantage. It is of course in the traitor's own hand-writing:—

## No. 9.

[Endorsed,]

Artillery Orders, Sept. 5th, 1780.

*W'st Point, Sept. 5th, 1780.**Artillery Orders.*

The following disposition of the corps is to take place in Case of an alarm.

Capt. Dannills with his Comp'y at Fort Putnam, and to Detach an Officer with 12 men to Wyllys's Redoubt, a non Commissioned Officer, with 3 men to Webb's Redoubt, and the like number to Redoubt No. 4.

Capt. Thomas and Company to repair to Fort Arnold.

Capt. Simmons and Company to remain at the North and South Redoubts, at the East side of the River, until further orders.

Lieut. Barber, with 20 men of Capt. Jackson's Company will repair to Constitution Island; the remainder of the Company with Lieut. Mason's will repair to Arnold.

Capt. Lieut. George and Lieut. Blake with 20 men of Capt. Treadwell's Company, will Repair to Redoubt No. 1 and 2, the remainder of the Company will be sent to Fort Arnold.

Late Jones's Company with Lieut Fisk to repair to the South Battery.

The Chain Battery Sherburn's Redoubt, and the Brass Field pieces will be manned from Fort Arnold as Occation may require.

The Commissary and Conductor of Military stores will in turn wait upon the Commanding Officer of Artillery for Orders.

The Artificers in the Garrison, (agreeable to former Orders,) will repair to Fort Arnold, and their receive further Orders from the Command'g Officer of Artillery, J. Bauman Major Comm't Artillery.

## No. 10.

[In the Traitor's own hand.]

[Endorsed,]

Estimate of the Forces at West Point, and its dependencies,  
Sept. 1780.

Estimate of the Forces at W'st Point and its dependencies, Sep. 13th, 1780.	
A Brigade of Massachusetts Militia and two Regiments of Rank and file New Hampshire Inclusion of 166 Batteaux Men at Verplanks and Stoney Points,	992
On command and Extra Service at Fish Kills, New Windsor, &c.	
&c., who may be called in occationally,	852

COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER.

219

3 Regiments of Connecticut Militia under the Com'd of Colonel Wells on the lines near N. Castle,		488
A Detachment of N. York Levies on the lines,		115
		<hr/>
	Militia	2447
Colonel Lamb's Regiment	167	
Colonel Livingston at Verplank and Stoney Pts	80	
	<hr/>	
	Continent :	247
Colonel Sheldon's Dragoons on the lines about one half mounted		142
Batteaux Men and Artificers		250
		<hr/>
	Total	3086

No. 11.

[In Arnold's hand.]

[Endorsed,]

Estimate of Men to Man the Works at Wst Point, &c.  
Sep'r 1780.

Estimate of the Number of Men necessary to Man the Works at West Point  
and in the Vicinity.

Fort Arnold		620
— Putnam		450
— Wyllys		140
— Webb		140
Redoubt No. 1		150
ditto 2		150
ditto 3		120
ditto 4		100
ditto 5		139
ditto 6		110
ditto 7		78
North Redoubt		120
South Redoubt		130
		<hr/>
	Total	2438

Villepance, Engineer.

N. B. The Artillery Men are not Included in the above Estimate.

RETURN OF ORDNANCE IN THE DIFFERENT FORTS, BATTERIES, &c. AT WEST POINT AND ITS DEPENDENCIES, SEPT. 5th, 1780.

Fort	Metal.	Garrison Carriages.										Mortars.		Total.	N. B. The following Ordnance not distributed: No. 6 Iron 12 Poundr. 4 do 6 do do 1 do 4 do do 2 do 3 do do 14			
		Garrison Carriages.	Garrison Carriages Travelling do.	Garrison Carriages Stocked ditto	Garrison Carriages Stocked ditto.	Garrison Carriages Travelling ditto.	Garrison Carriages Travelling ditto	Inches.	Inches.	Inches.	Howitz.							
Galtres.	Brass	24	18	12	9	6	4	3	0	5	1	2	5	11	2	1	100	
Fort Arnold.	Brass	1	6	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	14	3 Brass 21 Pounders.
Fort Putnam.	Iron	5	2	2	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	10	7 do 12 do
Constitution Island.	Iron	4	4	4	1	5	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	11	1 do 8 Inch Howitz.
South Battery.	Iron	1	1	2	2	2	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	4	
Chain Battery.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	5	
1. Auburn Battery.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	6	
Webb's Redoubt.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	5	
Sherman's Redoubt.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	5	
Merr's Redoubt.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	5	
South Redoubt.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	5	
North Redoubt.	Iron	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	3	5	
Wyllis's Redoubt.	Iron	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	2	5	
Rocky Hill, No. 4.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	2	
No. 1.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	2	
No. 2.	Iron	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	2	
Verplank's and Stony Point.	Brass	1	1	2	2	2	1	1	2	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	6	
Total.	Iron	118	314	51	91	14	52	1	3	6	5	11	2	1	1	100		

(Signed)

S. BAUMAN, Major Comdt of Artillery.

“The virulence and malice of Arnold’s treachery are no where more manifest and detestable than in the following document. See how the archfiend exposes the weaknesses of the forts—the ease with which they could be set on fire—the facilities of approach—the commanding heights and rising grounds, &c. The whole too, an exposé intended expressly for the British, and yet endorsed as if it had been a memorandum for his own private use and for General Washington.

## No. 12.

[In the traitor's own hand.]

[Endorsed,]

Remarks on Works at Wt. Point, a Copy to be transmitted to his Excell'y  
General Washington.

*Sepr. 1780.*

Fort Arnold is built of Dry Fascines and Wood is in a ruinous condition, incompleat, and subject to take Fire from Shells or Canasses.

Fort Putnam, stone, wanting great repairs, the wall on the East side broke down, and rebuilding From the Foundation at the west and South side have been a Chevaux de Frise on the Wst side broke in many Places. The East side open, two Boom Proofs and Provision Magazine in the Fort, and slight Wooden Barrack.—A commanding piece of ground 500 yards West between the Fort and No. 4—or Rocky Hill.—

Fort Webb Built of Fascines and Wood, a slight Work very dry and liable to be set on fire as the approaches are very easy, without defences save a slight abathus.

Fort Wyllys built of stone 5 feet high the Work above plank filled with Earth the stone work 15 feet the Earth 9 feet thick.—No Bomb Proofs, the Batteries without the Fort.

Redoubt No. 1. On the south side wood 9 feet thick, the Wt. North and East sides 4 feet thick, no cannon in the works, a slight and single Abettters, no ditch or Pickett. Cannon on two Batteries. No Bomb Proofs.

Redoubt No. 2. The same as No. 1. No Bomb Proofs.

Redoubt No. 3, a slight Wood Work 3 Feet thick very Dry no Bomb Proofs, a single Abatters, the work easily set on fire—no Cannon.

Redoubt No. 4 a Wooden work about 10 feet high and fore or five feet thick, the West side faced with a stone wall 8 feet high and four thick. No Bomb Proof, two six pounders, a slight Abatters, a Commanding piece of ground 500 yards Wt.

The North Redoubt on the East side built of stone 4 feet high, above the stone wood filled in with Earth, Very Dry, no ditch, a Bomb Proof, three Batteries without the Fort, a poor Abatters, a Rising piece of ground 500 yards. So, the approaches Under Cover to within 20 yards.—The Work easily fired with Faggots diptd in Pitch &c.

South Redoubt much the same as the North a Commanding piece of ground 500 yards due East—3 Batteries without the Fort.

---

“The following document explains itself:—

## No. 13.

[In Arnold's hand-writing.]

[Endorsed,]

Copy of a Council of War, held Sept. 6th, 1780.

At a Council of War, held in Camp Bergen County Sept. 6th, 1840.

Present—the Commander-in-Chief.

The Commander-in-Chief states to the Council, that since he had the honor of laying before the General Officers, at Morristown, the 6th of June last, a general view of our circumstances, several important events have occurred, which have materially changed the prospects of the Campaign.

That the success expected from France, instead of coming out in one body, and producing a Naval Superiority in these Seas, has been divided into two Divisions, the first of which only consisting of seven ships of the line, one forty-four and three smaller Frigates, with five thousand land Forces, had arrived at Rhode Island.

That a Reinforcement of six ships of the line from England having reinforced the Enemy, had made their Naval Force in these seas amount to Nine Sail of the Line, Two Fifties two forty-fours, and a number of smaller Frigates, a Force completely superior to that of our Allies, and which has in consequence held them Blocked up in the harbor of Rhode Island till the 29th ult., at which Period the British Fleet disappeared, and no advice of them has since been received.

That Accounts received by the Alliance Frigate, which left France in July, announces the Second Division to be Confined in Brest with several other Ships by a British Fleet of thirty-two Sail of the line, and a Fleet of the Allies of Thirty-six, or thirty-eight Ships of the line ready to put to sea from Cadiz to relieve the Port of Brest.

That most of the States in their answers to the requisitions made of them, give the strongest assurances of doing every thing in their power to furnish the men and supplies required for the expected Co-operation. The effect of which, however, has been far short of our expectations, for not much above one-third of the Levies demanded for the Continental Battalions, nor above the Same proportion of Militia have been assembled, and the Supplies have been so inadequate that there was a necessity for dismissing all the Militia, whose immediate services could be dispensed with to lessen our Consumption, notwithstanding which the Troops now in the Field are severely suffering for want of Provision.

That the army at this Post and in the vicinity in operating Force consists of 10,400 Continental Troops and about 400 Militia, besides which is a Regiment of Continental Troops of about 500 at Rhode Island left there for the assistance of our Allies, against any attempt of the Enemy that way, and two Connecticut State Regiments amounting to 800 at North Castle.

That the Times of Service for which the Levies are Engaged will expire the first of January which, if not replaced, allowing for the usual Casualties, will reduce the Continental Army to less than 6000 men.

That since the state to the Council above Referred to, the Enemy have brought a detachment of about 3000 men from Charles Town to New York, which makes the present operating Force in this Quarter between Ten and Eleven Thousand men.

That the Enemies Force now in the Southern States has not been lately ascertained by any distinct accounts, but the general supposes it cannot be less than 7,000 (of which about 2,000 are at Savannah) in this estimate the Diminution by the Casualties of the Climate, is supposed to be equal to the increase of Force derived from the Disaffected.

That added to the loss of Charles Town and its Garrison accounts of a recent misfortune are just arrived from Major *General Gates*, giving advice of a general action which happened on the 16th of August near Campden, in which the army under his Command met with a total defeat, and in all probability the whole of the Continental Troops, and a Considerable part of the Militia would be cut off.

That the State of Virginia has been sometime exerting itself to raise a Body of 3000 Troops to serve till the end of December, 1781, but how far it has succeeded is not known.

That Maryland had Resolved to raise 2000 Men of which a sufficient number to compose one Battalion was to have come to this army. The remainder to recruit the Maryland line—but in consequence of the late advices, an order has been sent to march the whole Southward.

That the Enemies Force in Canada, Halifax, St. Augustine, and at Penobscot, remains much the same as stated in the preceding Council.

That there is still reason to believe the Court of France will prosecute its Original intention of giving effectual succor to this Country, as soon as circumstances will permit; and it is hoped the second Division will certainly arrive in the course of the fall.

That a Fleet greatly superior to that of the Enemy in the West Indies, and a formidable land Force had sailed sometime since from Martinique to make a Combined attack upon the Island of Jamaica, that there is a possibility of a reinforcement from this quarter also, to the Fleet of our Ally at Rhode Island.

The Commander-in-Chief having thus given the Council a full view of our present Situation and future prospects, requests the Opinion of each Member, in writing, what plan it will be advisable to pursue, to what objects Our Attention ought to be directed in the course of this fall and winter, taking into consideration the alternative of having or not having a Naval Superiority, whether any Offensive operations can be immediately undertaken and against what Point, what ought to be our immediate Preparations and dispositions, particularly whether we can afford or ought to send any Reinforcements from this Army to the Southern States, and to what amount the General Requests to be favored with these opinions by the 10th Instant at farthest.

“This concludes the famous “*André Papers.*” A more remarkable set of documents no man surely ever set foot on before.

The papers themselves look yellow, are much crumpled and worn, and bear evident marks of age."<sup>a</sup>

\* \* \* \* \*

" Upon this we made him dress himself and I asked him what he would give us to let him go. He said he would give us any sum of money. I asked him whither he would give us his horse, saddle, bridle, watch, and one hundred guineas. He said 'yes,' and told us he would direct them to any place, even if it was that very spot, so that we could get them. I asked him whither he would not give us more. He said he would give us any quantity of dry goods, or any sum of money, and bring it to any place that we might pitch upon, so that we might get it. Mr. Paulding answered, 'No, if you would give us two thousand guineas you should not stir one step.' I then asked the person who had called himself John Anderson, if he would not get away if it lay in his power. He answered, 'Yes, I would.' I told him, I did not intend he should. While taking him along, we asked him a few questions, and we stopped under a shade. He begged us not to ask him questions, and said when he came to any commander, he would reveal all. He was dressed in a blue overcoat and a tight body coat that was a kind of claret color, though a rather deeper red than claret. The button holes were laced with gold tinsel, and the buttons drawn over with the same kind of lace. He had on a round hat and nankeen waistcoat and breeches, with a flannel waistcoat and drawers, boots and thread stockings." According to John Yerks, the lower party were observed coming up the hill, Paulding<sup>b</sup> leading the horse, upon which Andre was mounted. As they halted, Paulding exclaimed, "we have got a prisoner," and immediately ordered Andre to dismount. He then asked him for his watch,

---

<sup>a</sup> New York Herald, 1842.

<sup>b</sup> Paulding had effected his escape only three days previous from the New York Sugar House, in the dress of a German yager. General Van Cortlandt states that Paulding wore this dress on the day of the capture, which tended to deceive Andre and led him to exclaim, in answer to their reply, "Thank God, I am once more among friends."



at the same time warning him not to make any attempt at escape, for if he did, he was a dead man. After a short interval, Paulding (who appears to have been the master spirit upon this occasion,) ordered him to remount. They then led him off in the direction of North Castle, the nearest military post, where Lieut. Col. Jameson was stationed with a detachment of Sheldon's dragoons. The roads being carefully avoided, the party went with all speed across the fields, each taking their turns at the bridle, some marching on either side, the remainder bringing up the rear. During their progress to North Castle, the prisoner never spoke unless some question was asked, and then said but little in reply. On their route the party stopped for a short time at Jacob Romers,<sup>a</sup> (in the vicinity of the present poor-house,) where the captors had taken breakfast that morning. Having forgot in their hurry the basket of provisions, Captain Romer was dispatched after it. During the absence of Romer, André was asked by the lady of the house, if he would take any thing to eat, his reply was truly descriptive of his bitter feelings, "No, I thank you, I have no appetite to take anything." Upon the arrival of the basket, the party again resumed their march, and within a short time arrived at Northcastle. Here they delivered up their prisoner to Jameson, with all the papers that had been taken from his stockings.<sup>b</sup> The prisoner was confined here in a small cottage, at present attached to the barn of Mr. Sands. Further details concerning the spy will be found in the respective towns.<sup>c</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Paulding, says Jacob Romer, came up in advance of the party and observed to me, "Be careful how you talk, I believe we have got an English officer."

<sup>b</sup> It is a curious fact mentioned by Sparks in his Biography of Arnold, that the last canto of André's humorous satire, called the "Cow-chase," was first printed on the very day of his capture. It will be found in Rivington's Royal Gazette for Sept. 23, 1780. It ends with the following stanza.

"And now I've closed my epic strain,  
I tremble as I show it,  
Lest this same warrior-drover, Wayne,  
Should ever catch the poet."

[Sparks' Biog. Arnold, 223.]

<sup>c</sup> See North Castle. S. Salem.

Upon the delivery of their prisoner, the seven patriots returned to their different quarters, little imagining the importance of their prize. A little more than a month afterwards, (General Washington having recommended the captors to Congress,) they received the following vote of thanks from that body.

In Congress, November 3, 1780.

Whereas Congress have received information that John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac van Wart, three young volunteer militia men of the State of New York, did, on the 23d day of September last, intercept Major John André, adjutant general of the British army, on his return from the American lines in the character of a spy, and notwithstanding the large bribes offered them for his release, nobly disdaining to sacrifice their country for the sake of gold, secured and conveyed him to the commanding officer of the district, whereby the dangerous and traitorous conspiracy of Benedict Arnold was brought to light, the insidious designs of the enemy baffled, and the United States rescued from impending danger :

Resolved, that Congress have a high sense of the virtuous and patriotic conduct of the said John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac van Wart. In testimony whereof, Ordered, that each of them receive annually out of the public treasury two hundred dollars in specie, or an equivalent in current money of these States, during life, and that the board of war procure for each of them a silver medal, on one side of which shall be a shield with this inscription "Fidelity," and on the other, the following motto "Vincit amor patriæ," and forward them to the commander-in-chief, who is requested to present the same, with a copy of this resolution, and the thanks of Congress for their fidelity and the eminent service they have rendered their country.

The State also gave each a farm.

The Westchester County Bank, at Peekskill, has commemorated this important event on its bills, by a beautiful vignette picture representing the arrest of the spy. He is in the act of supplicating his captors to let him escape, the discovered papers are in the hands of one of them, and the stern eyes of the others evince the determination to listen to no suggestions but those of patriotism. The form and features of André are admirably depicted, a miniature hangs in his bosom exquisitely finished. This was a likeness of Miss Honora to whom he was devotedly attached.<sup>a</sup> The picture had been painted by himself from the

---

<sup>a</sup> This lady died of consumption only a few months before André suffered at Tappan. She had married another gentlemen four years after her engagement to

living features of the object of his affections. In 1775, he was taken prisoner by General Montgomery, at St. Johns, Canada; a few months afterwards, in a letter to a friend, he observes, "I have been taken prisoner by the Americans, and stripped of every thing except the picture of Honora, which I concealed in my mouth. Preserving that, I think myself fortunate."<sup>a</sup> To this touching incident Anna Seward refers in her poem upon André.

"Shade of my love  
'Tis free! These lips shall resolute enclose  
The precious soother of my ceaseless woes."

The above vignette suggested the following stanzas.

"Before their country's foe they stand,  
Each with a stern and searching eye;  
Grasped with a firm and honest hand,  
The hostile records open lie;  
They read, and as each noble brow  
Wears the quiet shadow of resolve,  
The true and just exhibit now,  
The secret which they dared to solve.

Away with gold! It has no power  
To turn the true heart from its quest;  
The ordeal of this solemn hour  
Gives firmness to the patriot's breast;  
And as the tempter's art is tried,  
He finds each supplication vain;  
The weary prisoner turns aside,  
To hide his laboring bosom's pain.

Tumultuous thoughts upon his mind,  
In quick succession wildly crowd,  
As urged by the resistless wind,  
Spreads o'er the sky the tempest's cloud.

---

André, which had been dissolved by parental affection.—[See Letters about the Hudson, published by Freeman & Hunt, 1837.

<sup>a</sup> See Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 171.

Why bends his sad and languid glance  
Where, near his heart, that picture lies,  
Affection's fond inheritance,  
With sunny smile and loving eyes !

Alas ! upon that face no more  
The eager gaze of hope can turn,  
The dream of early love is o'er,  
And ne'er again its fires will burn ;  
A shade is gathering o'er each tress,  
A gloom is lingering on the brow,  
And all its budding loveliness  
Is stained with tears of anguish now.

Brave, yet devoted ! On thy head  
The bolt, by others forged, shall fall ;  
And history on thy name shall shed  
Of fate, the wormwood and the gall ;  
Yet wert thou noble—and thy soul  
The battle and the storm withstood,  
Till bending to a stern control,  
'Twas by a traitor's lure subdued.

Peace to thy shade, ill-fated one !  
Though in the abbey's lengthened aisle,\*

\* *Memorial to Major John André in Westminster Abbey, England.*

This is a neat monument in statuary marble, composed of a sarcophagus, elevated on a pedestal, upon the panel of which is engraved the following inscription :

“ Sacred to the memory of Major André, who, raised by his merit, at an early period of life, to the rank of adjutant-general of the British forces in America, and employed in an important, but hazardous enterprise, fell a sacrifice to his zeal for his king and country, on the 2d of October, 1780, aged twenty-nine, universally beloved and esteemed by the army in which he served, and lamented even by his foes. His gracious sovereign, King George the Third, has caused this monument to be erected.”

The remains of the said Major André were deposited, on the 28th of November, 1821, in a grave near his monument.

On the front of the sarcophagus, General Washington is represented in his tent, at the moment when he had received the report of the court-martial held on Major André ; at the same time a flag of truce arrived from the British army, with a letter for General Washington, to treat for the Major's life. But the fatal sentence being already passed, the flag was sent back without the hoped for clemency in his favor. Major André received his condemnation with that fortitude and resolution which had always marked his character, and is represented going, with unshaken

Scarce lit by day's meridian sun,  
 Thy marble bust may sadly smile,  
 Yet is there darkness on thy name,  
 Though gentle pity mourns for thee,  
 While patriots bless the holy flame,  
 Which kept thy captor's spirit free.

[*Westchester and Putnam Republican.*]

A remarkable incident is said to have befallen the celebrated whitewood tree near which the spy was captured. It was struck by lightning on the same day that the intelligence of General Arnold's death arrived at Tarrytown. This tree was a fine specimen of the ancient forest, being twenty-six feet in circumference, and its stem forty-one feet in length. At the present day not a vestige remains of "Major André's tree," as it was familiarly called. It is thus beautifully described by the author of the Sketch Book: "This tree towered like a giant above all the other trees of the neighborhood, and formed a kind of landmark. Its limbs were knarled and fantastic, large enough to form trunks for ordinary trees, twisting down almost to the earth, and rising again into the air. It was connected with the tragical story of the unfortunate André, who had been made prisoner hard by, and was universally known by the name of 'Major André's tree.' The common people regarded it with a mixture of respect and superstition, partly out of sympathy for the fate of its ill-starred namesake, and partly from the tales of strange sights, and doleful lamentations told concerning it." It was while passing beneath this whitewood tree that Ichabod Crane, in his midnight career toward Sleepy Hollow, "suddenly heard a groan, his teeth chattered, and his knees smote against the saddle. It was but the rubbing of one huge branch upon another, as they were swayed about by the breeze. He passed the tree in safety, but new perils lay before him. About two hundred yards from the tree, a small brook crossed the road, and ran into a marshy and thickly wooded glen, known by the name of Wiley's Swamp.

---

spirit, to meet his doom. On the top of the sarcophagus, a figure of Britannia, reclining, laments the premature fate of so gallant an officer. The British lion, too, seems instinctively to mourn his untimely death.

A few rough logs, laid side by side, served for a bridge over this stream. On that side of the road where the brook entered the wood, a group of oaks and chestnuts, matted thick with wild grape vines, threw a cavernous gloom over it. To pass this bridge was the severest trial. It was at this identical spot that the unfortunate André was captured, and under the covert of those chestnuts and vines were the sturdy yeomen concealed who surprised him. This has ever since been considered a haunted stream, and fearful are the feelings of the schoolboy who has to pass it alone after dark."<sup>a</sup>

Beside the capture of André, there are several revolutionary incidents which deserve to be noticed in connection with Tarrytown. One of these was the surprisal of a large corps of British refugees, which took place at the tavern of Elizabeth van Tassel. Major Hunt, having received intelligence of the advance of this party, at once determined upon their surprisal, particularly as the late murderers of his brother were known to be among the number. In company, therefore, with John Archer, and a few volunteers, Major Hunt proceeded from Westchester to Tarrytown, so arranging the march as to arrive in the vicinity of the tavern about dusk. After darkness had fairly set in, Hunt, with his party, surrounded the house: at this moment their unsuspecting enemies were engaged in playing cards. Major Hunt, having armed himself with a huge club, now gave the signal for attack, when the whole party simultaneously rushed in, headed by the Major, who exclaimed, as he raised his weapon, "Clubs are trumps, gentlemen." During the desperate struggle that ensued, Archer attempted to kill several of the refugees, and was only prevented from so doing by Major Hunt, who, arresting his arm, observed—"Sir, the highest sense of honor in a soldier is to protect the lives of his prisoners." After a short but ineffectual resistance, the refugees surrendered, and were led off in triumph to the American quarters.

In the summer of 1779, a strong detachment under the command of Col. Emmerick advanced upon Tarrytown so rapidly, that the Continental guard quartered in Requa's house were com-

---

<sup>a</sup> See Sketch Book, Beauties of Irving, &c. &c.

pletely taken by surprise; four of them were killed upon the spot, and the remainder, consisting of ten or twelve, taken prisoners. On this occasion Isaac Martlingh,<sup>a</sup> a one armed man, and Polly Buckhout, were also killed; the latter supposed accidentally, from the circumstance of her wearing a man's hat.

In the spring of 1782, a small party of refugees, under the command of Lieut. Akerly, captured three American militia-men named Yerks, Van Wart, and Strong, near the residence of the present Gilbert Underhill, situated in Tarrytown. Strong was hung on the spot by his inhuman captor.

The following letter occurs in the book of Military Returns.<sup>b</sup>

*Philipsburgh, Oct. 23, 1775.*

MR. WILLIAM PAULDING,

Sir,

I send you a list of the officers chosen in the manor of Philipsburgh, in the county of Westchester, in the room of those who decline.

*For Tarrytown.*

Gload Requa, Capt.

Cornelius van Tassel, 2d Lieut.

Siebout Acker, Ensign.

*Upper Company.*

Josias Arsor, 2d Lieut.

*East Company.*

Benj. Vermilyea, Capt.

Gilbert Dean, first Lieut.

William Forshee, 2d Lieut.

---

<sup>a</sup> The following epitaph is inscribed upon this individual's grave stone in Sleepy Hollow church-yard:—

T. M.

In memory of Mr. ISAAC MARTLINGH,  
who was inhumanly  
slain by Nathaniel  
Underhill, May 26,  
A.D. 1779,  
in the 39th year  
of his age.

<sup>b</sup> Military Returns, Alb. xxvi. 140.

We have likewise returned you the commission of those who decline.

George Comb,  
Joseph Young,  
James Hammond.

In 1776, the committee addressed the following letter to General Washington.

*Saturday morning, July 13, 1776.*

SIR :

On being informed yesterday afternoon, that two ships of war had gone into the North River, and passed by all the fortifications on York Island, the convention immediately sent an express to the commanding officer of the fort at the Highlands, advising him thereof. Last evening advice arrived that two frigates and two or three tenders were at anchor at Tarrytown, whereupon the convention sent the inhabitants a supply of powder and ball, and took immediate measures for reinforcing the inhabitants along that shore. This morning the convention were informed, that the frigates and tenders still lay there at anchor, and that several barges were busy in sounding the river; another detachment of the militia has been directed to guard the stores in that neighborhood, in which are sundry effects belonging to the public.

The convention will endeavor to prevent their making incursions into the country, and beg leave to suggest to your Excellency, the propriety of keeping a strong guard at King's bridge, the destruction of which they apprehend to be an object with the enemy.<sup>a</sup>

I have the honor to be with esteem,  
Your Excellency's most obedient servant,  
by order

To his Excellency Gen. Washington.

July 16th, 1776. A letter from Colonel Hammond then stationed at Tarrytown, was read.

The Colonel therein informs the convention, that the ships of war have left that harbor, and are sailing up the river with a fair wind, towards the Highlands. Thereupon it was resolved, that Colonel Van Cortlandt and Mr. Z. Platt<sup>b</sup> be directed to repair immediately to the Highlands.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Jour. N. Y. Pro. Con Book I. 523.

<sup>b</sup> A distinguished officer of the American service, grandfather of Lewis C. Platt, Esq., present surrogate of the county.

<sup>c</sup> Journal N. Y. Pro. Con: Book I. 525.



Upon the 9th of October, 1778, a body of 1100 British troops embarked on board batteaux at Peekskill and the same night proceeded to Tarrytown, where they landed at daybreak, and occupied the heights adjoining.<sup>a</sup>

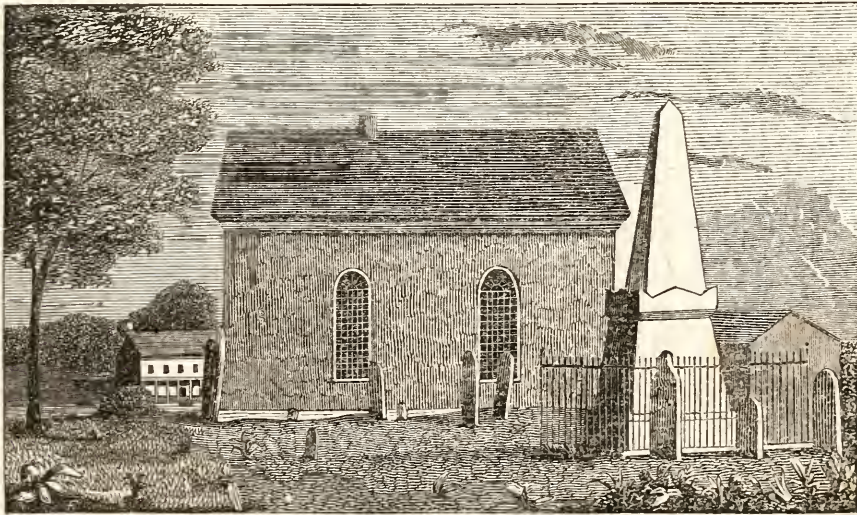
July 15th, 1781, ( remarks Thatcher, in his Military Journal,) two of the British frigates, and several smaller vessels, passed up the North River as far as Tarrytown, in defiance of our cannon, which were continually playing on them. Their object appears to be, to seize some of our small vessels which are passing down the river with supplies for our army.

One small sloop loaded with bread for the French army, has fallen into their hands."<sup>b</sup>

Greenburgh is a small hamlet situated three miles south east of Tarrytown, consisting of a church, a store, a few scattered houses, and one tavern.

This place is delightfully located in the Saw mill valley, through which flows the lovely Nepera, (Saw mill.)

Upon the west side of the valley, towers Beaver hill, frowning in solemn majesty on the quiet scene below.



Presbyterian Church, and Tomb of Isaac van Wart.

<sup>a</sup> Gaines' Weekly Mercury.

<sup>b</sup> Thatcher's Journal, 258.

The Presbyterian Church of Greenburgh, (situated on the east bank of the Saw mill) was first organized about the year 1790, under the ministry of the Rev. John Townley. This individual labored here for about twelve years, after which time he removed to Somers, and subsequently to Peekskill.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the departure of Mr. Townley, services were performed here, by the Rev. Thomas G. Smith, pastor of the Dutch Reformed Church of Tarrytown and Unionville.

Mr. Smith was succeeded by the late Rev. George Bourne, who served the churches of Greenburgh, and Dobb's Ferry, with great acceptance.

During this period, the church was connected with the old Westchester Presbytery, a congregational body, long since extinct. Upon the 12th of June, 1825, it was received into union with the First Presbytery of New York, and reorganized. It is at present connected with the Bedford Presbytery. This church appears to have been first incorporated upon the 25th of April, 1790, on which occasion, John Martine, Elijah Tompkins, Archer Read, Thomas Almond, and Abraham Odell were elected trustees."<sup>b</sup>

#### LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH AT GREENBURGH.<sup>c</sup>

Instal or call.	Ministers.	Vacated by.
Ministers under the Westchester Presbytery,	1790, Rev. John Townley,	resig.
	1802, Rev. Thomas G. Smith,	supply, resig.
	1820, Rev. George Bourne,	resig.
	1825, Rev. David Remington,	resig.
	Sept. 19, 1826, Rev. Chester Long,	resig.
	Dec. 1, 1832, Rev. Mark Mead,	resig.
	1834, Rev. John White,	resig.

<sup>a</sup> The Rev. John Townley died March 1st, 1812, aged 72 years. His remains and those of his wife and daughter, are interred in the burying ground attached to this church.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 22, a second incorporation occurs 17 May, 1808; a fourth, 6th of June, 1835.

<sup>c</sup> The ministers of this church have for a long time officiated alternately between the two churches of Greenburgh and White Plains.

	1835, Rev. Hosea Ball,	resig.
July 16,	1838, Rev. George Walker,	resig.
Oct. 9,	1841, Rev. Samuel Kellogg,	resig.
June 10,	1843, Rev. Elias S. Schenck,	present minister.

First elders of the church, Archibald Reid, George Combs and Staats Hammond. First deacons, William Brown and Isaac See.

#### CHURCH MEMORANDA.

A. D. 1836, Communicants, 97 ; Baptisms, 2.

A. D. 1847, ditto, 65.

In the cemetery of the Presbyterian Church rest the remains of Isaac Van Wart, one of the three captors of Major John André. A marble monument consisting of a base and pyramid is inscribed on its four sides, with the following epitaph :

(North side.)

Here reposes  
the mortal remains  
of

ISAAC VAN WART,  
an elder in the Greenburgh Church,\*  
who died  
on the 23d of May, 1828,  
in the  
69th year of his age.

Having lived the life, he died the death, of the  
Christian.

(South side.)

The Citizens  
of the  
County of Westchester  
erected this tomb  
in testimony of the high sense  
they entertained for the  
virtuous and patriotic conduct

---

\* Isaac van Wart was for many years an efficient church officer, and acted as chorister up to the time of his death.

of their fellow citizen,  
as a memorial sacred to  
public gratitude.

(Upon the east side.)

Vincit Amor Patriæ.

Nearly half a century  
before this monument was built,  
the conscript fathers of America  
had in the senate chamber voted that

ISAAC VAN WART,

was a faithful patriot, one in whom  
the love of country was invincible,  
and this tomb bears testimony  
that the record is true.

(West side.)

Fidelity.—On the 23d of September, 1780, Isaac van Wart, accompanied by John Paulding and David Williams, all farmers of the County of Westchester, intercepted Major André, on his return from the American lines, in the character of a spy, and, notwithstanding the large bribes offered them for his release, nobly disdained to sacrifice their country for gold, secured and carried him to the commanding officer of the district, whereby the dangerous and traitorous conspiracy of Arnold was brought to light, the insidious designs of the enemy baffled, the American army saved, and our beloved country free," &c.

We extract the following from the Westchester Herald, on occasion of raising this monument, June 11, 1829 :

On Thursday last, being the day appointed by the committee of arrangements for the ceremony of erecting a monument to the memory of the late Isaac van Wart, one of the captors of the British spy André, a large concourse of our fellow citizens assembled at the spot where repose the remains of the departed patriot, at the burial place of the Presbyterian church, on the east bank of the Saw Mill River, in Greenburgh. The day was very fine and pleasant, and by 12 o'clock, there was supposed to be present upwards of two thousand spectators, who had convened to participate in the last respects to the memory of their esteemed fellow citizen ; among whom were to be seen a few of the aged and venerable men who had passed through the scenes and perils of the revolution. About 12 o'clock, a procession was formed under the direction of Major John Sing, marshal of the day, the whole in the inverse order of their rank :—

1st. Captain Denslow's company Light Infantry of the 12th regiment, with the band attached to that regiment, and the first regiment of Light Infantry formed the military escort on the left. The left in front.

2d. The officers and non-commissioned officers of the 15th brigade.

3d. Captain Warner's company of cavalry on foot.

4th. Citizens of the county.

5th. Mr. F. Kain, the architect, and his workmen, with their implements to complete the work.

6th. The invited guests.

7th. The clergy of the county.

8th and last, the surviving officers and soldiers of the Revolution, the committee of arrangements and General William Hammond and suite.

The column was marched in this inverse order to solemn music with arms reversed, until arrived at the church yard, when the procession opened to the right and left, fronting inward. The officers and soldiers presenting arms. The officers and soldiers of the Revolution preceded by General Philip van Cortlandt, now the senior surviving officer of the continental army. These passed through the line, conducted by General Hammond and suite, and the marshal of the day, to the place reserved for them on the right of the monument, and the whole procession having passed through in this order, the military escort formed a square about the whole in the church yard. At this spot, the column was met by a large procession of the ladies of the county, under the direction of S. Simpson Esq., who acted as assistant marshal of the day, issuing from the church, at the head of which supported upon the arm of a friend, was the venerable widow of the deceased, followed by his surviving sister, also supported, and next came the female children and grand children of the deceased, a goodly number, after whom, followed a large train of matrons and misses, amounting to four or five hundred in number. The whole of this interesting group having assembled within the yard and about the monument. The Rev. David Remington pastor of the church to which the deceased belonged, addressed the throne of Grace, in a very solemn and appropriate manner, after which, Colonel Ward<sup>a</sup> the orator of the day was conducted to the platform prepared for the occasion, where he delivered the following address. (It was afterwards published at the request of the committee of arrangements.)

Friends! Fellow citizens!  
and Soldiers!

We have assembled on an interesting occasion, a solemn, not a melancholy one. We have come to this spot, to discharge a part of our duty, to one who has paid the debt of nature, to bring with us, as it were, each a stone from our quarries, fitted and prepared to build a monumental pile to a departed patriot, one who fell not in the hour of battle, contending for our liberties, but who lived to see our country prosperous and happy, delivered from all her troubles,

---

<sup>a</sup> The present General Aaron Ward, of Sing Sing.

and then gathered like a shock of corn ripe for the harvest. It might be asked, if insensible dust and ashes can be benefitted by monumental honors? No! But it is the duty of the living to make and preserve memorials of the virtuous and distinguished dead; for these memorials contain lessons of instruction that are constantly before our eyes.

The man to whose memory we are now erecting a tomb stone, was one of us, a citizen of Westchester county; his name requires no lineal honors, no armorial bearings, to make it dear and precious with us. We knew him and that was sufficient, but for those who did not know him personally, (for his circle of acquaintance was not a large one,) we put his fame on his character as a patriot, and it gives me pleasure to state that he lived and died a christian. For his patriotism, it is enough to say, that Isaac van Wart was one of the captors of André. For proofs of his exemplary life, and for his firm belief in our holy religion, to you my friends I appeal as witnesses. Some of you have known him in the noonday and evening of life, have heard him breathe the patriot's prayer, "O God save my country," have seen his practical examples of virtuous conduct, his piety, his devotion, and his humble submission to the will of Heaven.

The capture of André, fellow citizens, formed an important epoch in the history of our Revolution. This event took place on the morning of the 23d of Sept., 1780, and what is well worthy of observation, within three miles of the spot where we are now assembled, and within a few miles of the place where the man, to whose perishable remains we are now paying the last tribute of respect, was born, brought up and died. It occurred too, at a period when our country was in the deepest distress. It will be recollected, that Charleston, South Carolina, had then but recently been taken by the enemy, with the loss of our whole army, under the command of General Lincoln, amounting to upwards of five thousand men, together with all the magazines of military and naval stores, the shipping in the harbor, and four hundred pieces of ordnance. General Gates had also been defeated at Camden in North Carolina, seven hundred of our troops having been killed in battle, and one thousand three hundred wounded and made prisoners, and the whole of his forces routed and dispersed. The eastern states had likewise been overrun by the enemy, with fire and sword. And to add to the general gloom which now overspread the United States, the small army that was left, was reduced to the greatest distress and misery; and, nothing, it is believed, but the wisdom and prudence of the immortal Washington, could have kept it together; for, in the language of a committee appointed by Congress to visit it, the soldiers were unpaid for months together, seldom having more than six days provision in advance; and on several occasions for several successive days, entirely without meat. The medical department having no supplies whatever, for the sick, and every department of the army being alike without money, and not even the shadow of credit left." Discontent to an alarming extent, at the same time among the

officers and soldiers, on account of the depreciated currency of the country. The pay of a private for a year, would not subsist his family for a single week nor would the pay of an officer procure forage, or even oats for his horse.

And in addition to these evils which fell so heavily upon the army, others not less deplorable, had, by reason of the embarrassed state of the country, fallen upon the community at large. For the aged and infirm, who had retired to enjoy the fruits of their industry, found their subsistence reduced to a scanty pittance, and the widow and the orphan were obliged to accept a dollar where hundreds were their due.

At this moment when all was dark, our hopes for a successful termination of the war well nigh gone, when the east and the south were in gloom and doubt, and fear which "betrays like treason," was setting on many an honest face, Major André was sent from the British army, whose general then wished to finish the war at a blow, to tamper with the low principles of Benedict Arnold, and by the strength of bribery and corruption, to pluck up his shallow rooted patriotism at once. The treason had so far prospered, that the delivery of West Point and the army there stationed, was agreed upon. The plan to effect the purpose was drawn up; nay, more, the victims of deceit and slaughter, were marked out, perfidy and destruction had sharpened their daggers for the march, when it pleased Divine Providence to make three of our fellow citizens instruments in His hand for good.

They arrested the spy on his return to the camp. On this event, perhaps, hung the destinies of our country; if not that, certainly the lives of thousands, and long years of war were involved in it. The spy was taken, and conducted to the lines of the American army: the immeasurable power of gold was tried upon Van Wart and his associates—it would not do; rewards beyond their knowledge of wealth were offered them, if they would give up their prisoner, but offered them in vain. Their virtues, to the honor of human nature—to the honor of republican principles—to the honor of our country, stood the test—nobly stood it. The spy was tried, and expiated his offence against the laws of nations by his death, and our country was saved.

During the whole of this excitement, so momentous and alarming, we have to thank God that our country was stained by one act of treason only; and to alleviate our grief and mortification for this act, we have to offer the incorruptible integrity of three militiamen in the common walks of life, (where virtue always resides,) in whose breasts all ordinary springs of action were absorbed by the love of liberty, and whose enthusiastic ardor in the cause was regulated and guided by prudence and firmness; and we have it to say too, that if one proud, envious, canker-hearted general had his price, our soldiers were above purchase!—that if treason found its way to the stronghold and the citadel, it was in the end crushed at the outposts. To commemorate this event, that posterity should not lose sight of it—that future ages should understand it by full and satisfactory proof—that our countrymen know how to respect and value patriotism as well as to practice it—that they were as ready to

render justice to the merits of a private soldier, as to the officer highest in rank—and to show, too, that our Revolution was achieved by principles of the highest order, we have assembled to erect this monument. Such an act is in conformity with the usages of the wisest of nations in every period of history, and, whenever neglected, has been a source of censure and regret; such an act is in conformity with the habits of our own country, for it is consonant to a sense of gratitude in every bosom. Monuments are now rising to the heroes of the Revolution in every part of the United States. Montgomery, Warren, De Kalb and others, are now remembered by a grateful people, and on the banks of our majestic Hudson has lately been placed a tasteful monument to the great and good Kosciusko, who dispensed honors and rewards for the freedom of man. This last tribute of respect has sprung from the purest of all sources—from the bosoms of the youthful soldiers of our national military school, whose pursuits lead them to search history, and to canvass every military character for models of the patriot soldier.

The time, fellow citizens, is fast coming, when the actors in our revolutionary scenes will live but in the remembrance of the few, and in the annals of our country; more or less of their number are daily passing to their eternal rest. Within a few days past, the citizens of this county and of this nation were called to mourn the loss of one of the most distinguished members of that valiant band—the great, the illustrious John Jay, the American Fabricius: and even while I am speaking, there are only here and there one of the men of that age to be seen, and he, with whitened locks and solemn demeanor, standing on the confines of eternity, and taking, as it were, a farewell of us and of all the present generation.<sup>a</sup>

Illustrious relics of a patriotic age! ye shall not be forgotten when you shall have passed away. Monuments shall arise to your fame, written over with the story of your deeds. You have lifted your warning voices to us to be virtuous and united, and they shall be heard; your principles shall not be lost—your examples shall have their influence—your very monuments shall have a tongue that shall never be silent in teaching us how to live and how to die. The virtuous deeds of one generation are monuments for the next, and so onward in the procession of ages. We know that our country is yet in its youth, and is still forming its habits and fixing its principles; and I thank God, that among her best habits is that of cherishing the memory of her benefactors. The deed that we are now doing, my friends, in gratitude and modesty, is not to be done for this day alone. In some distant period, when the traveller shall inquire of our descendants, “Whose monument is this?” they shall answer, with pleasure and pride, “This is the grave of Isaac van Wart, who was an incorruptible patriot and a good Christian. He lived with our ancestors, and was one of them, and they appreciated his services; and to perpetuate his memory, erected this tomb stone, and gave it in charge to us to keep it from profanation. Nearly half a century before this monument was built, the Con-

---

<sup>a</sup> The late General Philip van Cortlandt.



script Fathers of America had, in the senate chamber, voted he was a faithful patriot, one in whom the love of country was invincible—and this monument bears testimony that the record is true.

Mr. Francis Kain then gave the finishing stroke to the monument, after which the military escort divided into three sections; each division fired one round. The procession was again formed by the marshal in the same order as before. The officers and soldiers of the Revolution, on the right, passed the line, the same honors being paid to them by the military; and the whole returned to the house of Mr. E. Mead, from whence they had started."

During the American war, this section of the neutral ground was frequently harassed by incursions of the enemy.

On one occasion a large body of British Cow-boys (who had been up the country in prosecution of their trade) were returning, laden with spoil, when they received a severe check in the vicinity of Smith's tavern, from a small force of American volunteers. The attack is said to have been commenced by an individual named John Dean. The neighborhood, alarmed by the firing, immediately turned out to his assistance.

November 17th, 1777, the British, under Captain Emmerick, made an excursion from their quarters to the Saw Mill Valley, and completely surprised the Van Tassels, who were residing near Captain Romer's, burnt their houses, "stripped the women and children of necessary apparel to cover them from the severity of a cold winter's night," and led off, in triumph, the two brothers, Peter and Cornelius van Tassel.<sup>a</sup>

In retaliation for this inhuman outrage, the patriots fitted up an expedition at Tarrytown, under the command of Abraham Martlingh, which proceeded down the Hudson River, passed the enemy's guard boats in safety, and succeeded in setting fire to General Oliver de Lancey's house on New York island, after plundering it of its contents. The whole party returned to Tarrytown in safety. This enterprise was conducted in the very face of the British army.

Three young lads named Vincent, Smith, and Lawrence, were overtaken by a party of Totten's refugee corps a little south of Howland's mill; two were killed on the spot, Vincent recovered

---

<sup>a</sup> See Gen. Parson's Letter, Mamaroneck.

from his wounds, but remained a cripple for life. Major David Hunt of the continental army afterwards conveyed him to Paulus Hook where he was noticed by several members of Congress who subsequently obtained a pension for the sufferer. This is said to have been the first pension granted by the United States' government.

A short distance south of the hamlet of Greenburgh is situated the residence of Samuel Howland, Esq. It is embosomed in trees, and stands on the west bank of the Saw Mill river, in its rear rise bold and majestic hills covered with luxuriant woods. The building itself is a very handsome structure of wood, in the modern style. The river arrested by the mill dam, forms in front of the house an extensive sheet of water which adds greatly to the beauty of this romantic spot.

The former possessors of the estate were the Odells, who in 1816, sold the property to Joseph Howland, Esq., father of the present proprietor.

Chatterton height, the battle field of 1776, lies on the north-east corner of this town. We have reserved a description of the battle for the town of White Plains, with which place it is generally associated, although more properly belonging to Greenburg.

The Chatterton family, from whom the hill derives its name, have been long residents in the town of Greenburg. A member of this family was settled on the hill as early as 1731. A. D. 1750, we find Michael Chatterton purchasing lands in the vicinity, of David and Nathan Purdy.

Chatterton bridge which crosses the Bronx at the foot of the hill was first erected in 1736. Cornelius Chatterton, one of the earliest magistrates of Eastchester was an ancestor of this family.

Hart's Corners, formerly Barnes' Corners, is another small hamlet in Greenburg, situated about three miles south of White Plains, in a fine valley, the neighborhood of which is rendered extremely beautiful by the inequality of the ground and surrounding scenery. The settlement is composed of one church, several dwellings and stores. The Bronx River Powder Manufactory, and Railroad depôt adjoin it on the east. This place derives its name from John Hart, who purchased the property of the commissioners in 1784.

The Methodist church ; stands on the summit of the high ridge west of the hamlet, it was erected A. D. 1832.<sup>a</sup> The burying ground lies near the Railroad.

A fine line of hills extend south from Hart's Corners to the foot of Thirty Deer ridge in Yonkers, watered on the east and west by the two branches of the Spraine, called by the Indians Armenperal. These hills were formerly so covered with thick woods as to be almost impassable, and abounded in deer, wolves, bears, wild-cats, and rattle snakes. Deer were numerous as late as 1760.

One of the earliest settlers of the place was John Tompkins of Eastchester, who purchased a large tract upon these hills in 1731. For some time after this purchase, Mr. Tompkins was in the constant practice of spending the week here, and returning to his family on a Saturday. During the whole of this period he was surrounded by Indians, but they never once offered to molest him. A small hill to the south-east of the present Mr. John Tompkins, still bears the name of Indian hill, and the adjoining spring is called the Indian spring. Two descendants of the original proprietor, John and James Tompkins, yet occupy a large portion of the estate.

A little west of the Methodist church at Hart's Corners stands the residence of Jackson Odell, son of the distinguished Colonel John Odell. This gentleman, during the early part of the Revolution served in the capacity of a guide to the American army, and subsequently received a colonel's commission from Congress. He was the second son of Jonathan Odell, Esq., by his wife Margaret Dyckman, and descended from a common ancestor with the late General Jacob Odell of Yonkers. Col. Odell died 26th October, 1835.

At one period of the war the house was occupied as headquarters by the French commander, Count de Rochambeau, General Washington having encamped on the west bank of the Spraine. On several occasions large tables were arranged for the

---

<sup>a</sup> For incorporation of this church see Religious Soc. Lib., B. 7 ; first trustees, Underhill Tompkins, Stephen Leviness, Gilbert Tompkins, Joseph Forster, John Crawford, and Elijah Tompkins.

military staffs of Generals Washington and Rochambeau in the adjoining stables, the mangers serving as a repository for their hats and swords.

Mrs. Churchill, daughter of Mr. Taylor, former proprietor of the place, remembers to have danced with the celebrated Marshal Berthier, at that time one of the aides of the Count de Rochambeau in the parlor of the present mansion.

The summits of the Greenburgh hills command a variety of beautiful prospects, in which long reaches of the East River, Bronx valley and Scarsdale, form the principal features. In the south east corner of Greenburgh is situated Greenville, where there is a Dutch Reformed Church, and a few scattered dwellings.

The Dutch Church of this place was first organized in 1842, under the pastoral charge of the Rev. V. M. Hulbert of Yonkers, and incorporated on the 3d of December, 1842, by the title of the "Minister, Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Greenville, in the town of Greenburgh." First elders, John Dusenberry and Charles Dusenberry; first deacons, Ichabod Smith and Benjamin Carpenter.<sup>a</sup> Mr. Hulbert, was succeeded by the Rev. Abel T. Stewart, present minister.

#### CHURCH MEMORANDA.

1847, communicants 21, baptisms 5.

"The township of Greenburgh is situated 27 miles north of New York, 135 south of Albany, and 5 miles west of White Plains; bounded north by Mount Pleasant, east by White Plains and Scarsdale, south by Yonkers, and west by the Hudson. Saw Mill creek, (Nepera,) runs south on the west part, Bronx creek, (Aquehung,) along the east line, and there are some branches also which supply mill seats."<sup>b</sup>

The general surface of this town is hilly, but not mountainous. It is richly and beautifully interspersed with hills, valleys and streams of water. The hills are most of them good and suitable for cultivation. The soil in general is gravelly clay, and sandy loam, producing all kinds of fruit and grass in plenty.

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec., Lib. B. 79.

<sup>b</sup> Spafford's Gazetteer.

There are some valuable quarries on the banks of the Hudson, that yield great quantities of beautiful building stones. The forests are principally of oak, chesnut, hickory, ash and walnut.

Among the mineral productions may be mentioned the Dolomitic marble, which occurs in various places ; also several localities of feldspar, especially in the vicinity of Tarrytown.

## HARRISON.

HARRISON, sometimes called the purchase and Harrison's precinct,<sup>a</sup> is situated 3 miles east of the village of White Plains, distant 30 miles from New York, and 134 miles from Albany; bounded northerly by North Castle, east and southerly by Rye, west by Mamaroneck, White Plains and North Castle. Its length north and south is about nine miles, and its medial width near three miles, but like most of the other towns in this county, its form is irregular, having no right lines for its boundaries. The present township was organized 7th of March, 1788.<sup>b</sup>

The first proprietor of this land of whom anything is known, was Shanasockwell or Shanarocke, sagamore of Poningoe, who, with other Indians in 1661 conveyed to John Budd of Southhold, Long Island; "one neck of land lying on the mayne called Apawammeis, (Budds neck, Rye,) also *range, feeding and grasse for cattle, twenty English miles into the country.*"<sup>c</sup> Under this purchase the inhabitants of Rye subsequently claimed the whole territory, a demand which the province of New York refused to sanction.

From Shanasockwell, the territory north of Westchester path, (including the above mentioned range for cattle,) appears to have passed into the possession of Pathunck or Pathung, Indian sachim, for upon the first of February, 1695, we find the latter conveying the present township to John Harrison, in the following manner:

"This indenture, made the 24th day of January, and in the seventh year of the reign of William the Third of England, Scotland, France and Ireland,


---

<sup>a</sup> Prior to 1775, Harrison constituted one of the six prec'nts of Rye parish.

<sup>b</sup> Revised Statutes.

<sup>c</sup> See Rye, for Budd's purchase.

King, Defender of the Faith, &c. &c., and in the year of our Lord God 1695, witnesseth, that I, underwritten Pathungo, the true owner and proprietor of a certain part or parcel of land situate, lying, and being in the county of Westchester, and province of New York, by these presents, further manifested to Christian people, to whom this deed of conveyance may any ways concern: *Know ye* that I, the said Pathungo, the true owner and proprietor of the above named tract or parcel of land, upon good reasons and consideration moving hereunto, but more especially for a valuable consideration of £40 current money in hand paid before the ensembling of these presents, hath granted, bargained, made over, confirmed and sold, and do by these presents grant, bargain, make over and confirm, and fully, freely, and thereby, unto John Harrison, of Flushing, in Queens county, on Nassau Island, in the province aforesaid, all that aforesaid tract or parcel of land aforesaid, being butted and bounded, as followeth—that is to say, westwardly upon a certain river, commonly called and known by the name of Mamarranack River, and so stretching eastwardly to a certain brook called by the name of Blind Brook, southwardly by the lands of John Budd, as appears by certain marked trees, near unto Westchester old road, and northwardly to certain ponds called by the name of Rye Ponds, together with all rights, members, jurisdictions, ways, commodities, advantages, together with all meadows, woods, underwoods, liberties, franchises, privileges, and singular appurtenances to the said tract or parcel of land belonging or in any ways appertaining, *to have and to hold* the said tract or parcel of land, according to the butts and bounds above mentioned, and recited to the only proper use or uses of him, the said John Harrison, his heirs and assigns forever, and the said Pathungo, for himself, his heirs, successors, and assigns, that at the time of the signing and ensembling of these presents, hath full power and lawful authority the land and premises to sell and confirm, and that the same is truly acquitted and discharged, and sufficiently saved and kept harmless of and from all manner of former bargains, sales, grants, or any other incumbrances whatsoever, had made, done, or suffered to be done by the said Pathungo, his heirs, successors, or assigns, or any other person or persons whatsoever, by, from, or under him, Christian or Indian, whereby the said John Harrison, his heirs or assigns, shall or may be annoyed or ejected out of the possession thereof; and the said Pathungo, for himself, his heirs, successors, and assigns, all the said tract or parcel of land, with every part and parcel thereof, unto the above said John Harrison, his heirs, executors, administrators and assigns, against all manner of Indians, shall and will warrant, and forever defend, by these presents. In witness whereof, the said Pathungo hath set his hand and seal this day and year first above written.

PATUNGO, his  marke.

Signed, sealed, and delivered in the presence of us, Charles J Morgan, his marke, Nicolas Haight and James Clement. Moreover, before signing and sealing hereof, the said Pathungo doth reserve, liberty for his use, such *white-wood trees as shall be found suitable to make canoes of*. These may certify

any whom it may concern, that on the first day of February, 1695-6, appeared before me, Thomas Willett, Esq., one of his Majesties' justices for the province of New York, Pathungo, the within mentioned Indian who did then and there acknowledge the within conveyance or deed of sale to be his free and voluntary act and deed, as witness my hand.

THOMAS WILLET.

This may certify whom it may concern, that we Indians, whose names are now underwritten, do own to have received full satisfaction of the within mentioned John Harrison for all the within mentioned tract of land being butted and bounded as within specified. As witness hereof, we have hereunto set our hands and seals this 15th day of February, in the year of our Lord God 1695-6.

Betty Pathungo, ☐ her mark, Pathungo Wappatoe, ☐ his mark, Elias Jozes Pathungo Askamme, ○ her mark, Chrishoam Pathungo, S her marke, Porige, ☐ his marke, Elaas Arowash, Arawask's wife, Hannah > her mark, Ingen. Signed, sealed and delivered in presence of James Mott, Samuel Palmer, Joseph Horton, the marke of <- Akabaska.<sup>a</sup>

The whitewood trees referred to in the above deed by the sachem Pathungo, are the *Liriodendron tulipifera* of Linnæus, from the trunk of which the Indians manufactured their canoes; hence it was commonly called by them "canoe wood."

"Whoever (remarks Mr. Downing) has once seen the tulip tree in a situation where the soil was favorable to its free growth, can never forget it; with a clean trunk, straight as a column for forty or fifty feet, surmounted by a fine ample summit of rich green foliage. It is, in our estimation, decidedly the most *statelily* tree in North America. When standing alone, and encouraged in its lateral growth, it will indeed often produce a lower head, but its tendency is to rise; and it only exhibits itself in all its stateliness and majesty, when, supported on such a noble columnar trunk, it towers far above the heads of its neighbors of the park or forest. Even when at its loftiest elevation, its large specious blossoms, which, from their form, one of our poets has likened to a chalice—

—Through the verdant maize  
The tulip tree  
Its golden chalice oft triumphantly displays—

Pickering.

---

<sup>a</sup> Indian deeds warrant of survey, Albany Rec. Lib. i. 4.



jut out from amid the tufted canopy in the month of June, and glow in richness and beauty. This tree was introduced into England about 1668, and is now, we are informed, to be found in almost every gentleman's park on the continent of Europe, so highly is it estimated as an ornamental tree of the first class."<sup>a</sup>

We hope that the numerous specimens of this noble tree yet standing in Westchester county may be sacredly preserved from the barbarous infliction of the axe, which has heretofore spoiled without mercy so many of our majestic forest trees.

The next notice of the purchase occurs in the following warrant for its survey, A. D. 1695-6.

*By his Excellency the Governor in Council, &c.*—You are hereby required to survey and lay out for John Harrison, a certain tract of land in Westchester county which he hath purchased by virtue of a license, bearing date the second day of August last past, bounded to the south by the trees of Mr. Budd's purchase, west by Mamaroneck river, eastwardly by Blind brook, and north by Ryepond, and this shall be to you a sufficient warrant.

Benjamin Fletcher to Anthony Graham, Surveyor General, by order of Council.

Upon the 25th of June, 1696, the Indian purchase was confirmed by letters patent under the great seal, to William Nicolls, John Harrison and others in the following manner.

William the Third, by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas our loving subjects William Nicolls, Esq., Captain Ebenezer Williams, David Jameson, John Harrison, and Samuel Haight have by their petition, presented to our trusty and well beloved Benjamin Fletcher, our Captain General and Governor-in-chief of our province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, and prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain tract of land in our county of Westchester, beginning at a certain white oak tree marked with three notches, standing at the east side of Mamaroneck river, and thence by marked trees, as it runs south sixty-five degrees and thirty minutes, eastwardly fifty-six chains to a black oak tree and the marked trees of Joseph Budd's purchase,

---

<sup>a</sup> Downing's Landscape Gardening, p. 197, 8, 9. There is a fine specimen of this noble tree on the property of Elbert Roosevelt, Esq., Pelham.

standing near Westchester path, marked with three notches, and thence by the marked trees of Joseph Budd's purchase standing near Westchester path aforesaid, to an elm tree on the west side of Blind brook, and a white ash on the east side of the said brook, marked with three notches, and thence by the east side of the said brook, to the head thereof to a chesnut tree marked with three notches and the letters E. W. and H. ; thence south to a white wood tree, and thence by marked trees west to Ryeponds ; thence including the said Ryeponds, south to the head of Mamaroneck river, which runs on the west side of Brown's Point, and thence by Mamaroneck river and the east bounds of Richbell's patent to the place where it began, bounded west by Blind brook and vacant lands, north by vacant lands, west by Mamaroneck river, and south by Budd and Jonas W. Coryan's purchase, which reasonable request we being willing to grant, *Know ye*, of our special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have given, granted ratified and confirmed, &c., &c., and by these presents do for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said sovereign subjects, William Nicolls, Ebenezer Williams, David Jameson, John Harrison, and Samuel Haight, all the aforesaid certain tract of land within our said county of Westchester, and within the limits and bounds aforesaid together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water-courses, rivers, rivulets, brooks, streams, fishing, hawking, fowling, hunting, and all other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the aforesaid recited certain tract of land, within the limits and bounds aforementioned belonging or in any ways appertaining, to have and to hold all the aforesaid certain tract of land, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water-courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, and also other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments, appurtenances whatsoever, to the aforementioned certain tract or tracts of land within the parts and bounds aforesaid belonging or in any ways appertaining unto them, the said William Nicolls, Ebenezer Williams, David Jameson, John Harrison and Samuel Haight, their heirs and assigns, to the only proper use, benefit and behoof of them, the said William Nicolls, Ebenezer Williams, David Jameson, John Harrison and Samuel Haight, their heirs and assigns forever, without any let, hindrance, or molestation, or right to be had or reserved upon pretence of joint tenancy, or survivorship, any thing contained in this our grant to the contrary or anywise notwithstanding, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our county of Kent, within the realm of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefor yearly and every year, unto us, our heirs and successors, the annual and yearly rent of twenty shillings current money of our said province, at our city of New York, on the Feast day of the Annunciation of our Blessed Virgin Mary, in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services and demands

whatsoever. In testimony whereof, we have caused the great seal of our said province to be hereunto affixed; witness our trusty and well-beloved Benjamin Fletcher, our Captain-general and Governor-in-chief of our province of New York and territories and tracts of land depending thereon in America, and Vice-admiral of the same, our Lieutenant and Commander-in-chief of the militia of the forces by sea and land within our colony of Connecticut, and of all the forts and places of strength within the same. At our fort of New York the 25th day of June, in the eighth year of our reign, Anno Domini 1696, by his Excellency's command.<sup>a</sup>

DAVID JAMESON.

Entered upon record in the Book of Patents beginning in 1695, by warrant from his Excellency.

Little is left on record relative to the Harrison family, who have given name to this township. In 1655, John Harrison appears to have been a freeholder of Newtown, Long Island.<sup>b</sup> This individual was the father of John Harrison, the above mentioned patentee, also of Samuel Harrison. The latter left two daughters, co-heiresses. Hannah, the oldest, married Joshua Cornell, father of the present John Cornell of North Castle, and Sarah, who married Gilbert Palmer.<sup>c</sup> The descendants of Samuel Haight<sup>d</sup> (another of the patentees) are also very numerous in the county, likewise the Williamses.

In 1740 occurs a deed of sale from James de Lancey and Lewis Johnston to Godfrey Haines of Rye, which recites Caleb Heathcote's purchase in a certain patent granted to John Harrison and others. Caleb Heathcote appears to have purchased 200 acres from David Jameson the patentee in 1712.<sup>e</sup>

The Cromwells were possessed of estates in this township at a very early period. The old family place is situated on the south-east side of Rye pond, on the road leading from the purchase to

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. Book of Patents, No. vii, 36, 37, 38. The original document is in the possession of Andrew Carpenter of Harrison. The Albany Records say 5th of June, 1695, and Capt. Ebenezer Nelson for Williams.

<sup>b</sup> John Harrison of Boston, freeman of that place in 1644, had a son John, born in 1652 — *Farmer's Register*.

<sup>c</sup> The father of John Palmer.

<sup>d</sup> Samuel Haight appears to have been a resident freeholder of Flushing in 1684,

<sup>e</sup> Co. Rec., lib. C. 260.

North Castle.<sup>a</sup> The several branches of the Cromwell family in America claim descent from the same parent stock as that of the Protector Oliver Cromwell. It is presumed that the ancestor of the American line was Col. John Cromwell, son of Sir Oliver Cromwell, and brother of the protector.

The following notice of Col. John Cromwell occurs in Noble's life of the protector.

"This gentleman was early in the army. In 1624 he went over as a captain in the first regiment of foot in the forces sent over by King James I. for the recovery of the palatinate; after this he was a colonel of an English regiment in the service of the United States. Happening to be in England whilst his sovereign, King Charles I., was a prisoner to the parliament army, and hearing his relation, Oliver, (afterwards lord protector) say, 'I think the king the most injured prince in the world,' and putting his hand to his sword, continued, 'but this shall right him,' supposed that his zeal was real, and therefore expressed himself satisfied that it was impossible for him to go those lengths which many others wished to go. For these reasons when that unfortunate, misguided monarch was (after a pretended trial) condemned to die, and the Prince of Orange taking vast pains to save him, or at least to stay the execution, sent over such relations of the leading men in the army as they thought could influence them, applied to this gentleman, he very readily undertook the task with the greatest expectation of succeeding in so desirable a business; wherefore taking credential letters from the States; with letters, with the King's and Prince of Wales' signet, and both confirmed by the States, offering Oliver his own terms in case he would prevent the fatal sentence from being carried into execution, he hastened to England. He found his cousin Oliver, the lieutenant general, at home. It was with difficulty he gained admittance, as he kept his chamber and ordered himself to be denied. Upon his introduction to Oliver, after the usual compliments between relations, he began to mention the horrid crime intended to be committed, and after a very

---

<sup>a</sup> This family have conferred their name upon a small brook in the vicinity of Rye pond.

free harrangue upon its atrocity, the indelible stain it would be to the nation, and in what a light it was beheld upon the continent, added, 'that, of all men living, he thought he would never have had any hand in it, who, in his hearing, had protested so much to the King.' Oliver replied, it was not him, but the army; and though he did once say such words, yet now times were altered. and Providence seemed to order things otherwise, adding that he had prayed and fasted for the King but no return that way was yet made to him. Upon which the colonel stepped a little back and hastily shut the door, which made Oliver suppose he was going to be assassinated; but the other, taking out his papers, said to him, 'Cousin, this is no time to trifle with words, see here, it is now in your own power not only to make yourself, but your family, relations, and posterity happy and honorable for ever; otherwise, as they have changed their name before, from Williams to Cromwell, so now they must be forced to change it again, for this act will bring such an ignominy upon the whole generation of them that no time will be able to deface.' After a pause Oliver said, 'Cousin, I desire you will give me till night to consider it, and do you go to your own inn and not to bed till you hear from me.'

"The colonel retired, and at one o'clock in the morning he received a message that he might go to rest and expect no other answer to carry to the prince, for the council of officers had been seeking God, as he had also done, and it was resolved by them all that the king must die. With this unhappy message he returned into Holland again, where he continued in that service for many years, perhaps during the remainder of his life. By a letter dated Nov.  $\frac{1}{2}$ <sup>3</sup>, 1653, from Jongeshall to William, Earl of Nassau, it appears that Col. John Cromwell was then in Holland. Through the ill behavior of his wife Abigail, he was from the most affluent circumstances reduced to the brink of ruin. By his wife (continnes Noble,) Col. Cromwell had a daughter Joan, baptized September 28, 1634, and perhaps other children."<sup>a</sup>

In 1686 we find John Cromwell<sup>b</sup> of the town of Westchester

<sup>a</sup> Noble's Life of Oliver Cromwell, vol. i. 534-8.

<sup>b</sup> John Cromwell (the supposed son of Col. John,) is said to have emigrated from Holland during the time the Dutch held the province.

and Mary his wife, selling lands to Thomas Hunt, sen., of the West Farms. These lands were situated upon Long Neck, afterwards known as Cromwell's Neck.<sup>a</sup>

John Cromwell (the supposed son of Col. John Cromwell,) left issue by his wife Mary, John, from whom the present Oliver Cromwell and Jeremiah of West Farms are descended, and James Cromwell, who was living in 1717. The latter by his wife Anne Godfrey had two sons, John and James. The oldest son John Cromwell was residing upon the property in Harrison at the commencement of the revolutionary war, for his name occurs in General Washington's military map of the county, dated 1778, as the occupant of the homestead.<sup>b</sup> The present William Cromwell of Harrison is the grandson of the above named John Cromwell.<sup>c</sup>

From an early period, the Thomas family have resided in the eastern part of this town. The first member who purchased land here, was the Hon. John Thomas, son of the Rev. John Thomas, for many years Rector of St. George's Church, Hempstead, Long Island. Concerning the latter individual, Dr. Carmichael in his history of St. George's Church, observes, "that he commenced his ministrations there, in the spring of 1705, under the auspices of the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts. In a letter addressed to the secretary of that society, Oct. 18th, 1724, he says, "Good sir, give my humble duty to the Honorable Society, and assure them of my utmost fidelity, as far as lame limbs and a decrepid state of health will permit. My heart is warm and sound, though lodged, God knows, in a crazy, broken

<sup>a</sup> Sometimes styled Castle Hill Neck.

<sup>b</sup> John Cromwell was taken prisoner by the British and conveyed to New York.

<sup>c</sup> A singular circumstance (illustrative of the strong family likeness which still exists between the English and American branches,) occurred in the village of Westchester a few years since. Oliver Cromwell, a resident blacksmith of that place, was accosted by a friend, who at the same moment presented him a likeness of the Protector; the former (unable to read) involuntarily exclaimed as he gazed upon the portrait, "why there is our old blacksmith himself." For a portrait of the Protector see the Hon. John Hunter's collections of painting, Pelham; and for a further account of this family see genealogy.



and Mary his wife, selling lands to Thomas Hunt, sen., of the West Farms. These lands were situated upon Long Neck, afterwards known as Cromwell's Neck.<sup>a</sup>

John Cromwell (the supposed son of Col. John Cromwell,) left issue by his wife Mary, John, from whom the present Oliver Cromwell and Jeremiah of West Farms are descended, and James Cromwell, who was living in 1717. The latter by his wife Anne Godfrey had two sons, John and James. The oldest son John Cromwell was residing upon the property in Harrison at the commencement of the revolutionary war, for his name occurs in General Washington's military map of the county, dated 1778, as the occupant of the homestead.<sup>b</sup> The present William Cromwell of Harrison is the grandson of the above named John Cromwell.<sup>c</sup>

From an early period, the Thomas family have resided in the eastern part of this town. The first member who purchased land here, was the Hon. John Thomas, son of the Rev. John Thomas, for many years Rector of St. George's Church, Hempstead, Long Island. Concerning the latter individual, Dr. Carmichael in his history of St. George's Church, observes, "that he commenced his ministrations there, in the spring of 1705, under the auspices of the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts. In a letter addressed to the secretary of that society, Oct. 18th, 1724, he says, "Good sir, give my humble duty to the Honorable Society, and assure them of my utmost fidelity, as far as lame limbs and a decrepid state of health will permit. My heart is warm and sound, though lodged, God knows, in a crazy, broken

<sup>a</sup> Sometimes styled Castle Hill Neck.

<sup>b</sup> John Cromwell was taken prisoner by the British and conveyed to New York.

<sup>c</sup> A singular circumstance (illustrative of the strong family likeness which still exists between the English and American branches,) occurred in the village of Westchester a few years since. Oliver Cromwell, a resident blacksmith of that place, was accosted by a friend, who at the same moment presented him a likeness of the Protector; the former (unable to read) involuntarily exclaimed as he gazed upon the portrait, "why there is our old blacksmith himself." For a portrait of the Protector see the Hon. John Hunter's collections of painting, Pelham; and for a further account of this family see genealogy.

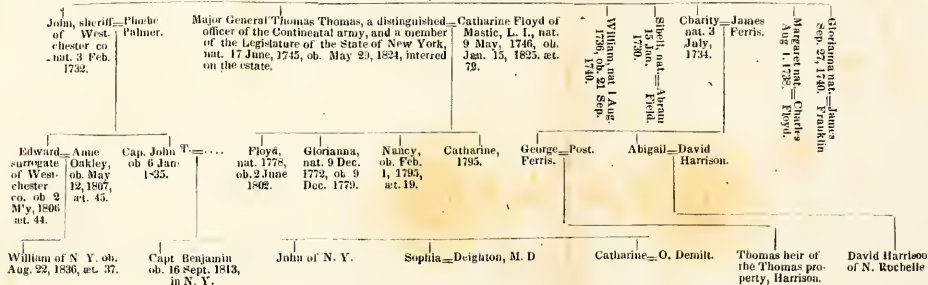


## PEDIGREE OF THOMAS OF HARRISON.

Arms, gu. or a chev. or; betw. three herons az. four barrulets az. Crest, a heron's head erased az. gorged with a garland of roses, gu

Rev. John Thomas a missionary of the Honorable Propagation Society at Philadelphia, 1703, .....  
and first rector of St. George's Church, Hempstead, L. I., 1704. ob. 1724-4, buried at Hempstead,

Hon. John Thomas, First Judge of the county of Westchester and a Representative in General Assembly. ob. May 2, 1777; interred in Trinity churchyard. = Abigail, da. of John Sands of Sands Point, L. I., nat. Jan. 1708, mar. 19 Feb. 1729, ob. 14 Aug. 1782; buried at Bedford.





carcase; nay, more, pray tell them said he, that Epaminondas like, I shall fight upon the stumps for that purest and best of churches, as long as God indulges me with the least ability to do it. "After this (continues Dr. Carmichael) we find no more letters from Mr. Thomas to the society, whose distinguished ornament he was, and presume from other circumstances, that he died near about that time; but, in the Society's annual report printed in London, Feb. 16th, 1727, we have discovered the following touching memento, viz., a gratuity of £50, to Mrs. Thomas, is voted, the widow of the late Rev. Mr. Thomas, missionary at Hempstead, in New York, in consideration of his long and faithful services, upwards of 20 years."<sup>a</sup>

His eldest son, was the Hon. John Thomas, (already alluded to) first Judge of the county of Westchester, and for many years a representative in the general assembly of the province. This distinguished gentleman was a warm whig, and took an active part in the scenes that preceded the Revolution, on which account he was particularly obnoxious to the enemy. Judge Thomas was seized in his bed by a party of British troops, at 10 o'clock on Sunday morning, March 22d, 1777, and conveyed to New York, where he was committed to the Provost. Here he lingered until the 2d of May, 1777, when (between four and five o'clock in the morning of that day,) death released him from his sufferings. His remains were interred the following Saturday evening between seven and eight o'clock in Trinity Church yard.<sup>b</sup> "The following is a brief summary" (says Dr. Thatcher) of the systematic method adopted and practiced for "the destruction of American prisoners," as taken from the New London Gazette, from General Washington's letter of complaint to General Howe, and from the verbal statement of the officers and soldiers who have returned from New York, by exchange. They were crowded into the holds of prison ships, where they were almost suffocated for want of air, and into churches, and open sugar houses, &c., without covering or a spark of fire. Their allow-

---

<sup>a</sup> Carmichael's Hist. of St. George's Church, p. 28.

<sup>b</sup> Extracted from James Franklin's Bible.

ance of provisions and water for three days, was insufficient for one, and in some instances, they were four days entirely destitute of food. The pork and bread, for they had no other sustenance, and even water allowed them were of the worst possible quality, and totally unfit for human beings. A minute detail of their dreadful sufferings, would only serve to harrow up the feelings of surviving friends. As a gross outrage against the principles of humanity, suffice it to say, that in consequence of the most barbarous treatment, died within a few weeks, not less than fifteen hundred American soldiers, brave young men, the pride and shield of our country. After death had released the sufferers, their bodies were dragged out of the prisons and piled up without doors, till enough were collected for a cart load, when they were carted out and tumbled into a ditch, and slightly covered with earth."<sup>a</sup>

By his wife Abigail, the Hon. John Thomas left issue, (beside four daughters,) John Thomas, High Sheriff of Westchester county, in 1778,<sup>b</sup> William Thomas, and Major General Thomas Thomas of Harrison. The latter individual was one of the most prominent whigs of the north, a distinguished military officer,<sup>c</sup> sheriff of the county, (in 1778) and one of the first members of the state legislature. The following notice of his capture by the Queen's rangers in 1777, is thus related by Lieutenant Col. Simcoe.

"Before the troops went into winter quarters, it was necessary that sufficient boards should be procured to hut those who were to remain in the vicinity of King's Bridge, and the light troops were of the parties who collected them. Lt. Colonel Simcoe proposed to General Tryon, who commanded the British, to take down Ward's house,<sup>d</sup> and the buildings in its vicinity; and that, while a covering party should halt there, he would attempt to surprise Col. Thomas, (a very active partizan of the enemy,) and a

---

<sup>a</sup> James Thatcher's Military Journal, Feb. 1777, page 77.

<sup>b</sup> This gentleman was the last *High Sheriff* of the county before, and the first appointed after the war.

<sup>c</sup> General Thomas was elected chairman of Public Safety, in 1776.

<sup>d</sup> See Fast Chester.

post of dragoons, nearly twenty miles beyond it. General Tryon acquiesced in the proposal, and directed it to be put in execution, but seemed very doubtful, whether so wary a person as Thomas could be circumvented. Lt. Col. Simcoe marched all night, with Emmerick's and the Queen's rangers, and surrounded Thomas' house by daybreak. He never lay at home before that night, and had done so in consequence of the British troops in general being gone into winter quarters, and one of his own spies being deceived, and made to believe that the Queen's rangers were to march to Long Island. One shot was fired from the window, which, unfortunately killed a man by the side of Lieut. Col. Simcoe. The house was immediately forced, and, no resistance being made, the officers shut the doors of the different rooms, to prevent the irritated soldiers from revenging their unfortunate comrade. The man who fired, was the only person killed: but Thomas, after Lt. Col. Simcoe had personally protected him and ensured his safety, jumped out of the window, and, springing over some fences, would have certainly escaped, notwithstanding most of Emmerick's riflemen fired at him, had not an hussar leapt after him and cut at him with his sword, (which he crouched from, and luckily escaped,) when he surrendered. The cavalry proceeded on to the enemy's picquet, at a mile distance. They had been alarmed by the firing, and were formed. They fired their carbines (by which Captain Ogden, of Emmerick's, was wounded) and fled; they were pursued, but to no purpose. The troops returned to General Tryon, who was, in person, at Ward's house, and who was much pleased at this mischievous partizan's being taken. This march was above fifty miles."<sup>a</sup>

General Thomas was subsequently paroled, and ultimately exchanged. Upon his death, which took place in 1824, the Thomas property in this town passed by will to the heir of his sister, Charity Thomas, who married James Ferris of Throckmorton's neck. Their grandson Thomas Ferris is the present

---

<sup>a</sup> Simcoe's Military Journal, Bartlett & Welford, N. Y. p. 92, 93.

proprietor. Of this family is the Hon. Charles G. Ferris, late member of Congress from the city of New York.

The remains of the Thomas family are interred within a neat inclosure, situated on the west side of the estate. Here are a number of memorials inscribed as follows.<sup>a</sup>

SACRED  
to the memory  
of  
MAJOR GENERAL  
THOMAS THOMAS,  
who died on the 29th May,  
A. D. 1824,  
in the 79th year of his age.  
As a soldier of the Revolution  
of 1776,  
he aided in achieving  
the independence of the  
United States :  
as a member of the legislature  
of the State of New York,  
he assisted in laying the  
foundation of those institutions  
that are intended to perpetuate the  
Republic.

SACRED  
to the memory of  
CATHARINE THOMAS,  
widow of  
Thomas Thomas,  
who died the 15th day of  
January, A. D. 1825,  
in the 79th year of her age.

SACRED  
to the memory  
of  
CHARLES FLOYD THOMAS,  
son of Thomas Thomas,  
and Catharine Thomas,  
who died on the 2d of  
January, A. D. 1802,  
in the 24th year of his age.

---

<sup>a</sup> There are also memorials to Nancy Thomas, daughter of General Thomas and Gloriana Thomas.

The Field family were also among the early settlers of Harrison's purchase. Anthony Field<sup>a</sup> having removed from Flushing to this town in 1725. He was the father of six sons, Thomas, Samuel, Benjamin, William, Moses and John,<sup>b</sup> whose descendants are very numerous in the county.

The small settlement of Purchase is pleasantly situated in the northern corner of the town, on the south-east side of Rye-pond. It contains two meeting houses belonging to the Society of Friends, a store and a post-office.<sup>c</sup> Upon the road from Rye to Bedford passing through this place, are several dwellings.

The first Friends meeting house appears to have been erected prior to the Revolutionary war, upon ground given for that purpose by Anthony Field.<sup>d</sup> The oldest memorial in the grave yard contains the following inscription.

R. W.

March 31, 1731.

During the war the Friends meeting house was occupied as an hospital by the American army.

Within a short distance of the Purchase lies Rye-pond, a beautiful sheet of water covering over two hundred and ten acres of ground. In this pond vast quantities of pickerel are annually taken with hook and line, and pleasant sport is afforded to those who are fond of trolling.<sup>e</sup> Its waters abound also with almost every other variety of fresh water fish. The best place for fishing is said to be a flat rock near the centre of the pond.

Rye-pond has an outlet on the west which passes into the little pond of the same name, and from thence into Bronx's river.<sup>f</sup>

The principal proprietors of the land bordering the pond, are

<sup>a</sup> Anthony Field was the son of Benjamin Field of Flushing. For further particulars of this family, see pedigree.

<sup>b</sup> This individual is the ancestor of the Fields of Yorktown and New York.

<sup>c</sup> There is also an African Church and school house in the vicinity, under the patronage of the Friends.

<sup>d</sup> Anthony Field is buried in the Friends grave yard at Purchase.

<sup>e</sup> No fishing is allowed in the ponds with any kind of net or seine.

<sup>f</sup> Rye-pond is the principal source of the Bronx.

Ezra Carpenter on the south, Thomas Clapp on the east, and Oliver Matthews on the north.

The late Thomas Clapp of this town left one hundred and fifty acres on the west side of the pond for the education of poor children at the Purchase.

A little south-west of this place is situated the farm and residence of the Hon. Joseph H. Anderson, late member of Congress for the seventh district. The house commands a very fine and extensive prospect of the Sound and surrounding country. Joseph H. Anderson is the son of Jeremiah Anderson, Esq., who for many years represented this county in Assembly.

“Upon the 23d of October, 1776, Col. Tyler’s, Huntington’s and Throop’s regiments of General Parson’s brigade, and of Gen. Heath’s division moved, and took post at the head of King street, near Rye-pond.”<sup>a</sup>

“On the 4th of December, 1781, (says General Heath) Captain Sackett of the New York levies near Harrison purchase below the lines, having gone a small distance from his detachment on the morning of the 2d, was taken prisoner by a party of the enemy. The enemy afterward attacked Lieutenant Mosher to whom the command of the detachment fell. Lieutenant Mosher and the detachment behaved with great bravery, repulsed the enemy, killed one of them and two horses, and wounded eight of the enemy, among them a Captain Kipp, said mortally. Colonel Holmes and Captain Kipp had their horses killed under them, the levies had not a man killed or wounded.”<sup>b</sup>

The above engagement took place in the vicinity of Merritt’s tavern. Mosher’s command consisted of only eighteen men, while the British horse under Colonel Holmes numbered over seventy.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Heath’s Mem. 75, 76. From a return of militia officers for Harrison’s Precinct, February 9th, 1776, it appears that John Thomas, minor, was chosen captain, Gilbert Dusenberry first lieutenant, William Woodward second lieutenant and James Miller, jun. ensign.

<sup>b</sup> Heath’s Mem. p. 324.

<sup>c</sup> A full narrative of this memorable event has been published in almost every country in Europe, showing what a handful of infantry can do, opposed to a strong



We believe the whole period of the American war cannot produce such another instance, in which the enemy were repulsed by so small a force. General Washington himself often spoke of this brilliant affair, and praised the gallantry of the brave Mosher.<sup>a</sup>

The surface of this town is mostly level ; soil, loam, fertile and well cultivated, drained by Blind Brook (Mockquams) and Mamaroneck River, running south into Long Island Sound, supplying mill seats in abundance.<sup>b</sup> The south line of the town is about one mile from the Sound, and the northeast corner touches upon the west line of Connecticut. The growth of wood consists principally of oak of all kinds, chestnut, much hickory, ash and elm, &c. &c.

The following extracts from the town records relate to the election of town officers at the commencement of the Revolution, and immediately subsequent :—

“ On Tuesday, the 2d of April, 1776, the freeholders, inhabitants of Harrison’s Precinct, met at the place appointed by law, and made choice of the following town officers :—

Samuel Haviland, Supervisor,

William Miller, Town Clerk,

Joshua Hunt,

John Haight,

Wellsey Dusenbery,

} Assessors,

Joseph Carpenter, Highway Master for lower part,

David Halstead, “ “ the middle,

force of horse. Seven of Mosher’s party were from the farm of General Pierre van Cortlandt, Cortlandtown.

<sup>a</sup> On the east side of the road leading from the Purchase to Rye, lies the grave of an old veteran by the name of John Peter Follow, who died at the advanced age of 120. He requested that the following epitaph might be inscribed on his tomb stone :—

“ Here lies as good a soldier  
as ever fought in Flanders.”

Also, in the same vicinity, Louis Burling, a colored soldier of the Revolution, who served as a private in Col. Samuel Pell’s regiment.

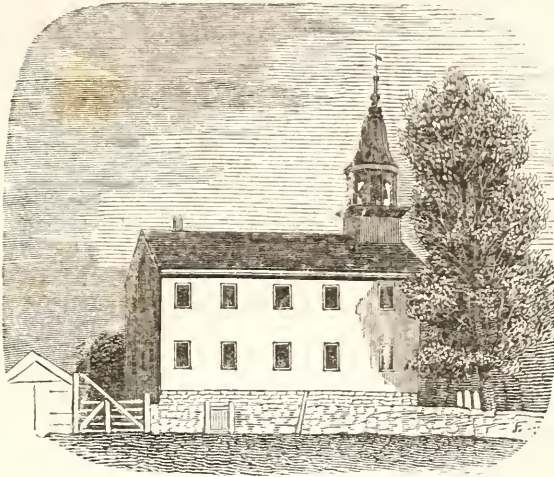
<sup>b</sup> Upon the Mockquams, or Blind Brook, is situated the grist mill of the late Gen. Thomas.

Stephen Field, Highway Master for the upper,  
 William Ascough, “ “ Brown’s Point,  
 William Woodward, “ “ North street,  
 Job Hadden, “ “ West and Haight  
 streets, all to the usual bounds.

Samuel Haviland, } Fence and Damage Viewers,  
 Thomas Park, }  
 Thomas Park, Pownder.”

At a town meeting held this first day of April, 1783, in Harrison’s Precinct, State of New York, the following town officers were chosen to serve the ensuing year:—

“ Isaiah Maynard, Supervisor,  
 Stephen Field, Town Clerk.  
 James Miller, Constable and Collector.  
 Thomas Thomas, }  
 William Woodward, } Assessors,  
 Thomas Carpenter, }  
 Henry Dusenbery, Pownder,  
 John Cromwell, Overseer of the Highway for the upper  
 part of the Precinct,  
 Richard Barnes for the middle part,  
 Joseph Carpenter for the lower part,  
 Roger Purdy for North street,  
 Job Haddon, jr., for the west part of the patent,  
 Henry Dusenbery, } Fence and Damage Viewers.  
 Elisha Horton, }



Presbyterian Church, Lewisborough.

## LEWISBOROUGH.

LEWISBOROUGH is situated eighteen miles north of the village of White Plains,—distant fifty miles from New York, and one hundred and nineteen from Albany,—bounded north by North Salem, east by

the State of Connecticut, south by Connecticut and the towns of Poundridge and Bedford, and west by Somers.

This town, prior to 1808, was called Salem, and afterward South Salem, to distinguish it from the northern town of that name.<sup>a</sup> In 1840 the name was again changed to Lewisborough, in compliment to John Lewis, Esq., a liberal benefactor to its common schools.

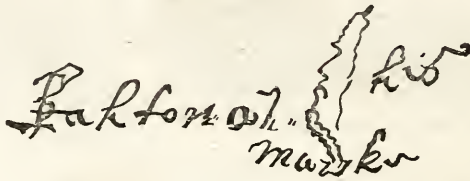
The earliest sale of lands in this town is to be found in an Indian deed bearing date 15th of August, 1653, wherein Ponus Sagamore, of Toquams, and Onox, his son, (for the value of four coats,) conveyed to the people of Stamford all their land, extending sixteen miles north of the town plot of Stamford, and "*two miles still further north*, for the pasture of their cattle," &c.<sup>b</sup> The above sale clearly embraced a large proportion (perhaps the whole) of Lewisborough. Some of these lands must have subsequently reverted to the Indians, for in 1699 the Kitchawan tribe again released the same territory to Stephanus van Cortlandt. This individual had previously obtained a charter from the

<sup>a</sup> Salem was incorporated on the 18th of March, 1791.

<sup>b</sup> See page 6.

Crown, erecting the whole of his possession into the lordship and manor of Cortlandt,<sup>a</sup> by which means the northern part of this town, came to be included in the manor.

On the 5th of July, 1701, we find Catoonah, Indian Sagamore, confirming to the inhabitants of Stamford "all those lands which extend westward as far as the west bounds of Bedford purchase and marked trees, and by the east bounds of the same, bounded north by the south side of Bedford purchase, and by the stone hills upon a straight line eastward unto the *upper end of the Long Pond*, and, further, on an east line, until it meets with a line drawn north from the upper end of Five Mile River, which is the east line of our several purchases."<sup>b</sup>



From this time we hear no more of the aboriginal proprietors of Salem.

Lewisborough includes seven miles in length of the south end of a tract of land called the Oblong. This territory was a strip of one mile three quarters and twenty rods wide, formed by the running of a line parallel with Hudson's River, and twenty miles distant therefrom to the south line of Massachusetts. The controversy between the two colonies of New York and Connecticut concerning it lasted nearly a century, during which time the disputed ground afforded a sort of sanctuary for the most desperate kind of outlaws and robbers. Some improvement, however, must have taken place prior to the settlement of the boundary, since we find the people living on the Oblong, between the governments of New York and Connecticut, employing the religious services of the Rev. Mr. Dibble, Rector of Stamford.<sup>c</sup>

The commissioners appointed for settling the lines, assembled at

<sup>a</sup> See Royal Charter of Cortlandt.

<sup>b</sup> Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut.

<sup>c</sup> Reports of Propagation Society.

Greenwich, April 29th, 1725, when they came to the following agreement as to the means of ascertaining the lines, viz., "they are the westernmost line, called eight miles, the line running east northeast thirteen miles and sixty-four rods from the eight mile line, the line called parallel with the Hudson's River, and twenty miles from it, extending from the end of the line thirteen miles and sixty-four rods northward to Massachusetts line; the parallel line *was in two lines, having one angle in it.* The equivalent land they estimated at 61,440 acres, which has to be taken from Connecticut on the east side of the parallel line."<sup>a</sup>

The angle above mentioned (sometimes called Cortlandt's Point) was situated near the southwest shore of Lake Wacabuck (Long Pond.) Here the commissioners, who surveyed the manor of Cortlandt in 1734, erected a monument, which they "deemed and esteemed twenty miles distant from Cortlandt's Point, at the mouth of the Highlands."

"The complete settlement of the boundary line (says the historian Smith) was not made till the 14th of May, 1731, when indentures, certifying the execution of the agreement in 1725, were mutually signed by the commissioners and surveyors of both colonies.

Upon the establishment of this partition, a tract of land lying on the *Connecticut* side, consisting of above sixty thousand acres, from its figure called the *Oblong*, was ceded to *New York*, as an equivalent for lands near the *Sound*, surrendered to *Connecticut*.<sup>b</sup>

The very day after the surrender made by that colony, a patent passed in London to Sir Joseph Eyles and others, intended to convey the whole *Oblong*. A grant posterior to the other was also regularly made here, to Hawley and Company, of the greatest part of the same tract, which the British patentees brought a bill in chancery to repeal. But the defendants filed an answer containing so many objections against the English patent, that the suit remains still unprosecuted, and the American proprietors

---

<sup>a</sup> Letters on Boundaries. Hartford; Letter 117.

<sup>b</sup> See Douglas's late Plan of the British Dominions of New England.

have ever since held the possession. Mr. Harrison, of the council, solicited this controversy for Sir Joseph Eyles and his partners, which contributed, in a great degree, to the troubles so remarkable in a succeeding administration.”<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 8th of June, 1731, the following letters patent were issued, under the great seal, to Thomas Hawley and his associates :—

“ It is hereby certified, that whereas Thomas Hawley, Nathan St. John, Samuel Smith, Benjamin Benedict, Richard Olmsted, Thomas Smith, Ebenezer Smith, Daniel Sherwood, Benjamin Burt, Thomas Hyatt, Benjamin Wilson, Joseph Lee, Joseph Keeler, James Benedict, Richard Osborn, Samuel Smith, Daniel Olmsted, Timothy Keeler, Jonah Keeler, Matthew Seymour, Joseph Northrup, James Brown, Adam Ireland, John Thomas, and Benjamin Birdsall, inhabitants of the town of Ridgefield, as of the eastern parts of this province, by their humble petition, presented unto his Excellency in council, the third day of September, setting forth that they and their ancestors have for a long time been settled upon, cultivated and improved, certain lands near the eastern parts of this province, *held by patent from the colony of Connecticut* ; but that, contrary to their expectations, some of the lands to be sold by patent from the colony of Connecticut are supposed to be within that part of the province of New York, commonly called the *Equivalent Lands*, and that the petitioners, together with their associates, would be willing to defray the charge and expense of finding out and ascertaining the true partition lines between both the said colonies, provided that 50,000 acres of the said lands be granted to the petitioners ; and whereas, the partition lines between the said colonies have been accordingly run out and ascertained by commissioners for both the said colonies, being thereunto duly commissioned and appointed, and sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty acres of land of the said colony of Connecticut were lately, at the settling of the said partition lines, surrendered to the said province of New York, for the use of his Majesty ; wherefore the petitioners prayed his Excellency would be favorably pleased to grant to them, their heirs and assigns, his Majesty’s letters patent for 50,000 acres of the said land under such quit rent, provisions and restrictions as is and are directed in his Excellency’s commissions and instructions ; which petition being then and there read and considered of, his Majesty’s council of this province, did afterwards, on the same day, humbly advise and consent that his Excellency do grant the prayer of the same, &c., given, &c. four several tracts, the first of which begins at the monument where the two lines intersect which are the eastwardly bounds of the said surrendered lands, and is one mile, three

---

<sup>a</sup> Smith’s Hist. of N. Y. p. 177.

quarters of a mile, and fifty-two rods distant on a line running north eighty-four degrees east from the monument, and the end of the twenty mile line from Cortlandt's Point west to the east end of Long Pond, &c., then along south side of said pond to the easterly bounds of said surrendered lands.

The second tract begins at the monument, standing at two miles from the monument, at the end of the twenty miles from Cortlandt's Point.

The third begins at the eighth mile monument, on the westwardly bounds of the said surrendered lands, on the line running north twelve degrees and thirty minutes east from the monument, at the end of the twenty miles from Cortlandt's Point.

The fourth tract begins at the thirty-fourth mile from the monument, at the end of the twenty miles from Cortlandt's Point, &c. Given, under our hands, at New York, this eighth day of June, in the fourth year of his Majesty's reign, A. D. 1731.<sup>a</sup>

J. MONTGOMERIE.

On the 8th of January, 1752, John Bowton of the East patent, granted a tract of land, consisting of eighty acres, to Benjamin Rockwell for the sum of £249.

The same year letters patent were granted to James Brown of the county of Westchester, gentleman, for "four several tracts of land within that tract of land called the Equivalent lands, lately surrendered by our colony of Connecticut to our colony of New York, first beginning on the western bounds of the said Equivalent, at the south-west corner of a tract of land in or late granted to Thomas Hawley and others, known by the name of lot No. 9, containing 1100 acres," &c. 22d August, 1752.<sup>b</sup>

The following receipt appears to have been given for quit-rent due on the East patent in 1760.

"Received of the owners and proprietors of the East patent, to wit, Thomas Hawley and others, for a tract of 50,000 acres of land in Westchester and Dutchess counties, commonly called the Oblong, by the hands of Abraham King, £1382 1s. 5d., proved money, being the full balance of quit-rent which was due her majesty on the said patent, to the 8th day of June, 1760, old style, as witness my hand this 21st day of March, 1760.

"RICHARD NICHOLLS,

"*Deputy Receiver General.*"

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. No. i. 1.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. No. xii. 451.

Upon the partition of Cortlandt's manor in 1734, the lots (included in this town) fell in the following order to the devisees and heirs of Stephanus van Cortlandt, viz., one-half of south lot No. 7, east of the Croton, to Stephen van Cortlandt; ditto No. 8, Gertrude Beeckman; ditto No. 9, Margaret Bayard; ditto No. 10, Mr. Skinner. The above lots have been long since distributed among numerous grantees, such as the Meads, Keelers, Rockwells, Ferrises, and Bowtons, &c., &c.

The general surface of Lewisborough is hilly and even mountainous; much attention, however, has been paid to the improvement of the soil, which consists of clay mixed with a sandy loam. The whole township is well irrigated. Croton river runs along the north-west corner while Cross river (the outlet of Lake Wacabuck) waters the central portion. Tatomuck river also rises within its limits; each of these streams supply numerous mill seats.

Upon the high hills which rise to the east of Cross river (near the eastern border of the town,) is situated the village of South Salem. This place contains several scattered dwellings, two stores, a post-office, (first established in March, 1813,) and a Presbyterian church.

The scenery of the neighborhood is uncommonly beautiful, abounding in rich woods, deep valleys, and fertile pastures. The air also of its mountainous regions is said to be very salubrious. An opening through the hills to the south-west affords a fine view of the distant stony mountains, and the great valley of Cross river.

The Presbyterian church of South Salem occupies a commanding position near the centre of the village. It is a handsome wooden structure, sixty feet by forty, surmounted with a tower and spire. The latter serves as a beacon to the surrounding country.

The first notice of this church occurs on the 19th of May, 1752, "when a convention of ministers assembled at Salem, upon the desire of the people." The same year there appear to have been eighteen members in connection with this society. The Presbyterian church of Lower Salem was first incorporated on the 4th of January, 1784. Abijah Gilbert, Jacob Hoyt, Matthew Sey-



mour, Gideon Seely, Michael Halstead, and Nathaniel Newman, trustees.<sup>a</sup>

Besides a small parsonage this church possesses an extensive glebe, consisting of about thirty acres of improved land and seventy of woodland. In the year 1800 the trustees petitioned the legislature for an act to enable them to sell certain lands for the benefit of the church. The act was passed March, 1800, and is entitled an act to authorize the trustees of the Presbyterian church and congregation of the town of Salem to sell and dispose of certain lands for the benefit of the said church and congregation.

“Whereas the trustees and society of the Presbyterian church and congregation of the town of Salem, in the county of Westchester, have by their petition to the legislature, prayed for leave to sell, for the benefit of the said church and congregation, certain lands belonging to the said church and congregation, in the town of Salem aforesaid, thereupon: Be it enacted by the people of the state of New York, represented in senate and assembly, that full power, good right, and lawful authority shall be and hereby is granted to the trustees of the said church and congregation to sell, alien in fee, all right and title belonging to the said church and congregation, vested in them as trustees of and in all such lands, situate, lying and being in the town of Salem, in Westchester county, as they from time to time may deem necessary for the purpose of procuring other lands on which a parsonage house may be more conveniently erected, and for erecting the same. Provided always that the lands so to be sold by virtue of this act shall not exceed the quantity of fifty acres.<sup>b</sup>

This church and congregation are in connection with the Bedford Presbytery.

LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH AT  
SOUTH SALEM.

<i>Instal or call.</i>	<i>Ministers.</i>	<i>Vacated by.</i>
19th May, 1752,	Rev. Solomon Mead,	Death.

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib., A. p. 2.

<sup>b</sup> Laws of N. Y. 1800, p. 47.

27th Nov. 1804,	“ John Ely,	Resig.
“ 1813,	“ Jacob Burbank,	the same.
“ 1817,	“ Clark Hart,	} supplies.
“ 1819,	“ Abraham Andries,	
“ 1820,	“ Charles F. Butler,	Resig.
1st May, 1823,	“ Stephen Saunders,	the same.
9th Oct. 1834,	“ Reuben Frame,	present pastor.

*Church Memoranda.*

1804, 51 members, 1826, 173 members, 2 baptized.  
 1836, 212 ditto 6 baptized. 1846, 226 ditto 7 ditto.

The grave yard surrounding the church contains memorials to the families of the Keelers, Rockwells, Ferrises, Gilberts, Loundsberrys and Meads, &c. &c.

“ Green is the church yard, beautiful and green.”  
 “ Ridge rising gently by the side of ridge.”

In the south-west corner appears a neat marble slab inscribed to the

Memory of the  
 REV. SOLOMON MEAD,  
 First Pastor of the Presbyterian  
 Church in this place, Æ. 86.  
 He had the charge of this people,  
 48 years.

Ob. September, 1812.  
 While marble monuments decay  
 The righteous live in endless day,  
 And earthly temples turn to dust,  
 Blest is the memory of the just.

Also a monument erected in

Memory of  
 CAPT JOSEPH WEBSTER,  
 who died  
 Jan. 16, 1838,  
 aged 81 years  
 and 12 days.

A mission of the Church of England was organized in this town sometime prior to the Revolutionary war. Its first trustees are said to have been Gershom Sellick, Mr. Brown and others. Soon after its establishment, Benjamin Brown of Norwalk made a liberal benefaction of one hundred acres of land, as a glebe for the support of a minister. The first church edifice was erected by the inhabitants of Salem, (for the use of the Episcopal mission,) at the commencement of the Revolution. The building was constructed of the very best timber, and contained three hundred and sixty-five braces. It stood upon the land of Jeremiah Keeler, near the road-side leading from South Salem to Ridgefield.

Some of the most active members of the mission having joined the army, (at the commencement of hostilities,) it was found absolutely necessary to dispose of the building to satisfy the claims of the contractor, Mr. Benjamin Chapman. This individual subsequently purchased it and converted the same into a tavern. For many years it was known as the Church tavern. Mr. Chapman afterwards sold the property, with the dwelling house, to J. L. Morehouse, from whom it passed to the present Mr. Jeremiah Keeler. In 1796, Mr. Keeler dismantled the building and removed the materials.<sup>a</sup>

On the 19th of May, 1811, the Episcopal church was incorporated under the style of "the church-wardens and vestrymen of the corporation of the Protestant Episcopal Church of Salem." At a previous meeting of the members of this church, held on the 15th of October, 1810, the following officers had been duly elected for the year ensuing, viz: Angus McCarroll, William Sherwood, church-wardens; Henry Hoyt, Gould Bouton, jun., Jesse Jarvis, Samuel B. Isaacs, Samuel Ambler, Joseph Nash, Absolom Holmes and James Church, vestrymen.<sup>b</sup>

In 1815 this church was visited by the Rev. Theodosius Bar-tow of New Rochelle, and the same year Mr. George Weller was

---

<sup>a</sup> Communicated by Henry Keeler and others.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A.

licensed as a lay reader for the same.<sup>a</sup> Occasional services were also performed here by the Rev. Elias Cooper of Yonkers, the Rev. Samuel Haskell of Rye, and the Rev. John McVickar, &c.

The first delegate from this church to the diocesan convention, in 1811, was Mr. Samuel B. Isaacs.

*Notitia Parochialis.*

1811, communicants 10, baptisms 7, families 15.

For a number of years no Episcopal services have been performed in this town.

The house now occupied by Jacob Gibber, situated a little north of the Presbyterian Church, is celebrated as having been the temporary prison of Major John André, Adjutant General of the British army. From this place he penned the letter to General Washington, disclosing his true character. "After the capture of André by the three farmers of Westchester, (says Sparks,) the latter resolved to convey their prisoner to the nearest military post, which was then stationed at North Castle, under the command of Lt. Col. Jameson. From North Castle the prisoner was foolishly forwarded by that officer, under the charge of Lieut. Allen and a guard, to General Arnold. Upon the return of Major Tallmadge, (who it seems had been out on duty,) to North Castle, and having inspected the papers, he earnestly requested, that the prisoner might be brought back, to which Jameson at last consented. In the latter's order of countermand to Lieutenant Allen, he says, "from some circumstances which I have just discovered, I have reason to fear, that a party of the enemy is above, and as I would not have Anderson retaken, or get away, I desire that you will proceed to Lower Salem, with him, and deliver him to Capt. Hoogland, &c. &c.

Some mistake appears to have been made in the orders, for André was returned to North Castle. It was now agreed upon by Jameson and Tallmadge, "that it was best to keep Anderson in close custody, till something more should be known about him, or till orders should be received from General Washington. As

---

<sup>a</sup> This gentleman was subsequently ordained in North Salem.

Lower Salem was farther within the American lines than North Castle ; and, as Col. Sheldon's quarters were there, it was thought advisable for him to be removed to that place. Major Tallmadge commanded the escort, and continued with the prisoner from that time, till he arrived at Tappan. It will be remembered that eight or nine days previous to the taking of André, a letter had been received by Major Tallmadge from Arnold, in which he requested Tallmadge, if a man by the name of Anderson should come within the lines, to send him to head quarters with two horsemen, and to bear him company in person, if his business would permit. This incident, connected with the circumstances of the capture of the prisoner, who called himself Anderson, and with the obvious disguise he now assumed, confirmed Tallmadge's suspicions, though the nature and extent of the plans in agitation he could only conjecture, as Anderson revealed nothing and mentioned no names. On the arrival of André at Lower Salem, about 8 o'clock in the morning, he was introduced to Mr. Bronson, who was attached to Sheldon's regiment, and who occupied a small apartment which he consented to share with the prisoner. The room could be easily guarded, as it had but one door and one window. André appeared much fatigued, and at first was little inclined to talk. His clothes were soiled, and he accepted a change from Mr. Bronson, while his linen and nankeen under dress was sent to the washerwoman.

Becoming refreshed and more at ease, he relaxed into familiar conversation, which, with his agreeable and courteous manners, excited the interest and secured the good will of his room-mate. He resorted to his favorite resource for amusement, and sketched with a pencil a group of ludicrous figures, representing himself and his escort under march. He presented the sketch to Bronson, saying, "this will give you an idea of the style in which I have had the honor to be conducted to my present abode." In diversions of this kind the morning passed away. As it was known to André that the papers found on his person had been transmitted to General Washington, who must soon receive them, and it being now evident, that he would not himself be sent to Arnold, he perceived that any further attempts at concealment would be unavailing, and resolved to stand forth in his true char-

acter, seeking no other mitigation of his case, than such as could be granted on the strict principles of honor and military usage. With this view he wrote in Bronson's room, his first letter to General Washington,

*“ Salem, 24 September, 1780.*

“ SIR,—

“ What I have as yet said concerning myself, was in the justifiable attempt to be extricated; I am too little accustomed to duplicity to have succeeded.

“ I beg your excellency will be persuaded, that no alteration in the temper of my mind, or apprehension for my safety, induces me to take the step of addressing you; but that it is to rescue myself from an imputation of having assumed a mean character for treacherous purposes or self interest; a conduct incompatible with the principles that actuate me; as well as with my conduct in life.

“ It is to vindicate my fame that I speak, and not to solicit security.

“ The person in your possession is Major John André, Adjutant General to the British Army.

“ The influence of one commander in the army of his adversary is an advantage taken in war. A correspondence for this purpose I held; as confidential (in the present instance) with his Excellency Sir Henry Clinton.

“ To favor it, I agreed to meet upon ground not within the posts of either army a person, who was to give me intelligence; I came up in the Vulture man-of-war for this effect, and was fetched by a boat from the ship to the beach. Being there, I was told that the approach of day would prevent my return, and that I must be concealed until the next night. I was in my regimentals, and had fairly risked my person.

“ Against my stipulation, my intention, and without my knowledge beforehand, I was conducted within one of your posts. Your excellency may conceive my sensation on this occasion, and will imagine how much more must I have been affected by a refusal to reconduct me back the next night, as I had been brought. Thus become a prisoner, I had to concert my escape.

I quitted my uniform, and was passed another way in the night, without the American posts, to neutral ground, and informed I was beyond all armed parties, and left to press to New York. I was taken at Tarrytown by some volunteers.

“ Thus, as I have had the honor to relate, was I betrayed (being Adjutant General of the British army,) into the vile condition of an enemy in disguise within your posts.

“ Having avowed myself a British officer, I have nothing to reveal but what relates to myself, which is true on the honor of an officer and a gentleman.

“ The request I have to make to your excellency, and I am conscious I address myself well, is, that in any rigor policy may dictate, a decency of conduct towards me may mark, that, though unfortunate, I am branded with nothing dishonorable, as no motive could be mine but the service of my King, and as I was involuntarily an impostor.

“ Another request is, that I may be permitted to write an open letter to Sir. Henry Clinton, and another to a friend for clothes and linen.

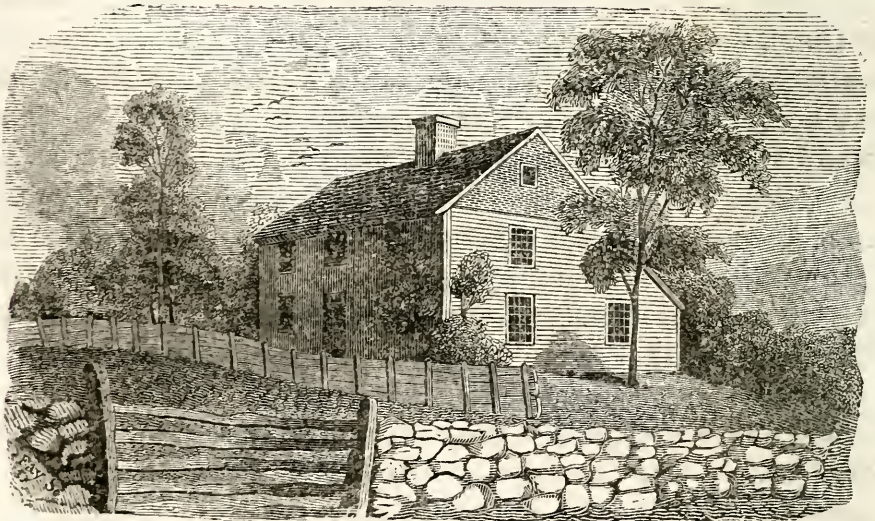
“ I take the liberty to mention the condition of some gentlemen at Charleston, who being either on parole or under protection, were engaged in a conspiracy against us. Though their situation is not similar, they are objects who may be set in exchange for me, or are persons whom the treatment I receive might affect.

“ It is no less, sir, in confidence of the generosity of your mind, than on account of your superior station, that I have chosen to importune you with this letter. I have the honor to be, with great respect, sir, your excellency’s most obedient and humble servant,

“ *John André, Adjutant General.*”

When he had finished this letter, he handed it open to Major Tallmadge, who perused it with astonishment and strong emotion; for, although he believed the writer to be a military man, yet he had not supposed him a person of such rank, nor dreamed of the dangerous plot in which he had been acting a part. The letter was sealed and sent to General Washington. From that moment André’s mind seemed relieved. He became cheerful, and his good humor, affable address, and attractive pow-

ers of conversation, gained upon the hearts of the officers, and won from them reciprocal kindness and civilities.<sup>a</sup> As soon as General Washington had ascertained the full extent of the treason, instantaneous preparations were made for the defence of West Point, and "an order dispatched to Col. Jameson, directing him to send André under a strong guard to Robinson's house. The express arrived about midnight at Lower Salem, and at that hour an officer came with the message to André. He started up quickly from his bed and obeyed the summons. The rain fell in torrents, and the night was dark and dismal. Mr. Bronson says, that, on taking leave, he expressed a deep sense of the obligations he was under, for the delicate and courteous treatment he had received from the officers of the regiment with whom he had become acquainted, and declared that, whatever might be his future destiny, he could never meet them as enemies. The guard marched all night, and in the morning of the next day, September 26th, André arrived at Robinson's house, in the custody of Major Tallmadge."<sup>b</sup> From whence he was taken the same evening to West Point.



Colonel Sheldon's head-quarters at Lower Salem. The west window on the ground floor belongs to the room in which André wrote his first letter to Washington.

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 231, 235, 6, 7, 8.

<sup>b</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 253, 4.



The ravages of time have made but little progress upon the old quarters of André at Salem; the small room still remains, with its single door and solitary window looking out upon the road.

Between two and three miles north-west of the village of South Salem lies Lake Wacabuck, (Long Pond,) a beautiful sheet of water, covering over two hundred and twelve acres of ground. Near by is another pond connected with the former by a small stream. Both are fed and supplied chiefly, (perhaps entirely,) by springs and rivulets from the great Long Pond mountain. The northern shore of the lake is bordered with hanging woods, and surrounded by rocky mountains of the most picturesque form, presenting altogether an interesting scene as the traveller approaches from Lower Salem. The hills on the southern shore are much lower, but equally attractive; their bases being profusely covered with foliage to the very margin of the water. Its shores are also diversified with wooded points. Lake Wacabuck was once famous for the abundance of its beavers (castor fiber.) It is upwards of fifteen years since, that the last solitary hermit was observed upon the edge of the lake. This animal had been noticed at different intervals throughout the summer of 1832. In the fall of that year a laboring man (residing near the lake) determined upon securing it if possible. For this purpose he took his station early one morning in the vicinity of one of the beaver's haunts. It soon made its appearance, and commenced felling a small tree, which it drew to the water's edge; but the man who had refrained from firing, in order to watch the motions of the animal, making a slight noise, it became alarmed, and suddenly plunged into the water.<sup>a</sup>

The numerous rivers of Westchester county must have afforded (the Indian hunter) an abundant supply of this useful animal. Van der Donck, the Patroon of Yonkers, informs us that in 1656, beavers were found not far from his residence, and several were brought in by the Indian hunters; also that 80,000 of these animals were annually killed in this quarter of the country.

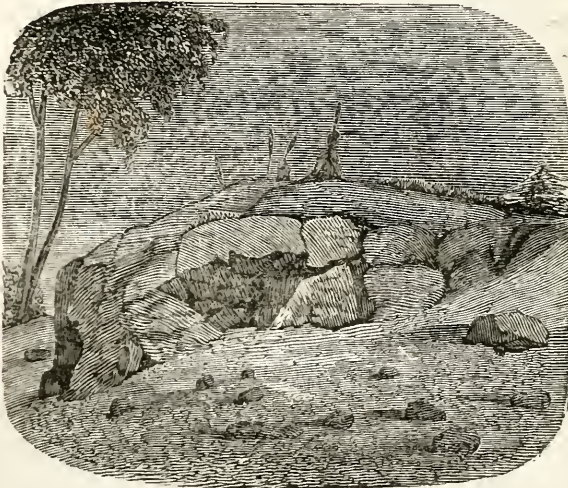
---

<sup>a</sup> It is said that the same animal was observed in the fall of 1837.

“The Indians (continues the same authority) burn the beaver bones and never permit their dogs to gnaw the same; alleging that afterwards they will be unlucky in the chase. Among all the beaver skins I have seen, no more than one was of a different color, and that was white, the outer-wind hairs were golden yellow. This skin was shipped on board the Princess with Director Kiest, which was lost at sea.”<sup>a</sup>

The deep waters of Lake Wacabuck afford vast quantities of fish, as pickerel, large perch, eels, &c. The two former are said to have been introduced here within a few years. The favorite haunts of the pickerel are the Cove and Raven’s rock.

Upon the south ridge of Long Pond mountain (which rises abruptly from the northern shore of the lake,) is situated the cave of Sarah Bishop, the hermitess.



The Sarah Bishop Cave, Long Pond Mountain

Amidst the savage landscape, bleak and bare,  
 Stands the chill hermitage, in mountain rock, and air,  
 Its haunts forsaken, and its feasts forgot,  
 A leaf strown, lonely, desolated cot!

[White’s Selborne.]

---

<sup>a</sup> Van der Donek’s Hist. New Netherlands.

The hermitess is reported to have been a resident of Long Island at the period of the Revolution, where she saw the destruction of her paternal mansion, and suffered great cruelty at the hands of a British officer, which finally induced her to abandon society altogether, and seek an abode in the present cave. The following account of a visit to the hermitess is taken from a newspaper printed at Poughkeepsie in 1804.

“Yesterday I went in company of two Captain Smiths of this town to the mountain to visit the hermitage. As you pass the southern and elevated ridge of the mountain, and begin to descend the southern steep, you meet with a perpendicular descent of a rock, in the front of which is this cave. At the foot of the rock is a gentle descent of rich and fertile ground, extending about ten rods, when it instantly forms a frightful precipice, descending half a mile to the pond called Long Pond. In the front of the rock on the north, where the cave is, and level with the ground, there appears a large frustum of the rock, of a double fathom in size, thrown out by some unknown convulsion of nature, and lying in front of the cavity from which it was rent, partly enclosing the mouth and forming a cover. The rock is left entire above and forms the roof of the humble mansion. This cavity is the habitation of the hermitess, in which she has passed the best of her years, excluded from all society. She keeps no domestic animal, not even fowl, cat, or dog. Her little plantation, consisting of half an acre, is cleared of its wood and reduced to grass, where she has raised a few peach trees, and yearly plants a few hills of beans, cucumbers, and potatoes. The whole is surrounded by a luxuriant grape vine, which overspreads the surrounding wood, and is very productive. On the opposite side of this little tenement, is a fine fountain of excellent water. At this fountain we found the wonderful woman whose appearance it is a little difficult to describe. Indeed, like nature in its first state, she was without form, her dress appeared little else than one confused and shapeless mass of rags patched together without any order, which obscured all human shape, excepting her head which was clothed with a luxuriance of lank grey hair, depending on every side as time had formed it, without any covering or ornament. When she discovered our approach, she exhibited the appearance of a wild and timid

animal. She started and hastened to her cave which she entered, and barricadoed the entrance, with old shells pulled from the decayed trees. We approached this humble habitation, and after some conversation with its inmate, obtained liberty to remove the palisades and look in, for we were not able to enter, the room being only sufficient to accommodate one person. We saw no utensil, either for labor or cookery; save an old pewter basin and a gourd shell, no bed but the solid rock, unless it were a few old rags scattered here and there, no bed clothes of any kind, not the least appearance of food or fire. She had indeed a place in one corner of her cell where a fire had at some time been kindled, but it did not appear there had been one for some months. To confirm this, a gentleman says he passed her cell five or six days after the great fall of snow, in the beginning of March; that she had no fire then, and had not been out of her cave since the snow had fallen. How she subsists during the severe season is yet a mystery. She says, she eats but little flesh of any kind; in the summer she lives on berries, nuts and roots. We conversed with her for some time, found her to be of a sound mind, a religious turn of thought and entirely happy in her situation. Of this she has given repeated proofs, by refusing to quit this dreary abode. She keeps a bible with her, and says she takes much satisfaction and spends much time in reading it." Soon after her settlement, the hermitess purchased the cave and three acres of land adjoining. Here she resided until the winter of 1810, when she was accidentally killed by falling into a pit.<sup>a</sup>

The southern view from the cave affords a splendid prospect of forty-five miles in extent, terminated by Long Island.

From Lake Wacabuck issues the Peppeneghek, or Cross River, (one of the numerous tributaries of the Croton,) upon which is situated the small settlement of Cross River. This place contains a post office, two churches, several manufactories, and twenty dwellings. The road from Ridgefield, by South Salem, to Bedford, passes through it. The Baptist church of Cross River was first incorporated on the 28th of March, 1842; Lewis

---

<sup>a</sup> The poor-master found in the cave a small sum of money sufficient to defray her funeral expenses.

Holmes, Abijah Reynolds, Lewis Mead, Titus Reynolds, Jerah M. Elmore, trustees.<sup>a</sup> The Methodist Episcopal church of this place (sometimes styled the Herman Chapel) was incorporated 12th of March, 1825; first trustees, Joseph Wilson, Daniel Silkman, John Silkman, Aaron Silkman, Walter S. Lyons, and John Brady.<sup>b</sup>

The waters of the Cross River are abundantly supplied with all kinds of fresh water fish. Near the intersection of the Beaver Dam and Cross River are situated the fishing falls.

Golden's Bridge is a small hamlet (located on the banks of the Croton) in the northwest corner of this town. It contains a post office and several dwellings.

Vista is a pretty settlement in the southeast corner of Lewisborough. Here is a post office and several dwellings. This portion of the town is drained by the Tatomuck River, which empties into the Sound at Stamford.

The following extracts are taken from the town books:—

*“First Book of Records in Salem, April the 17th, 1747.*

At a town meeting in Salem, April 2, 1751—

Justice Gilbert, Moderator,  
Jacob Wall, Supervisor,  
Nathaniel Wyatt, Clerk,  
David Webster, Constable,  
Peter Benedict, Sessor,  
Benj. Rockwell, Sessor,  
Nathan'l Wiatt, Sessor,  
David Webster, Servuer,  
Nathan'l Wiatt, Servuer,  
Jacob Walley, Servuer.”

“At a town meeting in Salem, 10th day of January, 1763, Resolved that the welfare of the town was endangered by one Dr. Michael Abbott, of Ridgefield, in the colony of Connecticut, who had lately come into the town with sundry other persons, and had inoculated with the small pox one Gershom Sillick, by means of which the people are greatly exposed, and put in much damages of taking the small pox.”

<sup>a</sup> County Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. B. 70.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Rel. Soc. Lib. A. 186.



St. Thomas's Church, Mamaroneck.

## MAMARONECK.

MAMARONECK is situated seven miles south of the village of White Plains, distant twenty miles northeast of New York, and about one hundred and forty-two south of Albany;— bounded north by

Scarsdale, east by Harrison and Rye, south by Long Island Sound, and west by New Rochelle. Its length, north and south, is three miles, and its medial width two and a quarter.<sup>a</sup> The etymology of the name of this place (at different periods spelt Mammarinikes, Mornoronack, Mamarinck, Merinak, and Momoronuck) doubtless refers, like most other Indian words, to some object peculiar to its geographical locality. The last syllable, "neck," or "uck" (uc,) being the ordinary inflection for locality, and one of the striking characteristics of Mohegan names east of the Hudson. By some the word is supposed to indicate "*the place of rolling stones,*" (boulders,) which abound in the romantic environs of Mamaroneck.<sup>b</sup>

The aboriginal name for the southeast corner of the town constituting De Lancey's Neck was "Wanmainuck," while the west neck, adjoining New Rochelle, was called by the Indians "Mangopson."

Mamaroneck, at the time of the Dutch discovery, appears to

<sup>a</sup> New York Gazetteer.

<sup>b</sup> In the Indian deed to John Budd, of Rye, 1661, the place is mentioned under the name of Merrimack, an Indian term for the sturgeon fish which once frequented the waters of the bay in great numbers.

have been inhabited by one of the numerous sea coast tribes termed Suwanoes, or Sewanoos, by John De Laet, one of the earliest historians of the New Netherlands, A.D. 1625.<sup>a</sup> This people he describes "as dwelling along the coast from Norwalk to twenty-four miles to the neighborhood of Hellegat." Adriaen van der Donck, in his map of 1656, styles them Siwanoyes. These Siwanoyes constituted a tribe of the mighty Mohegan nation, originally called Muhhekanew, or the Seven Tribes on the sea coast—otherwise called Mohiggans by the English, and Mahicanders, or River Indians by the Low Dutch.<sup>b</sup>

The River Sachems, at this early period, paid tribute to Sasacus, grand sachem of the Mohegans, whose broad territory extended from Narragansett to Hudson River, and over all Long Island. In 1644, there was an Indian Chief by the name of Mamaranack, living at Kitchawanc,<sup>c</sup> (Croton.) This individual may have been one of the grantors of these lands to the Dutch West India Company, in 1640, when the latter purchased a large tract of country extending as far east as Greenwich.

The site of the ancient Indian village in this town can still be traced upon the projecting rocks, directly opposite the residence of Benjamin M. Brown, Esq. This spot was well suited to the habits of the aborigines, who subsisted one-half of the year at least upon the fish caught in these waters. It must also be borne in mind, that all the Indian villages on the sea board were noted for the manufacture of seawant, the materials for which were found here in great abundance.<sup>d</sup>

The beautiful scenery of the bay, and adjoining necks, must have had peculiar attractions for these roving nomads and hunters, as they appear always to have selected such places for their summer residence. Early Connecticut coins have been discovered on the site of these habitations. The remains of several In-

<sup>a</sup> De Laet's New World, chap. viii.

<sup>b</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. New Ser. vol. i. 296-307.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 302.

<sup>d</sup> There were two kinds of seawant, wampum or Indian money, viz. wampum, (white,) and suckabock, (black.) The white was manufactured from the Mehe-abock Periwinkle. The black of the Quahaug.

dians were found a few years since, in repairing the road opposite Mr. Monmouth Lyons' store. Some of the skeletons were nearly entire. They have been since interred in the rear of Dr. Stanley's residence. Upon the Shubal Lyon property, north-east of the village, is situated the Indian burying ground. Remains of extensive Indian works exist on the elevated ground, north of Mr. Benjamin Brown's residence, called Nelson's Hill. They consist of four circular pits in the form of a square, having a small mound upon the south. "The use of these excavations it is impossible to imagine, unless we suppose them to have been used by the aborigines in defence, an idea that is rather favored by the circular mound on the south, as if made purposely to receive the palisade." The site of other Indian habitations are very apparent on the west side of Heathcote Hill. We have shown, that the lands belonging to this town were originally purchased of the native Indians by the Dutch West India Company, in 1640. Their next proprietor was John Richbell, who obtained a confirmation from the Indians, A. D. 1660. The following year, we find him thus addressing the Dutch Director and Council :

Amsterdam,

In New Netherlands, 24th Dec. 1661.

To the most noble, great and respectful Lords, the Directors General and Council, in New Netherland, solicits most reverently, John Richbell, that it may please your honours to grant him letters patent for three corners of land, the east corner being named "Wanmaimick" corner, the western with the adjacent land, by some named Mr. Pell's land, promising that all persons who, with the supplicant's permission or order, would settle there with him, shall be willing to solicit letters patent for such a parcel of land as they may intend to settle; in the meantime, he supplicates that your honours may be pleased to grant him letters patent for the whole tract, which he is willing to enforce and instruct them of your honours' government and will, in similar manner, on terms and conditions as are allowed to other villages. Hoping on your consent, he remains, &c.<sup>a</sup>

JOHN RICHBELL.

---

<sup>a</sup> Albany Rec. vol. xx. 22.



This petition having been presented to and read by the Director, 19th Jan. 1662, it was returned for answer, that before a final decision can be given on this petition, so shall the suppliant be requested to explain more at large before the Director General and Council in New Netherlands, the extents of his proposal as mentioned in the said petition on the day as above.<sup>a</sup>

John Richbell must have replied immediately to this letter, as the same year we find the following declaration (of Petrus Stuyvesant, Governor General,) in favor of Mr. Rissebel.

We, the Governor General and Council of estate of the United Netherlands, doe declare by these presents, that we, upon the petition of Mr. John Rissebel and his associates, that be under the protection of the high and subordinate authority of this Province, upon terms and conditions as other inhabitants doe enjoy, may take up and possess a certain neck and parcel of land called Mamarinikes, provided that the aforesaid Mr. John Rissebel, his associates, and every one that are now hereafter to come in due and convenient time, shall present themselves before us to take the oath of fidelity and obedience, and also, as other inhabitants are used to, procure a land brief of what they possess. Given under our hand and seal the 6th of May, 1662, in the Fort Amsterdam, in the New Netherlands.<sup>b</sup>

John Richbell appears to have obtained a "ground brief" for his land the same year.<sup>c</sup>

The following documents relate to a dispute between the two patentees of Pelham and Mamaroneck, concerning their respective boundaries. Upon the 20th of April, 1666, Richard Nicolls, Governor of the Province, granted to Thomas Mullinex, "a certain neck lying between the east bounds of the town of Westchester and a certain small river called Stoney River, which is reputed to be the west bounds of the land in dispute between Mr. Richbell and Mr. Revell (Pell,) and from thence shooting along by the side of the maine westward, containing 220 acres, which said

<sup>a</sup> Albany Rec. vol. xx. 22.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xx. 127.

<sup>c</sup> At a court of assize held in the city of New York, A. D. 1665, it was determined that Horseneck doth of right belong to John Richbell and his heirs. Alb. Assize Rec. 14.

neck has been purchased of the Indians." During the year 1666-7, occurs a trial between Thos. Revell (Pell,) plaintiff, and John Richbell, defendant. "The Governor and Council, together with ye justices of ye peace, setting in this present court of assizes, having been well and sufficiently informed in ye case in difference between the plaintiff and defendant, and that ye defendant, (who in several courts of this government hath heretofore been plaintiff in this case relating to a title to a certain parcel of land at Mamaronuck, upon ye maine,) did prove his said title in those courts to the land in question, and no person now appearing for ye plaintiff, either to prosecute or defend his claime and title, or those concerned in his pretended right to ye said land, according to ye order of ye last general court of assizes, this court doth therefore unanimously adjudge and decree, that ye title to ye said land in difference doth of right belong to the defendant."<sup>a</sup>

Nov. 1668, "John Richbell of Mamaroneck, accused Thomas Pell of gaining in a surreptitious manner, his patent of Governor Nicolls, and extending upon his lands, upwards of a mile in breadth from east to west, beside the length thereof north and south, although John Richbell has sufficiently proved his right thereto, both at several courts, and the last court of assizes held in New York."<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 13th Sept. 1669, we find a special warrant addressed to Thomas Pell of Ann-hook's-neck, or elsewhere, citing him to appear before the next court of assizes, for unjustly detaining and keeping from John Richbell, a certain parcel of meadow ground set upon one of the three necks at Mamaroneck."<sup>c</sup>

An order about ye difference between Mr. Pell and Mr. Richbell.

The report of ye commissioners appointed by ye court of assize, to view ye lands in difference between Mr. John Richbell and Mr. John Pell, and having been delivered unto me sealed

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. 172.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. vol. vi. 106.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. p. 204. In January, 1671, a subpœna was sent forth to summon Mr. Robert Penoyer of Mamaroneck, and Mr. John Archer, of Fordham, to give evidence at said court (of assizes) concerning the difference between Mr. Pell and Mr. Richbell. Alb. Rec. General Entries, No. IV. 59.

up, and now opened and read before me and my council, upon very much consideration had thereupon, do find, that two of the commissioners have made report, that between two brooks in dispute called stony and gravelly brook, there is a tree marked on ye east side, with J. R., and on the other with T. P., from which if there were a line run directly down to the sound, it would divide ye meadow in difference in the middle, and put an end to ye matter in question, but neither of the other three commissioners agree amongst themselves as to their opinions of the bounds, wherefore, in regard that I am very desirous an amicable composure of this difference may be made between both parties, I do recommend the report of the two commissioners to be observed as a medium to end all differences; however, if so the party shall not seem satisfied therewith, they have still liberty to proceed to a trial before a special court, according to ye order of ye last general court of assize. Of the resolutions, hereupon, a speedy answer is expected, that order may be taken accordingly. Given under my hand, at Fort James, in New York, the 18th day of January, 1671.<sup>a</sup>

Francis Lovelace.

Upon the 20th of January, 1671, a commission was appointed, consisting of Captain Dudley Lovelace, Captain Jacques Cortelyau, Mr. Elias Doughty, Captain Richard Ponton and Mr. John Quinby, to view ye bounds in difference between Mr. Pell and Mr. Richbell.<sup>b</sup>

On the 25th day of January, 1671, occurs the following order (addressed to Capt. Jacques Cortelyau, Surveyor General) about Mr. Pell and Mr. Richbell, made after their agreement and composure, &c.”

“Whereas, there is an amicable composure of ye difference between Mr. John Richbell, and Mr. John Pell,<sup>c</sup> concerning the neck of land lying between stony and gravelly brook, to the eastward of Annhook's neck, ye which is agreed upon to be divided equally between them both, meadow and upland quantity

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. General Entries No. IV. 92.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. Gen. Entries, No. IV. 59.

<sup>c</sup> Mr. John Pell succeeded his uncle Thomas Pell.

and quality alike, which agreement I very well approve of. These are to require you, that some time next week, or with your first convenience, you repair hither, where you shall receive further directions concerning the copy act, on the said neck of land, soe to put a final end and determination to that dispute of which at your return you are to render me an account, and for soe doing, this shall be your warrant. Given under my hand, at Fort James, in New York, this 25th day of January, 1671."<sup>a</sup>

Francis Lovelace.

This dispute was finally arranged by Mr. John Richbell, exchanging a portion of the west neck for a much greater quantity and value of other lands belonging to Mr. Pell, adjoining the west neck in lieu thereof, which land never was within the bounds of Mr. Richbell's patent.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 16th of October, 1668, Governor Lovelace issued the following letters patent, under the great seal of the province.

Francis Lovelace, Esq., Governor General, under his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York and Albany, &c. &c., of all his territories in America, to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting. Whereas, there is a certain parcel or tract of land within this government, upon the main, contained in three necks, of which the eastermost is bounded with a small river, called Mamaroneck river, being also the east bounds or limits of this government upon the main, and the westermost with the gravelly or stony brook or river, which makes the east limits of the land known by the name of Mr. Pell's purchase. Having to the south, the sound, and running northward from the marked trees upon the said neck, twenty miles into the woods, which said parcel or tract of land hath been lawfully purchased of the Indian proprietors, by John Richbell of Mamaroneck, gentleman, in whose possession now it is, and his title thereunto sufficiently proved, both at several courts of sessions, as also at the general courts of assizes, now for a confirmation unto him the said John Richbell, in his possession and enjoyment of the premises: *Know ye*, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his Royal Highness, I have given, ratified, and confirmed and granted, and by these presents do give and ratify, confirm and grant, unto the said John Richbell, his heirs and assigns, all the aforecited parcel or tract of land as aforesaid, to-

---

<sup>a</sup> Albany Records, General Entries, No. IV. 95.

<sup>b</sup> See Complaint of Obadiah Palmer and others, to his Excellency William Burnet. The original document is in the possession of the Munro family.

gether with all woods, beaches, marches, pastures, creeks, waters, lakes, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other profits, immunities and emoluments to the said parcel or tract of land belonging, annexed, or appertaining with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof, and in regard to the distance of the plantations already settled, or to be settled upon the said necks of land, from any town, the persons inhabiting, or that shall inhabit thereupon, shall have a petty constable chosen amongst themselves yearly, for preserving of the peace, and decision of small differences under the value of forty shillings, and they shall be excused from all common attendance at training or other ordinary duties at Westchester. But in matters of assessment and public rates, they are to be assessed by the officers of that town to which they do properly belong, being the nearest unto them, to have and to hold the said parcel and tract of land in the said three necks contained, and premises with all and singular the privileges and appurtenances to the said John Richbell, his heirs and assigns, to the proper use and behoof of the said John Richbell, his heirs and assignees forever, as free land of inheritance, rendering and paying as a quit rent for the same yearly, and every year, the value of eight bushels of winter wheat, upon the five and twentieth day of March, if demanded, unto his Royal Highness and his heirs, or to such governor or governors as shall from time to time be appointed and set over them. Given under my hand and seal, at Fort James, in New York, on Manhattans Island, the 16th day of October, in the twentieth year of the reign of our sovereign, Lord Charles the second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, king, defender of the faith, &c. &c., Anno Domini, 1668.

FRANCIS LOVELACE.

In 1669 we find John Richbell, and Anne his wife, conveying a certain portion of land in Mamaroneck to Margaret Parsons.<sup>a</sup>

On the 4th of March, 1669, John Richbell of Mamaroneck, in New Yorkshire, gentleman, with Anne his wife, conveys land in this town to John Bassett.

By a deed bearing date the 23d of April, 1669, John Richbell, proprietor of Mamaroneck, settles the following jointure upon his wife, Anne Richbell, viz.: "all that certain parcell or tract of land where he now lives, called the East Neck, and to begin at the westward part thereof at a certain creek lying, being, and adjacent by and betwixt the neck of land commonly called the Great Neck, and the said East Neck, and so to run eastward as far as Mamaroneck river, including therein betwixt the two lines all the land as well north into the woods above Westchester path,

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A.

twenty miles, as the lands below ye path, south and towards ye river," &c., &c.<sup>a</sup>

The following year we find the patentee investing his son-in-law, James Mott, in a small portion of the Mamaroneck lands, for which the latter paid to the crown the annual quit rent of one bushel of wheat. James Mott subsequently assigned all his right, title and interest in the same to John Wescot.

The following warrant "for ye fetching Mr. John Richbell to town a prisoner," occurs in the assize records.

These are in his majesties name to authorize and impower you to seize upon ye person of John Richbell of Mamaroneck, in what place soever he shall be found within this government, he being a prisoner under arrest for debt in this city, from which place he hath absented himself contrary to his engagement and that you cause him to be brought back hither to answer ye several suites of his creditors, and to abide the judgment of court therein according to law, and all officers or others whom this may concerne are to be ayding and assisting herein as occasion shall require, for the doing whereof this my special warrant shall be to you and them a sufficient discharge. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James in New Yorke, this 30th day of June, 1671.

FRANCIS LOVELACE.

[Endorsed]

To Mr. Allard Anthony, sheriff of the city of New York, or his deputy.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 30th of July, 1673, the province of New York surrendered to the Dutch. On this occasion Anthony Colve assumed the reins of government. His commission defined the eastern boundary of the colony to be the town of Greenwich and so running northerly, provided such line does not come within twenty miles of Hudson's river, conformable to the treaty of 1650, which was ratified by the States General February 22d, 1656, Mamaroneck river having been heretofore considered the boundary line, as settled the 5th of December, 1664, viz.: "a line beginning on the east side of Mamaroneck river or creek, at the place where the salt water meets the fresh, at high water, and thence northwest to the line of Massachusetts."<sup>c</sup>

The Dutch governor now required the submission of the in-

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. 238. This conveyance was to John Ryder.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. p. 391.

<sup>c</sup> Webster's Letters.

habitants, and oaths of allegiance to the States General. Whereupon the people of Mamaroneck submitted themselves through their deputies, and were ordered to nominate by a majority of votes four persons who were to be presented the first opportunity, from which the Lords Commanders shall elect two for magistrates. By order of the Lords Commanders and military tribunal assembled in Fort William Hendrick, on the 23d day of August, A. D. 1673.<sup>a</sup>

Peace took place between the belligerent powers, in February, 1674, by which New York was again restored to the English.

20th of November, 1763, John Richbell of Mamaroneck mortgaged the westernmost neck to one Cornelius Stenwyck, "lounding on the Gravelly or Stony river, having on the south the Sound, and so running from the marked trees, standing on the aforesaid neck, northerly twenty English miles into the woods."<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 21 of February, 1683, a dispute arose between Mr. John Richbell (about the limits of his land) with the inhabitants of the town of Rye, whereupon the latter were ordered to attend the council.<sup>c</sup>

The following order is extracted from the council minutes.

At a council held at Fort James, on March 17th, 1683, upon the petition and complaint of Mr. John Richbell of Mamaroneck, gentleman, against the inhabitants of Rye, concerning some lands, it was thought fit by the governor and council that the inhabitants of Rye, or some deputed by them for that purpose, do show cause at the next court of assize to be held in the county of Westchester, why the said land do not of right belong and appertain to Mr. John Richbell.<sup>c</sup>

The patentee must have been subsequently confirmed in his rights, as further grants were made by himself and wife the same year to John Nelson, and in 1684 to James and Mary Mott. In 1685 Anne Richbell conveys property in this town to Henry Disbrow, Richard Ward, John Rider, John Emerson and others.

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. III. 276.

<sup>b</sup> A second mortgage from the patentee to Stenwyck occurs on the 6th of August, 1673. Upon the 12th May, 1675, the patentee mortgaged to Robert Richbell, jr. of Southampton, England, one of the three necks called the great or middle neck; this was afterwards assigned to Samuel Palmer, July 7, 1676.

<sup>c</sup> Council Min. Alb. No. V. 47.

<sup>d</sup> Council Minutes, Alb. No. V. 53.

A. D. 1696. Anne Richbell orders that the lot formerly belonging to the Blacktuns, containing two acres and thirty-two rods, be laid out for my son John Emerson.<sup>a</sup>

The death of the patentee, John Richbell, appears to have taken place sometime in January, 1684, as we find Mr. John Timan petitioning the governor and council for administration on the estate of John Richbell, January 16th, 1684.<sup>b</sup>

The following extracts are taken from the will of Mrs. Anne Richbell, his wife, which bears date 1st of April, A. D. 1700.

“In the name of God, amen. I, Ann Richbell, of the town of Mamaroneck, in the county of Westchester, in the province of New York, gentlewoman, being sick and weak in body, but of good and perfect memory, (blessed be the Lord for it,) who hath now put it into my heart to set my house in order, by making this my last will and testament, in manner as followeth: Imprimis, I give and bequeath my soul into the hands of Almighty God, my creator, and my body to the earth from whence it came, to a decent and comely burial at the direction of Colonel Caleb Heathcote.

“Mr. Richbell Mott and Lt. John Horton, I make my executors of this my last will and testament, and for this worldly estate which it hath pleased the Lord to endow me withal, &c. Imprimis, to my daughter Elizabeth the sum of 80*l.* and my gold ring with the emerald stone in it and my little bible. To my daughter Anne the sum of 60*l.* and also my gold chain. To my granddaughter, Anna Gedney, Mary Williams and Mary Mott, each 40*l.* and to my said granddaughter Mary, my biggest gold ring. I give and bequeath to my son-in-law James Mott 14*l.* and to my grandson James Mott, the son of Capt. James Mott, 15*l.*” &c. &c.

Elizabeth and Anne, the two devisees mentioned in the above will, were the sole issue of the patentee. Elizabeth, the eldest, married Captain James Mott, (son of Adam Mott.) Their descendants still reside in the town. Anne married John Emerson. The patentee left one brother, Robert Richbell of Southampton, in England, father of Robert Richbell, who succeeded his uncle in a portion of the Mamaroneck estates.<sup>d</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Council Min. Alb. No. V. 104.

<sup>c</sup> Surrogate's Off. N. Y. Rec. Wills, No. ii. 92.

<sup>d</sup> For a continuation of this family, see pedigree.



A. D. 1700, the Hon. Caleb Heathcote became legally seized in fee of the greatest portion of the eastermost neck, together with other lands, having in 1696 obtained a patent right from Mrs. Anne Richbell to purchase lands which were already included in her husband's sale of 1660.

On the 21st day of March, 1701, King William III. by letters patent, granted and confirmed unto Caleb Heathcote

“ All that tract of land in Westchester county, beginning at a marked tree by Mamaroneck river, which is the eastermost side of the northern bounds of Mamaroneck township, being about two miles from the country road and to run along the said river to the head thereof, and thence on a northern line, until eighteen miles from the said marked trees is completed westerdly, at the said marked tree or a great rock ; being the westernmost part of the said northern bounds of the aforesaid township, being about two miles from the said country road, and thence run southerly eighteen miles as the line on the eastermost side of the said land runneth, including therein his eighth part of the two miles laid out from the town of Mamaroneck, with the lot he then lived on, and the lot bought of Alice Hatfield with the land and meadow below, westerly to a path to him belonging by virtue of his deeds and conveyances, part of which lands within the bounds aforesaid was purchased by John Richbell from the native Indian proprietors, which said John Richbell had a grant and confirmation for the same from Colonel Francis Lovelace, Esq.”

The Hon. Caleb Heathcote subsequently enlarged his estates by further purchases and confirmations from the Indians.

One of these indentures bears date 26th May, 1701, betwixt the Indian proprietors, Patthunk, Beopoa, Wapetuck, Kohawaes and Racheshund, on the one part, and Colonel Caleb Heathcote of Mamaroneck, gentleman, on the other part, wherein the former in consideration of a good and lawful sum of money, to them in hand paid by the said Caleb Heathcote, &c.,

Sell, alien, enfeoffe and confirm, &c. a certain tract of land lying and being in the county of Westchester, bounded as follows: to begin on the east side of the country road, going over at Mamaroneck river, and so to run as the road goes, as far as a creek or brook, known by the name of Pipin's brook, adjoining the neck known by the name of the great neck, including therein all the land and meadow below the said road southward to the Sound, and to begin at the bridge which lyes over the swamp, known by the name of the Dirty swamp, on the New York road, on the east side, and at the going over of Pipin's brook, as the New York road goes, on the west side, and so to run

as high into the woods as the marked trees on the southermost end of Richbell's or Horse ridge, having one hundred rods in breadth between the said lines, to have and to hold, &c. the said bargained premises with all of their appurtenances thereunto belonging, to the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assignees for ever, &c.

Sig. sealed and delivered	The mark of	The mark of
in presence of	Patt O hunke.	Ɔ
Anne Millington,	The mark of	Wapetuck.
Hugh Farquhar.	Ɔ	The mark of
The mark of	Beopa.	Kohawnes
Ɔ	The mark of	Ɔ
Kehocuss.	H	Kocheolam.
The mark of	Creghien.	
Ɔ		
Ambyro.		

10 June, 1701. Patthunck, Brope, Wepetuck, Indian proprietors sell to Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, William Pennoyer, John Williams, Henry Disbrow, Oliver Hatfield, John Disbrough and Benjamin Disbrough a lot or parcel of land bounded as followeth. "To begin at Westchester path by Mamaroneck river and runs as the river doth to the marked trees at the eastermost side of the two mile bounds, from thence as was laid out to the marked trees on the southermost end of Richbell's ridge, from thence to Dirty swamp ridge in a direct line, and from said ridge as the road goeth to Mamaroneck river, each party above mentioned to have and to hold their allotments and divisions as already laid out, and according to their deeds of John and Mrs. Richbell.

Sig. sealed and delivered	Patthunck.
in the presence of us,	Wapetuck.
Joseph Hiatt,	
Joseph Purdy.	

In the year 1700, Samuel Palmer of Mamaroneck obtained an assignment of the great neck from Robert Richbell, former mortgagee under his uncle John Richbell.

Upon the 5th of November, 1701, Ann Hook, Indian sachem, released to Samuel Palmer,

"All that my parcel of land formerly called Mangopson neck, now called by the name of the great neck, &c., bounded easterdly by a brook, called by name Pipin's brook, which runs into the salt water creek, and so running round along by the Sound, and so running up to a brook called by the name of Cedar or Pine tree brook, together with a parcel of land running up said brook by a range of marked trees until this meet with the marked trees of Colonel

Caleb Heathcote, and from thence running by the aforesaid range of marked trees, down to the said Pipin's brook, to the aforesaid salt water creek, with all and singular the members, rights, privileges and appurtenances thereunto belonging, &c.

The mark of Ann Hook.

Signed, sealed and delivered  
in presence of us,  
Besly,  
Benj. Collier.

The heirs of Samuel Palmer, viz. Obadiah, Solomon, Nehemiah, and Sylvanus subsequently sold the great neck, (containing three hundred and twenty acres,) to Josiah Quinby. It appears that Adolph Philipse and Jacobus van Cortlandt purchased (in the lifetime of John Richbell,) the fee simple of certain lands in Mamaroneck, embracing one full and equal half moiety of the west neck; the whole of which afterwards became vested in the person of Frederick Philipse. This individual eventually claimed the whole territory north of Westchester path lying above the great neck, so that when the surveyor general, on the 18th of November, 1724, commenced the survey of the great neck, he was stopped by Philipse, when he came above Westchester path. The surveyor however continued the original line until he came to Bronx's river, here again he was opposed by Philipse who forbade and warned him at his peril to proceed any further, as he claimed all the land beyond Bronx's river by a different title. The twenty mile line north of the great neck would have carried the Richbell patent nearly to the Croton river. The whole matter ultimately came before the court of chancery, on the 2d of May, 1727.<sup>a</sup>

On the 8th of December, 1708, William and Thomas Pennoyer did grant unto Caleb Heathcote their home lot, laid out to them by the inhabitants of Mamaroneck; also certain lands situated on the west neck.

In 1724, Henry Pennoyer sold certain lands in the village to Polycarpus Nelson.

In the field book belonging to the Secretary of States office, oc-

---

<sup>a</sup> Chancery Rec. Albany.

curs a map containing the survey and division of all the certain tracts and parcels of land lying on Mamaroneck, Scarsdale and Harrison purchase, in the county of Westchester, the property of Caleb Heathcote, Esq., in his lifetime, and which remain unsold by him or his descendants since his death whereof we the subscribers were appointed commissioners by virtue of an act of the Lieutenant Governor, the Council and the General Assembly of the colony of New York, entitled an act for the more effectual collecting of his majesty's quit rents in the colony of New York, and for partition of lands in order thereto, which said lands we have laid out into three divisions, viz.: Division No. 1 or north division; division No. 2 or middle division; division No. 3 or south division; north division laid out into 21 lots, two small lots in the possession of William Barker; lots No. 16 and 17 controverted lands in his division. Division No. 2 divided into 9 lots for the proprietors; division No. 3 or south division laid out into 11 lots; numbers 4, 5, 6 and 7 are controverted; the remaining lots uncontroverted. Lots No. 13 and 18, and 2 small lots in the possession of William Barker; the first lot, north division, and lot No. 7 in the middle or second division, distinguished on the map by a certain red line, which together contains 320 acres, 2 roods, 10 rods, are set apart for sale in order to defray expenses of division, &c., &c. In witness whereof, as well the said commissioners as the surveyor by us appointed, have hereunto set their hands at Mamaroneck, in the county of Westchester, the sixteenth day of August, in the year of our Lord, 1724.

Philip Pell,  
 Jacobus Bleecker, } *Commissioners.*  
 William Sutton, }

Charles Webb,—*Surveyor.*

The following is a receipt for quit-rent due the crown on the Richbell Patent :

“Received of Nehemiah Palmer and Co., 70 bushels and 3 pecks of wheat in full of the proprietors for quit-rent, (being 3 bushels and 30 quarts per annum,) due on the tract of land in Westchester County, granted to John Richbell, the 16th of Octo-

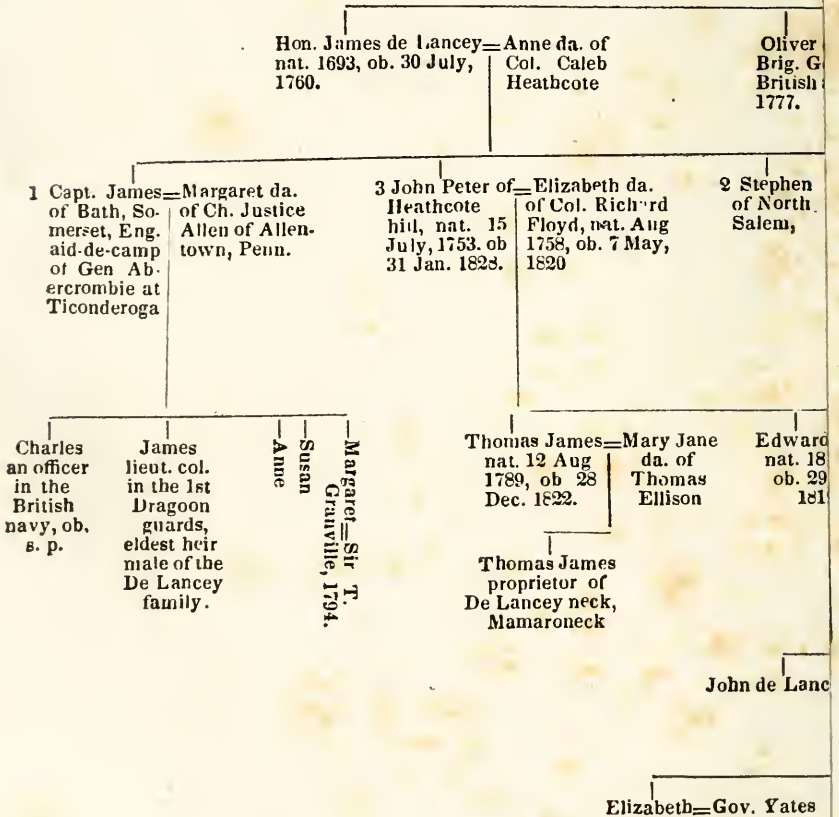


To face page 237, vol. 1.

PEDIGREE OF

Arms borne by the Huguenot. D'or à un aigle de sable, ayant les ailes déployées. A lance in pale with a flag its point in chief, debruised of blue and argent.

Etienne de Lancey,



ber 1668, being from the 25th of March, 1784 to the 25th of March last, as witness my hand this 12th of June, 1752.

Wheat reckoned at 4s. 6d. a bushel.

RICHARD NICOLL, *Deputy General Receiver.*

A subsequent partition of Colonel Heathcote's estates took place between his two daughters and co-heiresses, Anne and Martha. Anne Heathcote married the Hon. James de Lancey, son of Etienne de Lancey.

The De Lanceys, of Mamaroneck, are a branch of the ancient and honorable house of De Lanci, in France,<sup>a</sup> springing from Jean de Lanci, Ecuyer, Vicomte of Laval and Nouvian, who was born in the latter part of the fifteenth century, and died May, 1525. The De Lancies were decreed to belong to the ancient nobility of France in the fourteenth century. Under Louis de Bourbon, Bishop and Duke of Laon, they held the hereditary fief of the Four banier of Laval;<sup>b</sup> they were also the lords of other lands, such as Rarai, Nouvian, D'Haramont, Ribecoupt, Pimpré, St. Germain et Ruy, and hereditary castellans of the castle and domains of Bóthizy and Verberie.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The French members of this family spelt the last syllable of the surname with an *i*, in place of the *ey*.

<sup>b</sup> This fief was probably holden by the feudal service of the *banner* or *lance*—hence the surname *De Lanci*. The ancient coat armor (borne by the Huguenot in 1687) was a shield of gold, bearing thereon a black eagle with its wings expanded, charged upon the breast with a blue escutcheon, containing *three lances* in pale. This coat was subsequently changed by the second English branch.

<sup>c</sup> L'armorial général d'France; 2d Register, 2 vol.: King's Library, Paris. In front of the altar at the Church of Verberie, (department of Oise, France,) there is a tombstone erected to a member of this family, inscribed

D. O. M.

Ici repose

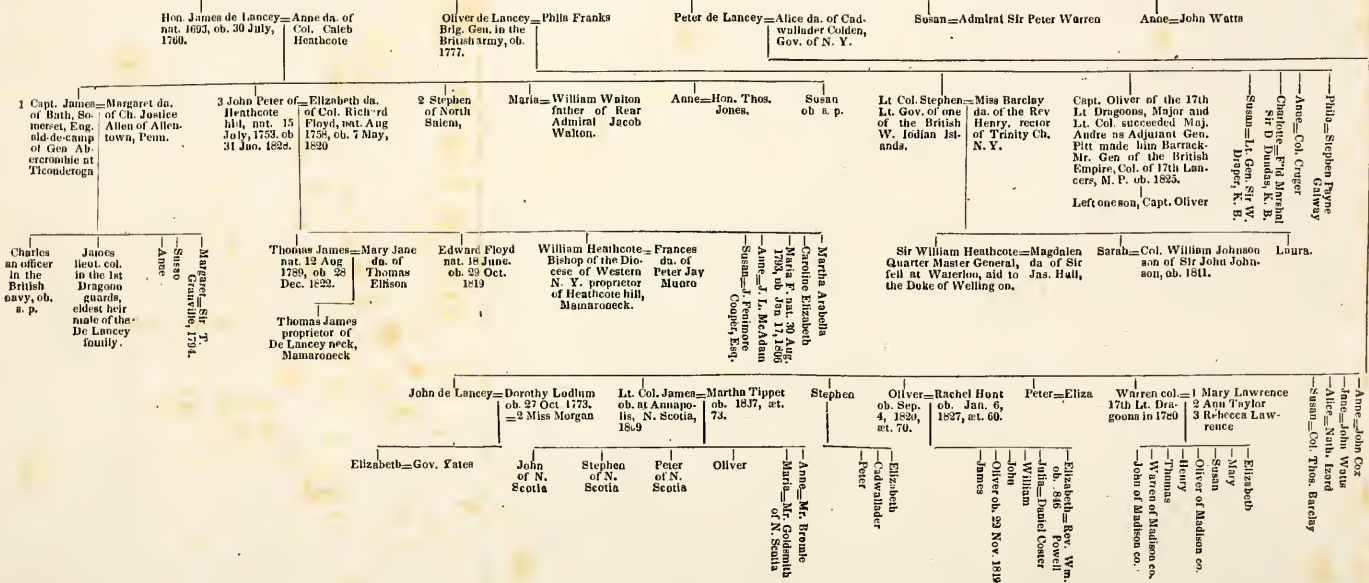
Haute et puissante Dame

MADAME FRANÇOISE DE LANCI RARAI, daine  
des Terres et Seigneuries, d'Haramont, Ribecoupt,  
Pimpré, St. Germain et Ruy, en partie Châtelaine  
Hereditaire et engagiste des Domaines de Bóthizy  
et Verberie, possidés par ses pères depuis plus  
decent ans veuve de Messire Barthélemi de

PEDIGREE OF DE LANCEY OF MAMARONECK AND WESTCHESTER.

Arms borne by the Huguenot. D'or à un aigle de sable, ayant les ailes étendues et chargé sur l'estomac d'un écusson d'azure, à trois lances raogées en pale; les pointes en haut Present Arms, azurs. A lance in pale with a flag its point in chief, debruised of a bar or. Crest, a sinister arm in armour embowed, holding a standard, with flag. Motte, certum voto peto finem.

Etienne de Lancey, a native of Caen, Normandy=Anne, da. of Hon. Stephaus vsc Cortlandt, nat. 13 Feb. 1676.





ber 1668, being from the 25th of March, 1784 to the 25th of March last, as witness my hand this 12th of June, 1752.

Wheat reckoned at 4s. 6d. a bushel.

RICHARD NICOLL, *Deputy General Receiver.*

A subsequent partition of Colonel Heathcote's estates took place between his two daughters and co-heiresses, Anne and Martha. Anne Heathcote married the Hon. James de Lancey, son of Etienne de Lancey.

The De Lanceys, of Mamaroneck, are a branch of the ancient and honorable house of De Lanci, in France,<sup>a</sup> springing from Jean de Lanci, Ecuyer, Vicomte of Laval and Nouvian, who was born in the latter part of the fifteenth century, and died May, 1525. The De Lancies were decreed to belong to the ancient nobility of France in the fourteenth century. Under Louis de Bourbon, Bishop and Duke of Laon, they held the hereditary fief of the Four banier of Laval;<sup>b</sup> they were also the lords of other lands, such as Rarai, Nouvian, D'Haramont, Ribecoupt, Pimpré, St. Germain et Ruy, and hereditary castellans of the castle and domains of Bóthizy and Verberie.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The French members of this family spelt the last syllable of the surname with an *i*, in place of the *ey*.

<sup>b</sup> This fief was probably holden by the feudal service of the *banner* or *lance*—hence the surname *De Lanci*. The ancient coat armor (borne by the Huguenot in 1687) was a shield of gold, bearing thereon a black eagle with its wings expanded, charged upon the breast with a blue escutcheon, containing *three lances* in pale. This coat was subsequently changed by the second English branch.

<sup>c</sup> L'armorial général d'France; 2d Register, 2 vol.: King's Library, Paris. In front of the altar at the Church of Verberie, (department of Oise, France,) there is a tombstone erected to a member of this family, inscribed

D. O. M.

Ici repose

Haute et puissante Dame

Madame FRANÇOISE DE LANCI RARAI, dame  
des Terres et Seigneuries, d'Haramont, Ribecoupt,  
Pimpré, St. Germain et Ruy, en partie Châtelaine  
Hereditaire et engagiste des Domaines de Bóthizy  
et Verberie, possidés par ses pères depuis plus  
decent ans veuve de Messire Barthélemi de

The only son of Jean de Lanci, Vicomte of Laval and Nouvian, was Charles de Lanci, Ecuyer,<sup>a</sup> also Vicomte of Laval, &c. This individual (who held the fief of the Four banier of Laval) married Marie Villiers, by whom he left issue two sons, Charles de Lanci, Ecuyer, Vicomte of Laval, living in 1534, and Christopher de Lanci, ancestor of the Lords of Rarai.<sup>b</sup> From a branch of this family came Etienne or Stephen De Lancey, a native of Caen, in Normandy.

During the troublesome times which preceded the edict of Nantz, the De Lancies of Caen appear to have suffered severely for their devotion to the Huguenot cause. In 1681 Stephen de Lancey was one of those who fled from France, "to escape the tyranny and bigotry of Louis XIV. He appears to have been aided in his flight by a Protestant mother, who not only gave him the passports of education for his safety, but jewels, which enabled him in Holland to procure what was necessary to appear in New York as a wealthy merchant." "In the year 1724 (says the historian Dunlap) Governor Burnet was involved in a dispute with Mr. Etienne de Lancey, who is represented as a rich man, and the principal benefactor of the French Church established in New York by the refugees who fled from the Revocation of the Edict of Nantz.

The governor took part with Monsieur Le Roux, in opposition to the clergymen upheld by De Lancey and a majority of the congregation; and M. de Lancey, being returned as a member of Assembly, Burnet refused to administer the oath to him, upon the ground that he was not a subject of the crown. De Lancey replied that he was made a denizen in England, "in a patent of denization granted in the reign of James II., and under

Flahant Chevalier seigneur de la Billarderie Maître  
de camp de Cavalerie, exempt des gardes du corps  
du Roi tué a la bataille de Mal plaquet. La dite  
Dame de la Bellarderie est décédée le 25 Juin, 1724,  
agée de 61 ans

Priez pour son âme.

<sup>a</sup> The French Ecuyer denotes a gentleman who possesses coat armor.

<sup>b</sup> L'armorial Général du France, 2 Register, 2 vols. King's Lib. Paris.

the seal of this province in 1686." The house decided in favor of De Lancey, but a feud existed between him and many of the Protestants against Burnet. The Assembly claimed the right of judging of their own members; and although the governor still held a majority, his conduct in this case was considered unconstitutional! and his opposition to De Lancey to have originated in the latter's espousing the French trade, in opposition to Burnet's plan of trade by Oswego."<sup>a</sup> Soon after De Lancey's arrival in New York, he entered into partnership with his brother-in-law, Monsieur Barbarie, and the latter's son-in-law, Mr. Moore. In 1691 we find him assistant alderman of the south ward; in 1711 alderman, and in 1727 member of Assembly. He was also for many years a vestryman of Trinity Church. By his wife, Anne van Cortlandt, Stephen de Lancey left issue James, Oliver, Peter, Susan and Anne. The eldest son, James de Lancey, was a man of great talents. This individual received his education at the University of Cambridge, and was called, whilst at college,<sup>b</sup> the handsome American. He afterwards returned to his native land, and held the first honors which the country could bestow—first as a member of the governor's council, chief justice in 1744,<sup>c</sup> and lieutenant-governor of the State of New York in 1747.<sup>d</sup> In 1754 Governor De Lancey gave his sanction to the act of incorporating King's, now Columbia College. He is praised for his political skill in successfully preserving to the Assembly the right of annual appropriation, and evading the prohibition of the crown to issuing bills of credit. The historian Smith, his political enemy, allows him genius, a retentive memory, and ready elocution.

The Hon. James de Lancey married Anne, daughter and co-heiress of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote, lord of the manor of Scarsdale. "His death, which took place 30th of July, 1760, was an event which had a great influence on the affairs of this province. He was found expiring upon that morning, seated in his chair,

---

<sup>a</sup> Dunlap's Hist. of N. Y. vol. i. 288.

<sup>b</sup> Corpus Christi College.

<sup>c</sup> The date of his commission as chief justice occurs Sept. 14, 1744.

<sup>d</sup> The date of his commission as Lieut. Governor, Oct. 27, 1747.

too late for medical aid. His funeral took place on the evening of the 31st of July, 1760. The body was deposited in the middle aisle of Trinity Church, the funeral service being performed by the Rev. Mr. Barclay in great magnificence: the building was splendidly illuminated. The order of the funeral procession from his house in the Bowery to the church, fills columns of the papers of the day."<sup>a</sup>



*James De Lancey*

Seal and Signature of the Hon. James de Lancey.

The following particulars (relating to this distinguished man,) are copied from a memorandum written by John Watts, Esq., of New York, in 1787.

“James de Lancey was a man of uncommon abilities in every view, from the law, to agriculture, and an elegant pleasant companion, what rarely unites in one person. It seemed doubtful which excelled, his quick penetration, or his solid judgment; the first seemed an instant guide to the last. He was born in 1704, married while young, Anne, eldest daughter of Caleb Heathcote, was appointed by Governor Montgomerie, a member of the council, by Governor Cosby, Chief Justice, in the room of Lewis Morris. Upon the death of Sir Darius Osborn, about 1754, he succeeded to the administration as Lieutenant Governor.

No man in either office had more the love and confidence of the people, nor any man before nor since, half the influence.

---

<sup>a</sup> Parker's Post Boy, Dunlap's Hist. of N. Y. vol. i. 402.

He was unfortunately taken from us in July, 1760, so suddenly, that his very family suspected no danger. He had spent very agreeably the day before on Staten Island; after ten at night he left my house perfectly well; in the morning he was as usual; but, about nine, a servant was despatched to tell me his master was very ill. I mounted instantly, and hurried to his house in Bowery lane; but, on the way was alarmed by a call, "that all was over," and too true I found it, he sat reclined in his chair one leg drawn in, the other extended, his arms over the elbows, so naturally, that had I not been apprized of it, I certainly should have spoken as I entered the room. No body but his youngest daughter, a child, was present at the time. So little did the family apprehend the least danger. Never did these eyes behold such a spectacle, or did my spirits feel such an impression; the idea affects me whenever I think of it, to lose such a companion, such a counsellor, such a friend. This accomplished person and ornament to his country, left three sons and three daughters, viz. Captain James, Stephen, John Peter, Maria, Anne and Susan."<sup>a</sup>

Soon after the demise of his brother, John Peter de Lancey became possessed of the Mamaroneck estates "which formerly belonged to his grandfather, Col. Caleb Heathcote." Upon the 28th of January, 1823, John Peter de Lancey devised his property in this town to Thomas James de Lancey,<sup>b</sup> the only child of his deceased son Thomas James, and his son William Heathcote de Lancey,<sup>c</sup> (Bishop of the diocese of Western New York,) the present proprietors.

---

<sup>a</sup> Copied from a memorandum written by John Watts of New York, in 1787, found among the papers of his daughter, the late Mrs. Leake.

<sup>b</sup> A portion of the property came to the present Thomas James de Lancey from his father, who held by conveyance from John Peter de Lancey.

<sup>c</sup> In the spring of 1847, when Bishop De Lancey was in New York, a package was handed to the servant at the door, on opening which, the Bishop found an anonymous letter directed to him. The writer stated, that being in England between thirty and forty years ago, he found some papers relating to the De Lancey family, among some waste paper in the house where he was staying, that he had preserved them, and seeing by the newspapers that the Bishop was in the city, he now enclosed them to him. These the Bishop found to be; 1st, the commission of James de Lancey as Lieut. Governor of the colony; 2d, his commission as Chief Justice of the colony; 3d, the freedom of the city of New York, voted to one of the

Martha Heathcote, the second surviving daughter of Col. Caleb Heathcote, married Lewis Johnston of Perth Amboy.<sup>a</sup> In the year 1771, the above Martha, conveyed all her right and title to her husband.

There is a deed recorded in the town books, between Anne de Lancey, daughter of Col. Caleb Heathcote, widow of the Hon. James de Lancey, deceased, and Lewis Johnston of Perth Amboy, physician, of the one part, and William Sutton of Mamaroneck, on the other part.

Signed,

Anne de Lancey.

Lewis Johnston,

John Johnston, Heathcote  
Johnston by Anne de Lancey.

In presence of, John Johnston and Susannah de Lancey. John Johnston the eldest son and heir at law of Lewis Johnston and Martha Heathcote, died in 1782, leaving issue by his wife Margaret Barbarie, five sons and two daughters. Heathcote the third son, is the father of Susannah Snowhill Ward, wife of the Rev. John M. Ward, Rector of the parish.

This lady is the only representative of the Johnston family, resident in Mamaroneck.

In the town clerk's office is a small manuscript volume entitled :

“This is the book of records for Mamaroneck.”

The first entry commences April 2d, 1697.

Lieutenant Samuel Palmer, Supervisor.

Captain James Mott, Assessor.

Henry Disbrow, Collector.

Henry Disbrow, Surveyor of the highways.

Lt. William Palmer, Constable and also clerk.

At a meeting held by the freeholders of Mamaroneck, on the 18th day of April, in the year 1702, the following officers were chosen :

family, in 1730 ; 4th, a map of the lands owned by them in Westchester county and on New York Island, prepared by the Bishop's grandfather.

<sup>a</sup> The father of Lewis, was John Johnston, M. D., of Edinburgh, who married Euphemia Scot, on the 18th of April, 1686. John Johnston died at Perth Amboy, 6 Sept. 1732, ætat 73. The brother of Lewis, Andrew Johnston, married Catharine van Cortlandt.

Captain James Mott, Supervisor.

Nehemiah Palmer, Constable.

Obadiah Palmer, Clerk,

John Nelson, Assessor.

John Disbrow, Collector.

Henry Disbrow, Surveyor of highways.

Samuel Palmer and William Penoyer, chosen fence viewers, Col. Caleb Heathcote and Samuel Palmer, chosen to lay out highways by John Wems, as they shall see most convenient.

The village of Mamaroneck is very pleasantly situated at the head of a fine bay near its confluence with the Mamaroneck river. The channel of the former admits at high water, vessels carrying one hundred tons to the landing. Indian creek, the northwest channel of the bay, leads to the old ship yard which formerly stood near the western entrance of the village; the site was presented to the town by the Johuston family. Vast quantities of flounders are frequently taken by means of fykes, in this channel. Black fish, sheeps head and striped bass abound in the waters of the bay. The Mamaroneck river above mentioned, forms the eastern boundary of the town, and derives its source from Horton's pond. This stream is more remarkable for the romantic valleys it forms, and the rich country it winds through, than for its extent, being generally buried within deep banks. Near its junction with the Sheldrake, (directly north of the village) it forms a beautiful valley between high rolling hills, upon the sides of which, are boulders of enormous size.

In the immediate vicinity of the bridge, the waters become merged in an extensive mill pond, which discharges a stream sufficient to propel several manufactories.

The Sheldrake rises from two springs in Scarsdale.<sup>a</sup> The general surface of the surrounding country is hilly, and abounds in wild and romantic scenery.

Mamaroneck, is one of the most ancient villages in the county having been laid out soon after the purchase in 1660. It now

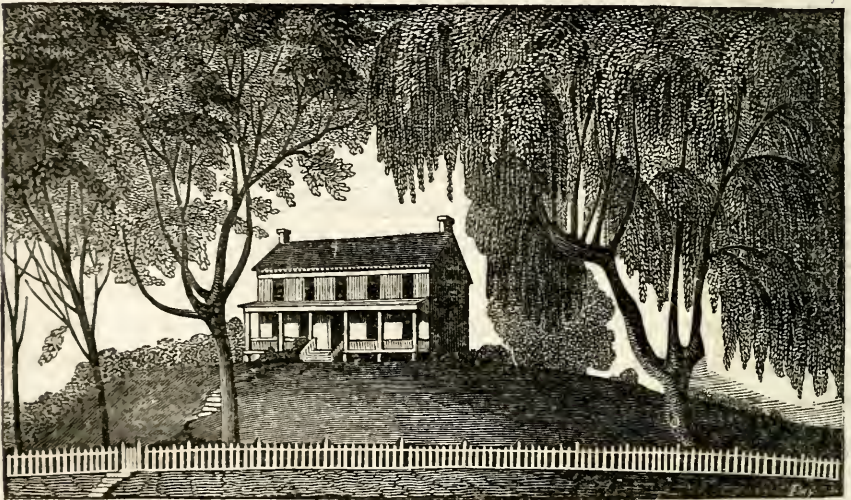
---

<sup>a</sup> The Sheldrake Springs are situated on the land of John Hatfield.

contains two churches, two cotton factories, several stores and about 50 dwellings.<sup>a</sup>

The former divisions of the high ridge, originally called "good success ridge," (facing the bay and post road) are still distinguished by the names of their original proprietors, viz., Heathcote, Nelson and Budds' hills. Near the entrance of the village from the west is situated Heathcote hill, the property of the Rt. Rev. William Heathcote de Lancey, whose family formerly resided here. At present occupied by Mrs. Ludlow.

The De Lancey residence stands upon the site of a stately brick edifice, erected by Colonel Caleb Heathcote, sometime prior to 1704, and destroyed by fire during the revolution.



Heathcote Hill, Mamaroneck.

Madame Knight in her journey to Boston, A. D., 1704, thus describes the place.

"From N. Rochelle we travelled through Merrinack, a neat though little place, with a navigable river before it, the pleasantest I ever see. There are good buildings, especially one, *a very fine seat, which they told me was Col. Heathcote's*, who I heard was a very fine gentleman.<sup>b</sup> The grounds around the present

<sup>a</sup> The Westchester and New Haven rail road depôt is situated immediately north of the village.

<sup>b</sup> Journal of Madame Knight, N. Y. edition, 1825.



mansion are not extensive, but the views of the bay, adjacent necks and distant sound scenery, present a charming landscape. Fine rows of willows and locusts border the property on the south and east. A short distance from the dwelling house, surrounded by orchards, is the family cemetery of the De Lanceys. This spot was appropriated by John Peter de Lancey as a cemetery for the remains of the De Lancey family, and for that purpose devised to his son William Heathcote de Lancey in trust forever, &c. &c.

Here repose the mortal remains of

JOHN PETER DE LANCEY, born in the city of New York 15 July, 1753, died at Mamaroneck 31 January, 1828.	ELIZABETH DE LANCEY, wife of JOHN PETER DE LANCEY, born 8 August, 1758, died 7 May, 1820.
--	---

THOMAS JAMES DE LANCEY,  
born  
August 12, 1789,  
died  
Dec'r 28th, 1822.

Besides other memorials to various members of the family.

The adjoining estate upon the east is Nelson hill. This property formerly belonged to the Nelson family; Polycarpus Nelson having purchased it of Henry Penoyer, in 1725.

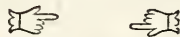
Polycarpus died in 1738, leaving three sons, Polycarpus, Edward and Maharshalabar. The name of the latter is supposed to have been derived from his maternal ancestor Akabashka, one of the Indian witnesses to the sale of John Harrison in 1695.

The two younger brothers devised their rights to Polycarpus. The property has since passed through the Horton, Ryer, Bailey, and Stanley families, to the present proprietor, Benjamin M. Brown, Esq.

The house occupies a beautiful situation on the slope of the

hill overlooking the sound and Mamaroneck bay. This place is remarkable for a very distinct echo, the true object of which appears to be the opposite residence on Heathcote hill. In the still dewy evenings of summer, when the air is very elastic, and a dead stillness prevails, every word spoken in the neighboring house is plainly re-echoed from the northern bank. "Echo (says White) has always been so amusing to the imagination that the poets have personified her; and, in their hands she has been the occasion of many a beautiful fiction. Nor need the gravest man be ashamed to appear taken with such a phenomenon, since it may become the subject of philosophical or mathematical inquiries."<sup>a</sup>

Several members of the Nelson family are interred north of Mr. Brown's residence. Upon the only tombstone remaining, are chiselled two open hands pointing to a heart, with the following inscription.

PALYCARPES  
NELSON  
WAS                      BORN  
  
JULY 21 ABO'T · 4 ·  
A · CLOCK · IN · THE · MO  
RNING · IN · THE · YEAR  
1688 · I · FINNIST · MY · CORS  
AND · QVIT · THE · LAND · IN ·  
WITNES · HEREOF · MY · HART · MY  
HAND · DESESED · DESEMBER 19  
1738.

The neighboring property was formerly vested in the Budd family, whose surname it still retains. The last member that occupied the estate was Col. Gilbert Budd, who served with great distinction in the continental army during the Revolution. This gentleman was the son of Underhill Budd of Budd's neck, Rye. The family cemetery is situated on that portion of the estate which borders the Sheldrake, to the north of the village.

---

<sup>a</sup> White's Selborne.

Here repose the remains of

GILBERT BUDD,<sup>a</sup>  
 who died Oct. 14th, 1805,  
 aged 87 years.

Whoe'er thou art, with silent footsteps tread  
 The hollow mould where he reclines his head;  
 Let not thoughtless mirth one dear deny,  
 But pensive, pause, where truth and honour lie.  
 His the gay wit that fond attention drew,  
 Oft heard delighted by the friendly few;  
 The heart, that melted at another's grief;  
 The hand, in secret, that bestowed relief.  
 Perhaps e'en now, from yonder realm of day,  
 To his lov'd relatives he sends a ray:  
 Pleased to behold affections like his own,  
 With filial duty raised this votive stone.

COLONEL GILBERT BUDD,  
 who departed this life  
 Sept. 7, 1808,  
 aged 69 years.

JANE BARKER,  
 dec'd December,  
 1754, aged 42.

There are also memorials to members of the Horton, Miller and Seaman families.

The Episcopal church occupies a very pleasant position directly north of the main street. The building is a neat wooden structure, valued at \$5000. The foundation of the present edifice was laid A. D. 1823, and the church consecrated to the service of Almighty God on the 17th of June, 1823, under the name and title of St. Thomas's Church, Mamaroneck, by the Right Rev. J. H. Hobart, bishop of the diocese. Previous to the Revolution Mamaroneck constituted one of the appropriated towns of Rye parish, having been annexed thereto by acts of assembly, passed in 1693-7. In 1725 Mamaroneck contributed towards the rectors' tax £18, and in 1767, £19 2s. 6d. The name of John Disbrow (vestryman from Mamaroneck) occurs in the church records of Rye, A. D. 1710. The parochial clergy appear to have offi-

---

<sup>a</sup> Gilbert Budd, M. D., a distinguished surgeon, educated at Edinburgh, son of John Budd. See Genealogy.

ciated here at a very early period, as Madame Knight incidentally mentions in 1701, "that one Church of England parson officiated in all these three towns," viz. Rye, Mamaroneck and Horseneck, "once every Sunday in turns throughout the year."<sup>a</sup> The French clergy of New Rochelle also performed occasional services here; this we learn from the records of Trinity Church.

Upon the 12th of April, 1814, the present parish was organized, and incorporated in accordance with the act passed on the 17th of March, 1795. At the first meeting of the congregation, held on Tuesday in Easter week, 1814, the following gentlemen were chosen officers for the ensuing year, viz. John Peter de Lancey and Peter Jay Munro, churchwardens. William Gray, Benj. Hadden, Henry Gedney, Samuel Deal, Abraham Guion, and Matthias G. Valentine, vestrymen.<sup>b</sup>

To this church is attached a handsome parsonage and glebe, the whole real estate being valued at \$8000. The communion silver consists of a flaggon and a double set of chalices and patens, inscribed

St. Thomas's Church, Mamaroneck, New York, 1837.

Besides a smaller set for the private administration of the holy eucharist. During the incumbency of the present rector the church has undergone considerable repairs; the parsonage has also been purchased and greatly improved. In 1835-6, Trinity Church, New York, liberally endowed this church with the sum of \$800. The first delegate from this parish to the diocesan convention was Guy C. Bayley, Esq.

#### RECTORS OF MAMARONECK.

Institution or call.	Incumbents.	by resig.
4 June, 1821,	Wm. Heathcote de Lancey, Deacon,	ditto.
27 Sept. 1823,	Lewis P. Bayard, Presb.	ditto.

<sup>a</sup> Madame Knight's Journal, p 59.

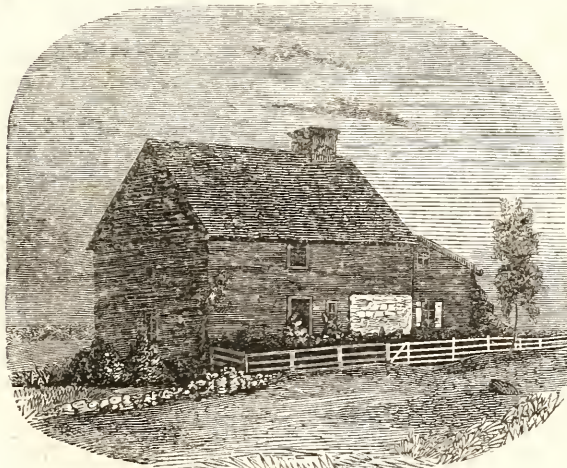
<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec., lib. A., 145. A second incorporation of this church took place on the 9th of June, 1817, when John Peter de Lancey and Peter Jay Munro were elected wardens; Jacob Mott, Guy C. Bayley, Monmouth Lyon, Edward Floyd de Lancey, Benjamin Hadden, Henry Gedney, Benjamin Croker, and Thomas James de Lancey, vestrymen. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 159.

24 Mar. 1824,	William C. Mead,	Presb.	ditto.
21 Sept. 1825,	Lewis P. Bayard,	Presb.	ditto.
24 Mar. 1827,	Alexander H. Crosby,	Presb.	ditto.
2 Oct. 1830,	John M. Forbes,	Presb.	ditto.
11 Feb. 1832,	William M. Carmichael,	Presb.	ditto.
17 Nov. 1834,	Peter S. Chauncey,	Presb.	ditto.
8 Sept. 1836,	Robert W. Harris,	Presb.	ditto.
14 July, 1837,	William A. Curtis,	Presb.	ditto.
5 July, 1841,	John M. Ward, present incumbent.		

*Notitia Parochialis.*

1847, communicants, 53, baptisms, 10.

The Methodist society of this town was organized upon the 5th of April, 1813, when the following gentlemen were elected trustees: Absalom Tompkins, John Bonnet, William Ward, Elisha Budd, Ransome Burtis, and William Ally.<sup>a</sup> The meeting house is a chaste edifice of wood located upon the highest summit of Good Success ridge.



Disbrow House, Mamaroneck.

Near the western entrance of the village stands the ancient residence of the Disbrow family, erected A. D. 1677. Mrs. Sanford, the present occupant, being the eighth generation that has resided upon this spot. The Disbrows were originally from the county of Essex,<sup>b</sup> England, and related to, if not

immediately descended from Major General John Disborough or Disbrow, who married Anna Cromwell, sister of the Protector. By

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 145.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Morant, in his history of Essex, gives the arms of the Disboroughs, argent a fesse, between three bears' heads muzzled, erased sable.

this lady John Disborough had seven sons, the youngest was Benjamin Disborough, Esq. Samuel Disborough, Lord Keeper of Scotland, a near relation of the Major General, was one of the first settlers of Guildford, Connecticut, A. D. 1650. "The town of Guildford, says Mr. Lambert, being from the first a component part of New Haven government, was allowed an assistant or magistrate. Mr. Samuel Disborough, who, next to Mr. Whitefield, was esteemed the first and richest of the planters, was the first magistrate. After serving the colony in this capacity about twelve years, he returned to England in company with Mr. Whitefield. After the restoration of King Charles II., he was a subject of royal favor and political distinction, and at one time was a member of the privy council."<sup>a</sup>

Peter Disbrow was one of the first and principal proprietors of Rye, in 1660. John Disbrow, son of Peter, purchased lands of John Richbell in 1674. A second sale occurs in 1685.

A. D. 1688. Henry Disbrow, son of John, conveys half his lands situated in Mamaroneck to his son Henry Disbrow.<sup>b</sup> Henry Disbrow of Mamaroneck, in 1690, releases a lot of ground lying in the town of Rye, which he formerly bought of John Wascot.<sup>c</sup> The Disbrow estate in this town originally consisted of 700 acres, including a valuable tract of wood-land, called the Hickory grove.

The family relate the following tradition; that in the early part of the last century, the Indians came in a large body to the present house and demanded immediate possession of the property. Fortunately the original title deeds had been carefully secured. They were now opened and shown to the Indians, who upon seeing their own signatures appeared perfectly satisfied, and instantly marched off, leaving the Disbrows in undisturbed possession.<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Lambert's Hist. of New Haven, p. 167.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. B. 21.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. B. 65.

<sup>d</sup> The old family bible, edited by Basket of London, A. D. 1756, contains the book of common prayer, and numerous family entries. There is also preserved a

To face page 310, vol 1.

I

Peter Disbrow of Rye, 1695

Henry Disbrow, 1701, purchased lands in Mamaroneck

Henry Disbrow of Mamaroneck=....

Henry Disbrow=1 Elizabeth Pell, nat. 1732 nat. May, 1732  
2 Anne Davis  
3 Martha Sands  
Joseph, will 1756, No. 21,

Henry Disbrow, nat. 25 Feb. 1755=Abigail Fowler, nat. Aug 3, 1750  
ob. Jan. 24, 1825, at. 69. m. 19 Jan. 1779, ob. 19 May, 1811

John=

Henry of N. Rochelle  
nat. 15 Jan. 1780, ob.  
Aug. 1847

John nat. ....  
April 1786  
ob 28 Jan  
1823

William of N. York=Anne  
nat. 25 Mar. 1794 Robin-  
son

James Henry=  
nat. 13 May  
1798

Stephen  
Thomas

Henry of  
N. Jersey

Elizabeth=Gilbert  
Underhill

Rebecca=Robert  
Mathieson

William H.

David B. G

Adelaide

this lady John Disborough had seven sons, the youngest was Benjamin Disborough, Esq. Samuel Disborough, Lord Keeper of Scotland, a near relation of the Major General, was one of the first settlers of Guildford, Connecticut, A. D. 1650. "The town of Guildford, says Mr. Lambert, being from the first a component part of New Haven government, was allowed an assistant or magistrate. Mr. Samuel Disborough, who, next to Mr. Whitefield, was esteemed the first and richest of the planters, was the first magistrate. After serving the colony in this capacity about twelve years, he returned to England in company with Mr. Whitefield. After the restoration of King Charles II., he was a subject of royal favor and political distinction, and at one time was a member of the privy council."<sup>a</sup>

Peter Disbrow was one of the first and principal proprietors of Rye, in 1660. John Disbrow, son of Peter, purchased lands of John Richbell in 1674. A second sale occurs in 1685.

A. D. 1688. Henry Disbrow, son of John, conveys half his lands situated in Mamaroneck to his son Henry Disbrow.<sup>b</sup> Henry Disbrow of Mamaroneck, in 1690, releases a lot of ground lying in the town of Rye, which he formerly bought of John Wascot.<sup>c</sup> The Disbrow estate in this town originally consisted of 700 acres, including a valuable tract of wood-land, called the Hickory grove.

The family relate the following tradition; that in the early part of the last century, the Indians came in a large body to the present house and demanded immediate possession of the property. Fortunately the original title deeds had been carefully secured. They were now opened and shown to the Indians, who upon seeing their own signatures appeared perfectly satisfied, and instantly marched off, leaving the Disbrows in undisturbed possession.<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Lambert's Hist. of New Haven, p. 167.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. B. 21.

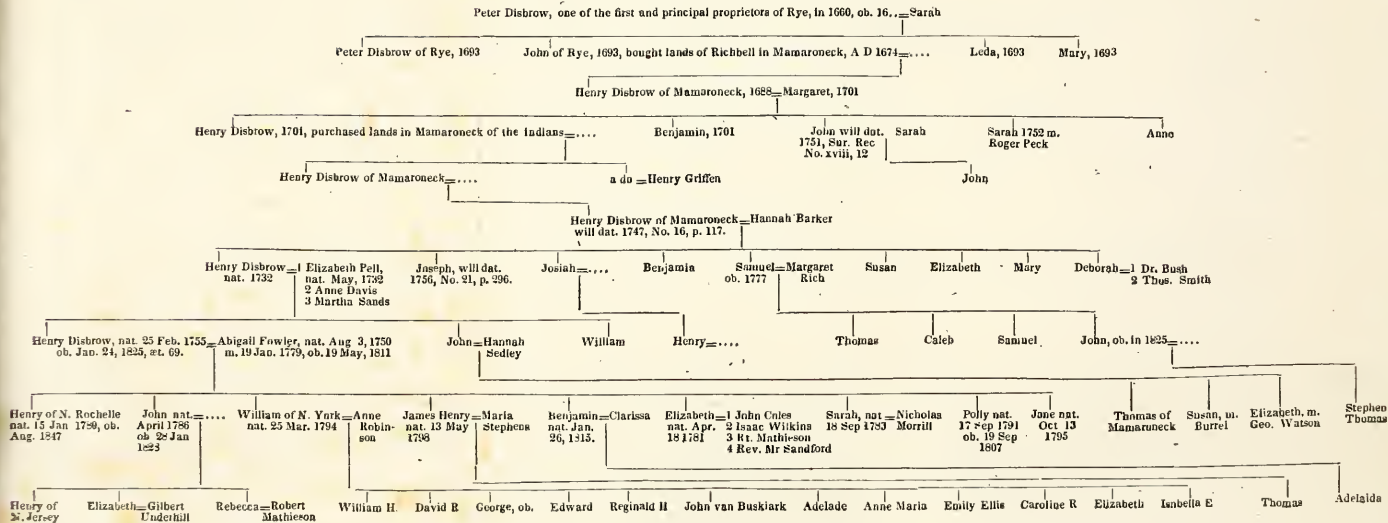
<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. B. 65.

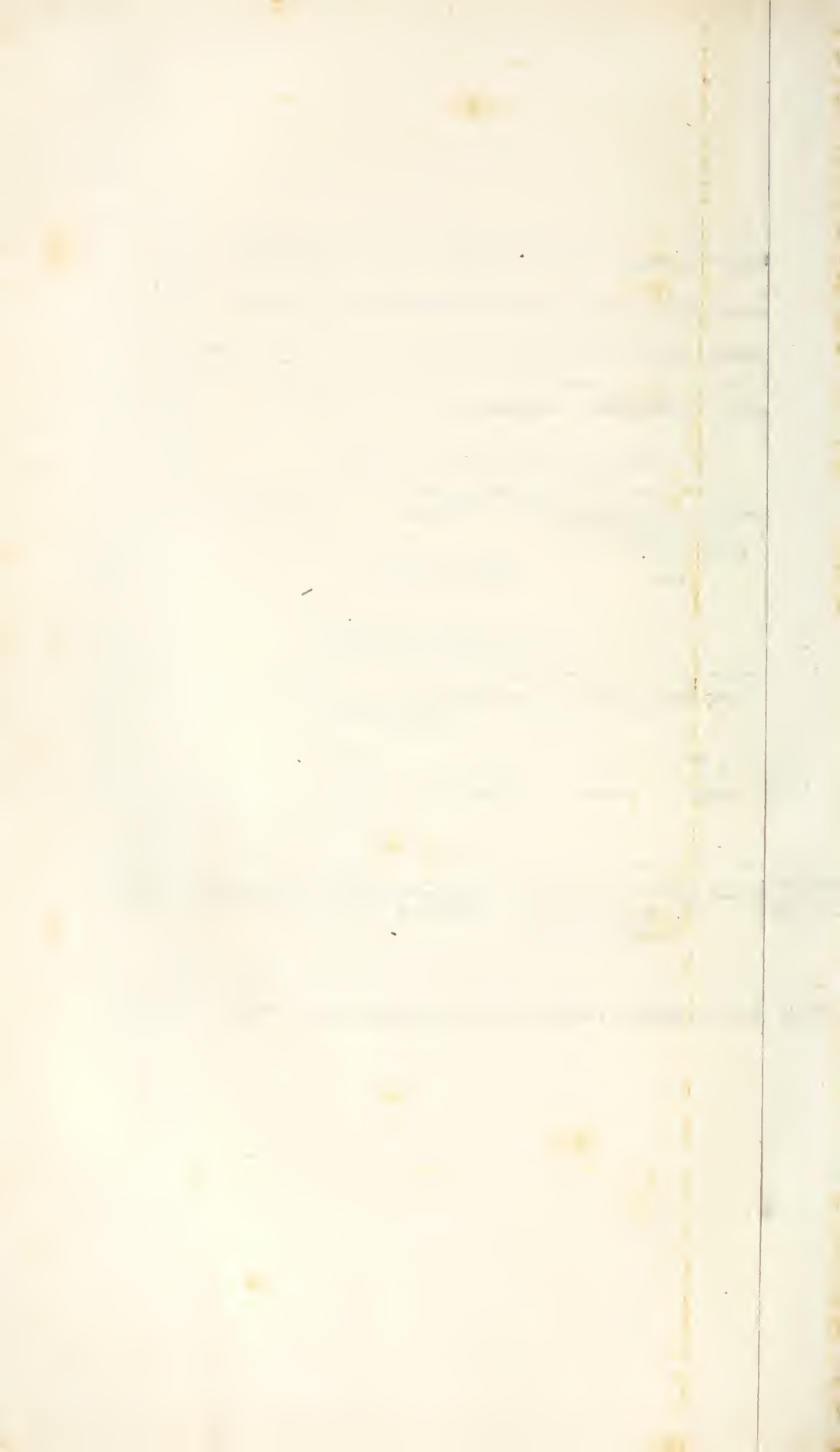
<sup>d</sup> The old family bible, edited by Basket of London, A. D. 1756, contains the book of common prayer, and numerous family entries. There is also preserved a



PEDIGREE OF DISBROW OF MAMARONECK.

Arms, arg. a fesse between three boars' heads muzzled erased sa.





There are numerous historical events in connection with Mamaroneck, which deserve to be recorded here.

The day previous to the battle of White Plains, Colonel Smallwood of the American army surprised and cut off a large body of the enemy, under the command of Major Rogers, stationed upon Nelson hill and its vicinity. The event is thus related by General Heath: "Lord Sterling, who was before in this vicinity with his brigade, had formed an enterprise against Maj. Rogers's corps. The old Indian hunter of the last war, who had engaged in the British service, with his corps, now lay on the out-posts of the British army, near Mamaroneck. The enterprise was conducted with good address; and if the Americans had known exactly how Rogers's corps lay, they would probably have killed or taken the whole. As it was, thirty-six prisoners, sixty muskets, and some other articles, were taken. The Major, conformably to his former general conduct, escaped with the rest of his corps. This was a pretty affair; and if the writer could recollect the name of the commanding officer, with pride and pleasure he would insert it. He belonged to one of the southern lines of the army; and the whole of the party were southern troops."<sup>a</sup>

On the 31st of January, 1777, a cordon of troops was ordered to be formed, to extend from Dobb's Ferry to Mamaroneck. "February 1, 1777. Foraging being now the object, a large number of teams were sent out towards Mamaroneck, and upwards of eighty loads of forage were brought off."<sup>b</sup>

The following letter of Gen. Samuel Parsons, dated at Mamaroneck, Nov. 21st, 1777, to Governor Tryon, with his answer, is copied from a newspaper printed at the time:—

"Sir:—Adding to the natural horrors of war the most wanton destruction of property, is an act of cruelty unknown to civilized nations, and unaccustomed

---

silver headed walking-stick inscribed "Henry Disbrow, 1697." The above heir-looms are in the possession of William Disbrow of New York.

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 74. Holt's Gazette. The dead who fell upon this occasion were buried on the south east side of Nelson's hill.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 114.

in war, until the servants of the King of Great Britain have convinced the impartial world, no act of inhumanity, no stretch of despotism, are too great to exercise toward those they term rebels.

“Had any apparent advantage been derived from burning the house on Philips’ manor, last Monday, there would have been some reason to justify the measure ; but when no benefit whatever can be proposed, by burning those buildings and stripping the women and children of necessary apparel, to cover them from the severity of a cold night, and captivating and leading in triumph to your lines, in the most ignominious manner, the heads of those families, I know not what justifiable cause to assign for those acts of cruelty ; nor can I conceive a necessity for your further order to destroy Tarrytown.

“You cannot be insensible it is every day in my power to destroy the houses and buildings of Col. Philips, and those belonging to the family of De Lancey, each as near your lines as those buildings were to my guards ; and notwithstanding your utmost diligence, you cannot prevent the destruction of every house this side of King’s Bridge. It is not fear, it is not want of opportunity that has preserved those buildings ; but a sense of the injustice and savageness of such a line of conduct has saved them ; and nothing but necessity will induce me to copy examples of this sort, so often set by your troops.

“It is not my inclination, sir, to war in this manner, against the inhabitants within your lines, who suppose themselves within your king’s protection. But necessity will oblige me to retaliate in kind upon your friends, to procure the exercise of that justice which humanity used to dictate, unless your explicit disavowal of your two captains, Emmerick and Barns, shall convince me these houses were burned without your knowledge and against your order.

“I am, sir, your humble servant,

“SAMUEL H. PARSONS.”

*Governor Tryon’s answer, dated*

“King’s Bridge Camp, Nov. 23d, 1777.

“SIR :—Could I possibly conceive myself accountable to any revolted subject of the king of Great Britain, I might answer your letter, received by the flag of truce yesterday, respecting the conduct of the party under Capt. Emmerick’s command upon the taking of Peter and Cornelius van Tassell ; I have, however, candor enough to assure you, as much as I abhor every principle of inhumanity or ungenerous conduct, I should, were I in more authority, burn every committee man’s house within my reach, as I deem those agents the wicked instruments of the continued calamities of this country ; and in order sooner to purge the country of them, I am willing to give twenty-five dollars for every acting committee man, who shall be delivered up to the king’s troops : I guess, before the end of next campaign, they will be torn in pieces by their own countrymen, whom they have forcibly dragged in opposition to their principles and duty (after fining them to the extent of their property) to

take up arms against their lawful sovereign, and compelling them to exchange their happy constitution for paper, rags, anarchy and distress.

“The ruins from the conflagration of New York, by the emissaries of your party last year, remain a memorial of their tender regard for their fellow beings exposed to the ‘severity of a cold night.’

“This is the first correspondence I have held with the king’s enemies, on my part in America, and as I am immediately under the command of Sir Henry Clinton, your future letters, dictated with decency, would be more properly directed to his Excellency.

“I am, sir, your most obedient servant,

“To Gen. Parsons.”

“WILLIAM TRYON, Major General.

This came on Sunday, the 23d inst., and by some means or other Gen. De Lancey’s house at Bloomingdale, on York island, took fire on the 25th, at night.<sup>a</sup>

“The army marched on the 8th of July, 1778, in two columns to Mamaroneck; the Queen’s Rangers were, in front of that, on the right. On the 9th, the commander-in-chief marched with the army to Byram’s Bridge: on leaving this camp, to return to Mamaroneck, the next day, the Queen’s Rangers formed the rear guard. Upon this march, three soldiers, straggling at a small distance from their huts, were taken by some militia; Lieutenant Colonel Simcoe expressed, in orders, “that he is the most sensibly affected at the loss of the three men, who straggled from their posts during the last march. He feels himself but ill repaid for the confidence he has placed in the regiment, and his inclination to ease their duty, by never posting an unnecessary sentinel; at the same time, he trusts, that, as this has been the first instance of the kind during the time he has had the honor of commanding the Queen’s Rangers, it will be the last; and that the soldiers will reflect what they must suffer by a long imprisonment, from a mean and despicable enemy, who never has, or can gain, any advantage over them, but what arises from their own disobedience of orders.”<sup>b</sup>

It was in the vicinity of Mamaroneck that Lieut. Hickford, of the Refugee corps, overtook Col. White, of the Continental

<sup>a</sup> Barber’s Hist. Col. St. N. Y. p. 591, 592.

<sup>b</sup> Simcoe’s Mil. Jour. p. 102, 103.

army, upon his retreat from Morrisania. Some thirty stragglers, who had taken refuge on the ice, were killed by the British cavalry.

De Lancey Neck, commonly called the Great or Middle Neck, lies immediately southwest of the village, upon the east side of which is situated Seaman's Point or Neck, the ancient Wanmainuck of the aborigines. This point obtained its present name from Giles Seaman, former proprietor, who married Lydia Mott, a lineal descendant of John Richbell, the patentee. The dwelling house and old Mott farm are now owned by Mr. Isaac Hall. The former, a fine wooden structure, occupies a commanding position, overlooking the Bay and opposite shores of Budd's Neck. Indeed, from this spot, the best view is obtained of the village.

Upon the extremity of the Point there is a small cemetery, containing several memorials to members of the Bain, Disbrow, and Vanderbilt families. From the old Boston post-road a picturesque lane leads to the northwest extremity of De Lancey Neck, sometimes called Long Beach Point. Extensive woods ornament the shores of the Neck, and add greatly to the beauty of the scenery. The present proprietors of the Great Neck are the Right Rev. William Heathcote de Lancey, and his nephew, Thomas James de Lancey, Esq. The former individual holds some four or five hundred acres on the east side, at present leased to Mr. William Doby.

Next in order, we have the Prickly Pear Creek, Eagle Hammock, Barker's Hammock, and Munro's Gut, which constitutes the division line between the Great Neck proper and the Western Neck, now called Munro's Neck. Munro's Neck formerly belonged to the Palmer family. Samuel Palmer, having obtained a confirmation for the same, under the hand of the Indian sachein Ann Hook, in the year 1700-1. From the heirs of Samuel Palmer it passed by purchase to the late Peter Jay Munro in 1798. From the Munros it was purchased by the present proprietor, Edward K. Collins, Esq., in 1845.

The mansion erected by Peter Jay Munro occupies a delightful situation near the river, on the highest grounds of the Neck, commanding, on the south and east, extensive prospects of the Sound. A grateful air of seclusion has been studied in the

arrangement of the grounds and the grouping of trees. The view from the road is tastefully concealed by a fine plantation of pine, which adds much to the beauty of the place. The late owner, Peter Jay Munro, Esq., was the son of the Rev. Harry Munro, M. A., (for several years rector of St. John's Church Yonkers,<sup>a</sup>) by his wife Eva Jay.

Peter Jay Munro was a distinguished member of the bar, and one of the framers of the late constitution of this state. By his wife Margaret White, Mr. Munro left two sons, Henry and John, besides several daughters. Mott's neck adjoins Munro's on the west, upon which is situated the farm and residence of William Scott, Esq. This delightful spot commands pleasing views of the neighboring neck and sound scenery. Mr. Scott is the son of James Scott, whose father, Walter Scott,<sup>b</sup> took an active part in the political drama of 1745, in favor of Prince Charles; father and son subsequently emigrated to this country, and during the war of the revolution, distinguished themselves as brave and zealous patriots.

Upon the Flandreau hammock is placed the Premium Mills, the property of William P. Kellogg, Esq. In this vicinity are the estates of James I. Roosevelt, Esq., (late member of congress,) and Mrs. Susan Daubeney; the latter adjoins the Palmer burying ground on the west.<sup>c</sup>

We have previously shown that the town is well watered by numerous streams, some of which have one or more mills standing on them.

The growth of wood is of the usual various sorts. On the high lands, oak, hickory, walnut and chesnut are the chief. The lower grounds are covered generally with maple, birch and elm, &c.

The principal minerals of the town, are quartz, drusy, calcedony, agate and jasper. Serpentine of almost every variety, and cromate of iron; veins of the dolomitic marble also occur in various localities.

---

<sup>a</sup> This family is a branch of the Munros of Foulis, Scotland.

<sup>b</sup> The first Walter of this family was the famous "Auld Wat," the renowned freebooter of the Scottish border.

<sup>c</sup> Near the Palmer burying ground stood the old Friends meeting house.

## MOUNT PLEASANT.

THE name of this town justly denotes its pleasant location upon high hills. Mount Pleasant has been recently separated from the old town of the same name, and erected into a distinct township;<sup>a</sup> both having been formerly included in the Manor of Philipsburgh. It is situated six miles north-west of the village of White Plains, distant thirty three miles from New York and one hundred and nineteen from Albany; bounded north by Ossining and Newcastle, east by Northcastle, south by Greenburgh, and west by Ossining and the Hudson river.

This tract of land must originally have formed a portion of the ancient domains of Weckquaskeck, as we find Weskora, sachem of that place, and Ghoharius, his brother, (a chief residing here,) conjointly selling lands, bordering the Pocanteco, to Frederick Philipse in the year 1680.

Upon the district situated near the mouth of the Pocanteco river, (called by the English Mill river,) the Indians conferred the name of Pockerhoe. Pocanteco, the Indian name for the beautiful Mill river, is clearly a derivative from the Algonquin, Pockóhantês,<sup>b</sup> a term expressive of a "run between two hills." The local term Pockerhoe also points to the same root for its origin. Be this as it may, however, no signification could be more descriptive of this wizard stream, which pours its swift current through the foldings of a hundred hills. The Dutch styled it the Sleepy haven kill,<sup>c</sup> hence the origin of the present term Sleepy Hollow, as applied to the valley.

---

<sup>a</sup> Mount Pleasant was originally organized on the 7th of March, 1788. Rev. Stat. The present town on the 20th of May, 1845.

<sup>b</sup> The Indian name of the illustrious princess of Virginia.

<sup>c</sup> Van der Donck's Hist. N. N.



In the rear of the Dutch church, (situated near the entrance of the Hollow,) there formerly stood an Indian fort, the remains of which, together with several mounds, have long since been levelled with the surrounding ground. For the erection of these forts or strong-holds, Van der Donck informs us, "that the Indians usually selected a situation on the side of a steep hill, near a stream or river, which is difficult of access except from the water, and inaccessible on every other side; with a level plain on the crown of the hill, which they enclose with a strong stockade work in a singular manner." Near their plantations they also frequently erect small works to secure their wives and children, against the sudden irruption of the small marauding parties of their enemies. When their castles and forts are constructed according to their rude custom, they consider the same very safe and secure places.<sup>a</sup>

The vestiges of a military redoubt at present occupy the summit of the adjoining hill, commonly called Jones's hill. This elevated spot commands the valley of Sleepy Hollow, Tarrytown, and splendid prospects of the Hudson river.

In 1680, the Indian sachem Ghoharius, with the consent of his brother Weskora, for a certain sum of wampum and other goods, released unto Frederick Philipse a large strip of land, lying on each side of the Pocanteco river, for which they acknowledged to have received full satisfaction. This sale was ratified before the governor of the province, at Fort James, in New York, and subsequently confirmed to Frederick Philipse by royal patent, the same year.

Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, &c. Whereas Frederick Philipse of this city, merchant, hath made application unto me for a grant of a certain creek or river, called by the Indians, Pocantico, (whereon to set a mill,) with a proportion of land on each side adjoining thereunto; the same lying within the bounds of the Indians' land at Wickers creek,<sup>b</sup> on the east side of Hudson's river; and by my leave and approbation hath made purchase thereof from the native Indian proprietors, the which they have acknowledged before me, as

<sup>a</sup> Van der Donck's Hist. N. N. N. Y. Hist. Soc. N. Ser. vol. i. p. 197.

<sup>b</sup> A corruption of the Indian name Weckquaskeck.

likewise to have received full satisfaction for the same, from the said Frederick Philipse. The said land adjoining to the creek or river aforesaid lying on each side thereof, north and south 1600 treads or steps, which at twelve feet to the rod makes 400 rods; and runs up into the country as far as the said creek or river goeth, provided always, that if the said creek or river, called by the Indians Neppera, and by the Christians the Yonckers creek or kill, shall come within that space of land of 400 rods on the south side of the aforesaid creek or river, that it shall extend no further than the said creek or river of Neppera, but the rest to bee so farre up into the country on each side as the said creek or river called Pocantico runs, being about north-east. KNOW YE that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given under his Royal Highness, I have given and granted, and by these presents do, hereby give, ratify, confirm and grant unto said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assignees, the afore-recited creek or river, parcels of land and premises hereinbefore expressed and set forth, together with all the woodlands, meadows, pastures, marches, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, as also the privilege of erecting and building a mill, making a dam, or whatsoever else shall be necessary and requisite thereunto, with all profits, commodities and emoluments unto the said creek, river and land belonging, or in any wise appertaining, to have and to hold the said creek or river and land with their and every of their appurtenances to the said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assignees unto the proper use and behoof of him the said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assignees for ever, he making improvement thereon according to law, and yielding and paying therefor yearly and every year unto his Royal Highness, a quit rent, one bushel of winter wheat in New York, unto such officer or officers as shall be empowered to receive the same. Given under my hand and sealed with the seal of the Province, in New York, the first day of April, in the thirty-second year of his Majesty's reign, Anno Domini, 1680.

From this period we find the Indians gradually yielding their territory to the above patentee. Upon the 5th of June, 1684, (the royal patent says 7th of May,) the Indians, Sepham, Ghoharim, (Ghoharius,) Kakiinsigh, Enhoak,<sup>a</sup> Arradppanint, Kewanghis, a squaw, Niepack, Kewightakem, and Teatangoom, sell to Frederick Philipse,

All that tract or parcel of land situate, lying, and being to the eastward of the land of Frederick Philipse, between the creek called Neppierha, or the

---

<sup>a</sup> The real name of this chief was Wampage, the place of his residence Ann hook's neck. (Pelham Point.)

Yoncker's Kill and Broncks's River, beginning on the south side at the northerly bounds of the Yoncker's land, and from thence along the aforesaid creek Nippierha, however it runs, till you come to the most northerly bounds of the said Frederick Philipse's land, and from thence northeast into the woods unto Broncks's river, so as it runs southerly to the eastward of the Yoncker's land aforesaid, and from thence, with a westerly line, to the aforesaid Yoncker's Kill, or Nippierha, &c. &c. The goods paid by the grantee were as follows :—<sup>a</sup>

130 fathoms of white Wampum,	2 Knives,
12 Guns,	12 pair of Stockings,
14 fathoms of Duffels,	15 Hatchets,
12 Blankets,	10 Hoes,
8 Coats,	10 earthen Jugs,
6 Kettles,	10 iron Pots,
6 fathoms of Stroudwater,	4 ½ fats of Beer,
16 Shirts,	2 ankers of Rum,
25 lbs. of Powder,	2 rolls of Tobacco.
20 bars of Lead,	
10 Spoons,	

The above purchase, (together with other sales, from the Indians,) was confirmed to Philipse by his Excellency, Thomas Dongan, Governor of the province, on the 23d of December, 1684. The whole were subsequently included within the Royal Patent of Philipsburgh. From the Indian grants and royal patents, we proceed to give our readers a brief account of the Philipse family, collected from the best authorities and original manuscripts still extant.

Frederick Philipse, or, (as the name was spelt at that early period,) Vreedryk or Vrederyck Felypsen,<sup>b</sup> father of the before mentioned grantee of this town, was a native of Bolswaert, in East Friesland, and son of the Hon. Viscount Felyps, of Bohemia, who sprang from the ancient Viscounts of that name and country. The early members of this family took an active part in favor of the Reformers, John Huss, and Jerome of Prague, for which they suffered severely both in person and property, being finally

---

<sup>a</sup> See Yonkers.

<sup>b</sup> Vredcryk Felypsen is equivalent to Frederyk Flypsen.

compelled to fly, for better security, to East Friesland.<sup>a</sup> The Christian name Vreedryk is of Dutch origin, and means literally, ‘*peace rich,*’ or rich in peace,<sup>b</sup> in allusion probably to the bitter sufferings of former days, as well as the present enjoyment of religious peace. The surname Felypsen is a patronymic from Philip—the F for the PH, and the ij for the single Y; hence the English substitute, Frederick Philipse, which at an early period became the adopted name of the family,—the Dutch termination *se* or *sen*, meaning in English son. Vrederyck therefore the son of Felyp.<sup>c</sup> Besides their high rank as nobles, they appear also to have held the office of Grand Veneurs, or keepers of the deer forests in Bohemia.<sup>d</sup> In the year 1658, Frederick Philipse, (having previously obtained the consent of the Stadtholder and States General,) emigrated from East Friesland to the New Netherlands, carrying with him money, plate and jewels.<sup>e</sup> Upon his arrival in the city of New Amsterdam, (as New York was then called,) he purchased a large estate, and soon became one of its wealthiest merchants. On the 9th of February, 1658, Governor Stuyvesant granted certain lots within the city of New Amsterdam to Frederick Philipse, which were subsequently confirmed to him by the English governor, on the 12th of April, 1667.

In the general tax list of 1674, raised by the Dutch, on their reconquest of the city and province, we find the estate of Frederick Philipse assessed at 80,000 guilders.<sup>f</sup> By his wife Margaret Dacres, he left one son, Frederick, born at Bolswaert, East Friesland, A.D. 1656.

Frederick Philipse, jun., was the first lord of the manor of

<sup>a</sup> Burke’s Hist. of the Landed Gent. of Great Britain.

<sup>b</sup> In German, peace is *friede*, and rich is *reich*: the compound, therefore, in that language would be *Friedreich*.

<sup>c</sup> Extracts from a note of Egbert Benson to Captain Phillips, in 1820.

<sup>d</sup> The collar and badge of office, consisting of a gold chain set with amethysts, diamonds, rubies and emeralds, is still preserved in the family. It was last in possession of Miss Susan Robinson, sister of Col. Beverly Robinson.

<sup>e</sup> The original passport, written upon vellum, is also preserved in the Robinson family.

<sup>f</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1 Ser. vol. i. p. 387.

Philipsburgh, founder of the Dutch church at Sleepy Hollow ; and for many years a leading member of the governor's council.

Upon the arrival of Henry Sloughter as governor of the province, on the 19th of March, 1691, we find the following members present at a council meeting, holden the same day, viz. Joseph Dudley, Frederick Philipse, Stephen van Cortlandt, Gabriel Monville, Chudley Brooke, Thomas Willet, and William Pinhorne.<sup>a</sup>

In the assize records at Albany, occurs "a pass to Frederick Philipse, to put on board the sloop called ye Cock 250 schepels of Wheat, to be carried to Milford Mill to be ground, &c.

Permit and suffer Frederick Philipse to land on board the sloop ye Cock 250 schepels of Wheat, to be carryed to ye Mill at Milford for his conveniency of having it ye sooner ground for his occasions, he engaging that the floure and meale thereof shall be brought back to this place. Given under my hand at Fort James, in New Yorke, the 22d day of April, 1671.

To ye officers of ye customs,  
or whom else this may concern."

The annexed items, are taken from the family ledger of the Philipse's:—

1680, John Reyder is debett,		Pr Contra is Credytt,	
According to accounte de- lijwered, £3956:2 yn wampum, Com in hol- lans,	} £791:16	To a house and lot yn hollans,	£2250
To the Sherryf, a byll of Exchang yu hollans,		1500:—	To som petyoy- ans, left yn the house,
Apoyt 20 Toyn Sylver, payd £5:0:0 Com'r,			2290:00
Hollans, " "	50 —	Rest due To me	
To 110 pieces of fryer woed wyth Cartyng	3:4	pr ballins,	0054:00
			<u>£2344:00</u>

<sup>a</sup> Dunlap's Hist. of N. Y. vol. i. p. 202.

Nyew Yorck, thys the 21 £2344 : 00  
 day of September, Anno.  
 1680. FREDRYCK FLYPSEN.

The following note occurs among some old documents endorsed  
 Van Fredrich Philipse :—

Net Bockmaster, N. York the 3 Agust, 1694,  
 I have sacket to pay you'n de sume  
 Of sich pount twellef shilling voor  
 partt of Elyas Pudington  
 fogge £6—12—0.

FREDRYCK FLYPSE.

Frederick Philipse married, first, Margaret Hardenbroch, wid-  
 ow of Peter Rudolphus; this lady died A.D. 1662: secondly,  
 Catharine, daughter of the Hon. Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt.



*Frederick Flypse*

*Coat of Arms*

To face page 322, vol. i.

Arms. az. a demi lion rampant, rising out of a ducal coronet ar, si

Hon. Vrederyck Fe  
Holland, emigrat  
land to New Am:

Philip French.  
Philip Philipse, proprietor of the = Maria S  
Springhead estate Island of Spark  
Barbadoes, nat. 1676, ob. 1700 mar. 1

1752.  
Col. Frederick Philipse, = Elizabeth Willia  
last Lord of the Ma- widow of ... I  
nor of Philipsborough gers, da. of Cha  
ob. cir. May. 1785, at Williams, Esq.  
Chester, England.

Frederick Philipse = Harriet Griffith of Rhent, N. Wales	Charles Philipse, drown- ed in cross- ing the Bay of Fundy.	Philip, ob. s. p.	John, killed at the battle of Trafalgar, 1805.	Susan, marri- ed Right Hon Viscount Strangford.	Nathaniel, ob. s. p.
Frederick Ch					
Frederick, of Rhent, N. Wales, nat 1829.		Edwin Will. nat. 8th April, 1830.			

Nyew Yorck, thys the 21 £2344:00  
 day of September, Anno.  
 1680. FREDRYCK FLYPSEN.

The following note occurs among some old documents endorsed  
 Van Fredrich Philipse:—

Net Bockmaster, N. York the 3 Agust, 1694,  
 I have sacket to pay you'n de sume  
 Of sich pount twellef shilling voor  
 partt of Elyas Pudington  
 fogge £6—12—0.

FREDRYCK FLYPSE.

Frederick Philipse married, first, Margaret Hardenbroch, wid-  
 ow of Peter Rudolphus; this lady died A.D. 1662: secondly,  
 Catharine, daughter of the Hon. Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt.



*Frederick Philipse*

*John W. W. W.*

Coat of Arms and Signatures of the Founders of Sleepy Hollow Church.



PEDIGREE OF PHILPSE OF PHILLIPSBOROUGH.

Arms. az. a demi lion rampant, rising out of a ducal coronet ar, surmounted by a ducal coronet, or. Crest. a demi lion rampant rising out of a Viscount's coronet ar, surmounted by a ducal coronet, or.  
Motto.—Quod tibi vis fieri facias.

Right Hon. Viscount Felyps, = Eva . . . . of a noble Bohemian family,  
of Bohemia who fled with her son Vredetcky, to  
East Frisland.

Hon. Vrederyck Felypsen, of Bolswaert, = Margaret Daere, descended of the noble family of  
Holland, emigrated from East Fris- Daere, of Daere.  
land to New Amsterdam, in 1638.

Hon. Vrederyck Felypsen, or Philipse, = 1. Margaret Hardenbroch, widow of Peter Rodolphus, ob. 1662.  
first Lord of the Manor of Philipse. = 2. Catharine van Cortlandt, da. of the Right Hon. Olof Stevens  
rough, nat. 1656, ob. 1702. Will dat. van Cortlandt, nat. 25th Oct. 1652. Will dated 7th January,  
9th Dec. 1702, fol. 12, p. 98, 99. Sur. 1730. Interred at Sleepy Hollow.  
Rec. N. Y.

Philip Philipse, proprietor of the = Maria Sparkes, da. of Gov.  
Springhead estate, Island of Sparkes, of Barbadoes,  
Barbadoes, nat. 1676, ob. 1700. mar. 1697, ob. 1700.

Adolphus Philipse, proprietor of the Highland  
Upper Patent and the northern part of Phil-  
lipsborough, nat. 1657, ob. s. p. 1749. Buri-  
ed at Sleepy Hollow.

Eva Philipse, nat. 6th July, 1658 = Jacobus van Cortlandt. Annetje Philipse = Philip French.

Hon. Frederick Philipse, second Lord of the Manor of Phillipsborough, heir to = Joanna, da. of Anthony Brockholes This  
his grandfather Vredetcky, and his uncle Adolphus, born at Barbadoes A. lady was unfortunately killed by a fall  
D. 1698; died of consumption, 1751; founder of St. John's Church, Yonk-  
ers. Will dated 6th June, 1751, No. 16, p. 3. Sur. Rec. N. Y. from her carriage on the Highland estate.  
Married 1736.

Col. Frederick Philipse, = Elizabeth Williams,  
last Lord of the Ma- widow of . . . .  
nor of Phillipsborough s. p.  
ob. cir. May, 1785, at Charles  
Chester, England. Williams, Esq.

Philip Philipse, proprietor = Marg'ret  
of the Highland Upper = Marston.  
Patent; bapt. in Dutch  
Ch. N. Y. 1724. Will  
dated 1768, No. 36, p.  
529. Sur. Rec. N. Y.

Susannah, devise with = Col. Beverley  
her brother Philip, Robinson.  
of the Upper Patent,  
nat. 27 Sept. 1727,  
ob. Nov. 1822.

Mary, nat. 3d July = Col. Roger  
1730, mar. 19 Jan. Morris, member of  
ob. 1758, ob. the Gov. Council.  
18 July, 1825

Margaret, ob. s. p. 1752.

Frederick Philipse = Harriet  
Griffith  
of Rhent,  
N. Wales

Charles Phil-  
ipse, drown-  
ed in cross-  
ing the Bay  
of Fandy.

Philip, ob.  
s. p.

John, killed at  
the battle of  
Trafalgar,  
1805.

Susan, mar-  
ried Right Hon.  
Viscount  
Strafford.

Sarah, mar-  
ried Mungo  
Noble.

Elizab'h,  
March,  
1823.  
Webber.

Charlotte,  
married  
Captain  
Webber.

Adolph, s. p. 1785.

Frederick, an officer = 1. Mary Marston, da. of Nathaniel  
in the Briti-h ser- Marston.  
vice, ob. 1829. 2. Maria, niece of the Hon. Vis-  
count Gage.

Nathaniel,  
ob. s. p.

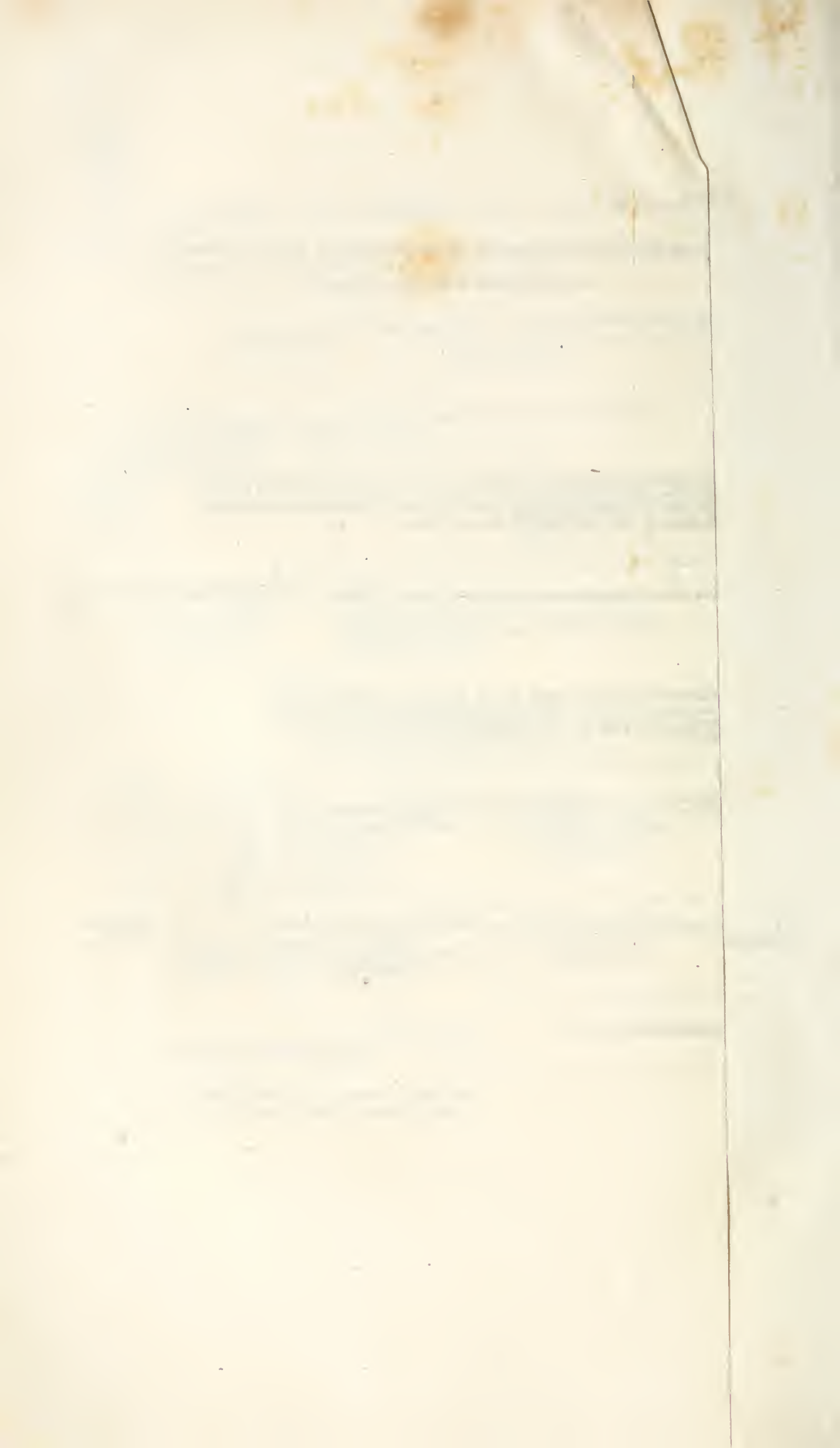
Frederick Charles = Miss Palliser, da. of Sir Hugh Palliser,  
of Buck's Co. England.

Mary Philipse = Samuel Gouverneur.

Frederick, of Rhent,  
N. Wales, nat. 1539.

Edwin Will, nat.  
8th April, 1830.

Frederick, proprietor of the Philipstowa  
estate, Putnam County, New York.



In his last will, which bears date 9th of December, 1702, he orders his body to be

“ interred at my burial place at ye *upper mills*, with such charges and in such decent manner as to my executors, hereinafter named, shall seem convenient. To Frederick Philipse, my grandson, born in Barbadoes, ye only son of Philip my eldest son, I will and devise my houses in New York, and also the lands in Westchester, the island called Papirineman, with the meadows and bridge toll, and all my lands and meadow called ye Yonkers plantation together with all houses, mills, mill-dams, &c., &c., as also a piece of land in the Mile Square by me late bought of Michael Hawdon, and all that tract or piece of land extending from the Yonckers patent or plantation to a creek called by ye Indians Wysquaqua, and by the Christians William Portugue’s creek, and thence according to ye course of that creek unto ye woods to ye head of the same ; from thence on an east line to the creek called Yonckers creek, and then to continue on the same course to Bronck’s river and as far as my right extends as also all that ye equal half of my meadow lying at Tappan, &c., &c., to have and to hold all ye said real estate, tenements and hereditaments, with ye appurtenances herein before given, &c., to ye said Frederick Philipse, my grandson, and ye heirs male of his body lawfully begotten ; and for lack of such issue ye remainder thereof to my son Adolphus Philipse, and ye heirs male of his body, and for lack of such issue to ye next right heirs of me, ye said Frederick Philipse, ye grandfather, forever.

Also he devises to his grandson, Frederick Philipse, the negroes at ye Yonckers plantation, a negro man called Harry, and wife and child, a negro called Peter, &c., and ye boat Yoncker, with her furniture, apparel and appurtenances, and ye equal half of all ye cattle, horses and sheep upon and belonging to ye plantation at ye upper mills, &c., &c. Provided always and I do hereby declare my will, mind, and true intention, that I give ye lands, hereditaments and their appurtenances, extending from ye Yonckers plantation to William Portugue’s creek, and so to Broncks’s river, to my said grandson with this restriction and condition that it is in lieu of a tract of land called Cinquesingte, purchased long since and intended to be given to his father, my eldest son, soe that if att any time hereafter ye said Frederick Philipse, my grandson shall claim or recover this tract of land called Cinquesingte, that it is my will and desire that ye tract of land and appurtenances extending from ye Yonckers plantation to William Portugue’s creek before described, shall devolve unto, and be vested in my said son Adolphus, his heirs, &c., &c.

To his son Adolphus he bequeathes the rest of his houses and the lands, tenements and hereditaments in ye county of Westchester, (to wit) all that tract of land lying at ye upper mills, beginning at a creek called by ye Indians Wysquaqua, and by ye Christians, William Portugue’s creek, being ye boundz

of ye lands hereby given to my grandson, and so running up Hudson's river to ye creek called Wegheandagh, where is built two grist mills, and from thence along ye said river to a creek called Keghtawan, or Croton river, or along that river or creek according to ye patent, then on an east line into ye woods as far as Bronck's river according to its course to ye lands herein before discribed to my grandson aforesaid, as also ye moyety or equal half of a saw-mill with its appurtenances att Mamaroneck, late by me purchased of Dr. Selinus, &c., &c. To his daughter Eva, wife of Jacobus van Cortlandt, a house and ground in the city of New York, &c., also a mortgage of Dr. Henricus Selynus upon ye lands of John Richbell, deceased, 20 miles into ye country and to his daughter Annetje, ye wife of Philip French, a house and ground in the city of New York, and an estate in Berghen, New Jersey, &c., &c.<sup>a</sup> Dated 26th October, 1700,

ADOLPHUS PHILIPSE, }  
JACOBUS VAN CORTLANDT. } *Executors.*

By this will all that portion of the manor north of Dobb's Ferry, including the present town became vested in Adolphus or Adolph Philipse, second son of the devisee. This individual was also proprietor of the great Highland patent, situated north of St. Anthony's Nose, granted on the 17th of June, 1697, and the executor of his brother, Philip Philipse's estate, letters of administration having been granted to him in that capacity on the 22d of Dec., 1714.<sup>b</sup> Adolph Philipse died without issue A.D. 1749. The following inventory of money, plate, jewels, and household furniture, &c., &c., belonging to the manor house, which was taken in 1752 (after the death of Adolph Philipse,) affords a curious specimen of the habits and tastes of a gentleman at that early period. It is transcribed from the original, preserved among the family papers at Philips-town, Putnam county, entitled

A old acc't by Jos. Read, Administrator of Adolph Philipse.

Dr. the estate of Fred. Philipse, Esq., dec. to Jos. Read, against estate of Fred. Philipse.

1749, Jan'y 25.—

To 1 Boston shilling and 1 lead meddal, . . . . £0 1 2

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of Wills, Surrogate's Off. N. Y. vii. 101.

<sup>b</sup> Surrogate's Off. N. Y. No. vii. 286.

1 cask of apples, . . . . .	0	6	0	
1-3 of a ps. broad cloth qt. 10 yards <i>a</i> 20s.	10	0	0	
1 steel or iron tobacco box, . . . . .	0	2	0	10 9 2

---

1750, April 6.—

To 1-8th pt. of cloth, &c., divided among the re- lations, . . . . .	4	0	0	
11 bottles of wine, &c., &c., a small jug with ink, . . . . .	1	3	6	

---

5 3 6

1750, May 8.—

To the picture of Mr. Adolph,* . . . . .	6	0	0	
--	---	---	---	--

1750, May 20.—

To a razor strap with silver, . . . . .	0	6	0	
1 silver tankard, wt. 26oz. 10p. 0gr. at 9s. 6d. pr. ounce, . . . . .	12	11	9	
1 ditto, wt. 23oz. 14p. 12gr. at 10s. 6d.	12	9	1½	
1 ditto shaving basin and box, wt. 21oz. 15p. at 10s. 6d. pr. oz. . . . .	11	8	4½	
1 ditto tooth case pick, . . . . .	0	13	3	
12 ditto spoons, wt. 23oz. 14p. 12gr. at 10s. 3d. per ounce, . . . . .	12	3	2	
6 ditto, wt. 9oz. 15p. at 9s. 3d. . . . .	4	10	2¼	
3 ditto, " 3 10 " " " . . . . .	1	12	4½	
1 ditto beker, wt. 7oz 8p. at 9s. 9d. pr. oz.	3	12	1¾	
1 ditto cup, wt. 2oz 13p. 12gr. at 9s. 9d. pr. oz.	1	6	1	
6 ditto tea spoons, wt. 1oz. 19p, at 12s. 3d. "	1	3	10¾	
1 reading glass with a silver rim, . . . . .	1	4	0	
1 deers foot tipt with gold, . . . . .	0	11	3	
1 black box with a ps. gold and a ps. silver,	3	15	0	
A parcell of gold beads and pearl, wt. 2oz 14p. at 6l. 4s. . . . .	16	14	10	
2 trunks, . . . . .	0	6	0	
½ pt. of a parcell homspun and parcell linnen,	1	13	0	
½ pt. of a parcell wampum valued at £40,	6	6	6	
½ pt. of 236oz. 9p. 12gr. silver pigs, valued by A. B. . . . .	11	11	6	

---

\* This picture is still preserved at Philipstown.

4 Arabian ps. gold, . . . . .	2 16 0	106 7 114
	<hr/>	
	85 11 5	
To sundrys bought at public vendue in March, 1749-50, as per acct. . . . .		
To ditto at the manor of Philipsburgh in April, 1750, as per acct. . . . .	534 16 11	620 8 4
November 25.—		
To John Chambers, Esq., pr. assignn for a sadle and bridle 54s. 8d., a pr. pistols capt with sil- ver 82s., bo't at vendue and paid s'd Philipse, 1752, July 16.—	6 16 0	
To Jas. Read for sundreys bo't in co. at vendue as per acct. here enclosed, . . . . .	10 7 2	
	<hr/>	
	17 3 2	
$\frac{1}{2}$ pt. of a parcell whetstones divided among the relations, supposed to be worth 20s.	0 2 6	
Philip Philipse, pr. assignm't, for 2 ps. linnen bo't at vendue 23 March, 1749-50, . . . . .	1 17 6	
492 bushels wheat rec'd by Elbert Aartsen for rent due to Adolph Philipse, which ball. Philipse sold to Johanis Schank at 4s. per bushel, . . . . .	98 8 0	
a field of green wheat of ab't 8 bushels sowing which by the opinion of Mr. Wm. Curray, belonged to the personal estate of Adolph Philipse, . . . . .	8 0 0	
a bolting box reel and bolting cloath valued by E. Byvanek, . . . . .	6 10 0	112 18 0
		£880 1 0
	Errors E.	
	JAS. READ,	
	Estate of Mr.	

By the death of Adolph Philipse the whole manor of Philipsburgh became vested in his nephew the Hon Frederick Philipse, as the nearest male heir of his grandfather Frederick. This distinguished personage was born upon the Springhead estate, island of Barbadoes, A. D. 1698. From 1721 to 1728 he filled the office of speaker to the house of Assembly in the province of New York, and in 1733 was Baron of the Exchequer, and second judge of

the same. He also erected St. John's Church, Yonkers, and liberally endowed it with a farm and parsonage. The Hon. Frederick Philipse died in 1751. His last will bears date the 6th of June of that year. His two sons, by Joanna Brockholes, daughter of governor Brockholes, were Frederick Philipse and Philips Philipse; also three daughters, Susannah, Mary and Margaret. The eldest son, Frederick, being heir of his father, became devisee in tail male of the manor of Philipsburgh, tenant for life, under the will of his father, with remainder in tail male, while the upper highland patent of Philipstown passed to the second son, Philip, devisee in tail of those lands among whose descendants it still remains.

In 1779 the lands in this town together with the rest of the manor of Philipsburgh, became by the attainder of Colonel Frederick Philipse, vested in the state of New York. After having been in possession of the Philipse family nearly a century. In the year 1784, the state by commission parcelled out these lands to various individuals. One of the principal grantees was Gerard G. Beeckman, Esq., who purchased one thousand six hundred acres in the vicinity of Tarrytown, upon which is situated the old manor house. Mr. Beeckman married Cornelia van Cortlandt; thus after the forfeiture of the Philipses a portion of the manor again reverted to a connection of that ancient family; Jacobus van Cortlandt, having married Eva Philipse, daughter of the Hon. Frederick Philipse.

In the south-west corner of Mount Pleasant, between the André brook and the Mill river, (Pocanteco,) is situated Beeckmantown, commonly called the Pocanteco suburb of Tarrytown. This place derives its name from the family of the Beeckmans. The residence of Stephen D. Beeckman, M. D., son of the former proprietor stands upon the highest ground of the village immediately west of the Irving Institute.

To the north of Beeckmantown lies the romantic region of Sleepy Hollow.

A pleasing land of drowsy head it was,  
Of dreams that wave before the half-shut eye;

And of gay castles in the clouds that pass,  
For ever flushing round a summer sky.

[*Castle of Indolence.*

Castle Philipse, the ancient residence of the Lords of Philipsburgh, occupies a pleasant position on the west side of the mill pond, nearly facing the old Dutch church; having acquired the appellation from the fact, that in the early days of the colony, it was strongly fortified with cannon. A necessary precaution against any sudden attack of the Indians. The embrasures or port holes can yet be traced on the cellar walls.

The western end of the building is evidently the remains of a much older edifice, probably coeval with the erection of the mill in 1683.

The mansion is seen to the best advantage from the Sleepy Hollow bridge. The principal entrance is through a porch on the north-east front.

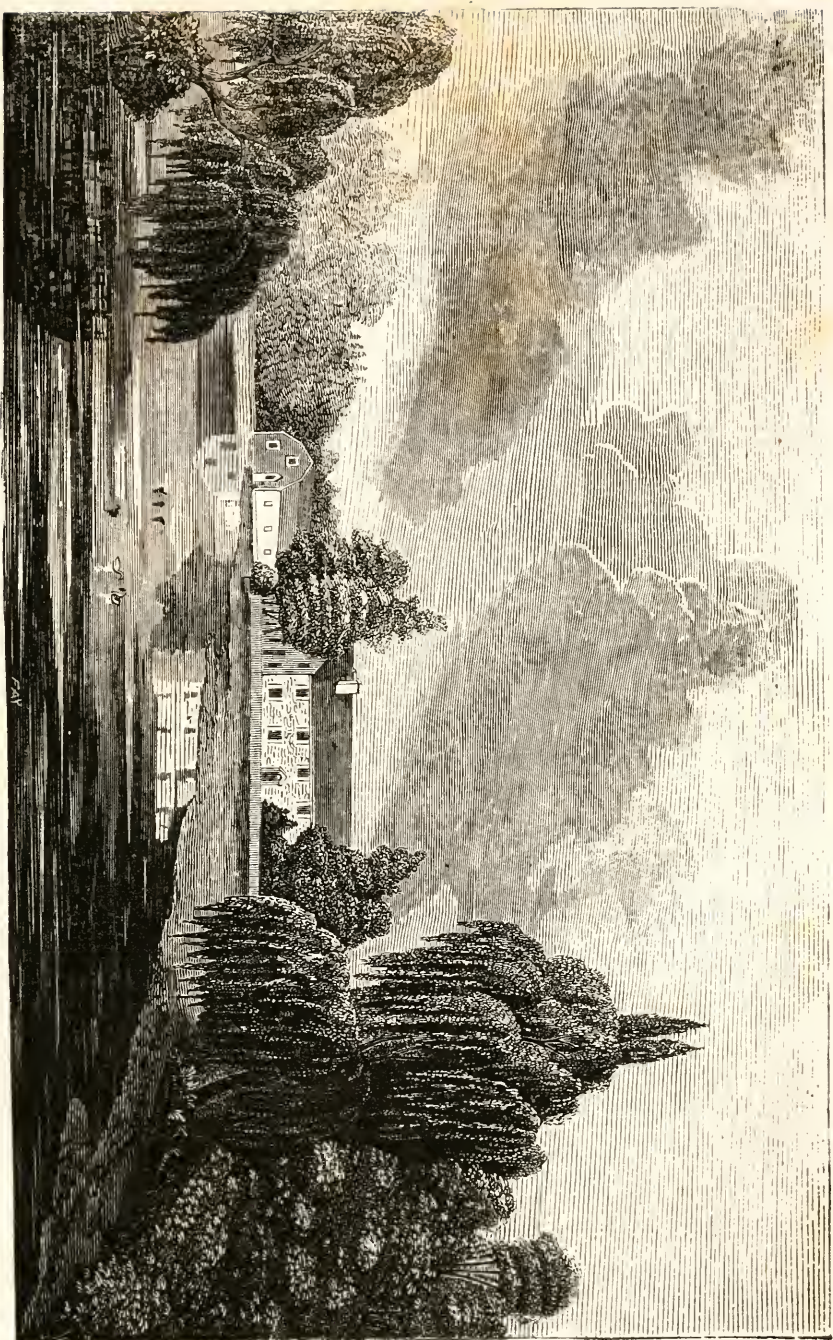
Here within the compass of a broad territory, the Philipses enjoyed every distinction, feudal and ecclesiastic, which the Colonial Government could bestow. The manor, baronial courts, hunting, fishing, advowson, and family sepulture, together with all the blessings which the retirement of a country life and religion could afford.

The old mill adjoining the mansion is quite in unison with the scenery of the Hollow. In the palmy days of the manor, the tenants brought hither their grain to be ground, and from hence the lords of the manor shipped their flour for the metropolis.

The keel of the famous Roebuck that so often navigated the neighboring waters with her cargo to and from the city, quietly reposes in the muddy bed of the Pocanteco creek. The old miller (who lived to the advanced age of 94,) was in the habit of calling it his iron mine, as the keel actually furnished him with bolts and nails for his lifetime.

The manor house was for many years the residence of the late Mrs. Cornelia Beeckman, widow of Gerard G. Beeckman, Esq.





PHILPSE MANOR HOUSE.



We are indebted to the Evening Gazette for the subjoined notice of this remarkable lady. "Cornelia Beeckman was the second daughter of Lt. Gov. Pierre Van Cortlandt, by his wife Joanna Livingston, whose birth took place in the old manor house, by the banks of the Croton, on the 2d of August, 1753. Here her infancy and youth glided away, and but a short time before the war, she left its scenes for a life in New York, whither she removed upon her marriage with Gerard Beeckman. When the Revolutionary troubles ran high, she came back to the old house at Peekskill, where part of her family resided. Exposed, of course, to all manner of insult and aggression, well-known herself, and in connection with her father, subsequently lieutenant-governor of this state, under Clinton, (but at that time, president of the Committee of Public Safety,) with her brother serving in the army, and many relatives and intimates, all zealous whigs and devoted Americans, her unconquerable will and high spirit bore her safely and uncompromisingly through those trying scenes. We copy from a graphic sketch, by an able and we fancy well-known pen, the following notice of her life during this disastrous period.

"One little incident we recollect to have read in a letter written by herself, in 1777. A party of royalists, under Colonels Bayard and Fanning, came to the Peekskill house, and commencing their customary course of treatment, one insultingly asked her, 'Are you not the daughter of that old rebel Pierre van Cortlandt?' She replied, 'I am the daughter of Pierre van Cortlandt, but it becomes not such as you to call my father a rebel.' The tory raised his musket, when she, with great calmness, reproved him for his insolence and bade him begone. The coward turned away abashed, and she remained uninjured. The narrative thus continues:—'Her letters written about this time, many of which are now in existence, abound in patriotic spirit. Excited by personal wrongs and the aggressions she witnessed all around her, she gave vent to her feelings in most severe reproaches upon the enemy, and in fervent prayers for the American success. But although thus exposed, she refused to leave her home, and continued to reside in the same place until the close of the war. Mrs. Beeckman possessed a powerful memory, and to the close

of her life could relate with exact minuteness, the interesting events of which she was cognizant ; and the recital of those incidents abounded in interest, as all who know her can well bear witness.'

"A number of years after the war, Mrs. Beeckman removed to the old manor house, on Philips' manor, situated in what is now known as Beekmantown, where she continued to reside to the day of her death.

"Mrs. Beeckman was a lady of the old school, possessed of a high sense of honor, exact principles and an unconquerable will, with a vigorous mind and a powerful memory. She retained her faculties unimpaired to the day of her death. She lived beyond the allotted period of life, and could almost gaze upon the face of a second century of existence. The scenes of her childhood were ever before her ; but of the friends of her childhood, how few remained. Her destiny was fulfilled, and on the fourteenth of March, 1847, a Sabbath morning, she gave a farewell glance o'er the scenes of her eventful life, and without a sigh resigned her spirit to the God who gave it."

Col. Watson Webb is the present occupant of the manor house.

The ancient Dutch Church is agreeably situated a short distance from the manor house, near the northern edge of the hol-



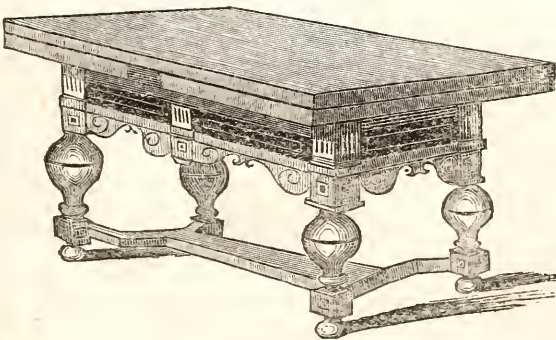
Dutch Reformed Church, Sleepy Hollow.

low. This venerable edifice, believed to be the oldest church now standing in the state, is built of stone and brick, the latter having been imported from Holland for the express purpose. Its antique belfry and hipped roof, present quite a picturesque appearance. The entrance was formerly through a porch on the south side; this has been recently changed to the western end facing the road.

On the north side of the doorway is inserted a stone tablet inscribed as follows :

ERECTED AND BUILT BY FREDERICK  
PHILIPS AND CATHARINE VAN CORTLANDT  
HIS WIFE, IN 1699.

The interior of the building has undergone considerable repairs and alterations, semi Gothic lights having supplanted the old fashioned square headed windows. The pulpit and Heilig Avondmaal (holy communion table) were like the bricks originally imported from Holland. The former being a capacious affair, surmounted by a sounding board. Like the church itself, we are sorry to say, the pulpit and canopy have not escaped the hands of modern innovation; we believe they are now spread piece meal throughout the country; but thanks to a few generous spirits, the communion table still remains unchanged, a venerable relic of a by-gone age.



Communion Table.

The bell of this church was cast to order in Holland, and pre-

sented by Frederick Philips. It is richly ornamented, and bears the following inscription.

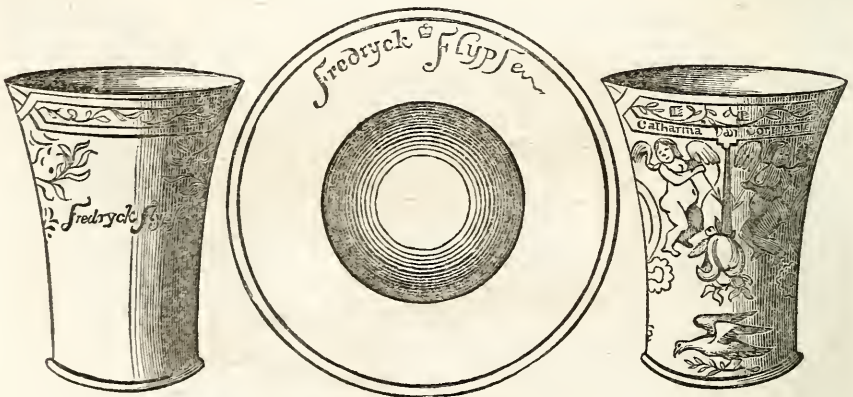


The western end of the building is surmounted by a curious vane, in the shape of a flag bearing the initials of the illustrious founder, Frederick Felypsen.

At an early date, Mr. Felypsen of the city of New York, records the brand mark for himself and all his plantation in the county of Westchester, viz.<sup>a</sup>



The communion service presented by the Philipse family, consists of two silver bekers, the first richly engraved with floriated tracery, bears the name of Fredrych Flypse, and stands about seven inches high. The second is also richly engraved with antique figures, representing angels, birds, fruits and flowers, beside, three ovals containing emblematic figures of Faith, Hope and Charity, near the top is engraved the name of Catharina van Cortlandt, this cup stands nearly six inches and a half high.



The Bekers and Baptismal Bowl.

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. 221.

There is likewise a baptismal bowl composed of solid silver, eight inches and half in diameter, bearing the name of Fredrych Felypse.

These articles are rendered extremely valuable by the distinguished characters who gave them, and well deserve the stranger's notice ; they are at present under the care of the sexton who resides at Tarrytown. Catharine Philipse the liberal benefactress of this church, by her last will dated on the 7th of Jan. 1730, bequeathes one of the bekers, the damask table cloth and communion-table to her son-in-law Adolph Philipse, and to his heirs forever in trust for the church, in the following manner.

Item. I give and bequeath unto my son-in-law Adolph Philipse and to his heirs forever, a large silver beaker, on which my name is engraved, a damask table cloth, five Dutch ells and three quarters long, and two and a half broad, with a long table, in trust to and for the congregation of the Dutch Church erected and built at Philipsburgh, by my late husband Frederick Philipse deceased, according to the discipline of Dort, which beker and cloth I will and direct shall be always kept at the mansion house of the said Adolph Philipse and his heirs, in that part of the manor of Philipsburgh, whereon the said church is erected, to and for the use of the said Church and congregation, and to and for no other use or purpose whatsoever, &c. Item, I give and bequeath unto the children of Paules Vanderhidiers, the sum of £25 current money, &c. Item, I will and direct, that Matty and Sarah, my Indians or muster slaves, shall be manumitted and set at full freedom.\* Item, all the residue and remainder of my whole estate, both real and personal whatsoever and wheresoever, I do give, devise and bequeath, to my brother Jacobus van Cortlandt, one-fifth, and to all the children of his deceased brother Stephanus, and the daughters of his eldest son Johannes, a fifth part, share and share alike, another fifth part to the children of my deceased sister, Marietje van Renssalear, &c., another fifth part of my said estate to the three grand children of my deceased sister Sophia Teller, to be divided between her grandson Andrew, and the children of her son Oliver, deceased, the remaining fifth part

---

\* It is a well known fact, that slavery existed in this county at an early period of its settlement, of which abundant evidence can be produced, but no record appears that native Indians were enslaved until 1705, when we find the following deed of gift executed by Elizabeth Legget, of Westchester, in favor of her daughter Mary: "I hereby give, grant and confirm, unto the said Mary, her heirs and assigns forever, my two negro children, born of the body of Hannah, my negro woman, of the issue of the body of *Robin, my Indian slave*. There are also several bills of sale recorded of Indian squaws being furnished by a dealer in New York, named Jacob Decay. Westchester Rec.

and residue, unto the children of Philip Schuyler deceased, eldest son of my sister, Cornelia Schuyler deceased, and Oliver Schuyler, &c.<sup>a</sup>

Tradition asserts that Catharine Philipse was in the habit of riding up from the city of New York on horseback, mounted on a pillion behind her favorite brother, Jacobus van Cortlandt, for the purpose of superintending the erection of this church; her husband was at this time a merchant in the city. These journeys were generally performed during moonlight nights. Who could relate the interesting conversations that must have passed between the affectionate brother and sister, as they thus sat on horseback pursuing their lonely route from the metropolis, and the joy of the latter when the glorious work was completed? This illustrious lady must certainly have taken a very active part, not only in the building, but in the procuring and subsequent settlement of the ministry therein, which plainly appears from the ancient records of the Dutch church, where her name occurs, as first on the list of its members, in 1697.

“First and before all the right honorable, God-fearing, very wise and prudent, my lady Catharina Philipse, widow of the lord Frederick Philipse of blessed memory, who have promoted down service here in the highest praiseworthy manner.” The Dutch church and its vicinity is thus described in the well known legend of Sleepy Hollow. “The sequestered situation of this church,” says the author of the legend, “seems always to have made it a favorite haunt of troubled spirits. It stands on a knoll surrounded by locust trees and lofty elms, from among which its decent white washed walls shine modestly forth, like christian purity, beaming through the shades of retirement. A gentle slope descends from it to a silver sheet of water bordered by high trees, between which peeps may be caught at the blue hills of the Hudson. To look upon its grass-grown yard where the sunbeams seem to sleep so quietly, one would think that there at least the dead might rest in peace. On one side of the church extends a wide woody dell, along which laves a large brook among broken rocks and trunks of fallen trees. Over a deep black part of the

---

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's office N. Y. No. XI. 85.



stream, not far from the church, was formerly thrown a wooden bridge; the road that led to it and the bridge itself were thickly shaded by overhanging trees which cast a gloom about it even in the day time, but occasioned a fearful darkness at night.”<sup>a</sup>

“It was in this church that the never-to-be-forgotten yankee pedagogue, Ichabod Crane, in rivalry of the old dominie, led off the choir, making the welkin ring with the notes of his nasal psalmody. It was too in the ravine, just back of the church, that this redoubtable hero, Ichabod, had his fearful midnight encounter with the *headless horseman* and forever disappeared from the sight of the goodly inhabitants of Sleepy Hollow.”<sup>b</sup>

The grave yard is delightfully situated on the north side of the church, upon a gentle acclivity. “Some of the tomb-stones are of the rudest sculpture; upon many of them are inscribed, in Dutch, the names and virtues of the deceased, with their portraits curiously carved in the similitude of cherubs.”

Heer legt Begraven  
 Het Lechaam van  
 Hendrick van Tassel,  
 Gebooren den 7 Aug. 1704.

Heer legt Begraven  
 Het Lechaam van Jochum van  
 Wert overleeden den 18  
 van Aug. 1770, out  
 zynde omtrent 72 yaaren.

MORS VINCIT OMNIA.

—◆—

Te Geduchtenis van  
 Catriena Ecker, wedue van  
 Petrus van Tessel, geboren  
 Nov. 10, 1736, overleeden  
 de 10 van Jan'y, 1793, out zynde  
 56 yaaren en i maanden, &c.

---

<sup>a</sup> Legend of Sleepy Hollow, by Washington Irving.

<sup>b</sup> Barber's Hist. Col.

Peter Paulding, an officer  
in the Revolutionary army,  
who died March 3, 1842,  
in the 73d year of  
his age.

Sacred  
to the memory  
of Colonel  
Barnardus Swartwout, jun.,  
a soldier of the Revolution,  
born Sept. 26th 1761.  
deceased Oct. 8th, 1824.

In  
Memory of Captain  
John Buckhout who departed  
this life April the 10th, 1785,  
aged 103 years, and left  
behind him when he died,  
124 children and grandchildren.

There are vaults in the yard belonging to the Paulding, Brown, Beeckman and Brush families.

The Dutch church at Sleepy Hollow appears to have been first organized in 1697, for the ancient books are still extant, containing the names of members at that early date. We have previously shown that the present edifice was erected in 1699.

Prior to the year 1771, this society (like the rest of the Dutch churches in the colony of New York,) was under the supervision of the Classis of Amsterdam, the latter body being subordinate to the Synod of North Holland. In the contest concerning the substitution of the English for the Dutch preaching cir. 1764, the members of this church took an active part, some supposing that by the suppression of the last it would necessarily involve in course of time the loss of the doctrines, the mode of worship, the government, nay even the very name of the church itself. The Rev. Mr. Johannes Ritzema, at this time the stated supply at Sleepy Hollow, uniformly acted throughout this trying period, as the friend of the English party. Upon the formation of the General Synod of the Reformed Dutch Church in North America, in 1771, this church was decreed to belong to the Assembly

of New York, now called the Classis of New York. The articles of union agreed upon by the Synod of 1771 were subscribed (among others) by Johannes Ritzema and Pierre van Cortlandt of Westchester county. The Dutch Reformed Church at Tarrytown is attached to the mother church, its pastor having the charge of both congregations. The first minister of the church, A. D. 1697, was the Rev. William Barthoff, styled in the church records, the well learned and Godly Dominus Guillaume Barthoff.

This individual resided at Hackinsack, New Jersey, but performed services here three or four times a year; he continued his ministrations with great acceptance until the year 1715.

The following item occurs in the church books, (relating to the expense of bringing and returning the abovesaid minister.) "We have paid Thomas van Houtten, who has fetched said minister and brought him over and taken him back again, whom we have satisfied according to our bounden duty, and with that, it may please the Almighty and merciful Gōd to grant him to come for a long time."

The successor of Mr. Barthoff was the Rev. Johannes Ritzema, styled in the church records "veræ doctrinæ minister," (minister of the true doctrine.) This gentleman continued to supply the church until the commencement of the Revolution.<sup>a</sup>

From this general account of the church, we proceed to give a few extracts from its original records. The oldest book is thus entitled, "Het notitie boeck der Christeuytcke Kerck op de Manner op Philipsburgh;" that is, the memorandum book of the Christian Church of the Manor of Philipsburgh. Upon the back of this volume is the following motto.

"Endraght maakt magt, maar twist verquist."

"Unity makes might, but discord squanders."

The first line of the above was originally adopted as the na-

---

<sup>a</sup> One of the sons of the Rev. Mr. Ritzema was a commissioned officer in the British service; this gentleman prior to the Revolution kept a military school at Tarrytown.

tional motto of the United Netherlands, in 1578, "when the seven northern provinces united for mutual interest and defence, which union actually proved the precursor of their deliverance and establishment as a nation."<sup>a</sup>

The preface of the original book runs thus, viz.

"To give the kind reader a right idea why, and at what time, this church book, or particular memorandum according to Christian church order, is made, to be for the satisfaction of every one. Also, first with regard to his Royal Majesty of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. has pleased towards the year of our Lord Jesus Christ, 1680, by prerogative, consent and license to give to the Hon. Lord Frederick Phillips to purchase freely as or for hereditary purchase, a parcel of land or valley, so, and as it is situated in the county of Westchester in America, beginning at the river of Spytten Devil's kill, running north along the river, until the kill of Kitchawong, &c., &c., as in the license and patent is contained, which is called Philipsburgh; to indicate further in what manner and good affection these first Christian inhabitants have shown in the middle of heathenism, and with and about heathens to live, as true Christians, having first thought good and highly necessary, on the Lord's day, to gather together, and in a place for that purpose fit, to pray together, God the Lord with their whole heart to praise, and thank him with psalms and hymns, &c.

"Furthermore it was also thought very necessary to look for a reformed preacher, and to want him to preach three or four times in the year, and to administer the holy sacraments, and that the congregation might become participant thereby, and so much the better by the grace of God, with the covenants of his holy sacraments, according to the true Christian reformed religion.

"And as the Hon. servants of the church experience that up to this time, being the 3d day of November, in the year of our Lord 1715, there are no church memorandum, it has appeared neces-

---

<sup>a</sup> Pro. N. Y. Hist. Soc. p. 56.

sary and good to us for what is past, forasmuch as we can find out according to the upright proof to put it down, also first and successively to put down the annotations in this book by one of our members of Jesus Christ, whom we judge to be able and to possess the knowledge thereto, to put rightly and successively what will come to our knowledge and experience, that which we can find out with truth as will follow.

The volume itself is divided into eight special books, the last of which contains the previous memoranda abbreviated and concluded for the accommodation of the kind reader.

*The first book* contains the first memorandum of the yearly ministry of the word of God and the holy sacraments, as also the salary for each journey, per year and date as noted.

*In the second book* is registered the names of the members of Jesus Christ, who after Christian examination and exhortation have disposed themselves to receive the Lord's holy communion.

*In the third book* of the church memorandum are also registered the names from year to year of the election of elders and deacons to be accepted and confirmed thereto, the year and date, with the addition of the resigning elders and deacons after they will have served two years.

*The fourth book* contains the names of the baptized children, together with the names of their respective parents, also the names of the witnesses, and in what year and month, &c.

*The fifth book* contains the names of those who in the sight of God and his communion, after three previous solemn proclamations, have let themselves been confirmed in the lawful matrimonial state, and in what year and month.

*The sixth book* in which is notified the receipt and the expenditure of the deacons, according to the list thereof, &c., in order to see the settlement of accounts.

*The seventh book* in which is noted the expenditure and receipt of the chest of the poor, with addition to whom and wherefore.

*The eighth and last book* being the conclusion of all the previous books.

*In the first book* occurs the following entry.

“Finding out from the memorandum of Mr. Abraham de Riviere that the well-learned, godly Dominus Guillaume Barthoff has accepted according to request of the first inhabitants and respective congregation of Philipsburgh, in the year of our Lord, 1697, to come to preach here three or four times God’s holy word, and to teach and to serve the holy sacraments, which through God’s particular grace he has continued to do laudably up to this present date, the 2d November, 1715, and have given the said minister, according to our bounden duty, his contentment and satisfaction ; as also to Theunis van Houtten who has fetched said minister from Hackinsack, &c., for which we are particularly and gratefully obliged, to show for the usual beneficence of the High, Hon. and very prudent my lady Mrs. Catharine Philipse.”

“In the second book is registered all the names of the Hon. persons, who after Christian examination and exhortation, have disposed themselves to have been accepted members of Jesus Christ, and worthy to appear at the table of the Lord, and to receive the holy sacrament of communion, A. D. 1697. First and before all the Right Honorable God-fearing, very wise and prudent my Lady Catharine Philipse, widow of the Lord Frederic Philipse of blessed memory, who have promoted divine service here in the highest praiseworthy manner.”

“The continuation of the congregation of Philipsburgh.

Abraham de Reviere,  
 Dirck Storm and Maria his wife,  
 Isaac Sie, the elder, and Esther his wife,  
 Isaac Sie, junr.  
 Jacob van Texel and Aeltje his wife,  
 Joacham van Weert and Christyntje his wife,  
 Sebastiaen Michgjelze and Galanti,  
 Sybouw Kranckheyt and Marytje his wife,  
 Gregoris Storm and Engeltje his wife,  
 Ryck Abramse and Tryntje his wife,  
 Powlus Reetan and Angelica his wife,  
 Albret Gardenier and Maritje his wife,  
 Peter Sie and Pizonella his wife,  
 Jan Ecker and Magdaleentje his wife,

Jacobus Sie and Catharina his wife,  
 Jan Fowseer and Eva his wife,  
 Jan Louwrenzs and Marytje his wife,  
 Andries van Dyck and Gessje his wife,  
 Jan van Texel and Catharina his wife,  
 Isaac van Dyck and Barbera his wife,  
 Abram de Vauw and Marytje his wife,  
 Abram de Reviere, jun., and Weijntje his wife,  
 Geertje wife of Pieter Breys,  
 Gerridit van Weert and Cathalijna his wife,  
 Annetje Branckert wife of Hendrick Krankheyt,  
 Jan Hart from Switzerland,  
 Beellitje wife of Jacob van Weert,  
 David Storm and Esther his wife,  
 Louwrens Mathysie Banckert and Neitje de Groot his wife.  
 Barent Duytsen and Maritje,  
 Lodewyck Ackerman and Hillegenda,  
 Margarietje wife of Joseph Escoth,  
 Rachel the wife of Thos. Hyert,  
 William Artzen, his daughter above named,  
 Abram van Dyck and Elizabeth,  
 Herman Jurckze and Maria,  
 Antje van Weert wife of Samuel Canckle,  
 Antje Sybouwt wife of Jan Beesly,  
 Peter Storm and Margarietje,  
 Antje wife of Henderick Kranckheyt,  
 Antje van Lent wife of Corel Davidson,  
 Cornelis van Texel and Antje his wife,  
 Antje Keninck wife of Lowies Bowle."

*The sixth church book* commences with the following preface:  
 "In this book is noted from the existing notes the receipt and  
 expenditure of each outgoing deacon, since the year of our Lord,  
 A. D. 1697. Being intended to note said accounts uprightly, as  
 per contents of the notes in this book, as much as will be possible  
 according to truth, but as it is very dangerous for a good pilot to  
 arrive safely in a strange harbor without falling on a bar or rock,  
 principally in dark weather, I request accordingly very earnestly

and in a friendly manner, from the kind reader, to please to take in good part if any obscure notes might come in my way as according to our opinion, we find some somewhat obscure; it is: however, my intention, with the help of God, according to the best of my knowledge to close the following accounts according to truth and to make a beginning firstly outgoing deacon as follows:

1697, the 30th October, Jan Ecker received in his deaconship for £85 1s.

1699, the 6th of August, Jan Ecker having finished his time, as appears by his delivered notice of his service as deacon, shows his receipt of the communion money to be £54 16. Further I find a notice dated 25d August, 1702, in which Jan Ecker acknowledges when he was deacon to remain of his receipts above the expenditure up to £149 in money. By which it would appear as said above. The receipt at two periods of the deaconship by said Jan Ecker has been and will amount to £288 17 0.

The receipts of Jacobus Sie, deacon in 1701, were £254 1s. Credit expenditure for the church for bread and wine for communion to the sum of £61 10 and the present moneys are found to be 192 11 which have been put in the box of the church."

£254 1

Upon the 24th of August, 1787, Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip van Cortlandt (commissioners of forfeitures for the southern district of New York,) conveyed to the trustees of this church and their successors, &c., "all that certain church and two acres of land adjoining thereto, including the burial ground situated near the upper mills in the said manor, bounded southerly and west by the post road or highway, and north and eastwardly by the land of Gerardus G. Beeckman; and also that certain farm of land situate and lying and being in the said manor of Philipsburgh, &c., bounded westwardly by Hudson's river, northerly by land now or late belonging to John van Wart, easterly by land now or late belonging to Jacob Buckhout, and southerly by land now or late Gloud Requa's containing 100 acres more or less," &c.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> From the original document in possession of the trustees.



The first incorporation of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church in Philips manor took place on the 24th of January, 1792.<sup>b</sup>

PREDIKANTEN VAN DE KERK OP PHILIPSBURG.

*Tyd van Bevestiging. Predikanten.*

1697,	Dom. Gulielmus Bartholff,	veræ doctrinæ minister.
1760,	Dom. Johannes Ritzema,	V. D. M.
1785,	Dom. Stephen van Vorhees,	V. D. M.
1795,	Dom. John F. Jackson.	V. D. M.
1798,	Dom. Thomas Smith,	V. D. M.
1838,	Dom. George Dubois,	V. D. M.
Jan. 28th, 1845,	Dom. Joseph Wilson,	V. D. M.

*Kerkelyk Aanteken.*

A.D. 1697.	Communicants, 73,	Baptisms, <sup>a</sup> 11,
A.D. 1707.	“	“ 13,
A.D. 1760.	“	“ 48,
A.D. 1845.	“ 218,	“ 3.

DE OUDERLINGEN EN DIAKENEN

VAN DE

KERK OP PHILIPSBURG.

<i>A.D.</i>	<i>Ouderlingen.</i>	<i>Diakenen.</i>
1697.	Abram de Reviere,	Jan Ecker,
1698.	Ryck Abramse,	Wolffert Ecker,
1699.	Joachim Wouters,	David Storms,
1700.	Sybout Herriksen,	Abram de Reviere, jr.
1701.	Jan Hart,	Jacobus Sie,
1702.	David Storm,	Jan Ecker,
1703.	David Storm,	Andries van Dyck,
1704.	Jan Ecker,	Abram de Reviere,
1705.	Jan Hart,	Gerrit van Weert,
1706.	Wolffert Ecker,	Barent Duytser,
1177.	David Storm,	Isaac van Dyck,

<sup>a</sup> This church was again incorporated on the 20th of June, 1792. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 99.

<sup>b</sup> The first child baptized in this church was Rebecca, daughter of Jan and Maria Heyert, Ryck Abramse and Clyntje, his wife, witnesses.

<i>A.D.</i>	<i>Ouderlingen.</i>	<i>Diakenen.</i>
1708.	Abram de Reviere,	Abram de Vouw,
1709.	David Storm,	Cornelis van Texel,
1710.	David Storm,	Gerrit van Weert,
1715.	Jan Harmse, Jan Hart,	Jacob Sie,
1716.	David Storm,	Jan van Texel,
1717.	Cornelius van Texel,	Thomas Storm,
1718.	Sybout Harekse, Barent Duytser,	Deliefferius Concklin, Abram Martelingh,
1719.	Gerrit van Weert,	Jan Bouckhout,
1720.	Abram van Dyck,	Thomas Storm,
1722.	Barent Duytser,	Peter Buys,
1723.	David Storm,	Hendrick Kranckheyt,
1724.	Abram de Vouw,	Deliefferius Concklin,
1725.	Jeremias Henniff,	Willem Kemmen,
1726.	David Storm,	Jan Bouckhout,
1727.	Jan van Tessel,	Jacobus Stoutenburgh,
1728.	Abram Martelingh,	Matthes Canckely,
1729.	David Storm,	Jacobus Stoutenburgh,
1730.	Abram Martelingh, Thomas Storm,	
1731.	Gerrit van Weert,	Jonas Juel,
1732.	Jacobus Stoutenburgh,	Joannes Clemens,
1733.	David Storm,	Jan Belyce,
1734.	Jan Bouckhout,	Joachim van Weert,
1735.	William Kemmen,	Deliefferius Concklin,
1736.	Jan van Tessel, Thomas Storm,	Joannes de Vouw, Adolph Banckert,
1737.	Barent Duytser, Peter Buys,	Stephen Ecker, David Ackerman,
1738.	Jacobus Stoutenburgh, Jan van Texel,	Hendrick van Texel, Adolph Banckert,
1739.	David Storm, Jan Bouckhout,	Jacob van Weert, Harmanis Gardenier,
1742.	Johannis Clemans, Thomas Storm,	Johanis Syffer, Jan Storm,
1743.	Peter Buys,	William Davidsen,

<i>A. D.</i>	<i>Ouderlingen.</i>	<i>Diakenen.</i>
	Jonas Juel,	Dirck van Texel,
1744.	Johannes Clemans,	Everett Bruyn,
	Johannes de Vouw,	Hendericus Storm,
1745.	Jan Bockhout,	Johannes Duytser,
	Hendrick van Tessel,	Jacob Buys,
1746.	Jooris Juel,	Harmen Jurckse,
	Thomas Storm,	Jan Balye,
1748.	William Davids,	Matthys Cancklingh,
	Johannes Seyfer,	Barent Duytser,
1749.	Abraham Martlingh,	William van Weart,
	Hendrick van Tessel,	David Storm,
1750.	Thomas Storm,	Hendricus Storm,
	Hendrick van Tessel,	Harman Turckse,
1751.	William Davids,	Hendrick Storm,
	Jan Bolye,	Joachim van Waert,
1753.	William Hemman,	William Brit,
	Joris Juell,	Jeremias Mevie,
1754.	Hendrick van Tessel,	Barent Duytser,
	Jan Bockhout,	Harman Davids,
1756.	Joris Juell,	Dirck Storm,
	Hendrick Storm,	Abraham Martlinghs, jr.
1757.	Thomas Storm,	Johannes van Tessel,
	Johannes Siffer,	William van Noostrand,
1758.	William Aertse,	Jan Entens,
	David Storm,	Johannes van Tessel,
1760.	Hendrick Storm,	David Sie,
	Johannes Duytser,	Johannes van Tessel,
1762.	Hendrick van Tessel,	William Turckse,
	Benjamin Brown,	Henry van Wormer,
1763.		Isaac Hemmen,
1764.	Thomas Storm,	Nicklass Storm,
	Jan Entens,	
1766.	William van Wert,	William Breis,
	William Arse,	Arie van Wormer,
1767.	Dirck van Tessel,	Abram Bruin,
	Hendrick Storm,	Jan Hemmen,
1769.	William van Noorstrand,	Abraham Storm,

<i>A.D.</i>	<i>Ouderlingen.</i>	<i>Diakenen.</i>
1769.	William Aerse,	Thomas Sampewa,
1770.	Claes Storm,	Marteines van Wert,
	William Turekse,	Jacob van Tessel,
1771.	William van Wart,	Jacobus Davids,
	Abraham Bruyn,	Jacobus Sie,
1773.	Jan Enters,	Barent Lemetter,
	Abraham Storm,	Jacob Bockhout,
1774.	William Aarse,	Peter Hick,
	Martynis van Wart,	Jan Storm,
1776.	Hendrick Storm,	Jacob van Wart,
	David Sie,	Peter Sic,
1790.	Isaac Johnson,	William van Wart,
	Hendrick Storm,	Jan van Tessel.
	Thomas Buys,	

The Pocanteco river has a two fold source, the first being on the lands of Isaac Lounsberry, in the vicinity of the Chappequa hills; and the other, a short distance from it.

After a progress of four miles, these streams unite and become a beautiful river, which is subsequently strengthened and augmented by numerous tributaries flowing from an extensive district of hills and valleys.

The whole course of this river from its spring heads to its outlet in the Hudson, is fraught with scenes of picturesque and romantic beauty. "Far in the foldings of the hills, (says the author of the Sketch Book) winds this wizard stream, sometimes silently and darkly through solemn woodlands, sometimes sparkling between grassy borders or fresh green meadows, sometimes stealing along the feet of rugged heights under the balancing sprays of beech and chesnut trees. A thousand chrystal springs with which this neighborhood abounds, sent down from the hill sides their whimpering rills, as if to pay tribute to the Pocanteco."<sup>a</sup> In the neighborhood of the aqueduct, is a deep ravine, which forms the dreamy region of sleepy hollow. A narrow and broken path which sweeps along the south east bank of the hollow, leads to the foot of the redoubted hill where once stood the

---

\* Knickerbocker Magazine for 1839.

school house, in which the celebrated Ichabod Crane "tarried," for the purpose of instructing the youth of this vicinity. "The whole of the neighborhood (observes the author of the Sketch Book) abounds with local tales, haunted spots and twilight superstitions." "The dominant spirit, however, that haunts this enchanted region, and seems to be commander-in-chief of all the powers of the air, is the apparition of a figure on horseback without a head. It is said by some, to be the ghost of a Hessian trooper, whose head had been carried away by a cannon ball in some nameless battle during the revolutionary war, and who is ever and anon seen by the country folks, hurrying along in the gloom of night, as if on the wings of the wind."

"It is alleged that the body of the trooper having been buried in the church yard, the ghost rides forth to the scene of battle, in nightly quest of his head, and that the rushing speed with which he sometimes passes along the hollow, like a midnight blast, is owing to his being belated and in a hurry to get back to the church yard before daybreak."

Such is the general purport of this legendary superstition. The spectre is known by the name of the "*Headless Horseman of Sleepy Hollow*."<sup>a</sup>

The bridge so famous in goblin story, crossed the hollow, a few yards east of the present structure, the road having been altered within a few years.

A little north of Sleepy Hollow church, lies the Beeckman forest, an extensive tract of woodland, ranging principally east and west of the Albany post road. These woods formerly covered a much larger district of country, and abounded in fine timber; while the thickets and glades, served as a favorite haunt for large herds of wild deer. The perpetual harassing of this noble game, in spite of fines and imprisonment, has long ago exterminated the whole race in this county. In the year 1705, (to prevent if possible, their entire destruction,) it was enacted by the governor council and general assembly, "that whosoever within the county of Westchester, Christian or Indian, freeman or slave, after the first day of January, which will be in the year of our Lord, 1705,

---

<sup>a</sup> Legend of Sleepy Hollow.

shall kill or destroy any buck, doe or fawn, or any sort of deer whatsoever, at any time of the year, except only between the first day of August and the first day of January, shall forfeit and pay the sum of twenty shillings lawful money of New York, or in default thereof, suffer imprisonment for the time and space of twenty days without bail or mainprize, and all dogs also found chasing deer, to be shot during those times.”<sup>a</sup>

These special enactments were doubtless procured through the influence of the Philipses and Van Cortlandts, whose families were both represented in the governor’s council at that period, especially, as the lord of the manor of Cortlandt, was ranger within the forests of Cortlandt. The manorial proprietors of Philipsburgh and Cortlandt, had a charter of free warren, i. e. an exclusive right of pursuing and killing game throughout their respective patents, a privilege which they frequently conceded to their tenantry. This beautifully wooded region contains many wild and picturesque scenes, united with charming prospects of the river.

In the immediate vicinity and bordering the shores of the Hudson, are located the residences of Commodore M. C. Perry, the distinguished commander of the gulf squadron, also Commodore Slidell Mac Kenzie. About a mile north from the mouth of the Pocanteco, is a beautiful little cove called the Haventje,<sup>b</sup> near which, is situated the estate and residence of Col. James Watson Webb. Within the fertile valley of the Nepera, a few miles east of Beeckmantown, stands the county poor house, an incorporated and endowed institution for the afflicted and indigent. Its officers consist of three superintendants, (who are nominated by the board of county supervisors,) a keeper, a physician and teacher. Religious services are maintained weekly, by the voluntary aid of the neighboring clergy. The buildings are extensive, and principally constructed of stone. Its inmates at present, number one hundred and eighty-four. There are accommodations for three hundred, if necessary. To the

---

<sup>a</sup> Acts of Colonial Assembly, 64.

<sup>b</sup> Haventje is the diminutive of Haven and means a little haven or harbor.

south east of the poor house, lies the Paulding farm, now occupied by John Paulding.<sup>a</sup>

The surrounding neighborhood is rendered peculiarly attractive, from the contiguity of high hills rising to bold heights, crowned with rich hanging woods.

The road leading north from the county house, passes near the celebrated Raven Rock, around which cluster a thousand strange stories and superstitions. The rock is said to have derived its name from the fact, that it was once the favorite haunt of that ominous bird, whose hoarse croakings were believed to prognosticate approaching ill. The ferocious wife of Macbeth, on being advised of the approach of Duncan, whose death she had conspired, is made to say in the language of the poet,

“The raven himself is hoarse

That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan

Under my battlements.”—*Macbeth, Act I. scene 5.*

This ill omened bird, once, very numerous on our coasts, has long since retired with the wild game into the interior.

But the dark glen of Raven Rock is now haunted by a far different object, viz., the lady in white, whose shrill shrieks are said to be often heard during the long and weary winter nights, as if presaging a storm. Tradition asserts she perished here in a deep snow.

“The hungry worm my sister is,

This winding sheet I wear,

And cold and weary lasts my night,

Till the last morn appear.”

*Margaret's Ghost.*

The wild and romantic scenery of the glen, seems to favor these superstitions.

In this vicinity, Jacob Acker and Isaac van Wart, two well known patriots, made a bold attack upon a small party of British cavalry. For the purpose of annoying the enemy they concealed themselves in a neighboring wood, from whence they could obtain a view of the road; and, as the British passed in full

---

<sup>a</sup> See Greenburgh.

gallop, Acker fired at the commanding officer. The sudden report of the musket frightened the horse, which immediately commenced plunging; the rider in his efforts to restrain the restive animal, lost his hat, which Acker determined to possess himself of; was again reloading his piece, when the enemy not knowing the number of their assailants deemed it proper to retire, which they effected with much haste and confusion.

Jacob Acker, commonly called Rifle Jake, is reported to have killed with his own hands, on different occasions, five or six of the enemy.

Two miles north-east of the county house are situated the "*four corners*," (so called in contradistinction to the upper,) better known as *Young's burnt house*.

We learn from the petition of Samuel Young, (former proprietor of this place,) and the report of the committee made thereon, that at the commencement of the revolutionary war Joseph Young, father of said Samuel Young, resided about four miles east of Hudson river, on the road leading from Tarrytown to the White Plains, that after the British took possession of the city of New York and part of the county of Westchester, that road was denominated the American lines. The elevated situation of the dwelling house and the number of out buildings, rendered it a convenient post for the American troops; that from August, 1776, until February, 1780, the said dwelling house was occupied as head quarters for the several commanders in those lines, and the out houses were occupied as barracks for the soldiers, and places of deposit for their provisions and military stores; that on the night of the 24th of December, 1778, Capt. Williams of the American army, who, with about forty soldiers, was quartered in the dwelling house and barns, was attacked by the British refugees, under the command of Major Bearmore; that said Captain Williams and a party of soldiers, and said Joseph Young were taken prisoners; that the said Young was himself confined in the provost of the city of New York about one year; that the barn of the said Joseph Young was burnt by the British refugees, who also took from the said Joseph Young a large and valuable stock of cattle; that in the winter of 1779, said dwelling house and other buildings were occupied by the said continental troops, un-



der the command of Colonel Burr, and in the spring of that year Major Hull; that in the winter of 1780 they were occupied by Colonel Thompson of the American army, who then commanded the American troops stationed on the lines; that the prisoners and military stores belonging to said detachment were deposited in said buildings; that on the third of February, 1780, an attack was made on that post by about 1000 British troops and refugees, under the command of Colonel Norton; the action commenced in the dwelling house, and continued in and about it until Colonel Thompson had lost either in killed or wounded about 50 of his men when he surrendered; that immediately thereupon the buildings of the said Joseph Young were burnt, by order of the British commander; that all the clothing, bedding and furniture of the said Joseph Young were destroyed at that inclement season of the year.<sup>a</sup>

This spot is celebrated in the Westchester Spy, as the site of the hamlet of the Four Corners, whilst a little west of the present Van Wart residence stood the "Hotel Flanagan, a place of entertainment for man and beast." In front of this imposing edifice, on a rough board suspended from a gallows-looking post, was written in red chalk,

"ELIZABETH FLANAGAN, HER HOTEL."

This illustrious personage, (who is said to have invented the well known beverage, vulgarly called "cock tail,") was the widow of an American soldier who had fallen in the service of his country. She appears to have gained her livelihood by driving a cart to the various military encampments; and as the Four Corners happened at this time to be the head-quarters of the Virginia horse, Betty Flanagan had emigrated thither with the troops. Here she was stationed when the lawless Skinners dragged in the pedlar spy.<sup>b</sup>

After Colonel Burr left the command of the troops on the lines, in the year 1779, Colonel Thompson, a man of approved bravery; assumed it, and fixed his head-quarters at this place. "On the morning of the 3d of February, 1780, about 9 o'clock, (says

<sup>a</sup> American State Papers on Revolutionary claims. Doc. 600, page 858.

<sup>b</sup> See Westchester Spy, by Fennimore Cooper.

General Heath,) the enemy made an attack on Lieut. Col. Thompson, who commanded the troops on the lines; the colonel's force consisted of two hundred and fifty men, in five companies, properly officered; they were instructed to move between Croton River and the White Plains, Hudson's River and Bedford; never to remain long at any one place, that the enemy might not be able to learn their manner of doing duty, or form a plan for striking them in any particular situation. The colonel had for some days taken post himself at Young's, not far from the White Plains. Capt. Watson, with his company, was with the Lieut. Colonel; Capt. Roberts and Capt. Stoddard, with their companies, were on the right; Capt. Lieutenant Farley, and Capt. Cooper, on the left. The force of the enemy consisted of four flank companies of the first and second British regiments of guards, detachments from two Hessian battalions, some mounted yaugers, and mounted refugees—the whole under the command of Colonel Norton, of the guards. The roads were so filled with snow, that the enemy advanced but slowly, and were obliged to leave their field-pieces behind on the road. They were discovered at a distance by Mr. Campbell, one of our guides, who, from the goodness of his horse, reconnoitred them pretty near. He gave the lieutenant-colonel notice of their advancing, and that their force was considerable, and advised him to take a stronger position a little in his rear. But the lieutenant-colonel was very confident that the enemy were only a body of horse, and that he could easily disperse them, and would not quit his ground. The enemy first attacked a small advance guard, consisting of a sergeant and eight men, who behaved well, and meant to reach the main body in season; but were prevented by the horse, and all taken prisoners. The enemy's horse soon appeared in sight of the Americans, and discharged their rifles at long shot, and waited the coming up of the infantry, when a warm action commenced; the enemy scattered, taking the advantage of the ground and trees in the orchard, and closing up on all sides. The three companies of the detachment which had joined, fought well. After about fifteen minutes sharp conflict, our troops broke; some took into the house, and others made off; the enemy's horse rushing on at the same instant, and the whole shouting. At this time, the two flank companies

came up, but finding how matters stood, judged it best to retreat, Capt. Stoddard's company giving a fire or two at long shot, Capt. Cooper's, from their distance, not firing at all. Some who were engaged effected their escape, others were overtaken by the horse. The enemy collected what prisoners they could, set Mr. Young's house and buildings on fire, and returned.

Of the Americans, thirteen were killed on the spot, and Captain Roberts, who was mortally wounded, lived but a few minutes. Seventeen others were wounded, several of whom died. Lieut. Col. Thompson, of Marshall's, Capt. Watson, of Greateon's, Capt. Lieut. Farley, of Wesson's, Lieut. Burley, of Tupper's, Lieut. Maynard, of Greateon's, Ensign Fowler, of Nixon's, Ensign Bradley, of Bigelow's, with eighty-nine others, were taken prisoners. The enemy left three men dead on the field, and a captain of grenadiers was wounded in the hip, and a lieutenant of infantry in the thigh. The British, in their account of the action, acknowledged that they had five men killed, and eighteen wounded. Lieut. Col. Badlam, with the relief for the lines, was at the time of the action far advanced on his march, but not within reach of those engaged.

One Mayhew, a pedlar, well known in Massachusetts, was of this detachment; he made off up the road, but finding the horse rushing on, he struck off into the snow, almost up to his hips. Two of the enemy's horse turned into his track after him; and, gaining fast upon him, he asked them if they would give him quarter; they replied, "Yes, you dog, we will quarter you." This was twice repeated, when Mayhew, finding them inflexible, determined to give them one shot before he was quartered; and, turning round, discharged his piece at the first horseman, who cried out, "The rascal has broken my leg;" when both of them turned their horses round, and went off, leaving Mayhew at liberty to tread back his path to the road, and come off."<sup>a</sup>

Thacher, in his Military Journal, thus describes the action. "February, 1780, Lieutenant Colonel Thompson had the command of about two hundred and fifty men, as an advanced par-

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 229.

ty, on our lines. He was instructed to be constantly alert, and in motion, that the enemy might not be able to take advantage, and form a plan for his destruction. It happened, however, that a detachment of British, Hessians, and mounted refugees, were discovered advancing towards him, but on account of a very deep snow obstructing the road, they marched slowly, and Col. Thompson resolved to defend his ground. The enemy's horse first advanced and commenced skirmishing till their infantry approached, when a sharp conflict ensued, which continued about fifteen minutes; some of our troops manifested symptoms of cowardice, and gave way. The enemy secured the advantage, and rushed on with a general shout, which soon decided the contest. The Americans lost thirteen men killed, and Captain Roberts,<sup>a</sup> being mortally wounded, soon expired; seventeen others were wounded. Lieut. Col. Thompson, and six other officers, with eighty-nine rank and file, were made prisoners. Of the enemy, two officers and eighteen men were wounded; and five men killed."<sup>b</sup>

The British advanced by the southern road and divided at the junction of the Four Corners, one party going west, the other marching directly upon the house. The party moving west intercepted or cut off Isaac van Wart and a small company under his command, who were attempting to succour their comrades. The dead who fell in this engagement, were buried on the east side of the road, upon the rising bank of a small hollow, north-east of the Van Wart residence.

---

<sup>a</sup> It was afterwards related by Issac van Wart that the day previous to this fatal occurrence, Captain Roberts in a conversation with him, mentioned that his father had been killed in the old French war, and he was sure he should fall in the present struggle. He fell, alas! not by the hand of a foe, but by one of his own countrymen, a refugee named Hammond, who as he recognized this brave officer, exclaimed "Now I will give it you," and fired with deadly effect. His body was found after the conflict, with one of the fingers barbarously bitten for the purpose of obtaining a gold ring. His murderers had also inhumanly placed their feet upon the body to draw off his boots. It may be as well to mention here that Col. Norton was promoted for his services on this occasion.—EDITOR.

<sup>b</sup> Thacher's Military Journal, 185.

“On this occasion,” (says Samuel Young, in a letter written to Commodore Valentine Morris, dated Mount Pleasant, 25 January, 1814,) “my father’s house with all his out-houses were burnt. After this disaster our troops never made an effort to protect that part of the country. The American lines were afterwards changed and extended from Bedford to Croton bridge, and from thence following the course of that river to the Hudson. All the intermediate country was abandoned and unprotected, being about twenty miles in the rear of the ground which Colonel Burr had maintained, when posted on the lines. Samuel Young served under the command of Colonel Burr during the Revolutionary war.<sup>a</sup>”

In the summer of 1820, a stranger was observed loitering around the residence of Mr. Van Wart. Upon being questioned, this person stated, that he had taken an active part in the above engagement, and well remembered the spot where he stood, (pointing to a stone,) when the British guard were first seen advancing from the west. He had just discharged his piece, and was engaged in loading it, when he received a bullet in his breast, which passed through his body. Fortunately he happened to be leaning a little to the right, otherwise the vitals could not have escaped. The old veteran further stated that he was then on his way to obtain certificates for a pension.

At the Four Corners, Thaddeus Kosciusko also fixed his head-quarters, when the American army lay encamped in this vicinity.<sup>b</sup> From Samuel Young the Corners passed to Isaac van

<sup>a</sup> Davis’s Mem. of Burr, vol. i. 165.

<sup>b</sup> Near the blacksmith’s shop, (on the road leading from the Corners to White Plains,) a duel was fought between General Gates and Colonel Wilkins, Sept. 11, 1778. Two shots, says Thacher, were exchanged without bloodshed, and a reconciliation was effected. The gentlemen, it is said, displayed a firmness and bravery becoming their rank and character, and have established their claim to the title of gentlemen of honor, &c., &c. Thacher’s Military Journal, p. 145.

In this neighborhood resided the noted Brom Boyce, “who at the early age of sixteen, enrolled himself among the minute men of the American army. He was soon distinguished for his bravery and daring, and was recognized as the best guide to be procured in this vicinity.” “Boyce, after the Revolution, followed the business of a carman in the city of New York. He was a member of the Bedford

Wart, one of the captors of André, who exchanged the original farm granted by the State for this property. It is at present owned by his son the Rev. Sandy van Wart.

In the south-east corner of this town is situated upon lands of William Fowler a gloomy cavern commonly called Kettle Hole, near the mouth of which rises a mineral spring.

The settlement of the upper corners is situated three miles north of the lower. Here stands the well known tavern of Isaac Twitchings, whose name has conferred on the place the appellation of Twitchings' corners. During one period of the revolution, a continental picket guard was stationed here.

On the 30th of August, 1779, Capt. Hopkins of Moylan's light dragoons, together with a small detachment from Sheldon's horse, proceeded from their quarters in North Castle, to the vicinity of the upper cross roads: here they ascertained that Col. Emmerick was advancing by the way of White Plains. Emmerick himself having received similar information of Hopkins' advance, had previously dispatched Col. Bearmore with a strong body of De Lancey's cavalry, directing them to proceed by the way of Davis's brook east of the upper cross roads. Hopkins pursued another route inclining west of Twitchings', passing the residences of Mr. Avery and Col. Hammond, where he posted a strong detachment of light dragoons under the command of Cornet Pike, (afterwards General Pike) south of the Tarrytown road. He then proceeded with the rest of his detachment, to meet Emmerick in person. He soon perceived the enemy advancing with a small body of cavalry.

Hopkins now retreated, leading Emmerick into his ambuscade stationed in Storms's wood. The consequence of this sudden surprisal was the destruction of the whole corps, with the exception of Emmerick and a few dragoons. Twenty-three of the enemy were killed in this encounter. Hopkins now turned upon Emmerick, pursuing him so closely for the distance of half a

---

Street church about thirty-five years, and died in 1839, aged eighty-two years. His remains were interred at Tarrytown."—Noah's Sunday Times.

mile, that several strokes were exchanged between both parties until Emmerick cleared a stone wall, behind which he had concealed his riflemen. The whole company instantly rose and fired simultaneously upon Hopkins, who escaped uninjured; but Isaac Odell who rode by his side, was slightly wounded. Hopkins thus in turn taken by surprise, wheeled to the west with his party, and succeeded in overtaking his prisoners, resolving to make good his retreat by the way of the poor house road. He had proceeded no great distance, when he beheld approaching, a strong body of Bearmore's horse, in the neighborhood of Avery's mill, a little north of the poor house. Finding his retreat thus intercepted, he was compelled to take the Bedford road, but he had scarcely arrived at See's store, when he found Emmerick again drawn up to dispute the passage. Hopkins a second time discovering his retreat terminated, decided upon a vigorous charge and succeeded in cutting his way through the detachment with the loss of a few prisoners. A running fight now ensued for about two miles when Hopkins again found his course blockaded by Col. Wurmb's yagers. The post road also, was guarded by Pruschanck's corps, so that Hopkins had no resource left but the fields. He therefore crossed the mill creek a little north of the Dutch church, Sleepy Hollow, the whole body of the enemy joining in the pursuit. This was kept up until Hopkins arrived near the house of Job Sherwood, a short distance from the present arch of the Croton aqueduct, on the road to Sing Sing. Hopkins now rightly judging that the best horses of his pursuers were far in advance of their comrades, instantly checked his horse, and in turn became the pursuer. At the spring brook which crosses the road in the Beeckman wood, he succeeded in capturing one or two prisoners in the very face of the enemy, and made good his retreat.<sup>a</sup>

Near Twitchings' tavern, resides John Yerks, one of the seven volunteers connected with the capture of André. Mr. Yerks

---

<sup>a</sup> The above was related to the author, by Jacob Romer, an eye witness of the engagement.

served for several years in the capacity of a water guard, and remembers to have seen on one occasion, as many as fifty British vessels and galleys stationed on the Hudson river. Near his present place of residence, himself with nine others, engaged in a deadly conflict with a party of twenty Cow boys. In this skirmish, they brought off three prisoners and four horses, besides leaving six of the enemy dead on the field.

The road from Twitchings' descends gradually to the valley of the saw mill, on the east bank of which, stands the church and hamlet of Unionville, delightfully sheltered by high hills. The most prominent object in the immediate vicinity, is the Buttermilk mountain, which towers like a giant, far above the neighboring scenery. A small perennial spring rises on its eastern edge, which has conferred this fanciful name on the hill. The summit of the mountain commands an extensive view of the Hudson River and surrounding country.

During the progress of the United States coast survey, the Buttermilk formed one of its stations.

The Dutch Reformed Church of Unionville, was first organized in 1820,<sup>a</sup> under the pastoral charge of the Rev. Thomas Smith, and incorporated on the 8th of August, 1842, by the title of the "Minister, Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Unionville." First elders, John Newman, Abraham Onderdonck, and Isaac G. Graham, Jun. ; first deacons, Abraham Yerks, Thomas Angevine, and Ebenezer Newman.<sup>b</sup> The successors of the Rev. Thomas Smith have been the Rev. John Maule, and the Rev. William S. Moore, present pastor.

*Church Memoranda.*

1825, communicants 122, baptisms 26.

1845, ditto 88, ditto 4.

This church is in connection with the New York classis.

In the immediate neighborhood of Unionville is the residence

<sup>a</sup> The present church edifice was erected the same year.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. B. 73.



and estate of Isaac G. Graham, M. D., for some years a member of General Washington's medical staff, and a lineal descendant of the ancient and honorable family of the Grahams of Montrose in Scotland, who derive their origin from the renowned Græme in the fifth century. In this vicinity also resides Mr. Walter Hunt, an aged soldier of the revolution.

Pleasantville (formerly Clark's corners,) lies nearly midway between the Pocanteco and Saw Mill rivers on the north east border of Mount Pleasant; the village is delightfully situated on the western edge of Bear ridge. A beautiful vale extends south, while through the gap of the western hills may be seen the distant mountains of Rockland. It contains one church, two stores a post office, and several dwellings.

The Methodist Episcopal church of Pleasantville appears to have been the first of that denomination founded in this section of the country. As early as 1800 a class meeting was organized on Bear ridge, near the residence of Mr. Jesse Barker. The present building was erected in 1820. Its pastor in 1847 was the Rev. Charles T. Pelton. A small burying ground surrounds the church which contains memorials to the Clarks, Brouwers, Montroses, Searles, Romers, Ackers and others.

A short distance west of the village, is situated the Westchester rail road depôt and hotel, in front of which, rise high hills, crowned with luxuriant woods; among the former are most conspicuous, Searles' and Wild boar hills.

"There is in this town a great variety of timber and wood, being a good proportion of almost every kind which is known to grow in this part of the country." The surface of the town is mostly hilly, the soil productive and well cultivated. Mount Pleasant has the reputation of being rich in mineral productions; an iron mine has been recently opened on the land of David Acker. Native iron ore also (probably of meteoric origin) is frequently found on the surface of the earth in various parts of the town.

The following town officers were elected in pursuance of the act of 1845.

Isaac Coutant, Supervisor.

Jacob T. Brouwer, Town Clerk.

William Brown, Town Superintendant.

Abraham Brouwer, Trustee of the poor.

Hervey Romer, Assessor.

Henry Clark, jun., Commissioner of highways.

Amos Clark, Overseer of the poor.

Hebby Brown, Sealer of weights and measures.

Andrew Vincent, Constable.

## NEW CASTLE.

THIS township is situated ten miles north of the village of White Plains, and distant one hundred and twenty-one miles from Albany; bounded north by Cortlandt, Yorktown and Somers, east by Bedford, south by North Castle, and west by Ossining and Mount Pleasant. New Castle was taken from the older town of North Castle, and set off as a separate or distinct township, on the 18th of March, 1791. By the Indians it was called Shappequa, probably a corruption of the Algonquin term, Chapacour, which signifies "a vegetable root."<sup>a</sup> The name still survives in the Shappequa hills. The chief proprietor of these lands in 1696 was the Indian sachem Wampus, whose principal residence is said to have been situated near the pond of that name, in the south-west part of the town. On the south side of Kirby's pond, (at New Castle corner,) the Indians had their wigwams and a burying ground. Their tools are occasionally found in the adjoining fields,<sup>b</sup>

In 1660 John Richbell, of Mamaroneck, purchased of the Indians, (who claimed to be lords of the soil,) a large tract of land extending twenty miles north of the Sound. This grant comprised the entire township of New Castle.

The next proprietor was Colonel Caleb Heathcote who obtained of Mrs. Anne Richbell, a patent right to purchase lands "which are already included in her husband's sale of 1660." Upon the 12th of October, 1696, his Excellency Benjamin Fletcher, Captain General and Governor of his Majesty's Province of New York, &c., did grant unto Caleb Heathcote, Esq.,

---

<sup>a</sup> Beverly's Hist. of Virginia, p. 121.

<sup>b</sup> The Indians are said to have been very numerous in this town seventy years ago.

“free liberty and license to purchase vacant land in the county of Westchester, between Croton’s river and the south bounds of Mr. Harrison’s purchase, &c.”

Twelve days after the date of the above license, occurs the following deed from the Indians.

“This indenture made on the 19th of October, in the eighth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord William the Third, by the grace of God, &c., &c., and in the year of our Lord Christ, 1696, between Wampus, Indian sachem, and others, whose names are hereunto set and seals affixed, native proprietors of all that tract of land, situate, lying, and being in the county of Westchester in the Province of New York in America, bounded north by Scroton (Croton) river, easterdly with Byram river and Bedford line, southerly by the land of John Harrison and his associates, and the line stretching to Byram river aforesaid, and westerdly by the land of Frederick Philipse.”

“*Now know all men* that said Wampus, Cornelius and Coharnith, Indian sachems, and others, whose names are hereunto subscribed and seals affixed, the native proprietors of all the aforesaid tract of land, have, for and in consideration of the sum of 100*l.* good and lawful money of New York to them in hands paid by the said Caleb Heathcote, at and before the ensealing and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge, and themselves and each and every of them to be therewith fully satisfied, contented and paid, and thereof and every part and parcel thereof, they do by these presents for ever acquit and discharge the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs, executors and administrators, &c. have given, granted, bargained and sold, aliened, enfeoffed, released and confirmed, and do by these presents clearly and absolutely give, grant, bargain and sell, alien, enfeof, release and confirm unto the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, for ever, all that the before mentioned tract of land within the county of Westchester, bounded as above expressed and set forth, together with all and singular, the messuages, tenements, gardens, orchards, arable land, pastures, feedings, woods, underwoods, meadows, marshes, lakes, ponds, rivers, rivulets, mines, minerals, (royal mines only excepted,) fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, rights, privileges, hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging or in any ways appertaining, and all the estate, right, interest, claim, possession, property and demand of the said Wampus, Cornelius and Coharnith, sachems, and the other Indians whose names are hereunto subscribed, and each and every of them, in and to the premises, in and to every part and parcel thereof, *to have and to hold* the before mentioned tract of land and all other the above granted premises to him the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, to the only proper benefit and behoof of him the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns for ever. In testimony whereof, the parties to these presents

have hereunto set their hands and affixed their seals, the day and year first above written.<sup>a</sup>

Sealed and delivered in  
presence of

William Lawrence, and  
Joseph Samuel.

Pathunck.

Coharnus.

Betty Pathunck.

Willro Coharnus's wife.

Wacapo ✂ her mark.

Wampus, Indian, ○ his mark.

Cornelius, ∞ his mark.

Roe Roe, ⊔ his mark.

The above sale included the township of New Castle, and all that portion of North Castle, lying west of the Byram River. Upon the 14th day of February, 1701, the following letters patent were issued under the great seal of the Province of New York.

“William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., to all to whom this present shall come or may concerne, greeting : Whereas, our loving subjects, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, have, by their petition, presented unto our trusty and well beloved John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief of our province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, &c., prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain tract of land in our county of Westchester, bounded northerly by the manor of Cortlandt, and eastwardly with Bedford line of three miles, the white fields and Byram River, southerly by the land of John Harrison, Rye line stretching to Byram River aforesaid, and the White Plains, and westwardly by Broncks's River and the manor of Philipsburgh, excepting out of the bounds aforesaid, all the land in Mr. Richbell's patent, now in the tenure and occupation of Colonel Caleb Heathcote, which first above named tract of land was purchased by Caleb Heathcote and others, with whom he has agreed, excepting James Mott and Henry Disbrow, whom he hath undertaken to satisfy. Within ye bounds there are, by estimation, about five thousand acres of profitable land, beside wastes and woodland, which reasonable request wee being willing to grant, *know ye*, that of our special grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, we have given granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents doe, for us, our heirs, and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said loving subjects, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. Indian deeds, warrant for survey, Lib. i. 52, 53.

Lurting, and Barne Cosens, all the above recited tract of land within our county of Westchester, and within the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, falls, waters, water courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, mines, minerals (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments, and appurtenances whatsoever, to the aforesaid tract of land within the limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any wise appertaining, *to have and to hold*, all the aforesaid tract of land, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timbers, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, water courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, mines and minerals, (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the aforesaid tract of land within the limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any ways appertaining unto them, the said Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, their heirs and assigns, to the only proper use, benefit, and behoof of them, the said Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, their heirs and assigns for ever, to be holden of us, our heirs, and successors, in free and common soccage, as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our County of Kent, within our Realm of England, yielding, rendering and paying, this year and every year forever, at our city of New York, unto us, our heirs and successors, or to such officer or officers as shall from time to time be empowered to receive the same, the annual and yearly rent of six pounds four shillings, current money of New York, in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services and demands whatsoever. In testimony whereof, we have caused the great seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed. Witness John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieut. Governor and Commander-in-chief of our province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, vice-Admiral of the same, and at our fort in New York, this 14th day of February, A.D. 1701, and in the 13th year of our reign.<sup>a</sup>

JOHN NANFAN."

This grant was subsequently known as the West Patent of North Castle.

The following items occur in the town records :

---

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb., No. vii. 191.

February 21st, 1743, an agreement between the Receiver General and others, "concerning money that is coming to the former on the behalf of the King, for quit-rent of the *West Patent*."<sup>a</sup>

In 1744 Joseph Hutchins and Caleb Green were appointed "assessors for the west side of the branch of Byram River;" "also Thomas Walters for the *West Patent*."<sup>b</sup>

John Halleck, of North Castle, in 1755 "sold to Joseph Fowler and Caleb Fowler three quarters of an acre of undivided land in North Castle, within a certain Patent known and called by the name of Fauconier's *West Patent*, and to be in the right of Thomas Weaver, who was one of the Patentees of said Patent, it being a part of a greater right purchased 13th of March, 1753, of John Thomas, one of the representatives of Westchester county."

In the Secretary of State's office at Albany is a map of part of a tract of land (granted by letters patent under the great seal of the colony of New York, bearing date the fourteenth day of February, 1701-2, to Robert Walters and others) "which remains unsold, and contains four thousand one hundred and fifty one acres, divided into sixteen lotts by Charles Clinton, Jonathan Brown, and Elisha Budd, Commissioners, and Nathaniel Merritt, Surveyor, appointed by virtue of an act of the Lieutenant Governor, the Council, and the General Assembly of the colony of New York, passed the eighth day of January, 1762, entitled an act for the more effectual collecting of his Majesty's quit-rents in the colony of New York, and for partition of lands in order thereto," &c.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 10th of June, 1766, occurs the following public notice for the sale of the above lands :

"WHEREAS his late majesty, King William the Third, by letters patent under the great seal of the colony of New York, bearing date the 4th day of February, 1701-2, and the 30th year of his reign; did grant and confirm unto Robert

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. vol. i. 4.

<sup>b</sup> In 1743 Robert Walters and Peter Fauconier had rights concerning quit-rents on the West Patent.

<sup>c</sup> Field Book, Sec. of State's office.

Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens; a certain tract of land in the county of Westchester, bounded northerly by the manor of Cortlandt, easterly with Bedford line of three miles square, the White Fields and Byram river; southerly by the land of John Harrison, Rye line stretching to Byram river aforesaid, and the White Plains; and westerly by Bronck's river, and the manor of Philipsburgh, excepting out of the bounds aforesaid, all the lands within Richbell's patent, according to the lines of the said patent, now in the tenure and occupation of Col. Caleb Heathcote; which first above named tract of land was purchased by Col. Caleb Heathcote, and others, with whom he has agreed, except James Mott, and Henry Disbrow, whom he hath undertaken to satisfy; within which bounds, there are by estimation, about 5000 acres of profitable land, besides wastes and wood lands. And whereas we the subscribers, in pursuance of a certain act of the lieutenant governor, the council, and general assembly of this colony, entitled, An Act for the more effectual collecting of his majesty's quit-rents in the colony of New York, and for partition of lands in order thereto, have lately made a survey of all that part of the lands above-mentioned, which have not been sold by the proprietors and owners thereof. We do hereby give notice, that true maps and field books of the survey of the said part thereof, and of the allotments made, specifying the bounds of every lot; on which maps the lots are laid down and numbered, and the number of acres in every lot; and the said maps and field books signed by us, and by Nathaniel Merrit, our surveyor, are filed, one of the said maps and field books in the office of the clerk of the county of Westchester, and the other in the secretary's office in the city of New York. And we do hereby appoint Wednesday, the 6th of August next, at the city hall of the city of New York, to be the day and place for balloting for the said lots and allotments; and do require all persons interested, then and there to attend, and to see the several allotments balloted for. Given under our hands this 23d day of June, 1766.

[Pat. 7, 223.]

“CHAR. CLINTON, } Surviving  
 “JONATHAN BROWN, } Commissioners.”

We find the following indenture, on the 5th of April, 1774, between Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler, and Joseph Sutton all of the *west patent* of North Castle, &c., of the first part, and Caleb Sands of Bedford, of the other part, witnesseth that his gracious majesty, King William the Third, of glorious memory, by letters patent, under the great seal of the province of New York, bearing date the 14th day of February, in the fourteenth year of his reign, granted unto Robert Walters and others, a certain tract of land in the county of Westchester, bounded, &c., &c. All which tract of land is called the west patent of North Castle, and where-



as the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton were deputed for to, and did make, a purchase of the greater part of the abovesaid tract of land for themselves and their associates,<sup>a</sup> as by a general map of the same may appear. Now this indenture witnesseth, that for and in consideration of the sum of £15 12s. of good current and lawful money of the province of New York, well and truly paid by the said Caleb Sands, one of the associates in making of the above said purchase, we the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton doth acknowledge by these presents, and therefore have given, granted, and released unto him, the said Caleb Sands, his heirs and assigns, all that certain part of the above recited tract of land containing thirty-nine acres, bounded as follows: by a heap of stones at the south-west corner of Bedford new purchase, so called, and running north with Bedford line till it comes to a chestnut oak tree, marked with a heap of stones about it, at the south-east corner of the land of Benjamin Hall, then westward to a white wood tree with a heap of stones about it, then south-eastwardly as the fence stands to a large black oak tree, marked, then more southerly as the fence stands to an oak stump or a cliff of rocks, still southerly to a chestnut sapling, on a knoll of rocks, then eastwardly as the fence stands, to a chestnut oak tree, marked, still eastwardly as the fence stands to the land of Peter Disbrow, from thence to the first bounds, a heap of stones, &c., &c.<sup>b</sup>

BENJ. SMITH,  
CALEB FOWLER.

The principal proprietors of New Castle are the Wards, Concklius, Hiatts, Underhills, Hights, Carpenters, Greens, Kirbys, Davenport, Van Tassels, Griffens, Tomkins, Kipps, Secors, Bradys, Reynolds, Quinbyz, and Merrits, &c., &c.

The first election for town officers took place on the 5th of April, 1791, when the following individuals were chosen for the year ensuing :

<sup>a</sup> One of the associate patentees appears to have been Col. Matthews, who held 1280 acres in the west patent of North Castle.

<sup>b</sup> The original document is in the possession of Mr. Caleb Sands of North Castle.

Isaac Smith, *supervisor*.

Abraham Hyatt, *town clerk*.

Sutton Craft, *constable*.

Benjamin Carpenter, *collector*, and

Caleb Carpenter, *security*.

Caleb Haight,  
Nathaniel Smith, } *assessors*.  
Henry Slason,

Caleb Carpenter,  
Abraham Hyatt, } *overseers of the poor*.

Caleb Haight,  
Nathaniel Smith, } *commissioners of roads*.  
Henry Slason,

James Underhill, *pounder*.

Nathaniel Concklin,  
Jesse Brady, } *damage prizers and fence viewers*.  
Isaac Powell,

“Isaac Smith, Caleb Carpenter and Isaiah Green; were deputed to meet a committee from the town of North Castle for to settle all disputes which may exist between the town of New Castle and the aforesaid town of any nature or kind whatsoever, also to settle the line between the two towns.”<sup>a</sup>

The village of New Castle Corners<sup>a</sup> is pleasantly situated in the north-east angle of the town, on the west side of Kirby's pond. It contains a Methodist church, several stores, a post-office, a grist mill, a needle manufactory, and twelve or fifteen dwelling houses. The neighborhood of this beautiful spot abounds with the most romantic scenery. It is now about one hundred and twenty-eight years since the first families settled in this place. They appear to have met with great discouragements, and to have endured severe trials, for they were in the midst of a wilderness, and constantly exposed to Indian depredations. The Rev. Robert Jenney, minister of Rye, writing to the Propagation Society in 1722, thus alludes to the place. “I have lately been to a *settlement in the woods*, where I had good success, having baptized a whole family, parents and children.”<sup>b</sup> This evidently refers

<sup>a</sup> Formerly called North Castle.

<sup>b</sup> Rep. of Propagation Soc,

to the present village, for in 1728 the Rev. T. Wetmore, his successor informs the same society, that "at North Castle, a *new settlement in the woods*, there are more than forty families most of which are unbaptized, and that he preaches there every fifth Sunday."<sup>a</sup>

Prior to the Revolution, North Castle formed one of the precincts or districts of Rye parish, which accounts for the parochial clergy officiating here at this early period. In 1725, North Castle contributed towards the minister's rate and poor of the parish, £2. 9. 0. The same year Mr. Dwight was school-master at North Castle with a salary of £10 a year. At a vestry meeting, held March the 1st, 1730, for the parish of Rye, it was ordered, that "whereas the vestrymen of the district of *North Castle* have neglected to make up their parish rate last year and this year, though often requested thereto, ordered therefore by ye vestry and justices, that the *North Castle vestrymen*, for ye last year and this year do appear at Rye at Francis Doughty's, on the 16th of this month at noon, in order to make their rates without any farther delay, or ordered to be presented immediately, and that the clerk do send forthwith a copy of this order to said North Castle vestrymen."<sup>b</sup> The Rev. Mr. Wetmore, writing to the Propagation Society in 1753, states, "that his congregations at Rye, White Plains, North Castle and Bedford are large and flourishing, the new light preachers have removed from Bedford, and there is some hopes of the people uniting with North Castle, towards supporting a minister."

Among the reports of the Society in 1761, occurs the following; "Second Sunday in October, 1761, the Rev. Mr. Dibble preached at the opening of St. George's church, North Castle. Mr. St. George Talbot, the pious and noble benefactor was present, and was highly pleased with the number and devout behaviour of the people. The same day, Mr. Dibble baptized thirteen infants, and one adult.

In the spring of 1762, St. George's church was visited by the

---

<sup>a</sup> Propagation Soc. Rep.

<sup>b</sup> Rye Rec.

Rev. George Dibble and St. George Talbot, Esq. Of the latter gentleman, Mr. Dibble thus writes to the Society: "He is indefatigable in his endeavors to serve the interests of true religion and our holy church, whose services I find universally acceptable, and his life agreeable to his public character. He was (continues Mr. Dibble) surprised both at the number and devout behaviour of the people at *North Castle*, for the church could not contain them," &c.<sup>a</sup>

St. George's church, which had stood for nearly eighty years in the Episcopal burying ground, was dismantled in 1839, and sold at public auction for the sum of forty dollars.<sup>b</sup>

The following inscriptions are copied from monuments in the grave yard.

In  
Memory of  
ISAAC LOUNSBERRY,  
who was born Oct. 11th, 1703,  
and died March 3,  
1773.

In  
Memory of  
JAMES WRIGHT,  
who was born March 14th,  
1721, and departed this life,  
May the 17th, 1776,  
aged 55 years, 1 mo.  
and 25 days.

There are also memorials to the Greens, Woolseys, Ferrises, Sarleses, Harts, Pinckneys, Tompkinses, Carys, Seamans, Forshays, Haineses, Millers, Carpenters, Clapps, Merritts, Montrosses, &c.

The Methodist Episcopal church of this place was first incorporated in 1824. Caleb Kirby, James Fish, John B. Horton, Tyler Fountain and Benjamin Kirby, trustees.<sup>c</sup> The present church was erected in 1843, to it, is attached a small parsonage and grave yard.

<sup>a</sup> Hawkins' Hist. Not. of the Missions of the Church of England. Original letters in Lambeth collection, vol. xix. 208.

<sup>b</sup> It deserves to be recorded that Judge Miller strenuously opposed its destruction. For a further account of this parish, see Bedford.

<sup>c</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 183.

During the Revolution, this part of the county was greatly annoyed by the enemy, who frequently made sudden inroads, plundering and capturing the defenceless inhabitants. February 7th, 1782, (says General Heath,) about fifty of De Lancey's horse came out within four miles of Chappequa, where they halted. On the 8th they moved toward North Castle, but turned off by Wright's Mills; from thence to King street, Rye."<sup>a</sup> For a long time St. George's church was occupied as a guard-house and hospital by the Continental troops.

In the vicinity of Abraham Weeks's mill dam, in this town, a party of British refugees waylaid and murdered a French doctor of some distinction. It appears that the unfortunate man was on his route to the American hospital at New Castle, when arrested by his murderers, who dragged him from his horse, and conveyed him into an adjoining swamp. Here, having secured their victim, they proceeded to play a game at cards, as to which of them should be his executioner. In vain their victim plead in broken English for his life, numbering his children upon his fingers. The lot fell upon one Totten, who, approaching the doctor, instantly shot him dead as he knelt on the ground. He was now stripped of his clothing, watch and money, and dragged a few rods further into the bushes. The skeleton was afterwards found and interred upon the spot.<sup>b</sup>

Near the centre of the town is situated the small hamlet of Sarlesville. Here the town business is principally transacted.

In the southwest corner are located the Friends' meeting houses. The Friends' Society was organized here some time prior to the Revolution.<sup>c</sup>

The general surface of New Castle is uneven, hills and vales

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 328.

<sup>b</sup> Tradition reports, that the following remarkable accident befel the assassin soon after: he was struck by lightning, which dissolved the metal on his shoe buckles. When asked if this was a fact, the conscience stricken murderer replied, "If I should say yes, that would be an admission of my guilt." Totten is said to have been a terror not only to himself, but all who knew him. This miserable man lies in the Friends' burying-ground at Pines Bridge.

<sup>c</sup> The Methodist Episcopal Church was erected in 1845.

interspersed; soil gravelly, clay and sandy loam. The natural growth of wood is of various kinds, as oak, chestnut, hickory ash, maple, walnut, elm and whitewood, &c. The Chappequa hills in this town are worthy of particular notice. They begin near the great hill known by the name of the *Buttermilk* Mountain, and extend north-easterly four miles, terminating northward in the Kisco Mountain. These hills are very stony and rocky in general, but afford vast quantities of excellent timber. At the foot of the Kisco Mountain is situated the Westchester and Harlem railroad depôt. New Castle is exceedingly well watered by rivers, rivulets, and springs. The Saw Mill River (Nepera) takes its rise from two springs near the centre of the town, one of them situated on the land of Job Collins, the other on the property of Willett Kipps. The Bronx River (Aquehung) has its source in the *Dark Valley* of this town. The Mill River (Pocanteco) rises on the lands of Isaac Lownsberry.

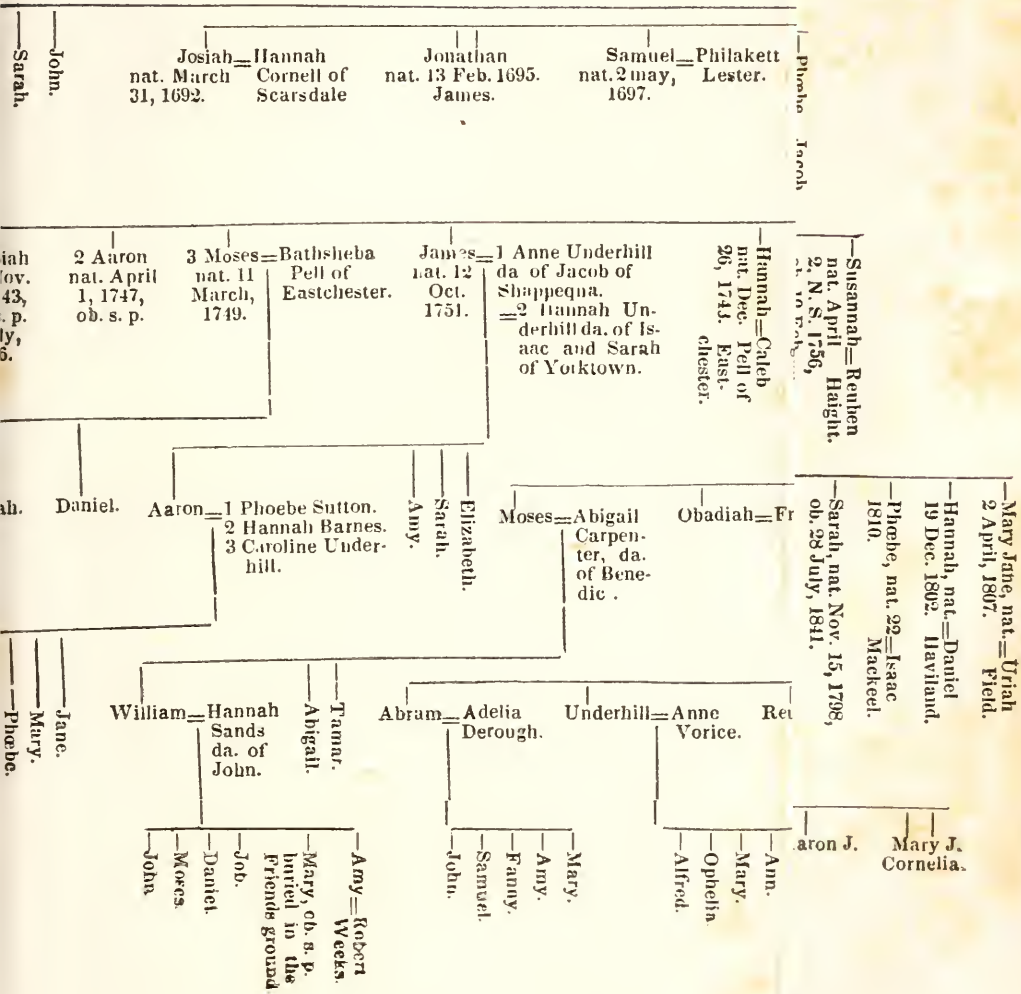
There are two or three large ponds, which supply valuable mill seats. Kirby's Pond receives its waters from Simmons's Pond, while its outlet passes into the Pepemighting, or Kisco. Wampus Pond is situated on the boundary line between New and North Castle. This pond covers about fifty acres, and empties into the Byram (Armonck) River. Fish were never caught here until within a few years, when pike were put therein, which have multiplied exceedingly.<sup>a</sup> Upon the west side of Wampus Pond rises *Prospect Hill*, the property of Mr. Caleb Quinby.<sup>b</sup> It is impossible to describe the variegated prospect that meets the eye from its summit; a more extensive view is not to be had in the town. Near this hill an iron mine was opened seventy-four years ago, but, the war commencing, put a stop to the project, which has never since been resumed.

The Chappequa sulphur springs, which have acquired some celebrity, are situated "four miles northeast of Sing Sing. They

<sup>a</sup> Ten years ago vast flocks of wild duck and geese used to frequent this pond.

<sup>b</sup> The Quinby family were among the first settlers of this part of New Castle, and descend from John Quinby, one of the patentees of the town of Westchester in 1664.

Arms, or, on a bend sa. three trefoils slipped ar. C



interspersed ; soil gravelly, clay and sandy loam. The natural growth of wood is of various kinds, as oak, chestnut, hickory ash, maple, walnut, elm and whitewood, &c. The Chappaqua hills in this town are worthy of particular notice. They begin near the great hill known by the name of the *Buttermilk* Mountain, and extend north-easterly four miles, terminating northward in the Kisco Mountain. These hills are very stony and rocky in general, but afford vast quantities of excellent timber. At the foot of the Kisco Mountain is situated the Westchester and Harlem railroad depôt. New Castle is exceedingly well watered by rivers, rivulets, and springs. The Saw Mill River (Nepera) takes its rise from two springs near the centre of the town, one of them situated on the land of Job Collins, the other on the property of Willett Kipps. The Bronx River (Aquehung) has its source in the *Dark Valley* of this town. The Mill River (Pocanteco) rises on the lands of Isaac Lownsberry.

There are two or three large ponds, which supply valuable mill seats. Kirby's Pond receives its waters from Simmons's Pond, while its outlet passes into the Pepemighting, or Kisco. Wampus Pond is situated on the boundary line between New and North Castle. This pond covers about fifty acres, and empties into the Byram (Armonck) River. Fish were never caught here until within a few years, when pike were put therein, which have multiplied exceedingly.<sup>a</sup> Upon the west side of Wampus Pond rises *Prospect Hill*, the property of Mr. Caleb Quinby.<sup>b</sup> It is impossible to describe the variegated prospect that meets the eye from its summit ; a more extensive view is not to be had in the town. Near this hill an iron mine was opened seventy-four years ago, but, the war commencing, put a stop to the project, which has never since been resumed.

The Chappaqua sulphur springs, which have acquired some celebrity, are situated " four miles northeast of Sing Sing. They

<sup>a</sup> Ten years ago vast flocks of wild duck and geese used to frequent this pond.

<sup>b</sup> The Quinby family were among the first settlers of this part of New Castle, and descend from John Quinby, one of the patentees of the town of Westchester in 1664.







issue from a cleft in the rock, near the base of a hill about two hundred feet in height. The water, as it rises from the rocks, is transparent, but in its course deposits a reddish yellow powder. The salts held in solution are said to be sulphate of lime, chloride of calcium, and the muriate of iron, and manganese. The water is supposed to possess medicinal properties similar to those usually ascribed to sulphur springs."<sup>a</sup>

It is a singular fact, that sulphuretted springs are to be found at short distances from this spot to Fort Miller, in Washington county, a distance of a hundred and fifty miles.

In the northeast corner of the town lies the romantic valley of the Pepemighting,<sup>b</sup> through which the river of that name meanders in its passage to the Croton. This part of New Castle has been recently taken from the adjoining township of Somers.<sup>c</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Nat. Hist. of N. Y. Part iii. 141. Sulphuretted hydrogen is the gas evolved.

<sup>b</sup> Misnamed the Kisco.

<sup>c</sup> Laws of N. Y. May 12, 1846. 69th Session, chap. 249. The Sutton family settled in this part of the town 104 years ago.

## NEW ROCHELLE.

THE town of New Rochelle, (which formerly constituted a portion of the manor of Pelham,) is situated on the south-east side of the county, distant eight miles south of the village of White Plains, and one hundred and

Indian Image Stone.<sup>a</sup>

forty miles from Albany; bounded by Scarsdale on the north, by Mamaroneck and Scarsdale on the east, by Hutchinson's river and Pelham on the west, and on the south by the Sound.

This tract of land was originally included in the grant made by the Indians, in the year 1640, to the Dutch West India Company, but no settlement was actually commenced upon it until long after Thomas Pell's purchase, which occurred in 1654.<sup>b</sup>

The aborigines appear to have resided principally on Davenport's Neck, where they had a large settlement, denominated Shippa. Within a very short period there were old persons (living in the town) who could well remember when the neck was covered with Indian wigwams.<sup>c</sup> Of this the extensive "shell beds," on its southern shores afford conclusive evidence.

---

<sup>a</sup> This image stone was discovered on the lands of John Soulice some few years since. Beneath it lay a smooth stone, (weighing 7 lbs.) resembling in shape a kidney, and encompassed with a circular grove.

<sup>b</sup> See Pelham.

<sup>c</sup> Testimony of Mrs. Le Count, who died January, 1841, aged 105 years; also Mrs. Pine.

A few settlements were also scattered along the fertile meadows bordering the various fresh water streams, especially in the northern part of the town.<sup>a</sup>

As late as 1694-5 the Indians were in the habit of coming down into the northern part of New Rochelle from the neighborhood of White Plains, for a cider frolic, which they considered as a kind of usufruct title to the soil. The remains of an oak tree which they burnt upon one of these occasions, is still visible on the farm of John Soulice, Esq. This seems to have been the last chapter in their history connected with New Rochelle; although in 1767 a small remnant of the aborigines (then inhabiting the Highlands,) visited the town.

Upon the sixth day of October, 1666, Richard Nicolls, governor of the province, did give, grant, ratify and confirm unto Thomas Pell, gentleman, all that tract of land lying to the eastward of Westchester bounds, (subsequently known as the manor of Pelham,) &c., "which said tract of land hath heretofore been purchased of the Indian proprietors, and ample satisfaction given for the same."<sup>b</sup>

In 1669, the patentee devised the whole manor of Pelham to his nephew John Pell, (commonly called Lord Pell,) who obtained a further confirmation for the same from Thomas Dongan, governor of the province, on the 29th of October, 1687.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 20th of September, 1689, we find John Pell, Lord of the manor of Pelham, and Rachel his wife, conveying to Jacob Leisler of the city of New York, merchant, "all that tract of land lying and being within the manor of Pelham, containing 6000 acres of land," &c., &c., (the present township of New Rochelle,) "The grantee and his heirs yielding and paying unto the said John Pell and his heirs, &c., as lords of the said manor, *one fat calf* on every four and twentieth day of June yearly, &c., if demanded," &c.<sup>d</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> One of these was situated on the property of John Soulice, where there is also a quarry of quartz from which the Indians manufactured their javelin and arrow heads.

<sup>b</sup> See Pelham, for Thomas Pell's patent.

<sup>c</sup> See Pelham, for John Pell's confirmation.

<sup>d</sup> Whenever the *fat calf* was demanded by the lords of the manor, (on the festival

The above tract was granted in the following manner :

*To all Christian people* to whom this present writing shall come, John Pell, proprietor of the manor of Pelham, within the county of Westchester, in the province of New York, within the dominion of New England, gentleman, and Rachel his wife, sendeth greeting in our Lord God everlasting, KNOW YE that the said John Pell and Rachel his wife for and in consideration of the sum of sixteen hundred and seventy-five pounds and twenty-five shillings sterling, current silver money of this province, to him in hand paid and secured to be paid at the, or before, the ensembling and delivery thereof by Jacob Leisler of the city of New York, merchant, the receipt whereof they, the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, do thereby acknowledge themselves to be fully satisfied and contented, and thereof, and of every part and parcel thereof, do hereby freely and clearly acquit and exonerate and discharge the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs, executors, administrators, and every of them, by these presents have granted, bargained, and sold, and by these presents do grant, bargain and sell unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, all that tract of land lying and being within said manor of Pelham, containing six thousand acres of land, and also one hundred acres of land more, which the said John Pell and Rachel his wife do freely give and grant for the French church erected, or to be erected, by the inhabitants of the said tract of land, or by their assignees, being butted and bounded as herein is after expressed, beginning at the west side of a certain white oak tree, marked on all four sides, standing at high water mark at the south end of Hog Neck, by shoals, harbour, and runs, north-westerly through the great fresh meadow lying between the road and the sound, and from the north side of the said meadow where the said line crosses the said meadow, to run from thence due north to Bronckes river, which is the west division line between the said John Pell's land and the aforesaid tract, bounded on the south-easterly by the sound and salt water, and to run east-northerly to a certain piece of salt meadow lying at the salt creek which runneth up to Cedar Tree brook, or Gravelly brook, and is the bounds to southern. Bounded on the east by a line that runs from said meadow north-westerly by marked trees, to a certain black oak tree standing a little below the road, marked on four sides, and from thence to run due north four miles and a half, more or less, and from the north side of the said west line, ending at Bronckes's river, and from thence to run easterly till it meets with the north end of the said eastermost bounds, together with all and singular the islands and islets before the said tract of land lying and being in the sound and salt water, with all the harbors, creeks, rivers, rivulets, runns, waters, lakes, meadows, ponds, marshes, salt and fresh, swamps, soils, timber, trees, pastures, feedings, en-

---

of St. John the Baptist,) each Huguenot paid his proportion towards its purchase. This ceremony was last performed in a house which occupied the site of Mr. James Morgan's residence in Eastchester. A feast invariably followed the presentation.

closures, fields, quarries, mines, minerals, (silver and gold mines only excepted) fishing, hunting, fowling, hawking, and also all the messuages, houses, tenements, barns, mills, mill dams, as they were at the time of the ensembling and delivery of the articles of agreement of sale for said land, bearing date the second day of July, in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and eighty-seven. As relation being thereto had doth more fully and at large appear, as also the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders of a certain lott of land and meadow, now in the tenure and occupation of John Jefferd, and Olive his wife, being part of the aforesaid six thousand acres of land, with all the privileges belonging thereto or any wise appertaining, or therewith now used, occupied and enjoyed, as all the right, title, interest, reversion, remainder, property, claime, and demand whatsoever, of, in, and to the same, and any part thereof, as is hereafter expressed. To have and to hold the aforesaid tract of land, with all other the above granted premises, unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assigns, for ever, to his and their own sole and proper use, benefit, and behoof, for ever, yielding and paying unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns, lords of the said manor of Pelham, to the assignees of him or them, or their or either of them, as an acknowledgment to the lords of the said manor, one fat calf on every four and twentieth day of June, yearly and every year for ever if demanded. The said John Pell and Rachel his wife, for themselves, their heirs, executors, and administrators respectively, do hereby covenant, promise, and grant to and with the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, in manner and form following, that is to say, at the time of the ensembling hereof, they the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, do avouch themselves to be true, sole, and lawful owners of all the afore bargained premises, and that they are lawfully seized of and in the same and every part thereof in their own proper right of a good and indefinable estate of inheritance in fee simple, and have in themselves good right, full power and lawful authority to sell and dispose of the same as aforesaid; and the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, shall and may from henceforth and forever hereafter, peaceably, quietly, have, hold, occupy, possess, and enjoy the above granted premises, and every part and parcel thereof, free and clear without any charge or intimidation, caused, made, suffered, or granted by said John Pell and Rachel his wife, or either of them, their or either of their heirs in estate, right, title, interest in law or equity, trust, charge, or other molestation, whatsoever. And the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, for themselves respectively, and for their respective heirs, do covenant, promise, and grant to warrant and defend the above granted premises with their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof, unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, forever, against the lawful charges and demands. In witness whereof the said John Pell and Rachel his wife have hereunto set their hands and seals in New York, the twentieth day of September, in the first year of the reign of our sovereign lord and lady, William and Mary, King and Queen of

England, &c., &c., in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred eighty and nine.

JOHN PELL.

The mark of<sup>a</sup>

R

Rachel Pell.

Leisler, the above grantee,<sup>b</sup> was authorized by the committee of public safety,<sup>c</sup> on the 16th of August, 1689, "to use the power and authority of commander-in-chief, until orders should come from their majesties," King William and Queen Mary. "And further to do all such acts as are requisite for the good of the province, taking counsel with the militia and civil authority as occasion shall require."<sup>d</sup>

For assuming the government Leisler was afterwards tried on a charge of high treason, and executed on the 16th of May, 1691.

"Ebeling, the Dutch historian of New York, (says Dunlap,) gives an impartial account of the transactions of this time, and the fate of Jacob Leisler.

On the surrender of the fort (of New York,) Leisler, Milbourne, and others who had formed the council, were imprisoned and immediately tried by a court of oyer and terminer, appointed by the governor, instigated by the enemies of Leisler, who again formed the court. The fallen party were arraigned as murderers and traitors. In vain they reminded the court of their zeal for William and Mary—in vain Leisler denied the authority of the court; any consideration and any humiliation would not have satisfied his enemies; and it appears that he stooped to none, but justified his conduct. Dudley was the presiding judge. Leisler and Milbourne were sentenced to die as rebels and traitors. Had James been king, they might have incurred the same fate for treason against him. Ebeling in his history, says, that after the sentence, "the whole matter was laid before the king," (i. e. be-

---

<sup>a</sup> From the original document in the possession of Bonnett Underhill, Esq., of Upper Rochelle.

<sup>b</sup> In a roll or list of persons embarked in the ship Otter, (at Amsterdam, in 1663, 4,) for the New Netherlands, occurs the name of Jacob Loyseler of Franckfort. Alb. Rec.

<sup>c</sup> This committee had been appointed by the people.

<sup>d</sup> Dunlap's Hist. N. Y. vol. i. 153.



fore William III.,) but by whom? by those who had determined to sacrifice him to their private views and passions.

The assembly that had been convened, were persuaded that the misfortunes of the province were all attributable to Leisler and his friends, and that assembly pressed for his execution.

Sloughter feared to exasperate *the people* who still adhered to Leisler. The governor thought of proroguing the assembly to Albany. Leisler's friends were clamorous on account of his long imprisonment; <sup>a</sup> "and at the sentence passed upon him by the opposite party who feared that if the governor and assembly removed to Albany, the people of New York would liberate the prisoners, and therefore pressed the more for immediate execution. Sloughter called, says Ebeling, "a particular council, of both houses. In this council he was urged and pressed to execute the sentence immediately!" Sloughter is said to have been unwilling. Was he not fearful? The historian Ebeling, says, "when every thing else failed, he (Sloughter) was made drunk, and the execution took place May 17th. Every thing proves that Leisler was condemned unlawfully, and executed unjustly. Afterwards the act of attainder was reversed; this was done at the instance of young Leisler," <sup>b</sup> and the Huguenots, <sup>c</sup> "Gouverneur, and all the others except Milbourne were released."

It has been the policy (continues Dunlap) of men of all ages to preserve the memory of the founders of the nation they claimed as their own. It serves to perpetuate nations. Rome, the eternal, bears the name of its reputed founder. The founder of the democracy of New York, was Jacob Leisler: and New York is now an empire founded on democracy. The line that says, "an honest man is the noblest work of God," has been received as a

<sup>a</sup> In the possession of E. N. Bæby, Esq., of Yonkers, Westchester County, is a gold piece, of the time of James II., said to have been in the possession of the unfortunate Leisler, the night preceding his execution. Around the edge is the following inscription, cut with the penknife of Leisler.

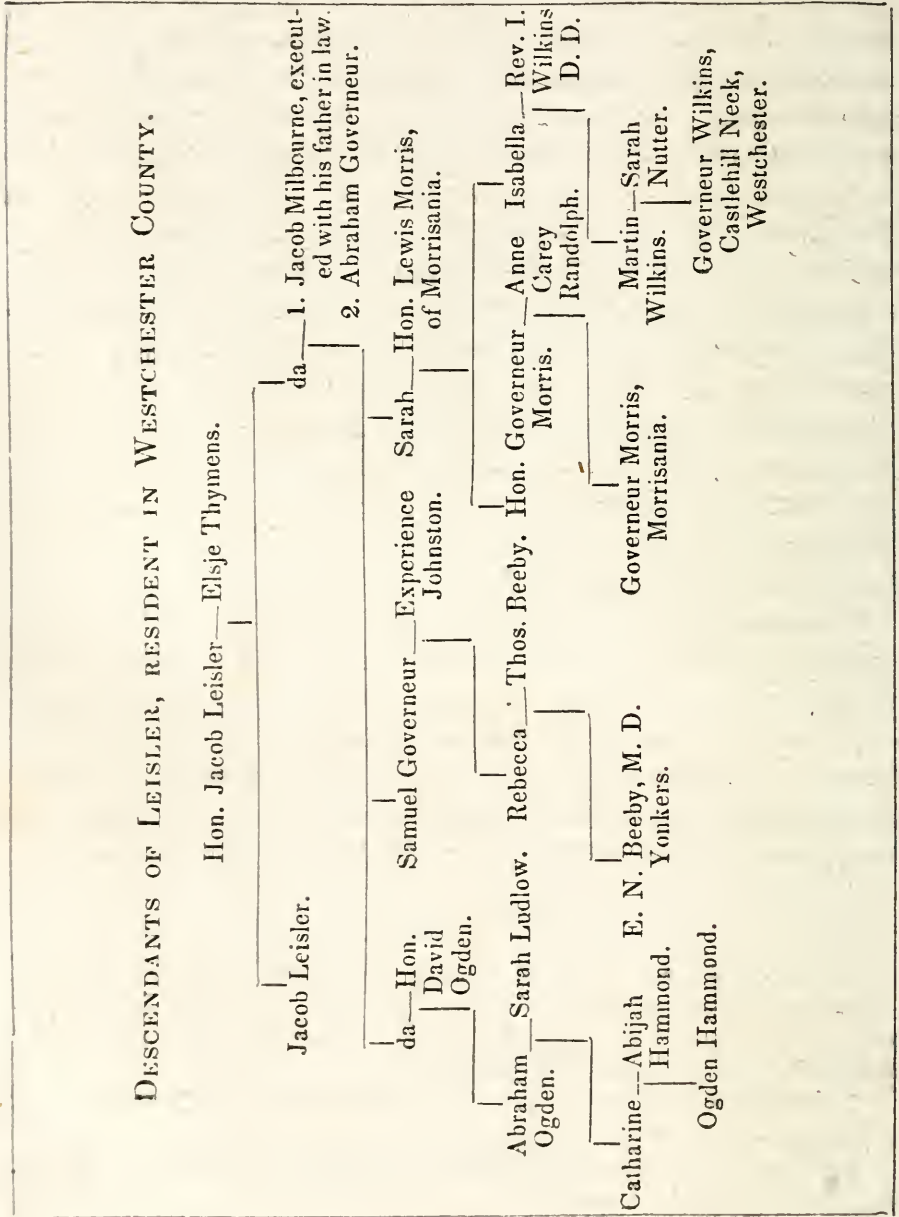
"Remember well and bear in mynd, a faithful friend is hard to find."

<sup>b</sup> Dunlap's Hist. N. Y. vol. i. 210.

<sup>c</sup> A petition in favor of reversing Leisler's attainder was signed by the Huguenots of New Rochelle.—EDITOR.

truism. And Jacob Leisler was truly an honest man, who, though a martyr to the cause of liberty, and sacrificed by injustice, aristocracy, and party malignity, ought to be considered as one in whom New York should take pride."

The descendants of this illustrious man, will be best described in the following table.



Throughout the year, 1690 (the one preceding his execution) we find Jacob Leisler releasing to the exiled Huguenots, the lands which he had purchased in their behalf, of John Pell, in 1689.

To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come, Jacob Leisler of the city of New York, merchant, sendeth greeting in our Lord God everlasting. Whereas, John Pell of the manor of Pelham, Esq., together with Rachel his wife, have, by their certain deed in writing, from under our hands and seals, bearing date the 20th of September, A. D. 1689, given, granted, bargained and sold, unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees for ever, all that tract of land lying within the said manor of Pelham, containing six thousand acres of land, and also one hundred acres of land more, which the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, hath given freely to such, or cause to be erected for the French Church, by the inhabitants residing thereon as relation thereunto being had, doth more fully and at large appear, *now know ye*, that I the said Jacob Leisler, for and in consideration of a certain sum of money to me in hand paid or secured, at or before the enscaling and delivery hereof, by John Neufville, of the city of New York, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, and thereof, and of any part and parcel thereof, have granted, bargained and sold, and by these presents do grant, bargain and sell, unto the said John Neufville all that certain piece or parcel of land situate and being within the manor of Pelham, being 200 acres of land, 40 acres thereof being in the small lot bounded on the north by the Boston road, on the south by the creek, on the east by the land of Mary Levilain, and on the west by the land of Lewis Carre and one hundred and sixty acres of land on the great lott with Mary Levelaine, Gabriel Le Voiteurs and Marhett, which are not divided lands, his proportionable interest in the commons of the six thousand acres of land, and in the fresh and salt meadows of the said six thousand acres therein, comprehending four acres of land on the little commons, together with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging, to have and to hold the said land and premises with their appurtenances, unto the said John Neufville, his heirs and assignees for ever, and the said Jacob Leisler doth by these presents covenant, grant and agree to and with the said John Neufville, his executors, administrators and assignees, in his and their quiet and peaceable possession and seizen, according to the same right and title, as to me appertaineth by the aforesaid deed of sale, made and delivered to me, the said Jacob Leisler, and no farther, he the said John Neufville, paying his proportion of the quit rent on the aforesaid land mentioned and expressed. In witness whereof, I the said Jacob Leisler, have set my hand and seal to these presents, this one and twentieth day of May, A. D. 1690.

The quantity of acres I acknowledge be above the limits, I will not engage at all.

New York, 31 May, 1690.

Sig. Jacob Leisler, Elsie Leisler.

The same year, Jacob Leisler with the consent of Elisee his wife, conveyed to Alexander Allaire, one hundred acres. Also to Louis Guion, a tract consisting of one hundred and thirty-eight acres, &c. &c.

The annexed receipt is taken from the town records.

New York, 8th Sept. 1690.

Item: received of Mr. John Bouteillier, the sum of nine and twenty pounds seven shillings and two pence, being in full for the last payment of his lands.

Received by me,

Rachel Pell.

The township of New Rochelle was first surveyed and divided into lots or farms on the 20th of November, 1693, by Alexander Allaire and Captain Bond, the latter being a surveyor. This division was made by running a straight line directly north from the old Boston road to Hutchinson's river, and laying out lots on each side of it. The land south of the Boston road, was divided into twenty-six lots. Saghlers and Lacounte's neck, (now Davenport's neck) contained, according to the survey, two hundred acres.

Upon the 20th of November, 1700, Sir John Pell<sup>b</sup> and Rachel his wife, granted to Daniel Sampson and Isaac Cantin, one hundred acres, "provided that the purchasers and their assignees, shall do suit and service, now or at any time hereafter, from time to time in the manor court, and pay their proportion to the minister of the place."<sup>c</sup>

The Huguenots,<sup>d</sup> or French Protestants of New Rochelle, came

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. 20. Jacob Leisler was executed on the 16th May, 1691.

<sup>b</sup> So styled in the Town Records.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. p. 10.

<sup>d</sup> The epithet Huguenot (which has been a subject of much discussion,) is traced to the word Eignot, derived from the German Eide-genossen—federati or allied.—Mr. G. P. Disosway.

directly from England, and were a part of the 50,000 persecuted who fled into that country four years before the revocation of the edict of Nantz. This is confirmed by the charter of Trinity Church in New Rochelle, wherein they specify that "*they fled from France in 1681.*"<sup>a</sup>

"The cruelties which they suffered in France are beyond anything of the kind on record, and in no age was there ever such a violation of all that is sacred, either with relation to God or man; and when we consider the exalted virtues of that glorious band of brothers, we are amazed, while we are delighted with their fortitude and courage. Rather than renounce their Christian principles they endured outrages shocking to humanity, persecutions of unheard of enormity, and death in all its horrors. The complaint of Justin Martyr to the Roman Emperor, that the Christians were punished with torture and death upon the bare profession of their being such, might have been made by the French Protestants. To be a Huguenot was enough to ensure condemnation. Whoever bore this name were imprisoned arraigned for their lives, and adhering to their profession were condemned by merciless judges to the flames. Some of the name and character were murdered in cold blood, and massacred without any legal forms of justice.

"It is a singular fact, (continues Mr. Disosway, to whom we are indebted for the materials of this sketch,) that the Reformation originated in France upon her own soil, and its earliest seeds were germinated in the University of Paris, then a stronghold of Romanized faith. At this time, the University was the principal seat of European learning and Roman Catholic orthodoxy.

"Among the people of Picardy and Dauphiny, the first principles of the great work appeared before they were manifest in any other country. This is the fact if we regard dates; and therefore the earliest honors of the Reformation belong to France, a circumstance which has been generally overlooked. Still Luther, in zeal, knowledge and success, was the master spirit of the

---

<sup>a</sup> See Trinity Church Charter.

age, and in its fullest sense he deserves the epithet of the first reformer.

“ Among the first doctors of theology in Paris, who zealously embraced the ever blessed Reformation, was Lefevre, who while engaged in a task of collecting the legends of saints and martyrs, felt a ray of divine light from on high suddenly flash into his mind, and abandoning his work, cast away such foolish things and embraced the holy scriptures. The new impulse grew rapidly in his heart, and he soon communicated its divine truth to his classes in the University. Of this individual, Beza remarked: ‘ It was he who boldly began the revival of the holy religion of Jesus Christ. Thus a new era opened in France, and the Reformation soon made rapid progress. One of its first witnesses in the court of royalty was the celebrated Princess, Margaret of Valois, Duchess of Alençon, and sister to the reigning monarch, Francis the First.<sup>a</sup> She is said to have dignified her profession by a pure religious and blameless life amidst the dissolute and literary household of her royal brother, &c.

“ The bishop of Meaux through Margaret sent to the King a translation of St. Paul’s epistles richly illuminated, adding: ‘ They will make a truly royal dish of a fatness that never corrupts, and having a power to restore all manner of sickness; the more we taste them the more we hunger after them, with desires that are ever fed and never cloyed.’

“ The fires of persecution now began to rage against this new sect. John Le Clerc was the first martyr of the gospel in France. He was the pastor of the church at Meaux. For writing against antichrist of Rome, he was seized by the enraged priests, whipped three successive days, and then branded as a heretic with a heated iron on his forehead. But the martyr uttered not a groan, and he was again set at liberty. He then withdrew to Metz, where more awful sufferings awaited him, and again in the power of

---

<sup>a</sup> Margaret selected for her emblem the marigold which, says Brantome, the analyst of the court, “ in its flower and leaf has the most resemblance to the sun, and turning follows its course. Her device was *Non inferiora secutus*; ‘ I seek not things below;’ signifying, continues our author, that her actions, thoughts, purposes and desires were directed to that exalted sun, namely God.

his enemies, they cut off his right hand and tormenting him with red hot irons, he was at last consumed by a slow fire. During all these horrid tortures his mind was kept in perfect fidelity and peace, and he ejaculated solemnly: 'Israel trust in the Lord, he is their help and their shield.' Such was the first confessor of Jesus Christ who suffered and died in France, and therefore demands our especial notice. A system of terror soon began over the whole of France.

"But in vain did its enemies oppose; the glorious march of the Reformation was onward and sure. France had now been baptized with the blood of the martyrs!

"In the midst of perils, opposition and persecution, the first national synod was called at the metropolis of the kingdom. This council published to the world their confession, which is entitled, 'The confession of faith held and professed by the Reformed Churches of France, received and enacted by their first national synod, celebrated in the city of Paris, and year of our Lord, 1559.'

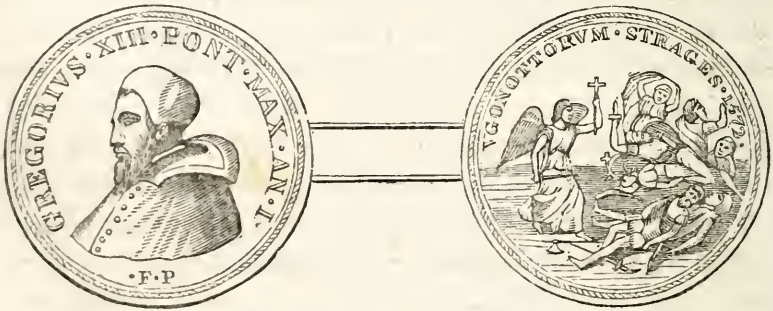
"In their contests at this period the Huguenot forces were led by the celebrated and brave Coligny and the Prince of Condé, two illustrious names in their annals. The Duke of Guise headed the papal armies. Towns were taken and retaken; when the Huguenots triumphed they destroyed altars and images, and the Romanists in their turn burned all the bibles they could seize. Such were the effects of fanaticism on both sides. To assert that the excesses were only committed by one party would be untrue, and that some of our race were allied to angels; but we hazard nothing in saying that the reformed, in almost every instance, resorted to arms from motives of self-preservation."

"Upon Sunday, August the 24th, 1572, was perpetrated the massacre of St. Bartholomew. De Thou, a Popish historian, relates that thirty thousand perished on this terrible occasion. Another estimates one hundred thousand. In Paris alone, they amounted to ten thousand, and among the number five hundred Huguenot lords, knights, and military officers, with several thousand gentlemen.

"This massacre which was perpetrated on St. Bartholomew's day, in the year of our Lord 1572, a year most aptly designated as infamous by Lord Clarendon, may be pronounced the foulest

and the bloodiest of ancient or modern times. The black deed has handed down the names of Catharine de Medicis and her son Charles IX. to the universal detestation of after ages.

“Charles, by a public edict, proclaimed himself the author of it, pretending that he was forced to the measure by the Admiral Coligny and his friends. In honor of it high mass was performed by the Pope; salvoes of artillery thundered from the ramparts of St. Angelo; a Te Deum was sung to celebrate the atrocious event, and a medal was struck for the same purpose. If every Protestant account of this terrible transaction must encounter suspicion, we ourselves will be satisfied with the testimony of this medal alone of Gregory XIII., at that time the Pope;—evidence that scatters to the winds of heaven all the excuses and attempted apologies for those who perpetrated the St. Bartholomew massacre. The medal has as usual on the obverse a head of the Pope, Gregorius XIII. Pont. Max. An. I. The reverse exhibits a destroying angel with a cross in one hand, and a sword in the other, pursuing and slaying a flying and prostrate band of heretics. Strange work for an angel.<sup>a</sup> The legend is: Hugonottorum strages, (slaughter of the Huguenots,) 1572.”<sup>b</sup>



Fac-simile of Papal Medal in honour of the Massacre of St. Bartholomew's.

Kindly furnished by Mr. Edward Walker, publisher of "Dowling's History of Romanism."

Some of the Huguenot families of New Rochelle appear to

<sup>a</sup> Sketch of the Huguenots by Mr. G. P. Disosway. See *Christian Intelligencer*.

<sup>b</sup> There is an original medal in the possession of the Rev. S. Farmar Jarvis, D. D. L. L. D., of Middletown, Connecticut; who obtained it at the mint in Rome. Electrotype copies of this medal are very numerous.



have preserved the memory of that fatal day, by adopting it as a christian name for their offspring.<sup>a</sup>

The city of La Rochelle in France, which had always stood firmly attached to the reformed interests, appears to have afforded (in 1572,) an asylum for the survivors of the bloody massacre of St. Bartholomew. It was here they issued their famous declaration stating the affair to be one of unheard of cruelty, and bidding defiance to their enemies the house of Guise. "And it was here they armed and fortified themselves, trusting in a just cause and to the favor of Heaven. For nine months they fought most gallantly in defence of La Rochelle, killing 40,000 of their enemies, who besieged them with the strongest and mightiest army of France without success. It was however in 1627, that this city made its last and ever memorable stand for the cause of the Huguenots.

"And it may safely be said, that this mighty city would never have fallen, (such was the undaunted heroism of the Rochellese themselves,) had it not been for the powerful minded genius of Cardinal Richelieu, who planned and executed such a mighty work against it, that in gigantic extent it has been compared by historians to the similar one executed by Alexander the Great for Tyre. The powerful mind of Richelieu saw at a glance that it was useless to carry on the longest siege against the city of La Rochelle, whilst a free communication remained open to the sea, on which the town was situated. He therefore closed the mouth of their channel by the erection of a prodigious mole, 4482 feet across the harbor, with a central opening. The frame work of this mole consisted of huge piles which was filled up with stones, and sixty hulks sunk with the same material, for the purpose of buttresses. One arm of this immense dyke overlapped the other, so that the entrance instead of being in front was lateral. A stockade of piles, interlaced with chains effectually stopped the passage. This work he completed and defended by 45,000 men, while forty pieces of cannon on the one shore, and twenty-five on the other, flanked the approaches; and the

---

<sup>a</sup> Bartholomew le Roux and others.

narrow passage in its centre, (of one hundred and fifty feet,) guarded by a flotilla of vessels."<sup>a</sup>

"The brave Rochellese manfully defended themselves amidst warfare and starvation. They were reduced from over 27,000 to 5000, and out of a company of nearly 600 English allies, only 62 survived. 'Assure the Rochellese that I will not abandon them;' was the message of Charles of England to the closely besieged city, and just as Buckingham was taking command of the desired expedition, he was assassinated. This event created further delay, and the expedition arrived too late to relieve the place. The citizens bore their trials most manfully, and with a perseverance seldom equalled. The bearer of a letter was arrested, and compelled by torture to confess that he had swallowed it concealed in a silver almond; and he with the silver-smith who made the almond were both hanged. Two illustrious ladies, the Duchess of Rohan and her daughter, who were not named in the capitulation, are thus referred to by a writer of that day. 'Rigor without precedent, that a person of her quality, at the age of seventy, on quitting a siege in which she and her daughter had lived for three months on horse flesh and four or five ounces of bread per day, should be held a captive, deprived of the exercises of religion.' 'Protestants were no longer allowed to reside in this 'city of refuge,' unless they had been inhabitants before the arrival of Buckingham's expedition. The walls were prostrated, the fortifications razed, and a cross erected. Thus perished this little Christian republic which had defied the crown of France for seventy years."

"History does not afford an example of more malignant or desolating war than that which raged in France during the seventeenth century. Louis XIV., the easy dupe of the Jesuits, confessors, and the designing Madame de Maintenon, and led on, also, by the Cardinal Mazariné, determined to convert the Reformers to the Roman faith. Not only force, but bribery was

---

<sup>a</sup> Smedley's *History of Reform. Religion in France*, vol. iii., p. 164, Harper's edition.

now employed ; converts were to be purchased, and proselytism in every form resorted to.”<sup>a</sup>



Arms of La Rochelle.

To enter into the minute particulars of this disastrous period would be superfluous; suffice it to say, that now commenced a renewal of the outrageous proceedings of former years. Commissioners were sent into the provinces to dispossess the Reformed of all they held as citizens; nothing awaited them but fines, humiliation and poverty. Troops of soldiers were quartered among them, who inflicted the most horrid barbarities, while others scoured the country, and dragooned men into false confessions. And not only this; hundreds were condemned to the galleys, and sent to the French provinces in America. One of their own ministers, Jeurieu, informs us that a friend of his saw a great number of men, at Arles, fastened to the horses, underneath, by means of cords, followed by long carts filled with men and women, tied by their waists to the carts! and these were carried to Marseilles, to be shipped to America; others again were sent to the islands of this country in the king's ships, to be sold, like slaves, to those who would give most for them.<sup>b</sup> Wearied with the incessant persecution, and despairing of repose around their native hearths, the Huguenots began to leave France for more secure regions. Their well known industry and skill made them be welcomed in every Protestant country. No

<sup>a</sup> Sketch of the Huguenots, Christian Intelligencer, Mr. Disosway.

<sup>b</sup> Jeurieu's Pastoral Letters.

less than five hundred thousand thus escaped, and found homes in Germany, Holland, and England.”<sup>a</sup> King Charles II. granted letters of denization in council, under the great seal, and assured the exiles that, at the next meeting of Parliament, he would introduce a bill by which they should be naturalized; relieved them at the moment from importation duties and passport fees, and encouraged voluntary contributions for their support.”<sup>b</sup> This order was issued on the 23th of July, 1681, the same year in which the Huguenots of New Rochelle fled from France,<sup>c</sup> conclusive evidence that they constituted a portion of those exiles who accepted the royal offers, and afterward, under the patronage of the government, purchased and settled here in 1689. The Huguenots must have been “aided, in their escape from France, by the English vessels that lay for some time off the Island of Rhé, opposite La Rochelle, in which they were conveyed to England.”<sup>d</sup> Tradition says that they were subsequently transported to this place in one of the king’s ships. The point on Davenport’s Neck, called Bauffet’s or Bonnefoy’s Point, was the spot where they first landed.

Upon the 17th of April, 1695, we find letters of denization granted to Francis Le Count, under oaths appointed to be taken.<sup>e</sup>

On the 6th of February, 1695-6, letters of denization were issued, under the seal of the province, “to David de Bonrepos, Alexander Allaire, Henry Beignon, Esaye Valteau, Andrew Thau-net, David Bonnefoy, Louis Guion, and Louis Guion his son, Pierre Das, Pierre Palcot, Andrew Naudin, and Andrew and Louis Naudin his sons, Theophile Fourrestier, Charles Fourrestier, Ambroise Sycard, and Ambroise, Daniel, and Jacques, his sons, Giulliamme Landrin, Guillaume Latteneau, Isaaq Caillard,

<sup>a</sup> Christian Intelligencer; Mr. Disosway’s Sketch of the Huguenots.

<sup>b</sup> Smedley’s Hist. of the Reformed Religion, iii. 217.

<sup>c</sup> See Charter of Trinity Church in this town.

<sup>d</sup> So rapid and instantaneous appears to have been their flight, that one family in particular (the Guions) “left their pot boiling on the fire.” An earthen jug, rescued on this occasion, is in the possession of Mrs. Julia Lawton, daughter of Frederick Guion.

<sup>e</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. vi. 527.

Marie Cothonneau, and Guillaume Cothonneau her son, Jean Neufuille, Estensie Lavinge, and Jean Constant, of foreign birth, and a writ of "didimus potestatem," directed to Col. Caleb Heathcote, for administering the oaths unto them."<sup>a</sup>

Most of these Huguenots purchased under Jacob Leisler,<sup>b</sup> in 1690.

They continued to arrive from England, as far as can be ascertained, till the year 1700; for there is still preserved in the Bonnett family (of this town) the following passport (from the mayor of Bristol, in England, of this date,) to their ancestor, Daniel Bonnett:

CIVITAS BRISTOL.—These are to certify that the bearer hereof, Daniel Bonnett, weaver, (as we are very well assured by persons of credit and repute of the French refugees here,) is a French Protestant of good repute, and hath here lived ten years. But in hopes of better maintaining himself and family, is intending to settle himself, with his wife and four children, in some of his Majestie's plantations in America. In testimony whereof, we have hereto subscribed our names, and caused the seal of the mayoralty of this city to be hereto affixed this sixteenth day of November, one thousand and seven hundred.

Thos. Cary, Clerk.

William Daines, Mayor,  
Richard Lane,  
Samuel Wallis,  
William Jackson,  
Thomas Day.

On Daniel Bonnett's arrival in New Rochelle, he purchased land of Bartholomew le Roux, one of the first settlers.<sup>c</sup>

For some time, all the exertions the Huguenots could make men, women and children united, were necessary to prepare the land for cultivation, and enable them to pay for its purchase, which their perseverance at last accomplished. Yet amid all the hardships and suffering incident to a laborious life, in an uncultivated and strange country, they wrote to their friends in France,

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. vol. i.

<sup>b</sup> The artists and mechanics appear to have remained in the city, while the farmers moved into the country.

<sup>c</sup> This property is still occupied by his descendants.

expressing their gratitude to Heaven for the advantages they enjoyed in this land of liberty.

That heart must be hard indeed that cannot appreciate the following pious ejaculations set forth in the last will of John Mashett, one of these sufferers for conscience sake.

Our help be in the name of God, which made the heavens and earth, Amen.

I, John Mashett, a ship carpenter, born and bred in ye town of Frambbad in France, and dwelling in Bordeaux, and being fugitive by the perseeution, with my family, viz., Jeanne Thomas my wife, and Peter, John, Jeanne and Mary Anne Mashett, my children, sons and daughters, and having all abandoned and forsaken all my goods for my religion's sake, which I profess in the purity of a Christian commonly called Protestant, and being now established in these places, lands and dependencies of New York, in the town called *New Rochelle*, under the dominion of the high and mighty monarch, our king, William of plaine memory, to which God preserve his sceptre and crowne, and that under his reign we might live in God's fear, and being sick of body with a fever, notwithstanding sound of mind and memory, and willing to provide my business for the tranquility of my family, &c. Imprimus, I commend my soul to God, the Father Almighty, the Creator of Heaven and Earth, that he might receive *her* in His Heavenly kingdom among his blessed children. And as for my corpse, to be buried after the custom and manner of my religion and discipline, till the accomplishment of times, and untill the ressur-rection when our Lord shall come for to judge the quick and the dead, &c. &c. The above will is dated New Rochelle, 17th of April, 1694.<sup>a</sup>

Among the Lespinard papers, (at Upper New Rochelle) is preserved a diary kept by a member of that family, prior to their leaving France, from which we make the following extracts (the originals are in the French language.)

"September 20th, 1671. I have been married to Abel de Forge. I beg the good God, that he gives us the grace to live a long time in His holy fear, and that it will please Him to give us a good paradise at the end.

"October 2d, 1672. My wife has been confined of a girl Margaret, at about ten o'clock of the day, on a Wednesday. Marga-

---

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec.

ret died, and has given her spirit to God, between 6 and 7 o'clock of the afternoon.<sup>a</sup>

“Between the French Huguenots, who settled at Oxford in Massachusetts, and those who came to New York, it appears by the Bernou papers, there was some correspondence.”<sup>b</sup>

The freeholders of New Rochelle in 1708 were as follows :

Daniel Lambert,	Jacob Scurman,
Elie Badeau,	Ambroise Sycart,
Daniel Giraud,	Benjamin Faneuil,
Gregoire Gougeon,	Alexander Allaire,
Daniel Bornnett,	Jean Pemeau,
Elie de Bonrepos,	J. Levillain,
Jean Magnon,	— Bolts,
— Besly,	Daniel Rayneau,
Isaac Mercier,	Guillaume Le Counte,
Bartholomew Le Roux,	François Le Counte,
Pierre Valleau,	Zacharie Angevin,

Frederick Schorman.

Upon the 17th of April, 1724, we find the following freeholders “granting to Anthony Lespinard a portion of land (situated on Davenport’s Neck,) for the erection of a mill.”<sup>c</sup>

— Besly,	Peter Simson,
Oliver Besly,	John Coutant,
Simon Mohe,	F. Bolt, jr.
Francis Ganyard,	Zaccarie Angevin,
Frederick Scurman,	Pierre Elize Galladet,
Gilleaume Clapp,	Isaac Mercier,
John Clark,	Lancinie Thauvet,
John M. Martin,	Aman Guion,
Esten Guerin,	Andre Naudain,
Benj. Petit,	Alexander Allaire,
Josias Le Conte,	Gregoire Gougeson,
Abel Devoux,	James Roubet,
Samuel Barnard,	Henry Shadden,
John Moras,	Rachel Neufille. <sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Extracts from the Lespinard diary, in possession of Mr. Gaulladet, Upper Rochelle.

<sup>b</sup> Massachusetts Hist. Collect. vol. ii. 34.

<sup>c</sup> The site now occupied by Mr. Secor’s mill.

<sup>d</sup> Co. Rec. lib. F. 150.

The records of this town commence on the 1st of November, 1699.

“At a general meeting of all the inhabitants of this town, according to Justice Pinckney, his warrant, Peter Le Roux, heretofore Constable, has been discharged, and Robert Bloomer has been named in his place, for to exercise the said charge of Constable, and that, *nomine contradicente*. In the same assembly, Peter Frederick and Joseph Devane have been named for to be surveyors about the fences in all the plantation of this place, for to preserve the peace.

April, 1700.

Robert Bloomer, Supervisor,  
Ambroise Sicard, Collector,  
Peter Vallean, Assessor,  
Peter Frederick, } Surveyors of Highways.  
Andrew Barehut, }

Occasionally the entries occur in the French language: “La premier jour d’avril, 1710, nous les inhabitants de La Nouvelle Rochelle, assemble a l’autorité par un warant de Justice Gougeon daté du en mars nous eûmes à nommer pour officiers pour suivre le canton.

Pour Supervoyser, Olliviere Besly,  
Pour Constable, Zacarie Angevin,  
Pour Collecteur, Jacque Flandreau,  
Pour Toon Man, Isaac Mercier et Pierre Vallean,  
Pour Survoyeur, Jonas Le Villain et Daniel Reyneau.

The first independent election for officers of this town took place in 1783.

At a town meeting, held the 22d of December, 1723, at the house of Gilbert Brush, innkeeper, for choosing town officers for the town of New Rochelle, in pursuance of an ordinance of the Council, appointed by the act of the Legislature, entitled an act to provide for the temporary government of the southern part of this state whenever the enemy shall abandon or be dispossessed of the same, and until the Legislature can be convened, passed 23d of October, 1779, the following town officers are elected:—

Benjamin Stephenson, Supervisor,  
James Willis, Town Clerk,  
James Reynolds, Constable and Collector,



Benjamin Stephenson,	}	Assessors,
James Ronalds,		
James Willis,		
David Guion,	}	Overseers of the road for
James Willis,		
Abraham Guion,	}	Lower quarter,
Josiah Guion,		
Peter Flandreau,	}	Damage Viewers.
Elias Guion,		

“The village of New Rochelle is agreeably situated on the Boston turnpike, extending to Long Island Sound on the south, where there is a convenient steamboat landing, distant eighteen miles from the city of New York. It contains about 900 inhabitants, 130 dwelling houses, 1 Episcopal, 1 Presbyterian, 1 Methodist, and 1 Roman Catholic church; a post office, a bank, 3 hotels, and several extensive boarding houses, 1 boarding school for males, and two for females, 9 stores, 2 grist mills, 1 manufactory of printer’s ink, and two carriage factories.”<sup>a</sup>

The settlement of this place was commenced by the Huguenots in 1691, (two years after the purchase of the town,) who gave it the name it now bears, in remembrance of their native residence, La Rochelle, in France.<sup>b</sup> This favorite asylum of the French Protestants was, at a very early period, a place of some resort not only for the acquirement of the French language, but on account of the hospitality and politeness of its inhabitants. Here some of the most distinguished men in the country have received the elements of their education (under the charge of the French clergy;) among them may be enumerated the Hon. John Jay, (the grandson of a Huguenot,) “who made the celebrated treaty of Paris, for the independence of our country, and exerted a powerful influence in extending the limits of the United States to the Mississippi!”<sup>c</sup> Also General Philip Schuyler, so

<sup>a</sup> Spafford’s N. Y. Gazetteer.

<sup>b</sup> La Rochelle, the capital of the department of Lower Charente, called Rupella by the ancient Romans.

<sup>c</sup> “At the early age of eight years, John Jay was sent to a grammar school at New Rochelle. His instructor was the Rev. Mr. Stoupe, a native of Switzerland, and pastor of the French Church.” See Life of John Jay.

conspicuous for his services and successes in the revolutionary war,<sup>a</sup> and Washington Irving.

For two generations the Huguenots of New Rochelle, preserved in its purity the French language, thus testifying their attachment to their native land, the sepulchre of their forefathers, and, to which perhaps, they cherished the hope of a return at some future period.

The first dwelling houses were erected on each side of the high street,<sup>b</sup> in the vicinity of the old stone church. At a very early date of the settlement, this appears to have been a flourishing place; for Madame Knight who travelled through the village in 1704 thus describes it.

“On the 22d of December, we set out for New Rochelle, where being come, we had good entertainment, and recruited ourselves very well. This is a very pretty place, well compact, and good handsome houses, clean good and passable roads, and situated on a navigable river, abundance of land well fenced and cleared all along as we passed, which caused in me a love to the place, which I could have been content to live in it. Here we rid over a bridge made of one entire stone, of such a breadth that a cart might pass with safety; and to spare. It lay over a passage cut through a rock to convey water to a mill not far off.<sup>c</sup> Here are three fine taverns within call of each other, and very good provision for travellers.”<sup>d</sup>

The advantages presented by the proximity of the sound are of great importance to New Rochelle.

Besides the ordinary water transportation by sloops there is the

<sup>a</sup> “Philip Schuyler was born on the 22d of November, 1733. He was educated by a good and wise mother, until sent to a school at New Rochelle, &c. Here he acquired a knowledge of the French language, and improved himself in various branches of learning.” Notice of Gen. P. Schuyler.

<sup>b</sup> The present street, which passes in front of the Episcopal Church. The Guion family appear to have been among the first residents and proprietors of the village.

<sup>c</sup> This stone must have occupied the site of the present bridge which crosses the Chrystal Lake stream.

<sup>d</sup> Madame Knight's travels in 1704.

convenience of a daily steamboat to the city during the summer months, and three times a week in the winter. In addition to which there is the New York and New Haven rail road now in course of construction.

The hotels, which afford excellent accommodations to parties visiting the place for the amusement of fishing, the salubrity of its air, or the beauty of its scenery, consist of the New Rochelle Hotel, by Mr. George Fuller, and the Mansion House, by Mr. Henry Porter.<sup>a</sup> The Le Roy House is an extensive and comfortable establishment, under the charge of Mr. Alexander Banks. Adjoining the store of Messrs. Baber & Badeau (on the main street) there has been erected a large and commodious office for the *Westchester Mutual Insurance Company*.

The by-laws of this company authorize their agents to insure to the amount of 5000 dollars on one risk, but in no case to insure property so connected, that one loss can exceed 5000 dollars.<sup>b</sup>

#### OFFICERS OF THE WESTCHESTER COUNTY MUTUAL INSURANCE COMPANY, NEW ROCHELLE.

##### DIRECTORS.

Nathaniel Bayles,	Josiah Le Count,	George W. Miller,
George Rutherford,	Ben H. Carpenter,	Samuel S. Wood,
William Scott,	George Case,	Samuel Trowbridge,
James T. Eells,	Monmouth Lyon,	Caleb Roscoe,
William H. Bowne,	Horace B. Smith,	Thos. O'Farrington,
Albert Badeau,	D. R. Carpenter,	Daniel Mapes,
Alexander Banks,	Alsop H. Lockwood,	Sam'l W. Canfield.

##### OFFICERS.

Nathaniel Bayles, President and General Agent.  
 James T. Eells, Secretary and Treasurer.  
 George Case, Attorney and Counsellor.

On the opposite side of the street is situated the town house, a neat wooden building surmounted by a cupola. This is used for

<sup>a</sup> Formerly kept by Capt. George Pelor and known as *The Cross Keys*.

<sup>b</sup> Directions to agents.

holding the justices' courts, and town elections in, and other public purposes. The main street is wide, straight, and very pleasant, and runs the entire length of the village. Upon the whole, New Rochelle is a place of considerable wealth and enterprise, and from its fine location it must eventually arrive to some importance. On the north side of the old Boston post road (formerly the high street of the village,) is situated the Episcopal church, a chaste Gothic structure of wood surmounted by a neat tower and spire of the same materials.

The first church edifice, of which any thing is known, was built by the Huguenots about 1692-3, upon the site of the present Episcopal church.<sup>a</sup> In 1693, "The elders of the church in New Rochelle have accorded to Ambroise Sicard, jr., and Daniel Sicard, to convert into a rent at 6 per cent. the 40 shillings which they owe for 10 acres of land sold them by the inhabitants and begin to pay the rent May, 1694."<sup>b</sup>

"THAUVET ECOTONNEAU,

"TMACHER THEROUDE,

"GUILLIAUME LE COUNT,

"DANIEL STREING."

In the grant to Jacob Leisler, (20th September, 1689,) John Pell, lord of the manor, with the consent of Rachel his wife, did give and grant, "to the said Jacob Leisler the further quantity of one hundred acres of land for the use of the French church *erected or to be erected* by the inhabitants of the said tract of land."<sup>c</sup>

The following documents relate to this property, which was in dispute for some time, between the present Episcopal corporation and the Presbyterian society.

"Juilly 22d, 1700." "In general assembly of the inhabitants of this place, according to Justice Mott's warrant, it has been agreed by the plurality of votes, that above the hundred acres of land given by Sir John Pell for the church of this place, the said 100

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of Elias Guion. This individual was born February 14, 1728, and died November 26, 1811.

<sup>b</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>c</sup> See Leisler's deed and church charter.

acres shall be taken on the undivided land, according to the choice of the elders of the church, as they will find the more profitable for the church and people."<sup>a</sup>

In 1763 the members of Trinity Church obtained a further confirmation of the above grant from the heirs of John Pell, and subsequently released to each other. The following release from the executors of Joseph Pell to David Guion occurs on the 22d of February, 1763.

"Between Phœbe, widow of Joseph Pell, and Samuel Sneden and Jacobus Bleecker, Esqrs., executors of Joseph Pell, on the one part, and David Guion of New Rochelle on the other, witnesseth, &c., whereas John Pell, formerly proprietor of the said manor of Pelham, was seized in fee of 6000 acres of land, part of said manor of Pelham, and being so seized did sell the said 6000 acres of land to one Jacob Leisler, and did set apart the said remaining 100 acres of land for the use of the French church. But said John Pell never did dispose or divest himself of the legal estate and right to the said 100 acres, and the said John Pell afterwards died intestate, and left Thomas Pell his eldest son and heir at law, by means whereof the inheritance and legal right to the said 100 acres became vested in said Thomas Pell. And whereas said Thomas, on 3d July, 1739, did in due form of law make his last will and testament and bequeath the same to his son, Joseph Pell, in fee, &c., whereupon the said executors do convey the said 100 acres to David Guion," &c.<sup>b</sup>

On the 4th of Feb. 1763, David Guion released the same to Trinity church for the sum of £100.<sup>c</sup>

Isaac Guion, Peter Flandreau, Samuel Gelliott and Magdaline Stoupe (sole executrix and heir of the last will and testament of the Rev. Peter Stoupe) also released to the Church in 1767.<sup>d</sup>

Prior to the erection of the first Huguenot church in New Rochelle, the devoted inhabitants of this town, walked regularly every Sunday to New York, a distance (by the road at that time) of 23 miles, to attend the Sabbath service at the old Church du St. Esprit, in Pine street, and returned on the Sabbath evening to their homes, to be ready for their weekly avocations on Mon-

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. lib. H. 342.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. H. 346.

<sup>d</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. G. 554, 556. See also Lib. H. 349.

day. To them the service of the temple was a delight. They invariably commenced their march on Sunday morning by singing one of the psalms of Clement Marot. The 60th psalm appears to have been a particular favorite.

“O Lord thou didst us clean forsake,  
And scatter all abroad, &c.”

We are indebted for the following particulars, to the recollections of the late John Pintard, L. L. D.

“The holy sacrament was administered to the Huguenots at New Roche'le, four times a year, viz., Christmas, Easter, Whitsunday and the middle of September. During the intermissions that occurred, the communicants walked to New York for that purpose. Prior to their departure on a Sunday, they always collected the young children, and left them in the care of friends, while they set off early in the morning and walked to the city barefooted, carrying their shoes and stockings in their hands. About 12 miles from New York at a place since called the Blue Bell, there was a large rock by the road side covered with cedars, here they stopped for a short time to rest and take some refreshment, and then proceeded on their journey till they came to a fresh water pond, (within the bounds of the city) here they washed their feet, put on their shoes and stockings, and walked to the French church, where they generally arrived by the time service begun. After they had received the sacrament, they adjourned to the consistory room and partook of the provisions they had brought with them. The interval between the services was short for their accommodation, as they had to walk home again the same evening to their families. This religious duty was often repeated, an evidence that their piety was ardent and sincere. They continued to worship after this manner, till the American revolution broke out, when this part of the county became harassed and overrun by the British troops. The people in consequence were scattered, and the younger folks grew up without going to any regular place of worship.

The French Church du St. Esprit had two doors, behind which boxes were placed to receive the contributions of the congregation. At the conclusion of the services, the minister never failed

to add "Souvenez vous les pauvres," remember ye the poor. Upon which, every person old and young, on going out of church, dropped a copper into the box.<sup>a</sup> The money collected in this manner was divided the next morning among the poor who came regularly to receive their allowance at nine o'clock in the consistory room. At that early period, a large loaf of bread could be purchased for four coppers, so that this money supplied the indigent for one week. It is a well known fact, that the French Huguenots always made it a matter of conscience to support their own poor, and the scripture remark has more than once been applied to them. "Yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread." The French clergy were derived from Geneva, and greatly distinguished for their learning. Governor Burnet, of New York, the son of Bishop Burnet, was much censured for his partiality to them, but being well educated, he knew how to appreciate their merits. The Huguenots were very careful in the domestic education of their children. In the common sitting room of most houses, the mantel piece was finished with Dutch tiles, containing chiefly the history of the New Testament and the Parables."<sup>b</sup>

They were taught to learn the subject by these tiles on Sunday evenings, for at that period Sunday evening services were not common; other denominations first introduced them. The consequence has been that domestic instruction has declined, a method by which the children of earlier days derived more benefit, than by being carried to evening churches."<sup>c</sup>

In the possession of the Hon. Joshua Purdy of North Salem is the original French bible belonging to the Guion family of New Rochelle, containing the forms of prayer, with the manner of administering the sacraments; celebrating marriage, and the visitation of the sick, as formerly practised in the French Reformed

---

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Pintard remembered as a child, to have been lifted up for the purpose of dropping his mite into the box.

<sup>b</sup> Such may yet be seen in this place in the house of Mr. Samuel Davis.

<sup>c</sup> From John Pintard's recollections, communicated by Mrs. Servoss of New Rochelle.

Church of this place, one hundred and eight years ago. One of the prayers is thus entitled,

“ORAISON DU FIDÈLE DÉTENU EN CAPTIVITÉ.”

The catechism of the French Church is also added, and the Psalms in metre with their appropriate tunes. On a blank leaf occurs the following memoranda,

Cette Bible appartient  
au moy Valther Himbert  
du Locke & de la  
de fond Bourgeois  
Mangin Lan-  
mille Sept cent  
et un  
FI.

Au nom de dieu Issac Gieon a marié ma file le 25 d'August, 1700, par Monsieur le Roux minister de la Francaise de la Nouvelle York. ✕

En j ve Leace de Monsieur Peak dronibut ancien. ✕

By an act of General Assembly, passed Sept. 1693, (which was subsequently confirmed,) the Manor of Pelham became one of the four districts of Westchester parish. In the year 1702, New Rochelle contributed towards the minister's maintenance, and poor of the parish, £7 3s. 0d. In 1720 her quota amounted to £12 14s 1½d.

At a meeting of the justices and vestry held in the town of Westchester, on the 5th of May, 1704, “appeared Mr. Peter Hulse, (constable for the town of New Rochelle in 1702,) who produced two receipts, for £5., the minister's rate for that year.”<sup>a</sup>

The first minister of the French Reformed Church in New Rochelle appears to have been the Rev. Daniel Bondet. Although by a reference to the charter of Trinity Church it will be seen that the pastors of the French Church in this place had been “invested with holy orders by episcopal ordination,” as early as 1695.<sup>b</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Westchester vestry books.

<sup>b</sup> By a reference to the first elders of this church in 1693, it will be seen that



Mr. Bondet, prior to his removal to this place, had been settled over the French congregation at New Oxford in Massachusetts. This appears from a letter written by him to some person in authority, (probably Governor Dudley) complaining of the sale of rum to the Indians, "without order and measure," and of its baneful effects. The date is lost, with a line or two at the beginning, but is endorsed "Mr. Daniel Bondet's representation referring to N. Oxford, July 6th, 1691." He mentions it as upon "an occasion which fills my heart with sorrow and my life of trouble, but my humble request will be at least before God, and before you, a solemn protestation against the guilt of those incorrigible persons who dwell in our place. The rum (rum) is always sold to the Indians, without order and measure, inso-much that according the complaint sent to me by Master Dickes-tean, with advice to present it to your honor. The twenty-sixth of the last month there was about twenty Indians so furious by drunkenness that they fought like bears, and fell upon one called Remes . . . . who is appointed for preaching the gospel amongst them. He has been so much disfigured by his wounds that there is no hope of his recovery. If it was your pleasure to signify to the instrumens of that evil the jalosie of your athorite and of the publique tranquility, you would do great good maintaining the honor of God in a Christian habitation, comforting some honest souls, wich being incompatible with such abominations, feel every day the burden of afflixion of their honorable perigrination aggravated. Hear us, pray, and so God be with you and prosper all your just undertakings and applications 'tis the sincere wish of your most respectuos servant,

D. BONDET, Minister of the Gospel  
in a French congregation at New Oxford,"

The government probably interfered and took measures to prevent the repetition of the evil complained of. The above paper was found in the secretary's office, and shown to me by Mr.

---

the name of Thauvet Ecotonneau is placed above those of the elders ; it is possible that he was the first minister.

Secretary Bradford, who, at my request, searched the government papers, in aid of my inquiries. The "representation of the minister may have induced the government to appoint him a missionary to the natives in the neighborhood of Oxford; for in another communication, Mr. Bradford informed me:" "in 1695, Mr. Bondet, a French Protestant minister, preached to the Nipmug Indians, in the south of Worcester county."<sup>a</sup>

The year of Mr. Bondet's settlement at New Rochelle was 1700. At first he used the French prayers, according to the Protestant Churches of France; but in 1709 his congregation unanimously, with the exception of two individuals, followed the example of their French reformed brethren in England and New York, by conforming to the English Church.<sup>b</sup> In doing this, the Huguenots followed the sentiment of their own church, which, from the beginning of the Reformation to this time, had allowed it to be lawful to do so, and condemned those who made any separation, but from the Church of Rome.<sup>c</sup>

Upon this conformity, we find the venerable Propagation Society making an allowance to the Rev. Daniel Bondet and directing him to use the liturgy of the Church of England. On the 20th of March, 1709, Governor Ingoldsby issued the following order or license empowering the inhabitants to erect a new church.

By ye Honorable Richard Ingoldsby, Esq., her majesties Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-chief of ye province of New York and New Jersey, To ye Rev. Mr. Daniel Bondet minister, Captain Oliver Bessley, Mr. Isaac Valteau, Doctor John Neuille, Joseph le Villian, and ye other inhabitants of ye town of New Rochelle, in ye county of Westchester, communicants of ye Church of England, as by law established, greeting :

<sup>a</sup> Mass. Hist. Coll. 3rd Series, vol. iv., 61, Appendix.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. Propagat. Soc. by Dr. Humphreys, p. 207.

<sup>c</sup> Beza, one of the most powerful advocates for the Huguenots, wrote to some of them who were discontented in England, conjuring them by all that was good and sacred not to forsake the communion of the Church of England, for such indifferent rites and ceremonies as were there imposed upon them. Beza, Ep. xii., p. 105. Calvin, the founder of the French Churches, passes an anathema upon those who forsake the communion of orthodox bishops where they are to be had. Calvin de Necessit. Reform. Eccles. tom. xiii., p. 60. See Beza Resp. ad Sarar. cap. xviii.

Whereas, I am informed of your pious design to build a church for the worship and service of God, according to ye form and manner prescribed by the liturgy of the church of England, and have been applied to for lycense to erect it on ye public street. I have thought fitt, and do hereby give leave and lycense to you to erect such building in such convenient place of ye said street, as you shall think most proper, provided ye breadth of such church do not exceed *thirty foot*. And further I do authorize and empower you to receive and collect such sums of money and other help as charitable people shall be disposd to contribute to the good work. Given under my hand and seal at New York, this 20th day of March, 1709, and of her majesties reign ye ninth year.<sup>a</sup>

RICHARD INGOLDSBY.



Huguenot Church, New Rochelle, erected A. D. 1710. This new church erected in 1710-11, stood a little east of the present Episcopal church, (at the entrance of the lane leading to Mr. Elias Guion's residence.) The building which was constructed of stone, formed nearly a square, being perfectly plain within and without.<sup>b</sup> The foundation stone was laid by Governor Hunter; and, so anxious were all to contribute something towards its completion, that even females carried stones in their hands, and mortar in their aprons to complete the sacred work.<sup>c</sup>

The new church may have been re-modelled after the ancient Huguenot church of old La Rochelle, which appears to have been destroyed by fire in 1687. On Corpus Christi day, just two years before, the Huguenots themselves, purchased the present township. Jurieu, a minister of the Reformed church, in one of his pastoral letters, addressed to the "Protestants of France groaning under the Babylonish captivity, refers to this event, which he evidently considers a remarkable interposition of God

<sup>a</sup> 1 Co. Rec. Lib. D. 72.

<sup>b</sup> The first child baptised in this church was Sovereign Betts.

<sup>c</sup> Upon the departure from France, the Huguenot ladies concealed their small bibles beneath their high dressed hair. One of these bibles is still in the possession of Mrs. Sevooss, New Rochelle.

in their behalf. "It is nothing less notorious, (he observes) than the burning of the great church of Old La Rochelle. This church was formerly the great Church of the Reformed: they (the Romanists) took it away from them, after the siege and taking of the city. Every one knows that the day in which the inhabitants made a bonfire, the fire took hold of this large and fair church, none knows how, nor where: and that it was consumed, the lead melted, and all the vaults burned, without being able to quench it.

There is something singular in the event, the day, and the occasion, and 'tis impossible not to see the finger of God therein."<sup>a</sup>

In the year 1711-12, the Venerable Propagation Society, presented to Mr. Daniel Bondet, for the use of the inhabitants of New Rochelle, (who, under the influential ministry of the Rev. Mr. Bondet, have built them a *new church of stone*, for the worship of God, and are, many of them, reconciled to the usage of the Church of England) 100 French prayer books of the smaller sort, and 20 of larger impression. In consideration of the great learning and piety of Monsieur Bondet, at New Rochelle, and his long and faithful discharge of his office, they have augmented his salary from £30 to £50 per annum.

Another supply of 100 prayer books in French, occurs in 1713, to the Rev. Monsieur Bondet, minister of the Reformed congregation at New Rochelle. Upon this, he remarks, "the books came very seasonably, and is much to the comfort of that people, as to engage their thanks to the society, for their charity in the care of them, when their enemies reported they were derelicted."

The same year the society forwarded to the Rev. Daniel Bondet, "minister of the French Calvinistic congregation at New Rochelle, £10, in consideration of his diligence and care in performing English service every third Sunday, for the edification of the French youth who have learnt so much of that language as to join with him therein."

Upon the 7th of February, 1714, Queen Anne was pleased to grant and confirm the new church or chapel, and the ground

---

<sup>a</sup> Jurieu's Pastoral Letters, p. 593.

whereon it stood, to the ministers and members in the following manner:—

“ Anne, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c. &c., to all whom these presents may come or in any wise concerne, sendeth greeting : Whereas, the inhabitants of New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester, &c., with the leave and lycense of our trusty and well beloved Robert Hunter, Esq., Captain General and Governor-in-chief of our province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, and Vice-Admiral of the same, have, by the voluntary contributions of well disposed Christians, erected and built in the High street of the said town of New Rochelle—to wit., on the north side thereof, a Church or Chapel for the worship and service of Almighty God, according to the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England as by law established ; and whereas Daniel Bondet, now minister at New Rochelle aforesaid, Isaias Vallean, Oliver Besley, Peter Vallean, Elie Debonrepos, in behalf of themselves and other the inhabitants of New Rochelle aforesaid, of the Communion of the Church of England, by their petition, presented to our trusty and well beloved Robert Hunter, Esq., Captain General and Governor-in-chief as aforesaid in Council, have prayed our grant and confirmation of the said Church or Chapel, and ground whereon the same is erected and built, to and for the use and service aforesaid, the which petition wee being willing to grant—*Know ye*, that of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, we have given, granted, released, ratified, and confirmed, and by these presents for ourselves, our heirs and successors, do give, grant, release and confirm unto the said Daniel Bondet, Isaias Vallean, Oliver Besley, Peter Vallean, and Elias Debonrepos, and to their heirs and assignees, all that the Church or Chapel aforesaid, and all and singular the ground whereon the same now stands, being 40 feet in length and 30 feet in breadth ; the which said Church or Chapel and ground is situate, standing and being in the north side of the High street of the said town of New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester aforesaid, between the dwelling house of Johannes Le Conte and Zachary Anjouvaine, together with all and singular the ways, easements, emoluments, profits, benefitts, priviledges, libertyes, advantages, hereditaments, appurtenances whatsoever to the same belonging, or in any wise of right appertaining, and all our state, right, title, interest, benefits, advantages, claime and demand whatsoever, of, in, or to the said Church or Chappel, ground and premises, with the appurtenances or any part or parcel thereof, and the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders thereof, to have and to hold the said church or chappel ground and premises with the appurtenances hereby granted, released, and confirmed, or meant, mentioned, or intended to be hereby granted, released, and confirmed, unto the said Daniel Bondet, Isaias Vallean, Oliver Besly, Peter Vallean and Elie Debonrepos, their heirs and assignees, for ever, to the only proper use and behoof of them, the said Daniel Bondet, Isaias Vallean, Oliver Besley,

Peter Valleau, and Elie Debonrepos, their heirs and assignees, for ever, in trust nevertheless and to the intent the aforesaid church or chappel with the appurtenances may and shall forever hereafter, continue, remain, and be unto all and singular the inhabitants, residents of the said town of New Rochelle for the time being, of the communion of the church of England, a free church or chappel for the performing of the worship and services of Almighty God, according to the rites and ceremonies of the church of England, as by law established, to and for no other service, use, intent, or purpose whatsoever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage, as of our manor of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, within our kingdom of Great Britain, yielding and paying therefor yearly and every year from henceforth, unto us, our heirs and successors, at or upon the feast of the Nativity of our Lord, commonly called Christmas, the yearly rent of one pepper corne only, (if the same shall be lawfully demanded,) in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services, and demands whatsoever, provided nevertheless that nothing herein contained shall be construed, deemed, or taken in any manner to exempt the said inhabitants of the town of New Rochelle aforesaid, or any of them, of and from the payment of any rate, sum or summes of money now due or hereafter to be due from them or any of them to the parish church of Westchester, in the county aforesaid, or for or in respect thereof, or of and from the performances or execution of any parochial office or duty in the same parish, or to prejudice, or in giving any the rights, privileges, emoluments and authorities of the present rector of the said parish church of Westchester, aforesaid, or the rector of the same parish church for the time being, but that the same shall and may continue, remaine and be as fully and amply to all intents and purposes whatsoever as the same now are, and as if this present grant had never been made, anything herein before containd to the contrary thereof in any wise notwithstanding. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent, and the seale of our said province of New York to our said letters patent to be affixed to the same, to be recorded in ye secretary's office of our said province. Witness our trusty and well beloved Robert Hunter, Esq., captain-general and governor-in-chief in and over our province of New York aforesaid, and territories depending thereon in America, and vice-admiral of the same, and in council at our fort at New York aforesaid, the seventh day of February, in the tenth year of our reign, and in the year of our Lord God, 1714."<sup>a</sup>

About this period "the town gave a house and three acres of land adjoining the church, for the use of the clergyman forever."<sup>b</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. fol. viii. 1, 2, 3.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. Not. of Col. Church, by Ernest Hawkins D. D. p. 282.

During the year 1714 Mr. Bondet took charge of the River Indians.<sup>a</sup>

“In 1715 Mr. Bondet’s congregation at New Rochelle has a comfortable number of communicants, and meets for service not only on Lord’s days, but all other occasions appointed by the church.”<sup>b</sup>

The Rev. Daniel Bondet died in 1721, having been twenty years minister of this church. As he lived greatly beloved, he died no less lamented; his will bears date 21th of March, 172 $\frac{1}{2}$ . In this document he styles himself “minister of the gospel of New Rochelle.” To Betty Cantine he bequeathes all his ready money, plate, jewels, ring and household furniture; and to the use of the French church in New Rochelle, all his books consisting of 400 volumes.<sup>c</sup>

During the interval between the death of Mr. Bondet and the appointment of his successor, services appear to have been performed by the Rev. John Bartow, Rector of the parish of Westchester, who received £10 for such extra service.

Mr. Bondet was succeeded in 1722 by the Rev. Pierre Stoupepe.<sup>d</sup>

This gentleman proved very acceptable because he could preach in French, which language only most of the people understood.

In 1724 the elders, or anciens (as they are sometimes styled,) of the French church, were Isaac Quantein and Isaac Guion.

Mr. Stoupepe writing to the Propagation Society, in 1726, thus describes the state of the church. “I have baptized 6 grown negroes, 7 negro children, fitted 8 young people for the sacrament, and my communicants at Easter numbered 33.”

In 1730 he acquaints the society that the French and English prayer books sent him have been of great use, the number of his communicants increases, and in the course of six months he had baptized 15 white children and 3 colored. In the report for the year

<sup>a</sup> These were the Mohegan Indians. Report of Propagation Soc.

<sup>b</sup> Report of Pro. Soc.

<sup>c</sup> Surrogate’s office N. Y. No. viii. 332. Miss. of Col. Ch. 282.

<sup>d</sup> Mr. Stoupepe, minister of the French church in London, was sent out to Geneva to negotiate on affairs relating to the French Protestants. Thurloe, ii. 246. This individual was probably the father of the Rev. Pierre Stoupepe.

1733 he writes that he has 35 communicants, baptized 3 white children, and has always a good number of hearers, and when service is performed in English ; the congregation is so numerous of late that the people scarce can sit, and not only the English but the Dutch also of that town have applied to him for the baptism of their children. November 16, 1736, he reports, "that his church continues in a prosperous condition, and that the people do regularly attend the church at all seasons." In 1743 he laments the death of several worthy communicants.

This year we find the congregation addressing the Venerable Propagation Society on behalf of their minister as follows :

*New Rochelle, June 1st, 1743.*

DR. BEARCROFT,

*Reverend Sir.*—Our minister, ye bearer hereof, having communicated to us his letter to you of ye month of Oct. 1742, wherein he expressed a desire of revisiting his native country, and asked ye Hon'ble Society's leave for that purpose ; we took that declaration as if he had resolved to leave us altogether and to serve our church no longer ; and therefore made bold to address ourselves unto ye Hon'ble Society for providing us with another, that we might not remain destitute.

But hearing now from his own mouth that he designs to go no further than London, and is willing to return, with ye Hon'ble Society's permission, for the service of our church : we therefore upon this consideration take ye liberty to declare and acquaint you that our said minister, since his first coming, has constantly resided among us, preaching (as directed by ye Hon'ble Society,) two Sundays in French and one in English, much to our satisfaction and edification, his doctrine being very sound, and his pronunciation full, clear, and intelligible—upon which account we could have wished that he had finished his days among us without interruption, and we expected nothing else ; but as it happens, a strong desire to hear from his relatives has prevailed with him to take a journey for Europe. However, seeing he now explains his mind, and promises to return among us, we beg of the Hon'ble Society that they would accordingly be pleased to send him again to us, by the first and next opportunity. But if, contrary to our expectation, it should fall out otherwise, we repeat our former petition, and beg leave to entreat ye Hon'ble Society not to leave us destitute, but to continue to us their charity in providing us with another in his room, as in their great wisdom and goodness they shall think fit.

Such is ye prayer of us underwritten members of NEW ROCHELLE church, who are with great respect,

Reverend sir,

Ye most obedient humble servants,

And in ye name of all,

Jean Soulice,

Jean Angevin,



Peter Bonnet,  
 Gille Lieure,  
 Peter Sicard,  
 John Badeau,  
 Aman Guion,  
 Isaac Guion, jr.  
 Barnard Rynlander,  
 Philip Jacob Rhinlander,  
 Joseph Donaldson,  
 Jonas Spock,  
 Daniel Cicart,  
 Isaac Sicard,  
     his  
 Paul ✕ Sicard,  
     mark.  
 Jacque Pureot,  
 Isaac Guion,  
 Jaines de Blez,  
 Marsil Ne Fuelle,  
 Josias Le Conte,  
 Jean Sicard,  
 Jaques Bonnet,  
 Jean Bonnet,  
 William Rhinlander,  
 Jaque Flandreau,  
     her  
 La Veuve ✕ Jean Juin,  
     mark.  
 Anne Palmer,  
 Mary Anne Palmer,  
 Johann Pieter Ritter,  
     his  
 Samuel ✕ Bernard,  
     mark.

Jacques P. Sicard,  
 Aleda Bolbt,  
 Peter Bertain,  
 J'Anne ne a Fuille,  
 Robert Livingston,  
 Abm. Bancker, jr.  
 Abrm. Guion,  
 Daniel Angevin,  
     his  
 Trustum ✕ Soby,  
     mark.  
 Catherine Angevin,  
 Ambroise A. Sicard,  
 Daniel Giraud,  
 Daniel Giraud, jr.  
 John More,  
     his  
 Frederick ✕ Selurman,  
     mark.  
 Michael Croesny,  
 Jean Parcot,  
 Isaac Coutant,  
 John Allee,  
 John Flandreau,  
 Isaac Daas  
 William Rodman,  
 Jam. Bertain,  
 Jaque Sicard.  
 John Chadeayne,  
 Gideon Florance,  
 Daniel Sicard,  
 Guillaume Landrim  
 Janne Bonnin,  
 Oliver Besly.

In 1743, Aman Guion granted "to Isaac Guion and John Soulice, churchwardens or elders, and their successors for the use of the minister and communicants of the French church in New Rochelle aforesaid, as is herein settled according to the rules and form of the Church of England, as by law established, a small tract of land containing one acre and three-quarters, more or less, which is now in the possession of the Rev. Peter

Stoupe, now minister of the aforesaid church, bounded northerly by burying place, easterly by the land of Aman Guion, or a lane or road, southerly by the land that formerly belonged to De Bonreppas, and westerly, by the land of William le Count, for the use of the French minister and communicants of the French Church, &c.”<sup>a</sup>

June 16th. Mr. Stoupe reports to the society, that the church continues in a good state, and that he officiates to numerous congregations, both of English and French. The number of communicants had increased to 80. He had baptized in the preceding year, 34 white and 6 colored children.

In the report for the year 1758, occurs the following passage: “Since the war broke out, (French war) great alterations have taken place in the congregation, by which I have lost many members. This is caused by removals, and enlisting in the King’s service.”

Dr. Barclay in a letter dated Sept. 3, 1760, encloses an address to the Propagation Society, from the Church of New Rochelle,<sup>b</sup> wherein they acquaint that body with the death of the Rev. Pierre Stoupe, who for 37 years had been the society’s missionary. He was a simple minded conscientious man, (says Dr. Hawkins in his *Early Colonial Missions*) who continued for seven and thirty years, faithfully to discharge the duties of his mission. During this long incumbency, the number of communicants had been raised from thirty-three to eighty.<sup>c</sup>

His remains are deposited with those of Magdalene Stoupe, (his wife) under the site of the old French Church. Here also repose the mortal remains of the Rev. Daniel Bondet. The same year in which Mr Stoupe died, (1760) the Rev. Michael Houdin, of Trenton, N. J. was, at the request of the congregation, and his own desire, appointed their minister. This gentleman had “formerly been the superior of a convent in Canada,” and was “received into communion with the Church of England, in

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> The address appears to have been drawn up on the 30th of Oct. 1760.

<sup>c</sup> Hist. Not. of the Miss. of the Ch., by Ernest Hawkins, D. D. 282.

1749," being well testified of by various clergymen. He was appointed missionary of Trenton, in 1753.<sup>a</sup>

During the incumbency of the Rev. Michael Houdin, Trinity Church received her first charter from King George the third, under which the present corporation of this church, still enjoys its trust and exercises its powers.

The old charter was exemplified by his Excellency, George Clinton, first Governor of the state in 1793, after the following manner :

### CHARTER OF TRINITY CHURCH.

*The people of the state of New York*, by the grace of God, free and independent.

To all to whom these presents shall come, greeting. *Know ye*, that we having inspected the records remaining in our secretary's office do find there recorded, certain letters patent in the words and figures following, to wit : " George the Third, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith and so forth. To all to whom these presents shall come, greeting, whereas, our loving subjects Michel Houdin, Jacob Bleecker, James de Blez, David Lispenard, Isaac Guion, Elias Guion, Isaac Guion Junior, Peter Bertain, John Soulice, Paul Secord, Lidia Secord, Jean Abby, Joseph Antuny, Content Antuny, Peter Bonnet, Mary Bonnet, Peter Parquot, Daniel Sulis, Benjamin Seacord, Abraham Seacord, Elizabeth Parquot, Jane Seacord, Mary Seacord, Peter Guion, Abigail Bleecker, Judith Leconet, Allida Guion, Catharine Bertain, Mary Bertine, Peter Bertain, jun. Josiah Le Conte, David Guion, Elizabeth Lispenard, Judith Bertain, Moses de St. Croix, Marie de Sain Croix, Deborah Foulon, Mary Guion, Marie Neufville, Mary Stoupe, Marthe de Blez, Rachel Guion, Jan Nicolle, Arquez, Ante Nicolle, Thomas Guion, John Bryan, Oliver Besley, Isaac Besley, Cornelia Besley, Frederick King, Benjamin Guion, Esaie Guion, Elizabeth Guion, Elizabeth Guion, Susanna Landrin, Dina Guion, Anne Danielson, John Houdin, Catharine Houdin, Kitty Houdin, Elizabeth Houdin, Rutger Bleecker, Sarah Bleecker, Mary Rodman, Hester Leconte, Agnis Donaldson, Daniel Secord, Francis le Conte, Judith Le Conte, Abraham Guion, Mary Angevine, Esther Angevine, Joshua Solis, Thomas Steel, Jane Contine, Susanna Contine, Jane Mauraux, Jonathan Seicord, Esther Le Conte, Sarah Secord, James Pine, Susannah Soulis, Jane Guion, Ester Soulis, Magdalene Soulis, John Bonnet, Mary Bonnet, Daniel Bonnet, Mary Bonnet, James Besley, Ed-

---

<sup>a</sup> Hist. Not. of Miss. 150.

ward Smith and James McCurers, inhabitants of the township of New Rochelle in Westchester county, by the humble petition presented to our trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esquire, our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-chief of our province of New York, and the territories depending thereon, in America, in council on the twelfth day of May last past, did set forth that they the petitioners are members of the French church at New Rochelle aforesaid, and principally descendants from French Protestants, who fled from the religious persecution in France, in the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-one, and shortly thereafter settled a tract of six thousand acres of land now known by the name of the township of New Rochelle, which was granted to Jacob Leisler, from whom the petitioners' said ancestors purchased by John Pell, then proprietor of the manor of Pelham, in the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-nine. That the said John Pell at the same time, did also give and grant to the said Jacob Leisler, the further quantity of one hundred acres of land for the use of the French church erected or to be erected by the inhabitants of the said tract of land or township, or by their assigns; that the petitioners' ancestors had long since built a decent church within the said township, and dedicated the same to the service of Almighty God, and that they and the petitioners had enjoyed the same with the said tract of one hundred acres of land, as a glebe thereto to that day.

That on the twelfth day of June, in the year of the Lord one thousand seven hundred and nine, all the then inhabitants of the said township who were members of the said French Church, excepting two, unanimously agreed and consented to conform themselves, in the religious worship of their said Church, to the liturgy and rites of the Church of England as established by law, and by a solemn act or agreement did submit to, and put themselves under the protection of the same; that fourteen years before, and ever since such conformity, their respective ministers and pastors have been invested with holy orders by episcopal ordination, and had received their principal support from the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts; and that divine service, since the said conformity, had constantly been performed in their said church, agreeable to the rites and liturgy of the Church of England as by law established—two Sundays out of three in the French tongue, and every third Sunday in English—for the instruction of such of the inhabitants as frequented the said church and were ignorant of the French language; and the petitioners did further set forth, that their said church was then greatly decayed and out of repair, and their minister or pastor but indifferently provided for; and that, although they were sincerely disposed to make a suitable provision for both, yet they could not accomplish this good design, unless, by being incorporated, they should become enabled to receive, apply, and improve the donations and contributions that might be collected among themselves, and given for these purposes by other pious and charitable people. The petitioners, therefore, most humbly prayed our royal charter, confirming to them the said church and the lands and other rights thereunto appertaining, and also creating and constituting them

and the rest of the members of the said church a body politic and corporate for the managing and conducting the affairs and interests of the said church, with such powers, privileges and immunities as should appear fit and reasonable : which petition having been then and there read and considered of, our said Council did afterwards, on the same day, humbly advise our said lieutenant governor and commander-in-chief to grant the prayer thereof. Wherefore we being graciously disposed to encourage and promote the pious intentions of our said subjects, and to grant this their reasonable request, *Know Ye*, that we of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, have made, ordained, constituted, granted and declared, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, do make, ordain, constitute, grant and declare, that the said petitioners and the rest of the members in communion with the said French church at New Rochelle aforesaid, being the most ancient French church now there, and known by the name of Trinity Church, be, and they and their successors, the minister and members in communion with the said French church at New Rochelle aforesaid for that time, shall be, from time to time, and at all times forever hereafter, a body politic and corporate in deed, fact and name, by the name and style of the Minister and Members of Trinity Church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester, and them and their successors, the minister and members in communion with the said church at New Rochelle aforesaid, for the time being by the name of the Minister and Members of Trinity Church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester, one body politic and corporate in deed, fact and name, really and fully, we do for us, our heirs and successors, erect, make, constitute, declare and create by these presents, and that, by the same name, they and their successors, the minister and members in communion with the said church at New Rochelle aforesaid, for the time being shall and may have perpetual succession, and shall and may be responsible and capable in the law to sue and be sued, to plead and be impleaded, to answer and be answered unto, and to defend and be defended, in all courts and elsewhere, in all and singular suits, causes, quarrels, matters, actions, demands and things of what nature and kind soever ; and also, that they and their successors by the same name be, and shall be forever hereafter capable and able, in the law, to take, accept of, and acquire and purchase, receive, have, hold and enjoy in fee, forever or for life or lives, or for years, or in any other manner, any messuages, buildings, houses, lands, tenements, hereditaments and real estate, and the same to lease or demise for one or more years, or for life or lives, or to grant, alien, bargain, sell and dispose of in fee simple, and also to accept of, take, purchase and possess any goods, chattels or personal estate, and the same to have, let, sell or dispose of at their will and pleasure, and all this as fully as any other corporation or body politic within that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or in our province of New York, may lawfully do, *provided* that such messuages and real estate as they for their successors shall have or may be entitled unto, shall not at any one time exceed the yearly rent of five hundred pounds over and above the said church

and the ground on which the same stands ; and, further, we do will and ordain, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, declare and appoint, that for the better ordaining and managing the business and affairs of the said corporation, there shall be one minister of the Church of England as by law established, duly qualified for the care of souls, two church wardens and six vestrymen, from time to time constituted, elected, and chosen for the said church in manner and form as is hereafter in these presents expressed ; which minister and church wardens, or any two of them, together with the vestrymen, or the major part of them, for the time being shall have, and are hereby invested with full power and authority to dispose, order and govern the business and affairs of, and concerning the said church, and all such lands, tenements, hereditaments, real and personal estate as shall or may be purchased or acquired for the use thereof as aforesaid ; and, further, we do will and grant, that the said minister and members of Trinity Church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester, and their successors, shall and may forever hereafter have a common seal to serve and use, for all matters, causes and affairs whatsoever of them and their successors, and full power and authority to break, alter, change and new make the same, or any other common seal, from time to time, at their will and pleasure, as they shall think fit ; and for the better execution of our royal will and pleasure herein, we do assign, constitute and appoint the said Jacob Bleecker and James de Blez to be the present church wardens, and the said David Lispenard, Isaac Guion, Elias Guion, Isaac Guion, junior, Peter Bertain and John Soulice, to be the present vestrymen of the said church,—to hold and enjoy their several offices until the first Tuesday in Easter week next ensuing and no longer. And further our will and pleasure is and we do for us, our heirs and successors, establish, appoint and direct, that on the said first Tuesday in Easter week next ensuing, and once in every year forever thereafter on Tuesday in Easter week in every year, at the said church, the members in communion with the same church for the time being or the major part of them, then and there assembled, shall elect, choose, and appoint two of their members to be churchwardens and six other of their members to be vestrymen of their said church for the ensuing year, which churchwardens and vestrymen, so to be chosen and appointed, shall immediately enter upon their respective offices, and hold and exercise the same for and during the term of one whole year from the time of such election respectively, and until other fit persons shall be elected in their respective places. And we do ordain and declare that as well the churchwardens and vestrymen by these presents nominated and constituted, as such as shall from time to time hereafter be elected and appointed, shall have, and they are hereby invested with full power and authority to execute and perform their several and respective offices, in as full and ample manner as any churchwardens or vestrymen in that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or in our province of New York, have or lawfully may or can do, and if it shall happen that any or either of the churchwardens or vestrymen by these presents

named and appointed, or hereafter to be elected and chosen, shall die or remove, or refuse or neglect to officiate in the said respective offices before their or either of their appointed time of service therein be expired, then and in every such case it shall and may be lawful to and for the said minister and members in communion with said church at New Rochelle aforesaid, for the time being, or the major part of such of them as shall assemble together for that purpose at the said church, at some day within a month next after such death, removal, refusal or neglect, to be appointed by the minister and churchwardens for the time being, or any two of them, to proceed in manner aforesaid, and make a new election and appointment of one or more of their members for the time being, to supply the room or place of such person or persons so dying, removing, refusing or neglecting to act in his and their respective office and offices as aforesaid, and so as often as shall be needful and requisite. And for the due and orderly conducting and carrying on the respective election of churchwardens and vestrymen by these presents established and ordained, our will and pleasure is, and We do declare and direct that the minister of the said church for the time being, shall give public notice thereof from time to time, as they may become necessary, and are hereby appointed, by publishing the same at the said church immediately after divine service on the Sunday next preceding the day appointed for such elections. And furthermore We do will, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, ordain, appoint and direct that the minister and churchwardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall and may from time to time, upon all occasions assemble and call together the said minister, churchwardens and vestrymen for the time being, or the greater number of them, the said vestrymen; which said minister and churchwardens, or any two of them, together with the said vestrymen, or the major part of them, shall be and by these presents are authorized and empowered to consult, advise and consider, and by a majority of voices to do, direct, manage, transact and carry on the interests, business and affairs of the said church, and to hold vestries for that purpose. And We do further give and grant unto the said minister and members of Trinity Church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and to their successors forever, that the minister and churchwardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, together with the vestrymen of the said church for the time being, or the major part of them in vestry assembled, shall have full power and authority from time to time, and at all times hereafter to make, ordain and constitute such rules, orders and ordinances for the good discipline and government of the members of said church and corporation and interests thereof, as they, or the major part of them, shall think fit and necessary, so as such rules, orders and ordinances be not repugnant to the laws of that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or our province of New York, or the present or future canons of the Church of England, as by law established, but as near as may be agreeable thereto, which rules, orders and ordinances shall be from time to time

fairly entered in a book or books to be kept for that purpose. And further our will and pleasure is that it shall and may be lawful for the minister and churchwardens of the said church, or any two of them, and the said vestrymen, or the major part of them, at a vestry to nominate and appoint a clerk and a sexton or bell-ringer for the said church, and also a clerk and messenger to serve the said vestry at their meetings, and such other under officers as they shall stand in need of, to remain in their respective offices so long as the said minister, churchwardens and vestrymen for the time being, or the major part of them, shall think fit and appoint. And further We do for us, our heirs and successors, declare and grant that the patronage, advowson, donation or presentation of and to the said church shall appertain and belong to, and is hereby vested in, the churchwardens and vestrymen of the said church for the time being, and their successors for ever or the major part of them, whereof one churchwarden shall always be one; provided always, that whenever the said church becomes vacant, such donation and presentation shall be made within six months thereafter. And that on every lapse or default herein, the right of such donation and representation shall be in us, our heirs and successors; and further know ye, that we of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto the said minister and members of Trinity Church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and their successors for ever, all that the said church and ground on which the same stands, and the cemetery belonging to the same, and also all that the before mentioned tract of one hundred acres of land situated and being within the township of New Rochelle aforesaid, so by the beforementioned John Pell formerly given and granted to the aforesaid Jacob Leisler for the use of the French church erected or then to be erected by the inhabitants of the township of New Rochelle or by their assigns as herein before is recited and set forth, together with the hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging or appertaining, to have and to hold all and singular the premises aforesaid, with the appurtenances unto them, the said minister and members of Trinity Church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and their successors, to their only proper use and behoof forever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage, as of our manor of East Greenwich in the county of Kent, within that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, yielding, rendering, and paying therefor unto us, our heirs and successors, yearly and every year forever, on the feast day of the Annunciation of the blessed Virgin Mary, at our city of New York, unto our or their receiver-general there, for the time being, the annual rent of one pepper corn, if demanded, in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services, claims, and demands whatsoever, for the premises. And lastly, we do, for us, our heirs and successors, ordain and grant unto the said minister and members of Trinity Church at New Rochelle in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and their



successors, by these presents that this our grant shall be firm, good, effectual, and available in all things in the law, to all intents, constructions, and purposes whatsoever, according to our true intent and meaning herein before declared, and shall be construed, reputed and adjudged in all cases and causes most favorably on the behalf and for the best benefit and advantage of the said minister and members of Trinity Church at New Rochelle in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and their successors, although express mention of the yearly value, or certainty of the premises, or any of them, in these presents is or are not made, any matter, cause, or thing to the contrary hereof in any wise notwithstanding. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent, and the great seal of our said province of New York to be hereunto affixed, and the same to be entered on record in our secretary's office of our said province, in one of the books of patents there remaining. Witness our said trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esquire, our lieutenant governor and commander-in-chief of our province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, at our Fort George in our city of New York, the second day of June, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and sixty-two, and of our reign the second." All which we have exemplified by these presents. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent and the great seal of our said state to be hereunto affixed. Witness our trusty and well beloved George Clinton, Esquire, governor of our said state, general and commander-in-chief of all the militia and admiral of the navy of the same, at our city of New York, the fourteenth day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and ninety-three, and in the seventeenth year of our independence.

From 1768 to 1770 nothing worthy of especial note occurred in the history of this church.<sup>a</sup>

In 1770 services were performed here by the Rev. Samuel Seabury, rector of the parish of Westchester.<sup>b</sup> During the American revolution the church must have been closed, for the congregation was much scattered.

Shortly after the treaty of peace the church was again organized under Mr. Theodosius Bartow as a lay reader. Mr. Bartow continued his services in this capacity until January 27, 1790, when he was admitted to deacons' orders by Bishop Provoost.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> For the immediate successors of Michael Houdin see catalogue of ministers.

<sup>b</sup> Propagat. Soc. Rep.

<sup>c</sup> Mr. Bartow was ordained priest October, 1790. The salary at this period amounted to £30 per annum, and appears to have been paid for many years by Lewis Pintard, Esq.

A definite invitation appears to have been given to Mr. Bartow soon after his ordination, by which he became minister of the parish.<sup>a</sup> The church having been without a minister fourteen years. Occasional services, however, may have been held during that time. The following memorandum is preserved among the Guion papers, entitled

“Memorandum of the collection in the church by Peter Shute. The *first* collection was May 17th, 1792.”<sup>b</sup>

May 17, collected	\$1½
May 24, “	12 6

Mr. Bartow continued minister of the church until June, 1819, when he resigned the office. His long service of more than thirty years, is still cherished with grateful remembrance.<sup>c</sup> Mr. Bartow's remains repose in the grave-yard on the west side of the church.

The Rev. Lewis P. Bayard was elected minister of the parish, August, 1821, and resigned in 1825.<sup>d</sup> “It is but a short time since that he rested from his labors, having died at the Island of Malta, on his return from the Holy Land, September 2d, 1840.”<sup>e</sup> During the incumbency of Mr. Bayard, the present church edifice was erected (in 1824) on the site of the first Huguenot church, and consecrated the same year by the Right Rev. John Croes, Bishop of New Jersey, in the absence of the lamented Hobart, then on a visit to England.

In 1846 the present edifice was considerably enlarged and improved. The tower contains the original bell, presented by Sir

<sup>a</sup> The official title under which the incumbent is recognized in the charter.

<sup>b</sup> Elias Guion's papers.

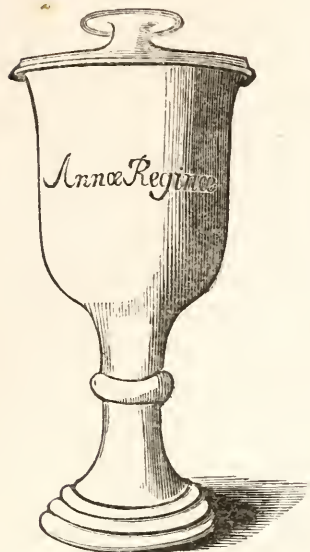
<sup>c</sup> Mr. Bartow was the son of Theophilus Bartow by his wife Bathsheba Pell, and grandson of John Bartow the Huguenot.

<sup>d</sup> Lewis Pintard Bayard was the son of the Hon. Samuel Bayard, of Philadelphia. His mother was the only daughter of Lewis Pintard, cousin of the late venerable John Pintard, L.L.D. Mr. Bayard's ancestors, both on the paternal and maternal line, were Huguenots.

<sup>e</sup> Matthew H. Henderson, rector of Trinity Church, Newark; centennial discourse.

Henry Ashurst, of London, to the French Church du St. Esprit of New York,<sup>a</sup> inscribed

“SAMUEL NEWTON MADE ME 1706.”



The Queen's Chalice and Paten,  
presented A.D. 1703.

The communion plate consists of a large chalice and paten, the gift of Queen Anne;<sup>b</sup> also two smaller chalices presented by a member of the Davenport family.

In the rear of the church is situated the old burying-ground, where lie, awaiting the resurrection of the just, many of the persecuted and exiled Huguenots.

The inscriptions on the earliest tombstones are wholly illegible.

†  
VOJJIE  
GOIPID  
Decr. 1750.

Here lies  
The body of  
André Ranoud,  
who departed this life  
on Friday, the 2d  
day of Decr.,  
A.D. 1753,  
aged 25 years.

NBG  
EG

There are also monuments in the yard to members of the Guion, Allaire and Secor families, &c.

The cemetery on the west side of the church contains a neat

<sup>a</sup> In 1823 it was ordered by the vestry of the Church du St. Esprit, that this bell, then in the care of St. Stephen's Church, New York, be presented for the use of the French Church, New Rochelle.

<sup>b</sup> The Queen also presented a Church bible, book of homilies, cloth for the pulpit and communion table.

marble monument, consisting of a base and pyramid, with the following inscription (surmounted by a medallion likeness of the deceased):—

To  
 WILLIAM LEGGETT,  
 the eloquent journalist,  
 whose genius, disinterestedness  
 and courage ennobled his profession—  
 who loved truth for its own sake,  
 and asserted it with most ardor  
 when weaker minds were most dismayed  
 with opposition ;  
 who could endure no form of tyranny,  
 and raised his voice against  
 all injustice,  
 on whomsoever committed,  
 and whoever were its authors.  
 THE DEMOCRATIC YOUNG MEN  
 of New York,  
 sorrowing that a career so glorious  
 should have closed so prematurely,  
 have erected this monument.

—  
 William Leggett,  
 born in New York, April 30, 1801,  
 died at New Rochelle,  
 May 29th, 1839.

The following is a catalogue of the ministers of this church from the year 1700 :—

MINISTERS OF THE FRENCH CHURCH, NEW ROCHELLE.

<i>Instit. or Call.</i>	<i>Ministers.</i>	<i>Vacated by.</i>
A.D. 1700,	Rev. Daniel Bondet, Clericus,	Death,
“ 1722,	“ Pierre Stoupe, Clericus,	do
“ 1760,	“ Michael Houdin, Clericus,	do
“ 1768,	“ ——— Sourenne, Clericus,	do
“ 1769	“ Andrew Nodine, Clericus,	resig.

A.D. 1772,	Rev. ——— Bevelet,	resig.
Jan'y, 1790,	“ Theodosius Bartow, Deacon,	do.
1820,	“ Revaud Kearney, Presb.,	do
Aug., 1821,	“ Lewis P. Bayard, Presb.,	do
“ 1826,	“ Lawson Carter, Presb.,	d
May, 1839,	“ Thomas W. Coit, D. D., present incumbent.	

The first anciens or elders of the church appear to have been Thauvet Ecottonneau, Tmacher Theroude, Guillaume Le Count, and Daniel Strang in 1693; first wardens, Jacob Bleecker and James de Blez, in 1762. The delegates to the first diocesan convention were Andrew Fowler and Theodosius Bartow.

*Notitia Parochialis.*

1723	Communicants	23	Baptisms	13
1732	do	35	do	3
1756	do	80	do	40
1804	do	18	do	5
1819	do	27	do	13
1847	do	46	do	10

The baptismal register of the church commences in 1724.

Ce Dimanche 14 Mars, 1724<sup>a</sup>, a été baptisé sortie du service du matin, Peter fils de Thomas Wallis and Madelaine sa femme le Peter a été présenté au saint baptême par Denys Woertman and Elizabeth sa femme, Parrain et Marraine le dit Peter est ne le six du dit mois.”<sup>a</sup>

Thomas Wallis,

Pr. Stoupe,

Denis Woertman,

Isaac Quantein, ancien,

her

Elizabeth  $\bowtie$  Woertman,  
marque.

Isaac Guion, ancien.

To this church is attached a valuable glebe and parsonage. A few rods west of the Episcopal church is situated the residence of the late Frederick Guion, at present occupied by his son-in-

---

<sup>a</sup> The original manuscript is in the possession of William Lawton, of New Rochelle.

law, William Lawton, Esq. This property was originally purchased by Louis Guion in 1691. Upon the 8th of October, 1725, we find Louis Guion, sen., conveying to Aman Guion 64 acres of land in that part of the manor of Pelham called New Rochelle. Louis, the ancestor of the Guion family of New Rochelle, emigrated from England about 1687, having fled from La Rochelle in 1681.<sup>a</sup> The old family residence stands a little to the west of Mr. Lawton's. Louis Guion had one son Louis, the father of three sons—first, Louis, grandfather of the late Frederick Guion; second, Isaac; and third, Aman, the grandfather of the present Elias Guion, of New Rochelle, who also resides on a portion of the old property.

In the immediate vicinity of this church are also the residences of E. W. Voris, M. D., Peter Moulton, M. D., and George Case, Esq. The latter gentleman was for some years a judge of the late Court of Common Pleas, in this county. His place was originally a portion of the Guion property. It has been laid out and ornamented with good taste; and on the walls of his house may be seen some original paintings, specimens of art not unworthy the notice of a connoisseur.

Near the western entrance of the village stands the Presbyterian church, a plain wooden edifice. The Presbyterian society claims succession from the original French church, gathered together soon after the settlement of the place in 1689. In this view they must represent some minority of the Huguenots, for in 1709 the majority conformed to the Church of England, according to the charter of Trinity Church which specifies, "That on the 12th day of June in the year of our Lord one thousand, seven hundred and nine, all the then inhabitants of the said township who were members of the said French church, excepting two, unanimously agreed and consented to conform themselves and the religious worship of their said church to the liturgy and rites of the Church of England as established by law,

---

<sup>a</sup> See letters of denization and pedigree. A branch of this family appears to have settled upon Staten Island at a very early period, for on the 13th of October, 1664, we find Governor Nicolls granting to Jacques Guion 200 acres, situated on that island. Of this family was John Guion, deputy mayor of New York in 1677.

and by a solemn act or agreement did submit to and put themselves under the protection of the same, that fourteen years before," (1695,) "and ever since such conformity their respective ministers and pastors have been invested with episcopal ordination, and had received their principal support from the Society for propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts," &c.<sup>a</sup>

Fourteen years after this conformity, we find Alexander Allaire conveying a certain lot of land lying in the town of New Rochelle unto the members of the *French Protestant congregation*, in the following manner :

To all Christian people unto whom these presents shall or may come, Alexander Allaire of New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester, in the province of New York, sendeth greeting in our Lord God everlasting: Know ye, that he the said Alexander Allaire, for and in consideration of the love and affection which he hath and beareth unto his brethren in Jesus Christ, Isaac Mercier, Daniel Samson and Zachary Angevin and other the members of the French Protestant congregation gathered together at New Rochelle aforesaid, according to the discipline and church government heretofore established and exercised in the Protestant Church of France, before their late persecution and destruction in that kingdom, hath granted, released, and confirmed, &c., &c., unto the said Isaac Mercier, Daniel Samson, and Zachary Angevin, all that certain lot or tuft of ground, situate, lying and being in the town of New Rochelle aforesaid, being butted and bounded by the road or highway from the corner of Chapron's land along the road one hundred and twenty foot, from thence northerly along the other land of the said Alexander Allaire seventy-five feet, and from thence along the line of Chapron's land sixty foot easterly, and from thence along the line of said land ninety foot, together with all and singular the edifices, buildings, liberties, &c., unto the said Isaac Mercier, Daniel Samson, Zachary Angevin, and their heirs for ever, for the only, sole and proper use, benefit, and behoof *for a public assembling place* for the worship of God, for the French Protestants inhabiting within the town of New Rochelle aforesaid, who exercise the discipline and church government according to the usages, orders, customs and directions heretofore used, practised, established and exercised in the Reformed Protestant Churches of the kingdom of France, before the last persecution and destruction of the same in the said kingdom of France, for ever, and to no other use and purpose whatsoever ; and in case these premises shall be applied to any other purpose, then

---

<sup>a</sup> See Charter of Trinity Church.

they shall immediately revert unto the said Alexander Allaire, his heirs and assignees for ever.

This 20th day of January, 1723-4.<sup>a</sup>

ALEXANDER ALLAIRE.

The above lot embraces the present Presbyterian grave-yard.<sup>b</sup> On or near this spot, the Reformed Protestant congregation of New Rochelle erected a church about 1724,<sup>c</sup> the pastor of which in 1754 was the Rev. Jean Carle. This we gather from the following document entitled

Certificate of Dismission given to Mr. Jean Carle, pastor of the Reformed French Church, New Rochelle, April 13, 1764.

*In the name of God, amen.*

Certificate given to Mr. Jean Carle, our pastor. We the undersigned elders and deacons who now compose the consistory of the Reformed French Church at New Rochelle, in the government of New York, in America, certify and declare that Mr. Jean Carle, minister of the holy gospel, has been our pastor during about ten years, that he has resided in this government; that we have been edified by his Christian and worthy walk as a minister of Jesus Christ the great Shepherd and Saviour of our souls, as well as by his preaching in which we have always found a doctrine, truly pure and evangelical, sound and edifying, and consequently, the only one which accompanied and aided by the grace of God is able to conduct our souls unto eternal life.

We add further, that we have seen with sincere regret the request which Mr. Jean Carle has made for his dismission from the Reformed French Church in New York with which we are connected, for we truly desired that he would finish his days with us, we being much edified by his ministry; but wishing to acquiesce, we join with sorrow our consent with that of our sister church, the Reformed French Church of New York, and accord

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. E. 358, 9. The original document is in the possession of Mr. Drake of New Rochelle.

<sup>b</sup> Information derived from the Allaire family.

<sup>c</sup> This edifice having fallen into decay, was removed in 1783 by John Guerri-neau, carpenter.



to Mr. Jean Carle his dismissal which he has requested. In consequence he has given us his farewell sermon, this Lord's day morning, April 15, 1764, we accompanying it with our own most sincere prayers, praying that God would take him under his mighty protection, conduct happily wherever his providence may call him, and bestow his blessing upon his person and his ministry, to the end that he may contribute effectually to the glory of our great God, and lead souls captive to the obedience of Jesus Christ. Done in consistory, and a true copy given to Mr. Jean Carle,<sup>a</sup> at New Rochelle, this 15th day of April, 1764.<sup>b</sup>

(Signed,)

Samuel P. Gillet.

Michel Honore.

Jean Badeau.

Jean Parcot.

From this time (1764) no record appears to have been made of the state or progress of the French Protestant congregation in New Rochelle, as a distinct body; probably about this period, such of its members as had not conformed to the Church of England, allied themselves to the Presbyterian form of worship, for in 1770, the Rev. Ichabod Lewis was ordained pastor of White Plains and *New Rochelle*, by the presbytery of Dutchess county.

Upon the 23d of February, 1808, the Presbyterian church was incorporated under the title of the "French Church in New Rochelle," Matson Smith, John Reed, Thomas Carpenter, Robert Givan, Gideon Coggleshall, and James Somerville, trustees.<sup>c</sup> A re-organization appears to have taken place "on the 30th of May, 1812, under the direction of a committee appointed by the presbytery of New York, consisting of the Rev. Walter

<sup>a</sup> Smith the historian, writing in 1757, observes, the present minister in the French Church in New York is Mr. Carle, a native of France, who succeeded Mr. Rou, in 1754. "He bears an irreproachable character, is very intent upon his studies, preaches moderate Calvinism, and speaks with propriety, both of pronunciation and gesture." Smith's Hist. N. Y. 194.

<sup>b</sup> Translated from the original manuscript by the Rev. Gorham D. Abbott, in 1837.

<sup>c</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 96.

King, Philip Milledolar, D. D., and Henry Rutgers, elder.”<sup>a</sup> The church edifice was raised in 1815 and dedicated the same year. The land on which it stands was the gift of Mr. George Pelor, 12th of May, 1814. In 1827 Samuel Bayard of the borough of Princeton, in the state of New Jersey, and the Rev. Lewis P. Bayard,<sup>b</sup> of the town of New Rochelle, trustees of Lewis Pintard deceased, conveyed to the “trustees of the Presbyterian church of the town of New Rochelle, *formerly known by the name of the French Church,*” a certain piece of land lying in the town of New Rochelle, beginning at a corner formed by the intersection of the lot of ground on which the Presbyterian church aforesaid is erected, and the old Boston road, &c.”<sup>c</sup>

A LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH OF  
NEW ROCHELLE.

Ministers.	Date of call.	Date of resig.
Rev. Ichabod Lewis,	from 1770,	to
Rev. Isaac Lewis,	“ April, 1815,	“ July, 1821.
Rev. Elijah D. Wells,	“ June, 1823,	“ June, 1825.
Rev. J. D. Wickham,	“ June, 1825,	“ June, 1828.
Rev. George Stebbings,	“ June, 1828,	“ Aug. 1835.
Rev. John Mason,	“ Nov. 1835,	“ Nov. 1837.
Rev. Gorham D. Abbott,	“ Nov. 1837,	“ Nov. 1845.
Rev. Charles Hawley,	“ Jan. 1845,	present pastor.

First elders, Dr. Matson Smith, }  
Mr. Robert Weir, } March, 1812.

<sup>a</sup> See Funeral Discourse on the death of Matson Smith, D. D., by the Rev. G. D. Abbott. See, also, Presbyterian Manual.

<sup>b</sup> The father of Lewis P. Bayard was the Hon. Samuel Bayard, a ruling elder in the Presbyterian church, and the author of a volume of letters on the Lord's supper.

<sup>c</sup> From the original document in the possession of the trustees. Colonel Samuel Bayard, one of the above grantors, was also a liberal benefactor to this church.

*Church Memoranda.*

1826,	25 communicants,	5 baptisms.
1836,	29 do.	0
1847,	60 do.	3

This church is in connection with the New York presbytery.<sup>a</sup>

In this part of the village are situated the properties of Colonel J. L. Graham, former post-master of the city of New York, Mr. Samuel Davis and the late Matson Smith, M. D.,<sup>b</sup> now occupied by his son Albert Smith, M. D. Dr. M. Smith, though not a descendant of the French, was among the early settlers of the place, and for more than half a century distinguished for his high professional skill and attainments, being for many years president of the Medical Society of Westchester county. He was a man of strictly religious habits, and for some time a ruling elder in the Presbyterian church. A large portion of the land in this vicinity constituted the old Allaire estate purchased by Alexander Allaire, the Huguenot, in 1691. The ancestors of the Allaires were of honorable descent, and possessed a fair inheritance in France at a very early period.<sup>c</sup> The more immediate ancestor of the family however, was Pierre Allaire, Ecuyer, living in 1465. Prior to the revocation of the edict of Nantes, Alexander Allaire, the Huguenot, fled from La Rochelle to England, and soon after came thence to America. This individual was the great grand-father of the present James Allaire, proprietor of the Allaire iron works in New York. Alexander Allaire also owned the property now occupied by James P. Huntingdon, Esq., and

---

<sup>a</sup> It was formerly attached to the Bedford Presbytery.

<sup>b</sup> A native of Lyme, Conn., and a graduate of Yale college in 1787.

<sup>c</sup> The Allaire family claim descent from the famous Baldwin, King of Jerusalem, who died in 1118, and was buried in a church upon Mount Calvary.

erected the dwelling house soon after the settlement of New Rochelle.



Residence of James P. Huntingdon, Esq.

Near the western extremity of the village, on a commanding situation stands the residence of Thomas A. Ronalds, formerly the property of Mr. Gideon Coggeshall;<sup>a</sup> an old inhabitant of the place.

There is a large and respectable Methodist Episcopal society in the village, which was organized August 22d, 1791, and incorporated the same year, Peter Bonnett, Sen., Benjamin Morgan, Thomas Shute, Gilbert Shute, John Bonnett and Ramson Burtis, first trustees.<sup>b</sup>

There is also a Roman Catholic church erected in 1845.

The property adjoining it (on the south) belonged to the late William Leggett, Esq., for many years the able conductor of the "Evening Post." Mr. Leggett died in 1839 soon after his appointment to the Guatemala mission, and has a handsome monu-

---

<sup>a</sup> For further particulars of the Coggeshall family, see pedigree.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A. 24.

ment erected to his memory in the church-yard of the Episcopal church.<sup>a</sup>

In this neighborhood formerly resided Captain Samuel Pintard, whose ancestors were French Protestant refugees.<sup>b</sup> Capt. Pintard was greatly distinguished for his military services in the Low Countries in 1759. "At the battle of Minden he was severely wounded, and afterwards found on the battle ground, wrapped up in a standard of colors which he had captured with his own hands from the enemy. He subsequently returned to this his native country full of honors and wounds, and located himself near his brother Lewis,<sup>c</sup> on the farm now owned by Mr. Jarvis Dusenberry. The two brothers married sisters of the Stockton family of New Jersey.

The estate of Charles F. Wright, Esq. formerly belonged to Mr. James Bleecker, son of Rutger Bleecker, mayor of the city of Albany in 1728.<sup>d</sup> The house is said to have been used by the British as an hospital for the wounded soldiery in 1776. Captain Josiah le Count still occupies a portion of the old family place, situated on the south side of the road leading to the village.<sup>e</sup> Guillaume le Conte, the founder of the Le Count family in New Rochelle, fled from France to England, prior to the revocation of the edict of Nantes, and brought with him his two sons Guillaume and Pierre le Conte.<sup>f</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Leggett's father was a native of this town, and actively engaged in the Revolutionary struggle.

<sup>b</sup> The grandfather of Samuel was Anthony Pintard, who came originally from La Rochelle, and settled at Shrewsbury, New Jersey. The son of Anthony was John Pintard, whose four sons were, Louis of New Rochelle, Samuel, (as above,) Anthony of New York, and John Pintard; the latter was the father of the late venerable John Pintard, L. L. D., whose daughter, Mrs. Servoss, resides in this town.

<sup>c</sup> Lewis Pintard was appointed by Washington commissary for the American prisoners in New York. This individual occupied the Graham property in New Rochelle.

<sup>d</sup> See Genealogy of the Bleecker family.

<sup>e</sup> On this property there is a landing, from whence sail several sloops trading with the New York market.

<sup>f</sup> See letters of denization, and for further particulars of the family, see Genealogy.

The Rhinelanders were also extensive landholders in this part of the town. Bernard Rhinelander settled on the place now owned by his grand-daughter, Mrs. Isaac Underhill. The father of Bernard was Philip Jacob Rhinelander, a French Protestant refugee.

The steamboat landing is delightfully situated about half a mile south-west of the village, on a small wooded island, connected with the main by a solid stone causeway which leads to the dock and to a well built hotel called the Neptune House. This establishment is well located on account of its close vicinity to the Sound. At high water, the scenery presented in front of the hotel is altogether unrivalled: the harbour in the foreground, the long surface of the waters, stretching five miles across to Long Island; the winding streams of the creek on each side, and Davenport's neck and island around, help to fill up the landscape; and, in addition to the healthiness of the spot, give it advantages, possessed by few of our watering places.

The buildings and improvements on this island have been erected at the private cost of Philip Rhinelander Underhill, Esq.<sup>a</sup> The whole establishment is under the superintendence of Charles F. Rice.

The adjacent island, commonly called Locust Island has been recently purchased by Louis A. Depau, Esq., grandson of the French admiral, Count de Grasse.

The neighboring waters abound with bass and black fish, &c., which last, at the proper season, are taken in large quantities. According to the old rhyme the proper season is indicated by the chesnut leaf, for

“ When chesnut leaves are as big as thumb nails,  
Then bite black fish without fail;  
But when chesnut leaves are as big as a span,  
Then catch black fish if you can.”

The size of the black fish varies from seven to eight pounds,

---

<sup>a</sup> A lineal descendant of John, Lord Underhill, proprietor of Kenilworth, Long Island.

although some have been taken in this vicinity weighing eighteen pounds. The adjacent bays and creeks are the common resort of innumerable flocks of wild ducks. Immense numbers of these birds are killed annually either for sale or domestic use. The favorite method of shooting is technically called "lining," which is performed in the following manner. A number of sportsmen form a continuous line of boats at convenient distances from each other, directly across the line of flight. The moment the ducks rise the firing commences at the head of the line, and is continued in succession by the whole chain of gunners. In this way, hundreds of ducks are annihilated, unless they happen to dash through an opening in the line of boats, when they are sure to escape.

Three hundred ducks have been shot by one individual placed in the line. The species commonly killed by this destructive method are the long-tailed duck, commonly called the squaw or old wife, (*Anas Glacialis*, Linn.) and the velvet duck, commonly called the coot, (*Anas Fusca*, Wil.) Another mode is by means of decoys, which is practised until the months of April or May, when the ducks take their departure to the north.<sup>a</sup>

In this place deserves to be recorded the capture of an enormous turtle, upon the 9th of Sept. 1773. "On Tuesday a turtle of an enormous size and singular form and marks was taken with a harpoon, by Mr. Bleecker and some others, near New Rochelle. His length is eight feet from fin to fin, and seven feet three inches from stem to stern. He is spotted under the fore fins like a leopard, and discovered amazing swiftness after being struck by the harpoon. He had been seen among the rocks in the neighbourhood of New Rochelle, but was not known till just before his capture to be a turtle. What a noble repast would this prove to the Blow-bladder street fraternity in London, for he is found to be upwards of 800 cwt."<sup>b</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> This method will apply to the above named species, also to the broad bill (*Fuligula Marila*, Linn.) black duck, (*Anas Obscura*, Linn.) golden or whistler, (*Fuligula Albeola*, Wil.) the buffel head or dipper, (*Anas Albeola*, Linn.) and the pin-tail, (*Anas Acuta*, Linn.)

<sup>b</sup> Rivington's Gazette, N. Y. 1773.

In the vicinity of New Rochelle the waters of the Sound are studded with numerous islands, which add much to the beauty of the surrounding scenery. The opposite shore of Long Island also, forms another charming addition to the landscape, sprinkled as it is, in all directions, by neat farm houses and villages.

“The Sound! Oh! how many delightful reminiscences does the name bring to our recollection. The Sound! with its white sand banks, and its wooded shores, its far broad bosom covered with fleets of sails, scudding along in the swift breeze in the open day, and its dark waves rolling and sweeping in whole streams of phosphorescent fire from their plunging bows, as they dash through it in the darkness of midnight. The Sound! redolent with military story. The Sound! overflowing with supernatural legend and antiquated history.” “Are there not the ‘Brothers,’ unnatural that they are, who, living centuries together, never to one another have as yet spoken a kindly word, and the great savage ‘Executioners,’ and ‘Throgs,’ and ‘Sands,’ and ‘Etons,’ all throwing hospitable lights from their high beacon towers, far forward, to guide the wandering mariner; and the ‘Devil’s Stepping Stones,’ o’er which he bounded when driven from Connecticut; and the great rocks too, inside of Flushing Bay, on which he descended, shivering them from top to bottom as he fell. And are there not the ‘Norwalk Islands,’ with their pines,—‘Old Sasco,’ with her rocks,—‘Fairweather,’ with the wild birds’ eggs deep buried in her sands,—and the far famed fishing banks off the ‘Middle Ground.’ Ay! and is it not from the fierce boiling whirlpools of the ‘Gate’ to ‘Gardiners,’ and the lone beacon tower of ‘Old Montaukett,’ one continuous ground of thrilling lore and bold adventure. In her waters the ‘Fire ship’<sup>a</sup> glared amid the darkness; her phantom crew, like red hot statues, standing at their quarters, as rushing onwards,

---

<sup>a</sup> The tradition is, that she was taken by pirates, all hands murdered, and abandoned after being set on fire by the buccaneers. Some accounts state that a large white horse which was on board, was left near the foremast to perish in the flames, and in storms of peculiarly terrific violence, that she may be seen, rushing along enveloped in fire, the horse stamping and pawing at the heel of the foremast, her phantom crew assembled at quarters. *Gallop among Amer. Scenery by A. B. Silliman.*



in the furious storm, she passed the shuddering mariner, leaving comet-like long streams of flame behind. Beneath her sands the red-shirted buccaneers did hide their ill-gotten, blood-bespotted treasure. Ay! and 'twas on her broad bosom that with iron-seared conscience, sailed that pirate, fierce and bold, old Robert Kidd; and to this very day his golden hoards, with magic mark and sign, still crowd her wooded shores."<sup>a</sup>

Capt. Kidd the notorious freebooter (whose name is so inseparably connected with these shores,) appears to have been employed by the government in 1696 to suppress the buccaneers, (at that time very numerous on our coast,) "from the knowledge he possessed of their numbers, strength, and places of resort." In 1699 he "returned from the East Indies, whither he had sailed after making several unsuccessful cruises on the American coast, during his absence having been engaged in the very practices he had engaged to prevent. This result appears to have been in a measure foreseen by the provincials. Governor Fletcher, writing to the board of trade, June 22, 1697, says: "One Captain Kidd lately arrived here, and produced a commission under the great seal of England for suppressing of piracy. When he was here many flocked to him from all parts, men of desperate fortunes and necessitous, in expectation of getting vast treasures." "He sailed from hence with 150 men, as I am informed; a great part of them are of this province. It is generally believed here they would have money *per fas aut nefas, that if he miss of the design intended for which he has commission 't will not be in Kidd's power to govern such a horde of men under no pay.* His subsequent career is well known in 1699, he was made prisoner in Boston,<sup>b</sup> sent to England, and there executed in 1701."<sup>c</sup>

The following ballad (attributed to Kidd,<sup>d</sup>) pretends to set forth his veritable history. It is entitled,

<sup>a</sup> Gallop among American Scenery, by A. B. Silliman, 212.

<sup>b</sup> Hutchinson says, vol. ii. 119, that when the officer arrested him he attempted to draw his sword, but was prevented by a person in company.

<sup>c</sup> New Jersey Hist. Soc. Collect. 146.

<sup>d</sup> The author of the ballad has evidently mistaken the christian name of the pirate which was William.

"YE LAMENTABLE BALLAD, AND YE TRUE HISTORIE OF  
CAPTAINE ROBERT KIDD, WHO WAS HANGED IN CHAINS  
AT EXECUTION DOCK, FOR PIRACY AND MURDER ON YE  
HIGH SEAS."

He calleth upon  
the captains.

You captains bold and brave, hear our cries, hear our cries,  
You captains bold and brave, hear our cries,  
You captains brave and bold, tho' you seem uncontroll'd,  
Don't for the sake of gold lose your souls, lose your souls,  
Don't for the sake of gold lose your souls.

He stateth his  
name and ac-  
knowledgeth his  
wickedness.

My name was Robert Kidd, when I sail'd, when I sail'd,  
My name was Robert Kidd, when I sail'd,  
My name was Robert Kidd, God's laws I did forbid,  
And so wickedly I did, when I sail'd.

He beareth wit-  
ness of the good  
counsel of his  
parents.

My parents taught me well, when I sail'd, when I sail'd,  
My parents taught me well, when I sail'd,  
My parents taught me well to shun the gates of hell,  
But against them I rebell'd when I sail'd.

He curseth his  
father and his  
mother dear.

I cursed my father dear, when I sail'd, when I sail'd,  
I cursed my father dear, when I sail'd,  
I cursed my father dear and her that did me bear,  
And so wickedly did swear, when I sail'd.

And blasphe-  
meth against  
God.

I made a solemn vow when I sail'd, when I sail'd,  
I made a solemn vow when I sail'd,  
I made a solemn vow, to God I would not bow,  
Nor myself one prayer allow, as I sail'd.

He burieth the  
Good Book in  
the sand.

I'd a bible in my hand when I sail'd, when I sail'd,  
I'd a bible in my hand when I sail'd,  
I'd a bible in my hand by my father's great command,  
And I sunk it in the sand when I sail'd.

And murdereth  
William Moore.

I murdered William Moore, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
I murdered William Moore, as I sail'd,  
I murdered William Moore, and left him in his gore,  
Not many leagues from shore as I sail'd.

And also cruelly  
killeth the gun-  
ner.

And being cruel still, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
And being cruel still, as I sail'd,  
And being cruel still, my gunner I did kill,  
And his precious blood did spill, as I sail'd.

His mate, being  
about to die, re-  
penteth and warn-  
eth him in his  
career.

My mate was sick and died as I sail'd, as I sailed,  
My mate was sick and died as I sailed,  
My mate was sick and died, which me much terrified,  
When he called me to his bedside as I sail'd.

And unto me he did say, see me die, see me die,  
And unto me did say see me die,  
And unto me did say, take warning now by me,  
There comes a reckoning day, you must die.

You cannot then withstand, when you die, when you die,  
 You cannot then withstand when you die,  
 You cannot then withstand the judgments of God's hand,  
 But bound then in iron bands, you must die.

I was sick and nigh to death, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I was sick and nigh to death as I sail'd,  
 And I was sick and nigh to death, and I vowed at every breath,  
 To walk in wisdom's ways as I sail'd.

He falleth sick,  
 and promiseth re-  
 pentance, but  
 forgetteth his  
 vows.

I thought I was undone as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I thought I was undone as I sail'd,  
 I thought I was undone and my wicked glass had run,  
 But my health did soon return as I sail'd.

My repentance lasted not, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 My repentance lasted not, as I sail'd,  
 My repentance lasted not, my vows I soon forgot,  
 Damnation's my just lot, as I sail'd.

I steer'd from sound to sound, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I steer'd from sound to sound, as I sail'd,  
 I steer'd from sound to sound, and many ships I found,  
 And most of them I burn'd as I sail'd.

He steereth thro'  
 Long Island and  
 other Sounds.

I spy'd three ships from France, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I spy'd three ships from France, as I sail'd,  
 I spy'd three ships from France, to them I did advance,  
 And took them all by chance, as I sail'd.

He chaseth three  
 ships of France.

I spy'd three ships of Spain, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I spy'd three ships of Spain as I sail'd,  
 I spy'd three ships of Spain, I fired on them amain,  
 Till most of them were slain, as I sail'd.

And also three  
 ships of Spain.

I'd ninety bars of gold, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I'd ninety bars of gold, as I sail'd,  
 I'd ninety bars of gold, and dollars manifold,  
 With riches uncontroll'd, as I sail'd.

He boasteth of  
 his treasure.

Then fourteen ships I saw, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 Then fourteen ships I saw as I sail'd,  
 Then fourteen ships I saw and brave men they are,  
 Ah! they were too much for me as I sail'd.

He spyeth four-  
 teen ships in  
 pursuit, and sur-  
 rendereth.

Thus being o'ertaken at last, I must die, I must die,  
 Thus being o'ertaken at last, I must die,  
 Thus being o'ertaken at last, and into prison cast,  
 And sentence being pass'd, I must die.

Farewell the raging sea, I must die, I must die,  
 Farewell the raging main, I must die,  
 Farewell the raging main, to Turkey, France, and Spain,  
 I ne'er shall see you again, I must die.

He biddeth fare-  
 well to the seas,  
 and the raging  
 main.

He exhorteth the  
young and old to  
take counsel  
from his fate.

To Newgate now I'm cast, and must die, and must die,  
To Newgate now I'm cast, and must die,  
To Newgate I am cast, with a sad and heavy heart,  
To receive my just desert, I must die.

To Execution Dock I must go, I must go,  
To Execution Dock I must go,  
To Execution Dock will many thousands flock,  
But I must bear the shock, I must die.

Come all you young and old, see me die, see me die,  
Come all you young and old, see me die,  
Come all you young and old, you're welcome to my gold,  
For by it I've lost my soul, and must die.

And declareth  
that he must go  
to hell, and be  
punished for his  
wickedness.

Take warning now by me, for I must die, for I must die,  
Take warning now by me, for I must die,  
Take warning now by me, and shun bad company,  
Lest you come to hell with me, for I must die,  
Lest you come to hell with me, for I must die.<sup>a</sup>

Smith, the historian, observes, "that it is certain the pirates were frequently in the Sound, and supplied with provisions by the inhabitants of Long Island, who, for many years afterwards, were so infatuated with a notion, that the pirates buried great quantities of money along the coast, that there is scarce a point of land, or an island, without the marks of their *auri sacra fames*. Some credulous people have ruined themselves by their researches, and propagated a thousand idle fables current to this day, among our country farmers."<sup>b</sup> There is a tradition that Kidd buried money beside a rock on Huckleberry island.<sup>c</sup>

Almost every boulder and erratic block in this vicinity has been examined by the gold hunters in search of pirates' money.

On the opposite shore of Long Island is a small promontory which runs into the entrance of Hempstead bay, called to this day Kidd's point, "upon which several companies of diggers for Kidd's money have expended much time and labor."<sup>d</sup> At a

<sup>a</sup> Gallop among American Scenery, by A. B. Silliman.

<sup>b</sup> Smith's Hist. N. Y. English edition, 92.

<sup>c</sup> Amusing stories are related of the gold hunters and their mode of conducting operations, which generally resulted in the marvellous revelation of Kidd himself, seated on his treasure, holding a drawn sword.

<sup>d</sup> Geology of N. Y. Vol. vii. No. 200, p. 128.

short distance from the village, and east of the steamboat landing, is Davenport's neck,<sup>a</sup> designated in the early division of the town as Lagler's (Leisler's) and Le Count's neck, containing two hundred acres. This neck was formerly the property and residence of the Lispenards, an ancient French family, who were also owners of the mill now belonging to Willett Secor.<sup>b</sup>

Among the Lispenard papers occurs the following receipt for quit rent, from Thomas Pell, lord of the manor.

“New York, Dec. 20th day, 1742.

“I have received of John Lispenard, the sum of eight pounds, five shillings, and 2 in full, 84 bushels of wheat, 31 pounds of butter and 21 lb. of cheese.

“THO. PELL.”

In 1786, the neck was purchased by Newberry Davenport, father of the present proprietors, Lawrence and Newberry Davenport, Esqs. Bonnefois or Bauffet's point situated on the north-east side of the neck has been already alluded to as the landing place of the Huguenots, about 1689. A further interest is imparted to this locality from its being the spot upon which the first house in this town was erected, the remains of which are still visible.

There is a tradition that one of the old Huguenots would daily repair to this place, “and turning his eyes in the direction where he supposed France was situated, would sing one of Marot's hymns, and send to heaven his morning devotions. Others joined him in these pious remembrances of their God and of their beloved climes, from which they had been so cruelly driven by the merciless fires of persecution.”<sup>c</sup>

The Coutant family of New Rochelle possess the Bonnefois bible printed at Amsterdam, by

<sup>a</sup> Formerly called Myer's point, after a family of that name, who held it under the Rodmans.

<sup>b</sup> See grant of freeholders to Anthony Lispenard, in 1724. The Lispenard cemetery lies on the south side of the neck.

<sup>c</sup> Sketch of the Huguenots, by Mr. Disosway.

Jean Frederic Bernard,  
 Revuë et corrigéé sur le texte Grec par les  
 Pasteurs et les Professeurs de l'Eglise de Geneva.

Davenport's neck suffered severely during the Revolution, both from the enemy's shipping and the incursions of the whale boat-men. Here General Knyphausen landed the second division of Hessians and the 22d regiment of Waldeckers, October, 1776, ten days previous to the battle of White Plains.<sup>a</sup>

On the property of David Harrison, Esq. (in this vicinity,) there is a sloop landing and place of business. A short distance from the neck is situated Chrystal Lake, which abounds with every variety of fresh water fish such as pickerel, perch, cat and sun fish, &c. The water is pure and from it great quantities of ice are annually transported to the New York market. The lake also supplies water to two good mill seats, one of which is situated on the shore of the adjoining creek. Near the former,<sup>b</sup> a spring issues out of a bank, the water of which is medicinal. Many persons who have drank freely of it, have found great relief. It is chiefly useful in cutaneous diseases. In the south-east angle of the town are located the Premium Mills, the property of Mr. Henry Partridge Kellogg. This enchanting spot commands the most extensive views of the Sound and adjacent shores.

The northern road from New Rochelle to the White Plains divides the ancient farms of the Huguenots. These were originally laid out in parallel narrow strips, containing each from fifty to sixty acres, and distinguished from the southern, by the name of the eastern and western divisions. Many of the early settlers had double lots, and some from eight to ten, amounting to four or five hundred acres in all.

The southern division of the town was also laid out in a similar manner, the lots running from the south side of the Boston turnpike to the Sound. Among the descendants of the ancient

---

<sup>a</sup> Stedman's History of the American war.

<sup>b</sup> This seat was formerly occupied by Jacob Leisler's mill, while the neck on the east was called Leisler's neck.

proprietors, who still occupy the original strips or farms, may be enumerated, in the west division, the Coutants,<sup>a</sup> the Drakes, who represent the Parcots,<sup>b</sup> the Badeaus,<sup>c</sup> and the Secors. In the east division are the Bonnetts,<sup>d</sup> Soulices,<sup>e</sup> Secors,<sup>f</sup> and Scurmans.<sup>g</sup> In the southern, the Guions, Le Counts, Rhinelanders and Flandreaus.<sup>h</sup>

The farm of Mr. Nehemiah Purdy, in the eastern division, formerly belonged to the notorious Thomas Paine, having been conveyed to the latter by the State government for services he had rendered the country during her struggle for independence. This remarkable man was the son of a Quaker, a stay-maker by trade, and was born at Thetford, Norfolk, England, in 1737. His mother was the daughter of an attorney, herself a member of the Church of England. In her religious principles the son appears to have been educated, for we find he was confirmed at the usual age by the Bishop of Norwich. After leaving school, (at the early age of thirteen,) Paine embraced his father's trade as a stay-maker, in which he continued five years. He next ventured on a sea-faring life.

In 1759 he again established himself in stay making, and married his first wife, Mary Lambert, who died the next year, in consequence of his bad treatment of her.

<sup>a</sup> The ancestor of this family, who emigrated from England in 1689, was Isaac Coutant, or Coutong. He married Catharine Bonnefoi, and left issue three sons. Of these, Isaac, the eldest, was the father of Isaiah Coutant. A large portion of the Coutant farm, which originally consisted of 307 acres, is now occupied by Philemon Carpenter and Thomas L. Servoss. The present Coutant residence was erected in 1769, and the cemetery in 1775. The latter contains a monument to John Le Fevre, a native of France besides others.

<sup>b</sup> John Parcott was one of the original Huguenots of this place.

<sup>c</sup> The name of Elias Badeau occurs in a list of freeholders belonging to this town, in 1708.

<sup>d</sup> For Daniel Bonnett, the ancestor of this family, see passport.

<sup>e</sup> This family trace their descent from John Soulice, a native of the French Pyrenees, living in 1672.

<sup>f</sup> The ancestor of this family was Ambroise Secor or Sycard.

<sup>g</sup> Frederick Scurman was a freeholder of this town, in 1708.

<sup>h</sup> The name of Jaques Flandreau is attached to the list of church members in 1743.

Two years after this he obtained a place in the excise, from which he was twice expelled for mal-practices. In 1771 he married his second wife, Elizabeth Ollive, from whom, in three years he obtained a divorce. In 1774 he composed his first production an election song, for which he obtained three guineas. The great Franklin found him a garret writer in London, and was the first person who advised him to come to this country. In Philadelphia, under the auspices of such men as Rush, Franklin, and others, he prepared and published his "Common Sense," a work which appears to have been well-timed, and calculated to rouse the enthusiasm of the brave asserters of independence. As a work of merit, it was well suited to the times in which it was first published; but, as his own biographer remarks, "it is defective in arrangement, inelegant in diction, with a few exceptions showing little profundity of argument, no facility of remark, no extent of research, and no classical allusion, and cannot be appealed to as authority on government." Its popularity was entirely owing to the critical juncture of the times.

He afterwards published his "Crisis." In 1777 he was elected secretary to the Committee of Foreign Affairs, from which office he was dismissed, in 1779, for a scandalous breach of trust, and this was decreed by the assembled wisdom of the States. About this period, the State of New York presented the farm which he afterwards occupied.

In 1787 he formed the design of producing a revolution in England, his native country. At this time the infidels of France were ripening their plots in Paris; Paine joined with them, and viewed with rapture the rising revolution in England. His infidel and revolutionary principles were opposed by the powerful and eloquent Burke, who, with other noble-minded coadjutors, crushed the revolution in that country, and sentenced Paine as an outlaw.

To promote the "revolution of the world,"<sup>a</sup> he published his "Age of Reason," well entitled a complete piece of ribaldry.

---

<sup>a</sup> The "Revolution of the World" was a toast given by Paine at a public meeting in London.



As a companion of the blood-thirsty Robespierre, we find him next sitting on the trial of the innocent Louis.

He was subsequently confined in the dungeons of Paris, where he had a narrow escape of his life.<sup>a</sup>

In 1796 he published his letter to General Washington, which contained a causeless, ungrateful, virulent and useless attack on one of the best of men.

Shortly after this, he was expelled from the society of his fellow infidels, and a second time committed to prison. He now deemed it expedient to fly to America, taking under his charge a lady named Madame Bonneville, and her three sons. Soon after his arrival in New York, we find him in possession of the farm at New Rochelle. A portion of the house in which he lived (at this period) is still standing: here he had a small room, the furniture of which embraced a miserable straw bed, deal table, a chair, *bible*, and jug of spirituous liquors. His breakfast table is thus described by an eye witness (Mr. Carver): "The table cloth was composed of newspapers! on it was a tea-pot, some coarse

---

<sup>a</sup> "One evening (says Grant Thorburn) Mr. Paine related to me the following anecdote. He said it was in the reign of Robespierre, when every republican that the monster could get in his power was cut down by the knife of the guillotine. Paine was in the dungeon, and his name was on the list, with twenty-four others, ordered for execution next morning. It was customary for the clerk of the tribunal to go through the cells at night, and put a cross with chalk on the back of the door of such as were to be guillotined. In the morning, when the executioner came with his guard, wherever they found a chalk, the victim was brought forth. There was a long passage in the cellar of this Bastille, having a row of cells on each side containing the prisoners; the passage was secured at each end, but the doors of the cells were left open through the day, and the prisoners stepped into one another's rooms to converse. Paine had gone into the next cell, and left his own door open back to the wall, thus having the door inside out. Just then came the chalkers, and probably being drunk, crossed the inside of Paine's door. Next morning, when the guard came with an order to bring out twenty-four, and finding only twenty-three chalks, (Paine being in bed and the door shut,) they took a prisoner from the further end of the passage, and thus made up the number; so Mr. Paine escaped. Before the mistake was discovered, or about forty-eight hours after, a stronger party than Robespierre's cut off *his* head and about thirty of his associates—so Paine was set at liberty; and being afraid to trust his head among the good republicans for whom he had written so much, he made the best of his way to this country."—*Reminiscences of Grant Thorburn*.

brown sugar, part of a rye loaf, and quarter of a pound of butter."<sup>a</sup>

The subsequent career of this unfortunate man is well known. On the 8th of June, 1809, Thomas Paine breathed his last, aged 72 years and 5 months. Shortly after his decease, his body was brought up from New York, and interred on the farm, near the site of the present monument. In 1819 the remains of Paine were disinterred by William Cobbett, and conveyed to England.<sup>b</sup>

The site of his grave has been recently purchased by his friends, and a handsome marble monument erected upon it. On the side facing the road is a medallion likeness, beneath which is inscribed,

THOMAS PAINE,  
author of  
"COMMON SENSE."

In the northern part of this town is situated the small hamlet of Upper Rochelle, which contains a Methodist Church, a school house, two stores, and about fourteen or fifteen dwellings. The high grounds in its vicinity command extensive prospects of the surrounding country and Sound.

From the commencement of the revolutionary war, New Rochelle appears to have suffered considerably from the incursions of the enemy and their emissaries. On the 18th of October, 1776, Lord Howe, the British commander, took post in the village, General Washington occupying the intermediate heights between the two rivers. Whilst in New Rochelle, the enemy were joined by the second division of Germans, under the command of General Knyphausen, and by an incomplete regiment of cavalry from Ireland, some of which had been captured on their passage.

The Scotch Highland battalion occupied the heights of New Rochelle. From this place both armies moved toward White

---

<sup>a</sup> Abridged from Cheetham's Life of Paine.

<sup>b</sup> Among the household goods and chattels of the late William Cobbett, occurs a *box of bones*.

Plains, on the 25th of October, 1776.<sup>a</sup> Upon the 29th of January, 1777, General Wooster's division was ordered to New Rochelle.<sup>b</sup> At the east end of the village, a severe skirmish took place between a body of American light horse, under Colonel Moyland, and the Queen's Rangers, commanded by Lieut. Colonel Simcoe.<sup>c</sup> In this affair, Colonel Moyland greatly distinguished himself by beating off the enemy, (who far out-numbered him,) and making good his retreat to Horse Neck.

The lands of this town are, in general, level and stony, but the soil is very productive, and much of it is a wet loam or clay, good for grass. The soil is also very propitious to the cultivation of fruit trees of all kinds. Most of its unimproved lands are covered with wood and timber: these lie principally on the east and west sides of the town. On the highlands grow chesnut, oak and hickory; on the lower grounds ash, birch, maple, elm, pine and hemlock, &c. It is also sufficiently watered by springs and brooks. New Rochelle furnishes an extensive list of minerals. Among the most important may be mentioned quartz, drusy, calcedony, agate, jasper, serpentine of almost every variety, and chromate of iron. Hydrate of magnesia and carbonate of magnesia, compact and crystalline, are also found here, according to Mr. Mather.<sup>d</sup> There are several islands in the Sound attached to this town; among others may be enumerated Goat, Maskett's, Hurtleberry, Hewlet's, Locust, Pea and Vaucluse Islands.

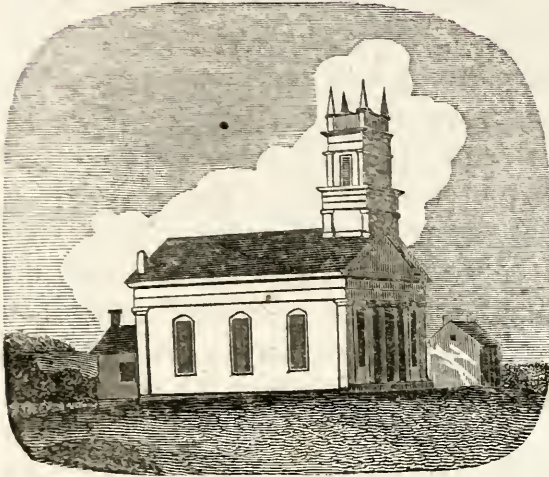
---

<sup>a</sup> Marshall's Life of Washington, vol. i. p. 111.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 113.

<sup>c</sup> Subsequently Governor General of Canada.

<sup>d</sup> See Geological Survey of N. Y. 1840.



St. Stephen's Church, North Castle.

## NORTH CASTLE.

THE township of North Castle is situated "6 miles north of White Plains, 36 miles from New York, and 129 miles from Albany;—bounded north by New Castle and Bedford, east by Poundridge, south-easterly by the State of Connecticut and the town of Harrison, and west by Mount Pleasant."<sup>a</sup> North Castle was at first styled the *White Fields*,<sup>b</sup> and subsequently (upon its division into several patents) the *Liberty of North Castle*. The present township was organized on the 7th of March, 1788.<sup>c</sup>

From the general tenor of the Indian grant, made to Nathaniel Turner, of New Haven, in 1640, we infer, that the greater part of these lands originally belonged to the Indian sachems Ponus and Wascussue. At this early period, however, the Indians were in the habit of making repeated and almost unlimited grants of land into the wilderness, as they termed the interior of the county. Thus, we have Shanasockwell's grant to the people of Rye in 1660, which extended twelve miles north of the Sound;<sup>d</sup> also,

<sup>a</sup> Spafford's Gazetteer of N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> A name derived from the White Balsam (*Guaphalium Margaretaceum*, Linn.) This appellation more particularly applied to that part of the present town situated east of the Byram River.

<sup>c</sup> Laws of New York. New Castle was set off from North Castle in 1791.

<sup>d</sup> This grant was afterwards confirmed by the General Assembly of Connecticut.

the same year, the Indian sale to John Richbell, of Mamaroneck, running twenty miles north of the Sound. In 1695 the lands west of the Byram appear to have belonged to the sachems Wampus, Cornelius, Coharnitt, and others, while the territory west of the Mehanas River, and south of Catonah's land, (Bedford,) was in a peculiar manner the domains of Serrinqua, or Sorringoe.

The principal Indian village in this town was situated upon the northern bank of Rye Pond. On ploughing the ground (in this vicinity) a few years ago, extensive "*beds of clam shells*" were discovered beneath the soil. These, together with Indian utensils found there, prove this was a favorite place of resort. From this spot are some charming views, both of the pond and surrounding hills. There are also some vestiges of Indian villages on the banks of the Armonck (Byram Lake.) A variety of Indian weapons have been likewise found in this neighborhood.<sup>a</sup>

The Indian burying ground is situated near Wampus Pond.<sup>b</sup> In the southeast angle of the town is a beautiful hill, generally known by the name of Mount Misery,<sup>c</sup> which acquired its present appellation from the fact that a large body of Indians were surprised and cut to pieces here by the Huguenots, in retaliation for a descent upon New Rochelle.

From the summit of this mount, (which is between two and three hundred feet above the valley,) on a clear day, may be seen the distant mountains beyond the Hudson, the hills of North Castle and Greenburgh, the village of White Plains, the country bordering the Sound as far as the eye can stretch, and the Bronx meandering through a rich and fertile valley—the tout ensemble forming a scene truly beautiful and romantic. On the brow of the hill are the remains of a small fortification.

We have already shown that the Indian grant of 1640 embraced a large proportion (perhaps the whole) of the present town. Some of these lands must have subsequently reverted to the abo-

---

<sup>a</sup> In the possession of Samuel Lyon, Esq., is an Indian anchor manufactured of stone, found near Byram Lake.

<sup>b</sup> Testimony of Mr. Sands.

<sup>c</sup> Testimony of Mr. Merritt in 1826.

rigines, for in 1660 we find the Indians again releasing them to John Richbell, of Mamaroneck. Upon the 19th of October, 1696, Caleb Heathcote obtained a further release from the Indian sachems Wampus, Patthunck, and others, "of all that tract of land situate, lying and being in the county of Westchester, &c.; bounded north by Croton River, easterly with Byram River and Bedford line, northerly by the land of John Harrison and his associates, and the line stretching to Byram River aforesaid, and westerly by the land of Frederick Philipse."<sup>a</sup> The above sale included the west patent of North Castle. Caleb Heathcote had previously obtained a patent right from Mrs. Anne Richbell to purchase lands "which were already included in her husband's deed of 1660."

Upon the 21st of May, 1696, John Brundage "made application for himself and Richard Griffen, to purchase 100 acres of vacant land in the county of Westchester, on Byram river, near fourteen miles from the Sound, for which they desire a patent."<sup>b</sup>

The second sale to Heathcote and others included a portion of the former purchase.

"Witness these presents, we Serrinqua, Quarrarequa, Wyapera and Patthunck, Indian proprietors, in consideration of a certain sum of money to us in hand paid, at or before ensealing and delivering of these presents, by Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Captain Joseph Theal, Lieutenant John Horton, and Mr. Joseph Purdy, of Mamaroneck and Rye, have bargained and sold, and do by these presents bargain, sell and alienate unto the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, and Joseph Purdy, their heirs and assigns for ever, a certain parcel and tract of land, bounded as followeth, southerly by Byram river, northerly to the northwest corner of a great swamp, commonly called the Round Swamp,<sup>c</sup> thence a south-westerly line to Rye great pond, and bounded by the said pond westerly and so runs to Harrison's great marked tree, to have and to hold the above mentioned tract of land to the said Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, and Joseph Purdy, their heirs and assigns for ever; and it shall and may be lawful for the said Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, and Joseph Purdy, their heirs and assigns, at all times thence forward, to have, use, occupy and enjoy the above mentioned

---

<sup>a</sup> See New Castle for Indian deed.

<sup>b</sup> Indian deeds warrant for survey. Albany, Lib. i. 44.

<sup>c</sup> Supposed Tamaruck swamp in the north-west corner of this town.—EDITOR.

premises, without any lett, hindrance, or molestation, from us the said Serrinqua, Quarrarequash, Wyapera, Patthunk, their heirs and assigns for ever, or from any by, for, or under them, in witness whereof the said Serrinqua, Quarrarequash, Wyapera, Patthunk, have hereunto set their hands and seal, this eleventh day of June, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and one, signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of us,

Sophia Horton,

her ✕ mark.

Thomas Repherson,

Warrattins,

his Y mark.

Cock Cocktimus,<sup>a</sup>

his N mark.

Serrinqua,

his ☉ mark.

Quarrarequash,

his ♀ mark.

Wyapera,

his ⚡ mark.

Upon the 4th of July, 1701, occurs the following license, "I underwritten do give free liberty so far as it lyes in my power, (by virtue of a grant to me from Colonel Benjamin Fletcher, late Governor of New York,) unto Robert Lockhard, Richard Scofield, Nathaniel Sellick and Gershom Lockhard, to purchase of the Indian proprietors, the lands hereafter mentioned from Mehanas river to Byram river, and so run northward three miles into ye woods, upon Byram river, and one mile into ye woods, on the Mehanas river, provided it does not injure the right of Bedford or Greenwich, nor is within my patent right from Mrs. Ann Richbell. Witness my hand,

CALEB HEATHCOTE.

Mamaroneck, July 4th, 1701.

On the same day the Indians conveyed to Col. Caleb Heathcote, Capt. James Mott, Robert Lockhard, Gershom Lockhard, Jonathan Lockhard, Nathaniel Sellick, Richard Scofield, Gershom Lockhard, Gershom's son, and Henry Disbrow, of the one part, and Seringoe, Raresquash, Washpaken, Ramhone and Packanain on the other part, witnesseth, that the said Serringoe, Raresquash, Washpaken, Ramhone and Packanain, in consideration of a certain sum of good and lawful money to them in hand paid, at the ensealing and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge, and themselves

<sup>a</sup> Cockarouse was a title of honor among the Algonquin Indians.

therewith to be fully satisfied, contented and paid, and thereof and therefrom do acquit, exonerate and discharge the said Col. Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, &c., their heirs, executors, &c., have given, granted, bargained, sold, enfeoffed, released and confirmed, &c., unto the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, &c.,

“ A certain parcel or tract of land, bounded as followeth, to begin at Byram river at the colony line, and so to run to Mehanas river as said line goes, running northerly on Mehanas river, as the river goes, a mile into the woods, and from the colony line on Byram river, three miles northerly as the river runs into the woods, and from the head of said line to the head of the other line afore-mentioned, to have and to hold the before recited parcel or tract of land, with all and every of its appurtenances, unto the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns for ever, &c., &c. In witness whereof, we the said Serringoe, Raresquash, Washpackin, Ramhone and Packanain, have hereunto put our hands and seals, the 4th day of July, in the year of our Lord, 1701.<sup>a</sup>

Signed and delivered in presence of us,

Benjamin Disbrow,  
Benjamin Collier,  
Cohornet,  
Wralicus,  
Toporone,  
Kihattem,  
Wapatong,  
Raratta,  
Meekrum.

The mark of  
O  
Serringoe,  
The mark of  
X  
Raresquash,  
The mark of  
A  
Washpackin,  
The mark of  
T  
Ramhone.  
The mark of  
S  
Packanain.

By a deed bearing date the 5th of July, 1701, Serringoe, Raresquash, Packanain and Ramhone conveyed to Col. Caleb Heathcote of Mamaroneck, gentleman, Joseph Theal and Lieutenants John Horton and Joseph Purdy of Rye,

---



<sup>a</sup> The above sale embraced that tract of land called the White Fields.




“ All that tract of land bounded southerly by colony line, easterly by Mehanas river, northerly by Bedford line, and marked trees to Mehanas river and southerly as said river goes against the stream, by ye head of the river, and so by colony line, &c.

Signed and sealed in presence of us,

Sarah Underhill,  
Benjamin Collier.

The mark of  
  
Washpaken,  
The mark of  
  
Cohornet.<sup>a</sup>

The mark of  
  
Taporanecam.

This purchase was subsequently confirmed by royal letters patent to Colonel Caleb Heathcote and his associates, in the following manner.

“ William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come or may concern, sendeth greeting: Whereas our loving subjects Col. Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Sims, Cornelius Deppester, Richard Slater, John Chollwell, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, have by their petition, presented unto our trusty and well beloved John Nansfan, Esq., our Lieut. Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, &c., and prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain tract of land in the county of Westchester, bounded southerly by the colony line of Connecticut, easterly by Mahanas river, northerly by Bedford line and marked trees to Mahanas river again, and southerly as the said river goes against the stream to ye head of the said river, and so to the said colony line, which said tract of land on the 5th day of July last past, was by our said Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton and Joseph Purdy, &c., purchased of the native proprietors, and containing within the limits aforesaid, by estimation, about 1500 acres of profitable land, besides wastes and wood lands, which reasonable request, we being willing to grant, *know ye*, that of our especial grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents doe for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said loving subjects, Col. Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Sims,

---

<sup>a</sup> Indian deeds, warrant of survey. Alb. Rec. Lib. i., 94.

Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, John Chollwell, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens, all the afore recited tract of land within the county of Westchester, and within the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water-courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, &c., mines, minerals, &c., (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the aforesaid tract of land, within the limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any way or ways appertaining, unto them the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns to the only proper use, benefit and behoof of him the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns for ever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage as of our manor of East Greenwich in our county of Kent, within our realm of England, yielding, rendering, and paying therefor yearly and every year, on the first day of the Nativity of our Blessed Saviour, the annual yearly rent of one pound, seven shillings and sixpence, current money of New York, in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services and demands whatsoever. In testimony whereof, we have caused the great seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed. Witness John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, and Vice-Admiral of the same, at our Fort in New York, this 17th day of February, 1701-2, and in the fourteenth year of our reign.”<sup>a</sup>

JOHN NANFAN.”

The above charter embraced the eastern portion of what is still known as the *middle patent* of North Castle.

Upon the first of April, 1705, the Indian proprietors Patthunck, senr., Panridge, and Wapeto Patthunck, junr., absolute lords of a tract of land “lying situate in Westchester county upon the northermost side of the great pond called Rye pond, have sold for a sum of money and other goods,

“All the land above mentioned, from the said north-west side of said pond, running west northerly three miles more or less, and from thence running north-eastwardly four miles, more or less, on a run or river called Bruncks’s river, and from thence east northerly three English miles, more or less, and then from thence runs south-westerly to the place from whence it began, taking in and including a small pond called Cranberry pond, unto John Clapp,

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb Rec. Book of Patents, No. vii., 224.

his heirs, executors, administrators, &c., reserving three hundred acres for our own use, for the sum of £10, that is to say, four pieces of eight, or money, and the other £8 10s. in such goods as are agreed upon by said parties."<sup>a</sup>

Signed sealed and delivered in presence of us,

Roger Thoryon,

The mark of Daniel Headley.

The mark of

CO

Patthunck, sen.

The mark of

X

Panridge.

The mark of

A

Wapeto Patthunck, jun.

And younger Patthunck

his mark.

O

On the 28th of March, 1705, the Indian proprietors Serringoe, Raresquash, and Paquerekin, (for and in consideration of a valuable consideration in hand paid,) release to George Booth and his heirs, &c.

"A certain tract of land in Westchester county, bounded south by a certain tract of land formerly sold by said Serringoe, &c., to Richard Schofield,<sup>b</sup> and on the west by Byram pond, on the north by Catonah's land, and on the east by Mahanas river," &c.

Signed sealed and delivered in presence of us,

Richard Schofield,

Joseph Seely,

The mark of

O

Serringoe.

The mark of

X

Raresquash.

The mark of

A

Paquenikin.

The mark of

C

Ram Otes Wapeto Tapawmak.

The mark of

X

John Coak Mangawum.

<sup>a</sup> Indian deeds, warrant of survey, Alb. Rec. lib. i. 130. See Harrison.

<sup>b</sup> See Indian sale to Caleb Heathcote and others on the 1st of July, 1701. Richard Schofield was one of the proprietors of the middle patent.

A further release from the Indian proprietors Serringoe, Mage-rack, and Pawenack, occurs on the 14th day of July, 1705, to George Booth, John Bond, Andreis Meyer and John van Horne, &c., viz: "of all the land, swamp and meadow that the said Indians have in Westchester county,"<sup>a</sup> &c. From this time we hear no more of the aboriginal proprietors of North Castle.

The western portion of the middle patent was confirmed by royal charter on the 25th day of September, 1708, to Anne Bridges and her associates in the following manner.

"Anne, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c., To all to whom this shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas by our letters patent bearing date the 2d day of March, 1705,<sup>b</sup> in the fourth year of our reign, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed unto our loving subjects, Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, George Booth, William Anderson, William Bond, John Persor, Daniel Clarke, John Clapp and Lewis Perant, all that certain tract or parcel of land in the county of Westchester, beginning at a certain small brook called Cohamong brook<sup>c</sup> where the said brook empties itself into Mehannus river, and runns thence up the said river Mehannus southerly to the head thereof, to a beech tree standing by a small spring, and marked with the letters T. M., and thence south to the colony line of Connecticut, which runs in the rear of the town of Greenwich and Horseneck, and so by the said line as it runs westerly to Byram river, thence by the river (including the said river) to the head thereof, to two certain white ash trees standing on the north end of a certain bog meadow, marked with three letters, D. G., P. C., T. C., and thence westerly in a direct line to the head of Cohamong brook as it runs to the place where it begun, bounded west by Byram river, east by Mehannus river, north by Bedford line and Cohamong brook, and south by colony line, together with all the woods, underwoods, &c., &c. And whereas said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, &c., &c., by their indenture of lease and release bearing date the 18th and 19th days of September, in the fifth year of our reign, and for considerations therein mentioned, did grant and convey unto Thomas Wenham, Esq., and to his heirs and assigns, one tenth part of the said premises. And whereas the said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, George Booth, William Anderson, William Bond, John Persor, Daniel Clarke, John Clapp, Lewis Perant and Thomas Wenham, have since by their petition presented to our right trusty and well beloved cousin, Edward Viscount Cornbury, captain-general, and governor-in-chief, in and

---

<sup>a</sup> This deed is signed by the Indians, Serringoe, Magirack, Pawewack, Sackema, Wigzac, Shickham, Wasse, Waewagh Kemego, Warrea Sekis, Geshegeo pogh.

<sup>b</sup> See Alb. Rec. Book of Patents, lib. vii. 341.

<sup>c</sup> Cohamong brook empties into the west side of Mehanus river.

over our province of New York and territories thereon depending in America, and vice-admiral of the same, &c., in council therein, setting forth that having made some improvements on the said lands, and fearing some disputes may arise hereafter what shall be esteemed a settlement, &c., the which petition wee being minded to grant, *Know yee*, that for diverse considerations us thereunto moving of our especial grace, &c., wee have given, granted, released, ratified and confirmed, and in and by this present, for ourselves, our heirs and successors, do give, grant, release, ratify and confirm unto the said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, &c., &c., within the bounds and limits above in our said recited letters patent, &c., &c, in ten equal parts to be divided, &c., to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, &c., in free and common soccage, as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our county of Kent, within our realme of England, yielding, rendering, and paying therefor, yearly and every year henceforward, and unto our heirs, at our custom-house at New York to our collector or receiver general then for the time being, at or upon the feast day of the nativity of St. John the Baptist, the yearly rent or sum of £2 10s. current money of the province of New York, &c., this 25th day of Sept., in the seventh year of our reign, A.D. 1708.<sup>a</sup>

“ EDWARD CORNBURY.”

In 1724 we find the inhabitants of the *Liberty of North Castle* petitioning the court of general sessions for permission to erect a public pound.<sup>b</sup> Benjamin Platt appears to have been assessor for the middle patent in 1744.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the first of April, 1746, Jonathan Ogden and Benoni Platt were appointed trustees for the *middle patent*, also George Dennis and Caleb Fowler for the *west patent*, “to clear up the quit-rents.”<sup>d</sup>

In 1766, a partition of the *middle* and *west patent* took place, (in pursuance of an act of the lieutenant governor, the council and general assembly of the colony of New York, passed on the eighth day of January, 1762,) “for the more effectual collecting of his majesty’s quit-rents.” Upon the 23d day of June, 1766, the several allotments were balloted for, and sold to numerous individuals. Descendants of the original patentees still reside in the town; among them may be enumerated the Brundages, Griffens, Lockhards, Sillecks, Scofields and Clapps, &c., &c.

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Patents, No. vii. 383.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Court of Sessions, lib. B. 1.

<sup>c</sup> See New Castle for assessor of West Patent.

<sup>d</sup> Town Rec. The Woolsey family appear to have had a claim on the middle patent.

The following items occur in the town records :

“April ye 6th, 1736, at a lawful town meeting for to choose town officers in North Castle,” were elected,

George Dennis, Supervisor.

Moses Quimby, Clerk.

Jonathan Ogden, Constable.

Shubel Rowley, }  
Benjamin Carpenter, } Assessors.

Samuel Dean, }  
Shubel Rowley, } Highway  
Joseph Green, } Masters.

Jonathan Ogden, Pounder.

Samuel Dean, } Fence and  
John Merritt, } Damage Viewers.

“At a lawful town meeting held in North Castle on Tuesday the 7th of April, 1772, by the *West* and *Middle* patents to choose and elect town officers, and to make such prudential acts as said patents or the inhabitants thereof hath power, and shall think proper.” &c.

In 1778 it was voted that a committee of three be appointed to represent the town, “and with other members to represent the county.”

The village of North Castle is situated in a valley, about the centre of the town, with the hills rising boldly around it. The settlement of this place was commenced sometime prior to 1722, principally by a company of Englishmen from Rye, who gave it the name it now bears. North Castle at present contains a post-office, two churches, a Friends' meeting house, a school house, three stores, several dwellings, and the well known tavern stand of Samuel P. Smith.<sup>a</sup> Mile Square<sup>b</sup> is a pleasant hamlet adjoining it on the west, consisting of a tavern, several dwellings and stores.

St. Stephen's church, North Castle, is situated mid-way between the two settlements, on the road leading from White Plains to Bedford. From the printed parochial reports of 1843, we take

---

<sup>a</sup> In this tavern a party of Continental troops were stationed during the Revolutionary war

<sup>b</sup> This name occurs in a deed as early as 1764.

the following extract: "Episcopal services were commenced in a school-house, in the town of North Castle, in November, 1840, and were held here, once a fortnight, until the summer of 1842, when it was deemed expedient to occupy the log cabin in the village of Mile Square, in said town, as a place of public worship." "In this building a good congregation was gathered consisting of persons, who, although strangers to our services, were, notwithstanding, favorable to the church, attentive to its ministrations, and disposed to aid in its establishment. Immediately after the convention of 1842, "a church was organized, with the title of ST. STEPHEN'S Church, North Castle; and it was determined at once to erect, with strict regard to economy, a neat and substantial church edifice. The Lord, in an especial manner, blessed our undertaking. Several providential circumstances, which might be mentioned if space would allow, occurred to encourage and aid us. The work was accomplished without delay, and in a manner exceeding our most sanguine expectations. A beautiful church of wood, (42 by 36,) with a handsome tower, and vestry room (12 by 18,) in the rear, and gallery across, has been thoroughly finished by day's work, of the most substantial materials and workmanship, and completely painted with several coats of paint for the moderate cost of \$2000."

"It must be observed, however, that a small lot of ground eligibly situated, was given for a site, together with the timber for the frame, and the drawing of the materials. The builder also (Mr. L. Eggleston,) very generously gave off his usual profits."

"Two gentlemen in New York, presented the church, the one with a chandelier, the other with a pair of lamps for the pulpit, very acceptable gifts, both costly and ornamental."

"Without assistance from other parishes this church could not have been built. About \$675 were given by them."

The church was consecrated, September 13, by the bishop of the diocese, twelve of the clergy being in attendance. There is an interesting historical fact connected with the church in this town, which it may be well here to record.

Previous to the Revolution, a site was selected for a church edifice, not half a mile from the spot now occupied for this purpose, and was designated by the letter C, inscribed on a rock.

This letter is still legible. The present proprietor of the farm has the ancient deed for the lot of ground in his possession. For some reasons now unknown, it was determined to erect the church on another site, (then in the same town, now in New Castle,) six miles distant from the former. This was done, and that building, long since taken down, was called "*St. George's Church, North Castle.*"<sup>a</sup>

St. Stephen's Church, North Castle, was incorporated on the 23d of August, 1844. Israel Townsend and Samuel B. Ferris, churchwardens, John Merritt, Reuben M. Green, Leonard B. Tripp, Joseph Close, Zeah Eggleston, Elisha Sutton, Jonathan H. Green, and Samuel Townsend, vestrymen.<sup>b</sup> The Rev. Robert W. Harris, M. A., first and present incumbent.

*Notitia Parochialis.*

1844, communicants, 11; baptisms, 11.

The Methodist Episcopal church of this place was first incorporated on the 2d of February, 1792. Caleb Merritt, Sen., Othniel Sands, James Hall, Thomas Nash, Charles Green, and John Ferris, trustees.<sup>c</sup>

The Friends meeting house was erected about 1798.

A little west from the latter flows Wampus brook, which issues out of the pond of that name. Upon this stream is the grist mill of Mr. Evans,<sup>d</sup> and the woollen manufactory of Job and Wm. Sands and Co. One of the principal proprietors of *Bedford New Purchase*, in 1746, was Othniel Sands,<sup>e</sup> whose son Caleb subse-

<sup>a</sup> Parochial report of the Rev. Robert W. Harris in 1843. See Journal of the 59th Convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the diocese of New York MDCCLXIII. 137. The rock above mentioned is situated on the property of Mr. Job Sands.

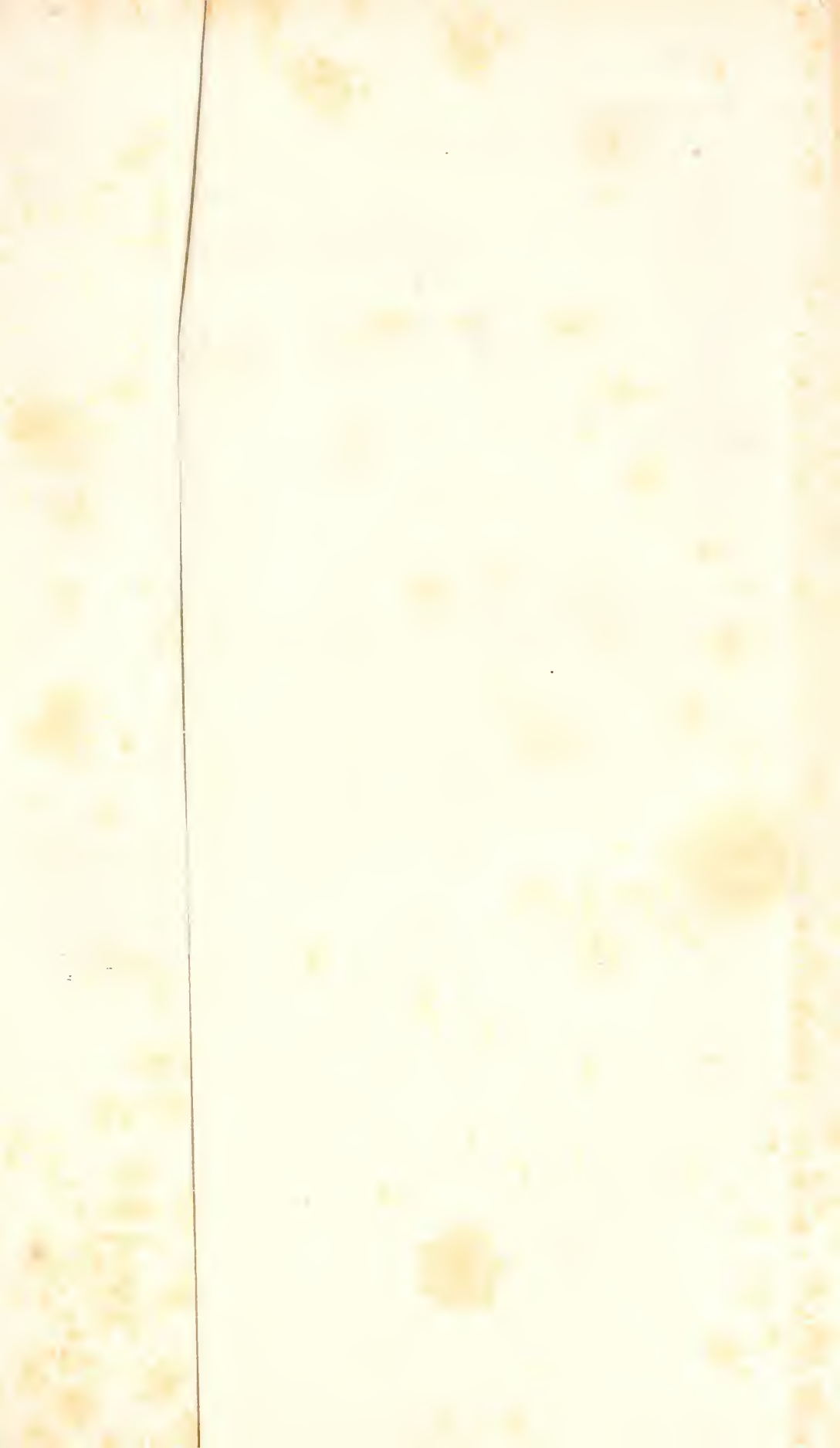
<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. B. 39.

<sup>c</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 30. A second incorporation occurs on the 30th of May, 1800, and that of the Wesley Methodist Episcopal chapel on the 3d of April, 1824.

<sup>d</sup> Upon the 5th of April, 1737, John Halleck received permission to erect a mill on Wampus brook, near Abel Weeks's.

<sup>e</sup> In 1728, James Sands of Nassau Island, conveyed to his son Othniel Sands, a farm situated in the township of Oyster Bay.

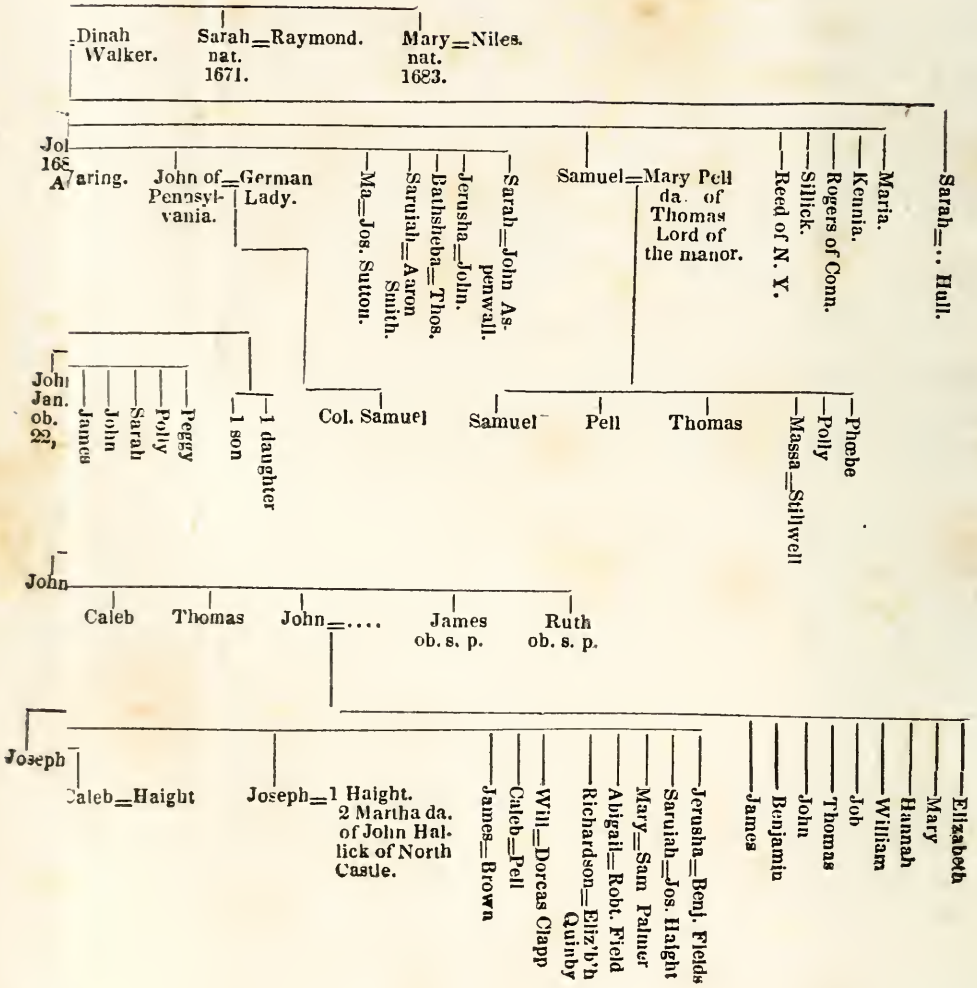




E.

grant per fesse or and gules.

sland.



quently removed to North Castle. On the 16th of October, 1790, Thomas Sands (son of Caleb) purchased of William Lating and Sarah his wife, "one hundred and twenty acres of land and all the buildings and *mills* on the same, which said land and mills are situated in the town of North Castle," &c. The Sands family were originally seated at St. Bees, in Cumberland county, England, and are descended from Richard del Sandys, who was returned a knight for the shire in 1377.<sup>a</sup> Of this family was Comfort Sands of Sands Point, Long Island, who "united with his brothers, Richardson and Joshua, in a contract with Robert Morris, to supply the northern army with provisions for 1782."<sup>b</sup>



Colonel Jameson's head-quarters at North Castle The building attached to the barn on the left is the one in which André was confined.

Within a few rods from Mr. Sands' residence stands an old wooden barn, formerly the head quarters of Lieutenant Colonel Jameson of the Continental army. Here (on the 23d of September, 1780,) the unfortunate André was delivered up to that officer with all the papers which had been found upon his person.<sup>c</sup> "The course pursued by Jameson (observes Mr. Sparks)

<sup>a</sup> Burke's Hist. of the Commoners of England.

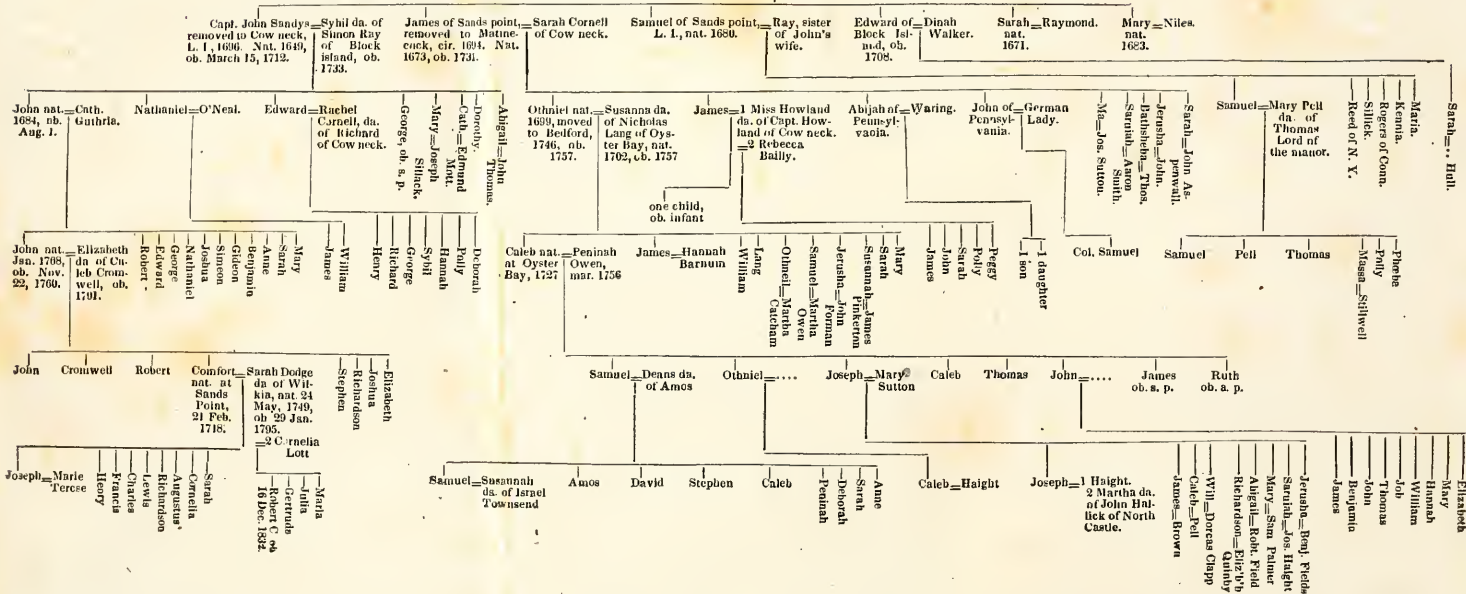
<sup>b</sup> Thompson's Hist. of Long Island. For a further account of this family, see pedigree.

<sup>c</sup> The room occupied by André is still shown to the visitor.

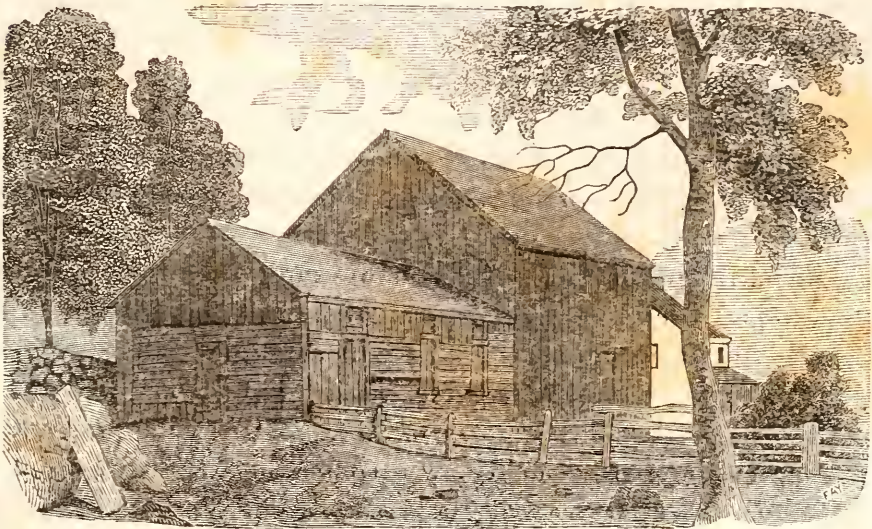
## PEDIGREE OF SANDS OF NORTHCASTLE.

Arms, or, a fesse, dancettée betw. three crosses bottonée fitchée gu. Crest a griffin segreant per fesse or and gules.

Capt. James Sandys, a native of Reading, county of Berkshire, England, who emigrated to Plymouth, Mass. in 1638. In 1690, with fifteen others, he purchased Block Island of the Indians, called Manisses; for which they obtained a charter in 1672 by the name of Storm. Nat. 1622, ob. 13 March, 1695, et. 73.



quently removed to North Castle. On the 16th of October, 1790, Thomas Sands (son of Caleb) purchased of William Latting and Sarah his wife, "one hundred and twenty acres of land and all the buildings and *mills* on the same, which said land and mills are situated in the town of North Castle," &c. The Sands family were originally seated at St. Bees, in Cumberland county, England, and are descended from Richard del Sandys, who was returned a knight for the shire in 1377.<sup>a</sup> Of this family was Comfort Sands of Sands Point, Long Island, who "united with his brothers, Richardson and Joshua, in a contract with Robert Morris, to supply the northern army with provisions for 1782."<sup>b</sup>



Colonel Jameson's head-quarters at North Castle The building attached to the barn on the left is the one in which André was confined.

Within a few rods from Mr. Sands' residence stands an old wooden barn, formerly the head quarters of Lieutenant Colonel Jameson of the Continental army. Here (on the 23d of September, 1780,) the unfortunate André was delivered up to that officer with all the papers which had been found upon his person.<sup>c</sup> "The course pursued by Jameson (observes Mr. Sparks)

<sup>a</sup> Burke's Hist. of the Commoners of England.

<sup>b</sup> Thompson's Hist. of Long Island. For a further account of this family, see pedigree.

<sup>c</sup> The room occupied by André is still shown to the visitor.

was extraordinary and inexplicable. On examining the papers, he found them to be in the undisguised hand-writing of General Arnold, with which he was perfectly acquainted. Their contents and the manner of their being found, was such, as one would think, could not fail to excite suspicion in the most obtuse mind, whatever might be the rank or character of the party concerned."<sup>a</sup>

“ With these papers in his hands, bearing incontestable marks of their origin, and procured in a way that indicated most unequivocally the designs of the person with whom they were found, Jameson resolved to send the prisoner immediately to Arnold! How far he was influenced by the persuasion or advice of André is uncertain; but it cannot be doubted, that all the address of the latter was used to advance a purpose, which opened the only possible door for their escape. Could he proceed to Arnold at West Point before the report of his capture should go abroad, it might be practicable for them both to get within the British lines, or to take such other steps for securing themselves, as the extremity of their affairs should make necessary. It has been represented, that André’s magnanimity was the principal motive by which he was actuated in concealing the agency of Arnold. His subsequent conduct gives him every claim to the praise of honor and nobleness of mind; yet on the present occasion, it is obvious, that his own personal safety was as much consulted, to say the least, as his sentiments of generosity towards his associate.

Jameson penned a hasty line to Arnold, saying merely that he sent forward, under the charge of Lieutenant Allen and a guard, a certain John Anderson, who had been taken while going towards New York. He had a passport, said Jameson, signed in your name; and a parcel of papers taken from under his stockings, which I think of a very dangerous tendency. He then described these papers, and added that he had sent them to General Washington.

There appears to have been some misgiving in the mind of

---

<sup>a</sup> For the André papers, see Greenburgh.

Jameson, although he was not prepared to suspect the patriotism and political fidelity of his commanding general. Washington said afterwards that, either on account of his "egregious folly, or bewildered conception, he seemed lost in astonishment, and not to know what he was doing." This is as lenient a judgment, perhaps, as can be passed on his conduct. No one ever doubted the purity of his intentions. Perceiving the mischievous tendency of the papers, and knowing them to have been copied by Arnold, at the same moment that he sent André under guard to West Point, he dispatched an express with the papers to meet General Washington, then supposed to be on the road returning from his interview with the French commanders at Hartford. Two reasons were subsequently assigned by Jameson, for a course which seemed so extraordinary to every body else; first, that he thought the affair was an imposition by the British, intending to destroy the confidence of the Americans in Arnold; secondly, that, not knowing the Vulture was up the river, he supposed Arnold could not get to the enemy, without passing through the American out-posts on the lines, where he would be taken.

Major Tallmadge, next in command under Jameson was absent on duty below White Plains when André was brought in, and did not return till evening. He was filled with astonishment when Jameson related what had happened, and could not refrain from expressing his surprise at the course that had been pursued. To his mind the case was so clear, or at all events was attended by such peculiar circumstances, as not only to justify but require prompt, bold, and energetic measures on the part of Jameson. In short he declared his suspicions of Arnold, and offered to take on himself the entire responsibility of proceeding upon that ground. To this idea Jameson would not listen. He was agitated and irresolute at first, but finally refused to sanction any measures, which should imply a distrust of Arnold.

Failing in this object, Tallmadge earnestly requested that the prisoner might be brought back, to which Jameson with some reluctance consented. As the parties from below had been higher up the country than the post at North Castle, there was room to apprehend that he might be recaptured, and this was

probably the prevailing reason of Jameson for countermanding his order. Strange as it may seem, however, (if any thing can seem strange in such a string of blunders,) he would insist on sending forward the letter he had written to Arnold, as will appear by his order of countermand to Lieutenant Allen:—

“From some circumstances, which I have just discovered,” said he to that officer, “I have reason to fear that a party of the enemy is above; and as I would not have Anderson retaken, or get away, I desire that you will proceed to Lower Salem with him, and deliver him to Captain Hoogland. You will leave the guard with Captain Hoogland, also, except one man, whom you may take along. You may proceed to West Point, and deliver the letter to General Arnold. You may also show him this, that he may know the reason why the prisoner is not sent on. You will please return as soon as you can.”

The messenger, with his letter, overtook Lieutenant Allen, and he came back with his charge to North Castle late at night, or early the next morning, although from the tenor of the letter, it might be inferred, that Colonel Jameson supposed he would proceed by some other route to Lower Salem. As soon as Major Tallmadge saw the prisoner, and especially when he observed his manner of walking to and fro on the floor, and turning on his heel to retrace his steps, he was struck with his military deportment, and conceived that he had been bred to arms. Jameson gradually came into the same way of thinking, though there is no proof of his confidence in Arnold having been shaken; but he agreed with Tallmadge, that it was best to keep Anderson in close custody, till something more should be known about him, or till orders should be received from Arnold or General Washington.<sup>a</sup> From North Castle the prisoner was subsequently removed to Lower Salem.<sup>b</sup>

The hills which lie along the western side of the town present a very rough and rocky appearance, and in some places rise to considerable heights. Upon the edge of one of them is a remarkable split rock, which was, in all probability, rent asunder ages

---

<sup>a</sup> Spark's Life of Benedict Arnold, 226, 7, 8, 9, 30, 31, 32, 33.

<sup>b</sup> See Lewisborough.



ago, by some convulsion of nature. The gap is commonly called Brimstone Alley. Hard by is a dismal cavern, styled the Devil's Den. In the northeasterly corner of the town lies the Dark Valley, a part of which falls within the limits of New Castle. From the gloomy woods of this valley issues the northern branch of the Bronx.<sup>a</sup> On the east side of the Dark Valley rises Whip-poor-will Hill, an appellation given to it on account of its being a haunt of that well known bird.<sup>b</sup> "The notes of this solitary bird, (observes Wilson, the ornithologist,) from the ideas which are naturally associated with them, seem like the voice of an old friend, and are listened to by almost all with great interest. At first they issue from some retired part of the woods, the glen or mountain; in a few evenings, perhaps, we hear them from the adjoining coppice, the garden fence, the road before the door, and even from the roof of the dwelling house, long after the family have retired to rest. Some of the more ignorant and superstitious consider this near approach as foreboding no good to the family—nothing less than sickness, misfortune, or death, to some of its members. These visits, however, so often occur without any bad consequences, that this superstitious dread seems on the decline. He is now a regular acquaintance. Every morning and evening his shrill and rapid repetitions are heard from the adjoining woods; and when two or more are calling out at the same time, as is often the case in the pairing season, and at no great distance from each other, the noise, mingling with the echoes from the mountains, is really surprising." "These notes seem pretty plainly to articulate the words which have been generally applied to them—*Whip-poor-will*—the first and last syllable being uttered with great emphasis, and the whole in about a second to each repetition; but when two or more males meet, their Whip-poor-will altercations become much more rapid and incessant, as if each were straining to overpower or silence the other." "Towards midnight they generally become silent, un-

---

<sup>a</sup> The eastern branch of the Bronx originates from the Rye ponds, and, running through Kensico, unites with the northern in the southern part of this town.

<sup>b</sup> *Caprimulgus Vociferus*.—*Wilson*.

less in clear moonlight, when they are heard, with little intermission, till morning. If there be a creek near, with high, precipitous, bushy banks, they are sure to be found in such situations. During the day, they sit in the most retired, solitary, and deep-shaded parts of the woods, generally on high ground, where they repose in silence." "I shall not, (continues Mr. Wilson,) in the manner of some, attempt to amuse the reader with a repetition of the unintelligible names given to this bird by the Indians, or the superstitious notions generally entertained of it by the same people. These seem as various as the tribes, or even families, with which you converse; scarcely two of them will tell you the same story. It is easy, however, to observe, that this, like the owl and other nocturnal birds, is held by them in a kind of superstitious awe, as a bird with which they wish to have as little to do as possible. The superstition of the Indian<sup>a</sup> differs very little from that of an illiterate German, or Scots Highlander, or the less informed of any other nation. It suggests ten thousand fantastic notions to each, and these, instead of being recorded with all the punctilio of the most important truths, seem only fit to be forgotten. Whatever, among either of these people, is strange and not comprehended, is usually attributed to supernatural agency; and an unexpected sight, or uncommon incident, is often ominous of good, but more generally, of bad fortune to the parties. Night, to minds of this complexion, brings with it its kindred horrors, its apparitions, strange sounds, and awful sights; and this solitary and inoffensive bird, being a frequent wanderer in these hours of ghosts and hobgoblins, is considered by the Indians as being, by habit and repute, little better than one of them. All these people, however, are not so credulous: I have conversed with Indians who treated these silly notions with contempt."

---

<sup>a</sup> "The Indians say, that when the leaf of the white oak, which puts forth in the spring, is of the size of the ear of a mouse, it is time to plant corn: they observe, that now the whip-poor-will has arrived, and is continually hovering over them, calling out his Indian name 'Wekolis,' in order to remind them of the planting times, 'Hackihack!' 'go to planting corn!'"—*Yamoyden*; note to stanza 27.

The author of the "History of Virginia" makes mention of a bird, said to contain the soul of one of their princes, by the Indians. P. 185.

The favorite places of resort for these birds are on high, dry situations; it is probably on this account, that they are to be found here in such numbers. The following lines are so appropriate, that no apology can be necessary for their insertion.

## SONG OF THE WHIP-POOR-WILL.

Swiftly the hours of day-light have fled,  
 Dark hang the clouds o'er the sun's wavy bed;  
 Stilly the cool dews of evening are falling,  
 And the night-loving owl from her wood haunt is calling,  
 Now swiftly from my dark home I'll silently fly,  
 And glide through the glen with my bright beaming eye.

On the slope of the hill is the gleam of my wings,  
 Through the limbs of the oak where the rain prophet rings,  
 By the skirt of the green wood where hangs the light dew,  
 O'er the grass of the meadow my flight I pursue;  
 Through the star lighted paths of the forest I'll fly,  
 And pierce the gray gloom with my bright gleaming eye.

Wo! to the night moth that flits in my way,  
 Wo! to the tribes in the still air that play,  
 Wo! to the wretch in the night dew that sings,  
 For the death spirit waits on the rush of my wings;  
 High and low, swift and slow, through the shadow I fly,  
 While the wolf's in her track, and the owl hooteth nigh;  
 When the moon from her cloud-cinctured ear brightly gleams,  
 And starts the shades with her tremulous beams,  
 Then loud in the night winds I pour my wild song,  
 Whip-poor-will, Whip-poor-will, through the mists rolling gray,  
 And the tremulous moon-beams on high wings I play.

Now the owl to the gloom of the forest has flown,  
 And the deer to her covert hath stealthily gone;  
 The lone prowling wolf to his lair is returning,  
 For night's shadows are lost in the blush of the morning,  
 Now swift to my dark home I'll silently fly  
 And close on the daylight my broad gleaming eye.

[Knickerbocker Magazine.

Whip-poor-will hill is very high and contains much arable land; especially adapted for pasturage. With the exception of

Prospect hill, it overtops all others in the neighborhood. In this vicinity is Wampus Pond,<sup>a</sup> whence issues a tributary to the Byram river, as mentioned in the description of New Castle. Byram Lake lies in the north-east part of the town towards Bedford, not far from the village of North Castle. This lake is fed by numerous springs from the Cohamong or Armonck hills, which border it on the east. The north western shore is bounded by steep rocky acclivities covered with woods.<sup>b</sup> It is an extensive and beautiful sheet of water, constituting the head of Byram (Armonck) river, which waters the southern part of the town. The lake abounds with pickerel, which were introduced here from the western lakes by a number of enterprising gentlemen in the neighborhood.<sup>c</sup>

On the eastern shore of the lake is situated the estate and residence of Samuel Lyon, Esq., whose family have been long settled in this part of the town.

In 1772, Roger Lyon of North Castle held a captain's commission in the middle battalion of the Westchester militia. At one period of the Revolution, this gentleman had the honor of entertaining General Washington and suite on their route to White Plains. It is related by his grand son that during the entertainment, Captain Lyon being blind, handed the General a draught of good cheer, with these words, "General! the ladies say you are a very handsome man, but I cannot see." "Tell the ladies," rejoined Washington, "I am afraid they are as blind as yourself."<sup>d</sup> Samuel Lyon, his eldest son, received from Governor Tryon a commission in the Westchester militia, which he afterwards resigned for a major's commission in the continental army, whereof Samuel Drake was captain. During the war, Major Lyon was unfortunately surprised in the night, by a party of Totten's refugee corps. The marauders after the most inhuman treatment, plundered the house and farm, and carried off

<sup>a</sup> It is said that clowder fish were very abundant in this pond prior to the introduction of pickerel. See page 372.

<sup>b</sup> A fine specimen of the white-headed or bald eagle (*Falco Leucocephalus*) was shot on the shores of the lake in 1840.

<sup>c</sup> Messrs. Hunt, Lyon, Carpenter and Tripp.

<sup>d</sup> The silver cup used upon this occasion is still preserved in the family.

their prisoner to New York. His brother Capt. Gilbert Lyon also held a commission in the continental service.<sup>a</sup> The son of Major Lyon, is the present Samuel Lyon, Esq. of North Castle. Opposite the site of the old residence on Lyon hill, lies the family cemetery, which contains, among other memorials, the following.

In  
Memory of  
MAJOR SAMUEL LYON,  
who departed  
this life,  
January 23, 1819,  
Æ. 71 years, 8 mo. and  
9 days.

In  
Memory of  
MARY, Wife of  
SAMUEL LYON,  
who departed this life,  
January 10, 1792.  
Æ. 84.

About a mile east from Byram Lake is situated the Cohamong Pond, so denominated from the adjoining hills. This pond has no observable inlet, and is said to be of great depth. There is a delightful eminence in the vicinity, from which the spectator has a noble prospect, comprehending a horizon to the north, east and south of forty miles at least.

The name of the *Middle Patent* is still applied to all that beautiful district of country lying in the north-east corner of the township. Within this part of North Castle rises the Mehanas river, which after running some distance north into Bedford, turns and takes a southerly course, forming the boundary between North Castle and Poundrige on the east. In the Mahanas valley is a small settlement consisting of a Methodist church and several scattered dwellings. The Methodist society appears to have been first organized here in 1825. A new church edifice has been recently erected on a beautiful site, commanding a good view of the valley. Upon an eminence near the meeting house is the burying ground of the ancient proprietors. The oldest grave stones are inscribed as follows.

---

<sup>a</sup> This individual was likewise captured by the enemy and confined with his brother in the New York Sugar-house. Capt. Gilbert Lyon is the father of Mr. Jesse Lyon of Eastchester.

S x B  
J. 29, 1743.

Here lies the  
body of Samuel Banks,  
who departed this life,  
the 19th of September,  
1773, in the 86th year  
of his age.

A. H. N.  
1776.

From the Rye ponds, situated on the southern border of this town, issues the principal branch of the Bronx river. Upon this stream stands the small hamlet of Kenseco, formerly called Robbin's Mills. Here is a Methodist church, two woollen manufactories, a saw and grist mill, a spring and carriage manufactory, two stores and several dwellings. In the north-west angle of Connecticut which projects into this town, lies the boundary rock, marked with the royal initials, G. R.<sup>a</sup> The *heights of North Castle* are well known in the annals of the Revolution. It was to these hills that General Washington retired soon after the battle of White Plains. Upon the summit of *Fort Hill*, in the vicinity of Rye-pond, vestiges of a military encampment are still to be seen. *Camp Field* is also situated in this town. "The general surface of North Castle is broken into hills and valleys, but all admit of cultivation, either as arable, meadow or pasture lands."<sup>b</sup> "The soil is a sandy loam and clay."<sup>c</sup> The principal growth of wood consists of oak of all kinds, chesnut, hickory, elm, locust, &c., &c. In our topographical description of the town we have shown that it is a well watered district.

---

<sup>a</sup> Four towns abut upon Clapp's ridge in the south-east corner of North Castle.

<sup>b</sup> Spafford's Gazetteer.

<sup>c</sup> Disturnell's Gazetteer.



St. James's Church, North Salem.

## NORTH SALEM.

NORTH SALEM is situated twenty four miles north of the village of White Plains, distant fifty six miles from New York, and one hundred and twenty two from Albany, bounded north by Dutchess county, east

by the state of Connecticut, south by South Salem, and west by Somers. Its extent east and west is about six miles, medial width four miles.

Prior to the Revolution, the two towns of Upper and Lower Salem constituted the old township of Salem proper, within Cortlandt's manor. The present township was erected on the 7th of March, 1788.

Upon the 8th of August, A. D. 1699, Sachima Wicker, sachem of Kightawonck and his associates sold to Stephanus van Cortlandt, all their rights as owners and proprietors in the "land lying and being within Cortlandt's manor, beginning on the south side of Kightawonck creek, and so along the said creek to a place called Kewighecock, and from thence along a creek called Peppeneghek to the head thereof, and then *due east to the limits of Connecticut*, and from thence northerly along the limits of Connecticut aforesaid to the river *Mattegticos* ten miles, and from thence due west to the Hudson river, &c., &c."<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> See Cortlandt.

A portion of the Salem lands, if not the whole, may have originally belonged to the great sachem Catonah, whose territory extended from the Sound as far north as Danbury in Connecticut; his possessions on the west appear to have been bounded by the western line of Bedford.

"In the year 1708, John Belden, Samuel Keeler, Matthew Seymour, Matthias St. John, and other inhabitants of Norwalk, purchased a large tract of land lying between that town and Danbury, bounded west on *the partition line* between Connecticut and New York. This purchase was made of Catonah, the chief sachem, and the other Indians, who were the proprietors of that part of the country."<sup>a</sup>

Van der Donck, the historian, in his map of 1656, locates the Indian village of Pechquenakonck somewhere in this vicinity. The Indian burying ground is situated on the estate of the Hon. Isaac Purdy, in this town, a little northwest of the mansion house. In 1778 upwards of forty mounds were visible. The *Titicus* River still retains a portion of its ancient Indian name, *Mutighticoos*.<sup>b</sup> This beautiful stream rises from the West Mountain, in the town of Ridgefield, Connecticut, upon the estate of Thomas Smith, commonly designated as the "*Indian Farm*." Tradition asserts that the *Mutighticoos* was sometimes called *Buffalo Creek*. What similarity exists between the Indian name and its English substitute, or if any, we are unable at this distant period to determine. The latter certainly bears ample testimony to the fact, that the vast gorges of the Highlands and these vales once abounded with the buffalo.<sup>c</sup> Van der Donck, the patroon of Yonkers, writing in 1656, says of this animal—"Buffaloes are also tolerably plenty: these animals mostly keep towards the southwest, where few people go." "Again, it is remarked (says the same writer) that the half of these animals have

---

<sup>a</sup> Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut. Philip Money, a lineal descendant of the aboriginal proprietors was living in this town, A. D. 1784. Absalom, the son of Philip, left issue, Philip and Philander, besides a daughter Sarah.

<sup>b</sup> So called in the Cortlandt Manor map.

<sup>c</sup> Vast quantities of arrow and spear heads are found on the higher grounds of this town, showing that it was once a great hunting country.



disappeared and left the country."<sup>a</sup> It ought to be remembered that, long after the discovery of this country by the Dutch in 1609, and up to a very late period, Salem and the adjoining territory was an unexplored wilderness. A small tributary of the Mutighticoos bears the Indian name of Mopus.

Stephanus van Cortlandt, the first grantee under the Indians, by his last will, dated 14th of April, 1700, devised and bequeathed the whole manor of Cortlandt to his eleven children, who thus became seized in fee. In 1734 the devisees and the legal heirs of those who were dead, made a partition of the manor among themselves. By this division, North Salem fell to the share of Mr. Andrew Miller, Col. John Schuyler, and Stephen de Lancey, in the following order: north lot, No. 8, Andrew Miller; ditto, No. 9, John Schuyler; ditto, No. 10, Stephen de Lancey.

The latter individual subsequently became vested in lot No. 9. Stephen de Lancey married Anne van Cortlandt, one of the above devisees, and left issue three sons and two daughters. By will, Stephen de Lancey devised all his property in this town to his eldest son, James de Lancey. On the 29th of December, 1744, James de Lancey conveyed all his lands in North Salem to his son, Stephen de Lancey,<sup>b</sup> whereby the latter stood seized for the use of the same for life, with remainder to his issue male, in fee tail male.

This indenture, made the twenty-ninth day of December, in the year one thousand seven hundred and forty-four, between James de Lancey, Esq., chief justice of the province of New York, of the one part, and Stephen de Lancey, son of the said James de Lancey, of the other part, witnesseth, that the said James, for, and in consideration of the natural love and affection which he, the said James, beareth to his said second son Stephen, doth for him and his heirs covenant and grant to and with the said Stephen and his heirs, that the said James and his heirs shall and will, from henceforth, stand and be seized of, and in all that tract or parcel of land in the manor of Cortlandt, in the county of Westchester, distinguished and known by the name of north lot number nine, and north lot number ten, whereof the said James is now seized of an estate in fee simple, to the use of the said James for and during the term

---

<sup>a</sup> Van der Donck's Hist. of the New Netherlands, N. Y. Hist. Soc. vol. i. 168.

<sup>b</sup> For a full account of this family, see Mamaroneck.

of his natural life, and after his decease to and for the use of his said son Stephen for and during the term of his natural life, and after his decease to the use and behoof of the heirs male of his body, lawfully begotten, and for default of such issue, to the use and behoof of the right heirs of him, the said James, for ever—

Provided always, and it is hereby covenanted and agreed by and between the said parties to these presents, that it shall and may be lawful to and for the said James at any time or times during his natural life by his last will in writing, by him signed and published in the presence of two or more credible witnesses, or by any other writing or writings by him signed and sealed in the presence of two or more credible witnesses, to revoke or alter all or any the use or uses of all or any part of the said land and premises, any thing in these presents contained to the contrary notwithstanding. In witness whereof, the parties to these presents have interchangeably put their seals the day and year above written.

JAMES DE LANCEY.

Sealed and delivered in the presence of

A. De Peyster,

J. Roberts.

The De Lancey Patent, as it was sometimes called, embraced Great North Lot No. 9 and 10 of the manor of Cortlandt. These were again subdivided into thirty six smaller lots or farms. The whole was about four miles square. In the year 1769, Stephen de Lancey, and Hannah, his wife, conveyed to the Rev. Epene-tus Townsend certain lands situate in North Lot No. 10. The same year also part of farm No. 12, in Great North Lot No. 10, to Nathaniel Delavan. During the year 1774, Stephen de Lancey released certain lots in the town to the Carpenters, Baileys, Rodgers, Lobdens, Nashs, Purdys, Nortons, Tituses and Reynolds, &c. &c.

The following items are taken from the rent rolls of the De Lancey family.

“Lot No. 25, Timothy van Scoy, tenant of one-half, for cash due for rent, January ye 1st, 1773, £1 5s.” “No. 12, Crow Hill lot leased to Hannah Delavan, wife of Abraham Delavan, to cash due for rent, January ye 1st, 1774, the sum of £4,” &c., &c.

Upon the 1st of January, 1795, Stephen de Lancey conveyed all the remainder of his estate in this town to his brother John Peter de Lancey of Mamaroneck. The last will and testament of Stephen de Lancey commences in the following manner.

“In the name of God, Amen, I, Stephen de Lancey a reader of divine service of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Beeckmantown, in the county of Dutchess and state of New York, esquire, and first principally I do commit my precious, immortal, and never dying soul into the hands of my most merciful Creator, whose I am and whom I desire to serve in the Holy Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, who giveth life and health and all things, hoping, trusting, and relying only on the most meritorious satisfaction of our Lord Jesus Christ, before whose dreadful tribunal I and all mankind must appear and give a strict account of all their works, whether they be good or whether they are evil, and who, I trust and am persuaded, shed his most precious blood on the altar of the cross for my eternal salvation, &c., &c. In conclusion, he desires his body may be buried under the chancel of the church at Beeckmantown, unless his brother should order otherwise,” &c.

John Peter de Lancey, by his last will, dated the 28th of January, 1823, devised all his farm and land at North Salem, in trust to his two daughters, Elizabeth Caroline, and Martha Arabella de Lancey. A portion of these lands are still vested in the De Lancey family.

Prior to 1731 North Salem embraced six miles (in length) of a tract of land called the Oblong. Upon the 8th of June, 1731, his excellency, John Montgomerie, governor of the province, granted letters patent to Thomas Hawley and Company for all that “tract of land situated north of and near unto Long pond, which is bounded as follows, viz. : beginning at Jonah Keeler’s<sup>a</sup> north-west corner, and running north seventy-seven degrees and a half, containing three hundred and twenty-six acres.” The Oblong, or east patent, was situated on the east side of the town.<sup>b</sup> On the 5th of June, 1749, James Brewer purchased of Thomas Hawley and Company, fifty acres, bounded west by the twenty mile line, which he afterwards conveyed to Solomon Close of Greenwich.

The Hawleys were originally from the town of Reading in

---

<sup>a</sup> This individual was the father of Jedediah Keeler, whose sons are the present Job, Nathan, and Jeremiah Keeler, of North Salem.

<sup>b</sup> The south-east corner of North Salem still retains the shape of the oblong.

Connecticut. Of this family was Ezekiel Hawley, son of Joseph Hawley,<sup>a</sup> one of the proprietors of the Oblong in 1754. Ezekiel Hawley was a commissioned officer in the continental service and chairman of the committee of public safety; in the latter capacity he served throughout the Revolution. He died suddenly in 1788, leaving four sons, Ezekiel, Peter, Joel, and David. Joel, the third son, was the father of the present Alfred S. Hawley, who occupies the ancient homestead.

The following entry, in the town book, relates to the first election of town officers.

*North Salem this sixth day of April, 1790.*

"A town meeting was held at the town house in North Salem, and that John Quick, Esq., was chosen moderator, (after which) the freeholders and inhabitants of said town proceeded on to choosing town officers, and doing all other business which concerned said town. And that Daniel Delavan was chosen Clerk."

John Quick, chosen Supervisor.

John Delavan,	}	Commissioners of Roads.
Jonathan Hallett,		
Uriah Wallace,		

Thomas Smith,	}	Assessors.
Caleb Smith,		
Daniel Purdy,		

Thomas Vail,	}	Overseers of the Poor.
Timothy Vanscoy,		
Thomas Vail,		

Timothy Vanscoy,	}	Trustees to provide a place for the receipts for the poor.
Benajah Star,		
Stephen Baker,		

Michajah Fuller,	}	Path Masters.
Benjamin Close,		
Jacob Wallace,		
David Baxter,		
Isaac Keeler,		
Reuben Zump,		

Solomon Close,	}
----------------	---

---

<sup>a</sup> This individual was a distinguished scholar and antiquarian.

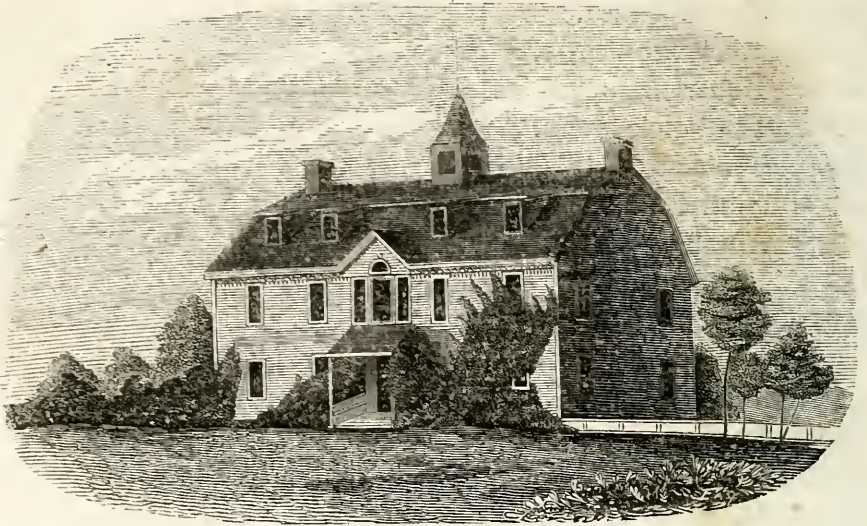
David Smith,	}	Path Masters.
Ebenezer Purdy,		
Robert Bloomer,		
Frederick Knox,		
Thomas Williams,		
John Finch,		
Abraham Knox,		
Michajah Fuller,	}	Fence Viewers.
Abraham Vanscoy,		
Jonathan Brown,		
Thomas Baxter,		
Stephen Baker,		
John Knox,		
Abraham Purdy,		
John Quick, jr.	}	
Gilbert Bayley,		
Daniel Delavan, Pounder.		
William Rogers, Constable.		
Solomon Close, Collector.		

The surface of North Salem is in part covered with lofty hills ; the soil, various, but chiefly composed of " a gravelly and clay loam, well adapted to grass and summer crops."<sup>a</sup> The course of the Mutighticoos river, through the centre of this town is marked by beautiful mountain scenery, and rich tracts of meadow land, which skirt the margin of the stream. The Mutighticoos empties into the Croton a little south of Dean's bridge. In the north-east corner of the town lies Peach pond, a large sheet of water covering over four hundred acres of ground. At no great distance from it is situated Beaver pond.

The village of North Salem occupies a beautiful position on the north bank of the Mutighticoos, commanding a fine view of the valley and surrounding mountains. It contains about 200 inhabitants, thirty-five dwellings, one Episcopal, one Presbyterian, one Methodist and one Universalist church, two taverns, three stores, one paper mill, one grist mill, and one clothiers' works. A little east of the village stands the North Salem academy.

---

<sup>a</sup> Disturnell's Gazetteer.



Academy, North Salem.

“This edifice was erected between the year 1770 and 1775, by Stephen de Lancey, one of the principal proprietors of this town. It was intended for his own residence, but was not finished as such, as he soon after removed. In 1786 it was purchased by a company and completed as an Academy, which went into operation about that date, under the care of the Rev. Amzi Lewis. During several years it continued in a very flourishing state under Mr. Lewis, and was incorporated by the regents of the university, April 19th, 1790, on the application of Benjamin Haight and thirty-eight others. It was the first incorporated academy in the county, and the third in the state; Erasmus Hall at Flatbush, and Clinton Academy in East Hampton, having been incorporated near the close of 1787. Many individuals who afterwards became eminent, were prepared for college or finished their education here.” Among the most distinguished may be reckoned Daniel D. Tompkins, vice president of the United States, Colonel Tallmadge and brother, and the Hon. James Kent, L. L. D. “After the removal of Mr. Lewis, the institution appears to have declined for a few years. A revival of its prosperity, however, occurred about 1801, under the Rev. Mr. McNiece. This gentleman is said to have been one of the Irish patriots of 1795, who left his country at the same time with Emmet, Adrain, McNeven and others, and for the same cause. He was a man of

learning and an eloquent preacher of the Presbyterian denomination, and the Academy under him had at one time eighty scholars in attendance. From this period the reports to the regents indicate great fluctuations in the number as well as in the advancement of the scholars. Some years present no report from the trustees, from which we may imply that the building was not occupied as a school during a sufficient portion of the year (four months) to entitle them to a share of the literature fund, or that the scholars were not sufficiently advanced to be reported in the higher branches of study. The reports of other years indicate a better condition. And among the teachers are mentioned the Rev. Herman Dagget, Rev. Abraham Purdy, A.M., Ebenezer Close, Dr. Samuel B. Mead, Rev. Hiram Jelliff, John C. Jones, and G. S. Tozer.

For the last eight years North Salem Academy has held a respectable standing among its sister institutions in this part of the state; sometime numbering nearly one hundred students and generally during the winter sessions, from seventy to ninety. The last annual catalogue contained the names of one hundred and forty-five pupils. During the revolution, the Academy was used as a jail and court house for the detention and trial of refractory Tories. Here one Paine was tried and condemned as a spy; he was executed about half a mile from the Academy, though it appears that circumstances afterward threw some doubt upon his guilt. It is said that a reprieve was forwarded from headquarters, and that when the unfortunate man was swung off, the bearer had just reached the Episcopal church, which was a mile as the road then ran, from the place of execution; he was of course too late. When the French army passed through this town in 1781, on their way from Rhode Island to Dobb's Ferry, where they crossed the Hudson to join Washington, they encamped near the Academy two days, and the officers occupied the building."<sup>a</sup> The situation of the Academy is exceedingly beautiful, and the view of the Mutigticoos valley is such as can seldom

---

<sup>a</sup> Communicated by Mr. John F. Jenkins, A. M., principal of the North Salem Academy.

be equalled. The moderate distance from the rail-road, combined with the great advantages for education, presented by retirement and tranquility, justly entitle this institution to a large share of public patronage.

The present board of trustees consists of

	Knapp Remington, Esq., president,
John Close, secretary,	Samuel H. Smith, treasurer.
Epenetus Wallace, M. D.,	Zabud June,
Epenetus Howe,	Thaddeus C. Quick,
Richard H. Lockwood,	Underhill W. Smith,
Ezra Finch,	Stephen Ryder,
Isaac D. Smith,	James R. Howe,
Amzi Close,	Isaac H. Purdy,
James Egglestone,	Anson Lobdell,
John Wallace,	David Vail,
William Vail,	William P. Baxter.
Alfred B. Mead,	Isaac T. Frost,
	John Braden.

John F. Jenkins A. M., principal, professor of mathematics and teacher of the higher branches. Miss Mary A. Jenkins assistant, having charge of the preparatory department, and teacher of common English branches.

About half a mile west of the Academy is to be seen a singular phenomenon called the Natural Bridge. "Here are two streams which meet and run under the road, the one flowing from the east along the road side, enters the ground twenty-five or thirty feet east of where it seems to cross the road, the stream from the north east, appears to run nearly straight, directly under the road, and issues from the earth again, after falling ten or fifteen feet lower than where it enters, but the place where it issues from the earth, is at least twenty-five feet perpendicular, the top of which precipice is within ten or fifteen feet from the side of the road. The two streams, although they enter the ground so far from each other, unite under ground, and come up together." The question how these effects are to be accounted for, is a matter we leave to abler philosophers than ourselves to



determine. Crow Hill lies half a mile to the northeast of the Natural Bridge. There is a lofty hill in the southern part of the town, bordering the Bedford road called *Turkey Hill*, on account of the great number of wild turkeys that once frequented it.

St James's Episcopal Church, occupies an elevated situation directly opposite the junction of the cross roads, at Salem centre, and is quite a picturesque object from the valley. It is constructed of wood, and surmounted with a neat bell turret. The old edifice erected in 1763, stood east of the present, upon the property of Epenetus Wallace, M. D.<sup>a</sup> The first notice of this parish, occurs in a letter addressed by the Rev. Samuel Auchmuty, D. D., Rector of Trinity Church, New York, to the Venerable Propagation Society in England, dated October 17th, 1767, enclosing a petition from the church people of Salem, wherein "they represent their want of religious instruction and the regular administration of God's word and sacraments according to their religious profession, there being no minister of the church nearer than Rye, which is between thirty-eight and forty miles distant. They have erected a decent church with galleries, on a convenient spot given them by Mr. Stephen de Lancey, the present proprietor.<sup>b</sup> They have already purchased six acres of good land for a glebe, and promise to build a convenient house, and in conjunction with some neighboring places engage to contribute a certain sum annually toward the support of a minister." Upon the receipt of this petition, the society granted their request, "and appointed the Rev. Epenetus Townsend missionary, a gentleman educated in Kings college, and whose exemplary life and sober conversation, they have already had experience of." From the church records we make the following extracts.

"Whereas, St. James's church North Salem was founded and

<sup>a</sup> The old site was exchanged for the present location.

<sup>b</sup> This gentleman also gave three quarters of an acre of land bordering the Somers town road for the same purpose, and by his last will bequeathed the church a bell.

first organized by our ancestors, previous to the revolutionary war; and, the Rev. Epenetus Townsend, the missionary (a candidate for holy orders) went to England with the necessary credentials, about the year 1767, where he was ordained as a missionary: the parsonage being purchased before he went. He also officiated at Ridgefield and Ridgebury a part of the time, &c. The mission was furnished by the Propagation Society, with a library and an annual salary. Susan de Lancey, daughter of Lieut. Gov. James de Lancey, presented a silver chalice." <sup>a</sup> September 29th, 1768, the Rev. Epenetus Townsend informs the society, "that he arrived at his mission, on the 26th of May, 1768, and was kindly received. The church wardens also, of Salem, in the name of the people belonging to the mission, have returned thanks to the society for Mr. Townsend's appointment." "At Salem and Ridgefield, there are one hundred and fifty church people, at Ridgefield, eighty. The people, he continues, are zealous and constant at public worship. He has baptized within the year, two adults and thirty infants, and admitted four to the communion. In 1772, his congregation are increasing, had baptized sixty-two infants and two adults." <sup>b</sup>

In the year 1774, the Rev. Epenetus Townsend again informs the society, "that he preaches in parts adjacent, and from Lady day to Michaelmas, had baptized twenty-one infants and one adult, beside admitting two communicants. During the year 1776, he had baptized thirty infants, buried seven, and married three."

In his last letter to the society, dated June, 1777, Mr. Townsend states, "that he was sent to the county committee, but was dismissed, and kept his church three weeks after the declaration of independence. In October, he was sent prisoner to Fishkill, and detained all winter. In the mean time, his family were suffering for the want of his presence. In March, 1777, Mr. Townsend refusing to swear allegiance, was removed to Long Island, the place of his nativity. Here he continued a short time, when himself and family embarked on board a vessel bound for

---

<sup>a</sup> Church Rec.

<sup>b</sup> See Reports of Propagation Society.

Nova Scotia. This ship foundered in Boston bay, and every soul on board perished.”<sup>a</sup> Thus terminated the short and sad career of the first rector of the parish.

Mr. Townsend was one of the numerous descendants of the three brothers, John, Henry, and Richard Townsend, who settled at Oyster bay, in 1667.<sup>b</sup> Previous to his embarkation, Mr. Townsend had deposited in the hands of the Rev. Benj. Moore, (afterwards Bishop Moore) the library, silver chalice and velvet cushion, belonging to this church, desiring him to keep them until called for.

The Rev. Benjamin Moore in 1785 informed Mr. John Wallace and Ebenezer Lobdell, churchwardens of this parish, that the above mentioned articles were left with him for safe keeping, and that St. James’s Church might have them by sending an order for that purpose. The Rev. David Perry was accordingly deputed to receive them, in the name of the vestry.<sup>c</sup> Immediately after the close of the revolutionary war, the Rev. David Perry (then in deacon’s orders) officiated here and in the neighboring parishes. In the year 1797 the old church edifice was found to be in a ruinous condition ; whereupon it was dismantled and sold at public auction May 25th, 1797. Upon the decease of John Wallace and Ebenezer Lobdell, first wardens of the parish, their successors, Benjamin Close and Gershom Hanford,<sup>d</sup> together with the vestry, resolved on the erection of the present building. The corner stone was laid on the 30th of August, 1810, by the Rev. Nathan Felch, who delivered a well adapted discourse upon the occasion. The principal benefactors were Epenetus Wallace, M.D., and Joseph Purdy, Esq., with others. Trinity Church also liberally contributed the sum of \$1000 in 1813.

St. James’s Church was consecrated to the service of Almighty God in 1816, by the Right Rev. John H. Hobart.

<sup>a</sup> Reports of Propagation Society.

<sup>b</sup> Thompson’s Long Island, vol. ii. 344.

<sup>c</sup> We regret to state that the chalice, connected with so many interesting associations, was subsequently sold, by order of the vestry, for the sum of \$100.

<sup>d</sup> This gentleman is the son of Gershom Hanford, great grandson of the Rev. Thos. Hanford, first Presbyterian minister of Norwalk, Conn., who died A. D. 1693.

Mr. Stebbins Baxter, a resident of this town, who died on the 28th of February, 1820, bequeathed his entire property to St. James's parish, amounting (according to an inventory of his estate) to \$3000, which, after deducting general expenses, &c., left a balance of \$2000. The church, however, owing to the failure of his executors, only obtained the sum of \$1100. In 1837 the present vestry room was added to the church at a cost of \$100. In 1842 the wardens and vestrymen erected the parsonage house and barn, &c., the expenses being defrayed by public subscription, amounting to \$1100.<sup>a</sup>

St. James's Church was first incorporated on the 3d of June, 1786, under the name and title of the "Episcopal Reformed Protestant Church at Upper Salem;" Ebenezer Lobdell, Daniel Smith, and Joseph Purdy, trustees.<sup>b</sup> A third incorporation of St. James's Church, at North Salem, occurs on the 30th of June, 1797; James Bailey and Benjamin Close, churchwardens; Epenetus Wallace, John Lobdell, Gershom Hanford, Joshua Purdy, Gilbert Bailey, Daniel Sherwood, Jacob Lobdell, and Joseph Knox, vestrymen.<sup>c</sup> The first delegate from this parish to the Diocesan Convention was Joseph Purdy, Esq.

## LIST OF MINISTERS AND RECTORS.

<i>Instituted or called.</i>	<i>Incumbents.</i>	<i>Vacated by.</i>
A.D. 1768,	Rev. Epenetus Townsend, Clericus,	per mort.
1782,	" David Perry, Deacon,	per resig.
1790,	" John Plumb, Presb.,	"
1795,	" Andrew Fowler, Presb.,	"
1800,	" George Sebeck, "	"
1810,	" Reuben Hubbard, "	"
1816,	" George Weller, <sup>d</sup> "	"

<sup>a</sup> The former parsonage was erected by the Rev. Epenetus Townsend upon the glebe. The church glebe is "bounded on the south by the highway leading westerly from Ridgefield to Somers, on the east by land of Epenetus Howe, on the north by land of Benjamin B. Gray, and on the west by land of S. Howe and Charles Cable, containing six acres."

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 8.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid. Lib. A. 33, 73.

<sup>d</sup> This gentleman died rector of Christ Church, Nashville, Tennessee. He was

	1816,	Rev. Nathan Felch, Presb.,	per resig.
	1820,	" Samuel Nicolls, "	"
	1829,	" Hiram Jelliff, "	"
	1835,	" Alexander Fraser, "	"
22d July,	1836,	" Benjamin Evans, "	"
	1841,	" David Short, "	"
	1842,	" Albert P. Smith, "	"
	1847,	" Nathan W. Munroe, Presb., present incumbent.	

*Notitia Parochialis.*

1829,	Communicants 17	Baptisms 1
1844,	" 18	" 0

Upon an elevated piece of ground, on the west side of the church, is a large enclosure, in which numerous interments have taken place. Here repose the mortal remains of the celebrated Sarah Bishop, the hermitess. Also the following:--

Col. THADDEUS CRANE,  
died  
Sept. 1st, 1800,  
aged 71 years, 5 mo.  
and 20 days.

Erected  
to the memory of the  
Rev. ABRAHAM PURDY, A. M.,  
who died at Somers,  
on the 7th day of August,  
A.D. 1825, in the 44th year  
of his age.

Beneath this Monument  
lie the remains of  
Doctor  
BENJAMIN DELAVAN,  
of the  
United States Army,  
who died at Natchitoches,

---

the author of a reply to the review of Dr. Wyatt's sermon, and Mr. Sparks's Letters on the Protestant Episcopal Church, published in Boston, 1821. Also editor of the Church Register, an Episcopal periodical, printed in Philadelphia. In 1807 this church was supplied by the services of the Rev. Benjamin Moore, D.D., Isaac Wilkins, D.D., and the Rev. John Henry Hobart.

State of Louisiana,  
26th Nov., A.D. 1827,  
in the 36th year of his age,  
and was interred here  
the 18th of March, A.D. 1829.

In the immediate vicinity stands the Presbyterian Church, a very handsome wooden edifice, erected in 1847, and dedicated on the 15th of October of the same year. From a date on a semi-circular stone, lying in front of the door, we learn that the old church, which stood east of the present building,<sup>a</sup> was erected as early as 1764. This is confirmed by the following items, taken from an old account book in the possession of Mr. John Close :

“November the 20th, the year 1764, Ebenezer Brown, of Salem, have received of Solomon Close two pounds seven shillings and ten pence, on the accompt of the Meeten House. Recieved by Ebenezer Brown.”

“To cash by Nathan, 0—5—0. 1765 Abner Benedict cradit to a log for the fore that made 140 feet to 158 feet of oak bords, 0—2—16. For the Meeten House, 0—7—11 to 370 feet of bords, by Crane, 0—18—6.”

“October the year 1764, I, Ebenezer Brown, of Salem, have recieved of Samuel Cole, of Cortslandt Manner, the ful and just sum of five pounds, rec'd by me on the acompt of the Meeten House.”

Little is known concerning the early history of this church, except that from 1764 to 1832 it was strictly independent in its organization, and Congregational in its form of government and worship.

The first settled pastor appears to have been the Rev. Joel Benedict, in 1783. Prior to this, the congregation must have depended on occasional supplies, or employed the services of a minister for a short period only. In the church register book (entitled the Records of the Congregational Church at Upper Salem) occurs the following memoranda. “Upper Salem, August 20th, 1779. At a meeting of the church members living in Upper Sa-

---

<sup>a</sup> The old building and site were sold to Mr. Alfred B. Mead in 1847.

lem, Cortlandt's manor, and other places adjacent, to consult whether they were desirous of uniting for forming into church order, &c. Present Peter Benedict, Jehiel Tyler, Jonathan Rogers, Thaddeus Crane, Solomon Close, Ezekiel Hawley, Jesse Truesdale, Joseph Doolittle, John Platt, James Wallace and Peter Ferris, voted Mr. Peter Benedict Moderator." "August 25, 1779, it was voted to form and unite as a Church in the order of the gospel. Mr. Mead invited to attend." "At a meeting of the Society of the upper end of Salem, 11th of May, 1779, at the upper Presbyterian Meeting House," it was voted "that Jesse Truesdale, Solomon Close and Nathaniel Delavan should form a committee for one year to get preaching." Its incorporation took place on the 18th of February, 1786, under the style of the "Congregationalist Society in Upper Salem;" John Platt, Benjamin Wood, Abraham Lockwood, David Smith, Bonage Starr and Moses Richard, trustees.<sup>a</sup>

In 1832 this church was placed under the jurisdiction of the Bedford Presbytery. As a Presbyterian church, it was first incorporated on the 25th of September, 1832; John Wallace, Horace Barnum, and Richard H. Lockwood, trustees.<sup>b</sup>

## LIST OF CLERGY AND SUPPLIES.

<i>Inst. or call,</i>	<i>Ministers,</i>	<i>vacated by</i>
1783	Rev. Joel Benedict,	resig.
	Rev. John Blindbur,	do
1787	Rev. Amzi Lewis,	do
	Rev. Abner Benedict,	do
1792	Rev. Richard Andrews,	do
1798	Rev. ——— Phelps,	do
1799	Rev. John Mc. Niece,	do
	Rev. ——— Cornwall,	do
1815	Rev. Abraham Purdy,	do
1817	Rev. Herman Daggett,	do
	Rev. David Delavan,	do
1835	Rev. Alexander Leadbither	do
1841	Rev. Joseph Nimmo, present minister.	

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 8.<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. B. 10.

*Church Notes.*

1836, communicants 21

1847, do 25

The Methodist Episcopal Society of North Salem, was first organized in the early part of the present century, and incorporated 6th of January, 1832; Jonas Keeler, Abel Smith, William Cable and Stephen Ryder, trustees.<sup>a</sup> The church edifice was erected in 1833.

The Baptist congregation in this village was incorporated on the 1st of April, 1833; Ebenezer Whelppoy, Edward Ganong, John Wesley Searles, John Braden and James Mills trustees.<sup>b</sup>

An Universalist Society was incorporated upon the 23d of January, 1832; Levi Smith, Epenetus Howe, William Howe, Henry Hunt, Samuel Hunt and Thomas Smith, trustees; Gilbert Hunt, collector; Jesse Smith, treasurer. The church was erected in 1833, its pastor is the Rev. T. J. Hillyer.

The Friend's meeting house is erected in the north east part of the town.



Boulder Stone.

One of the most interesting objects in the village of North Salem, is an immense granitic boulder or rock, weighing sixty tons, or upwards, supported about three feet from the ground on the projecting points of five smaller lime stone rocks. This immense block viewed from the valley beneath has much the

appearance of a huge mammoth ascending the hill. From its

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. B. 11.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc Lib. B. p. 15.

<sup>c</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. B. 8.



weather beaten sides the Indian magician and priest is presumed to have deciphered the destinies of his tribe. It stands on the land of T. C. Quick.

In the vicinity of the rock is situated the paper mill of Epenetus Howe, Esq.; also the saw and grist mill of Mr. D. Hunt. We must not omit to mention there is a very fine chalybeate spring, on the property of Mr. Howe, issuing from a bank, upon the side of Mutighticoos river; the waters of which are said to be highly medicinal.

Upon the old parsonage property, west of the Presbyterian church, resides Epenetus Wallace, M. D., a distinguished member of the medical profession, and for many years a magistrate of this town. Dr. Wallace is the youngest son of John Wallace, Esq., for a long period senior warden of St. James's church, and grand-son of James Wallace, formerly of Ridgefield, Connecticut, a native of Lanarkshire, Scotland, and a scion of the parent stock from which the renowned Sir William Wallace descended.

Directly opposite the Episcopal church stands the hotel of A. and J. Close,<sup>a</sup> a well known resort for travellers. Near the junction of the Croton and Mutighticoos rivers is situated the North Salem depôt. Immediately north-east of this depôt is the farm and residence of Joshua Purdy, Esq., formerly one of the associate judges of the county.

In the north-east corner of the town is located the Croton falls depôt and the hotel of Messrs. Smith and Mead. From the road that passes over the summit of Long Pond mountain, in the south-east corner of the town, a fine panoramic view is obtained of the great valley of the Mutighticoos and the surrounding country. The evening is the most propitious season to enjoy the scene, when the valley and neighboring hills are richly illuminated by the setting sun, imparting an effect that surpasses description. To those who have read Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress, it will bear strong resemblance to the "Delectable Mountains," mentioned in that beautiful similitude.

---

<sup>a</sup> The Close family have long been seated here and descend from Thomas Close of Greenwich, Connecticut, who emigrated from England in 1666. For a further account of this family, see pedigree.

## OSSIN - ING.

THIS township is bounded on the east and south by Mount Pleasant, (of which it once formed a part,<sup>a</sup>) on the west by the Hudson river, and on the north by New Castle and the Croton river. Like the neighboring townships it was originally included within the honour and fee of Philipsburgh.

*Ossin-ing*, the proper Indian orthography of the word variously written Sin-sing, Sing Sing, Sin Sinck and Sink Sink, is derived from *ossin* (a stone) and *ing* (a place) or "stone upon stone:"<sup>b</sup>—a name exceedingly characteristic of this beautiful town, whose coast is guarded by a vast munition of rocks and ancient boulders. At a very early period *Ossin-ing* constituted a part of the possessions of a powerful Mohegan clan called the *Sint Sings*.

April the 22d, 1643, appeared before the Dutch Director General Kieft in Fort Amsterdam, Oratatrim, sachem of Ack-kin-kashacky, who declared he was deputed by those of Tappan, Reek-gawanck, Kicktawanc and Sint Sinck, to conclude a peace with the Dutch in the following manner, viz.: that all the injustices committed by the said nations against the Netherlanders, or by the Netherlanders against said nations, shall be forgiven and forgotten for ever; reciprocally promising one another to cause no trouble the one to the other; but whenever the savages understand that any nation not mentioned in this treaty might be plotting mischief against the Christians, then they will give to them timely warning, and not admit such a nation within their own limits. To secure and confirm this peace, presents

---

<sup>a</sup> This town was separately organized, May 2, 1845. Laws of N. Y. 1845. Also 69 Session, 1846, chap. xxx., 265 section.

<sup>b</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. Pro. 1844, 101. *Ossin* in the Chippeway denotes "a stone," and *Ossineen* "stones." Trans. Amer. Antiq. Soc. vol. ii., 70.

were given on both sides, while God is prayed that this peace may be duly observed by the savages.<sup>a</sup>

30 August, 1645. Aepjen, chief sachem of the Mohegans, personally appeared at Fort Amsterdam, as a delegate to the general council held there, in behalf of the Wappinecks, the Weckquaesqueecks, the Sint Sings and the Kicktawancks.<sup>b</sup>

In the year A. D. 1663, the Sint Sings appear to have been without a chief.<sup>c</sup>

Between the Indian village of Sin-sing and the Kitchawanck, (Croton,) the early Dutch maps place another Indian settlement called in Van der Donck's map of 1656, Kestaubuiuck; in that of Nicolaus Johannes Visschers, 1659, Kestauboiuck.<sup>d</sup>

"Along the east shores of the Tappan, says Mr. Schoolcraft, is the village of Kastoniuck, (a term still surviving in the opposite village of Niuck or Nyack.) The name of Nyack does not occur, continues the same authority, in records of the earliest period for the position of the present town. The word is found in an opposite Indian village of Kastoniuck."<sup>e</sup>

The first grantee, under the Indians of Ossin-ing, was Frederick Philipse to whom on the 24th of August, 1685, they released "all that tract or parcel of land situate, lying, and being by the northermost part of the land late purchased by Frederick Philipse, and so running alongst Hudson's river to the creek or river called Ketchawan, and called by the Indians Sint Sinck, with the use of half the said creek, and from thence running up the country upon a due east line till it comes to a creek called Neperan, by the Christians Younckers creek, and so running alongst the said creek till it comes to the northerly bounds of the said land of Mr. Frederick Philipse, and from thence alongst the said

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. ii. 220.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 356.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. xxi. 247.

<sup>d</sup> See map attached to the new series of the N. Y. Hist. Soc. vol. i.; also Dutch map, printed by Thomas Starling, Wilmington Square, London, from the original in the possession of S. Converse, publisher, N. Y.

<sup>e</sup> Proceedings of N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844.

land till it comes to Hudson's river, together with, &c., &c. The grantors were

Weskenane,	Crawman,	Wappus,
Kearnarham,	Weunicktanou,	Aquaines,
Mamannane,	Weremenhore.	

Here followeth the schedule or particular of the goods paid by the grantee for the abovesaid lands.

50 feet of black wampum,	12	blankets,
100 do. white wampum,	12	fathom of stroudwater,
11 kettles,	50 lb.	of powder,
12 larger ditto.	30	bars of lead,
15 fathom of trade cloth,	20	axes,
12 guns,	15	hoes,
15 shirts,	40	knives,
12 pair of stockings,	20	stone jugs,
2 ankers of rum,	1	iron chain,
12 drawing knives,	2	rolls of tobacco,
6 adz's	2	pistols. <sup>a</sup>

This Indian purchase was confirmed to his son Philip Philipse by royal patent, dated 12th January, 1686, under the hand and seal of his Excellency Thomas Dongan, Governor of the Province.

"For all that land situate upon Hudson river to the northward of land purchased by Frederick Philipse, and reaches to Kitchawan creek, (Croton,) and is called by the Indians Sinck Sinckes, which is to run upon an east line to Bronx river, the northerly bounds thereof to be Kitchawan creek. And whereas the aforesaid Philip Philipse hath by virtue of the said license, and by my approbation, according to the law and practice of this government, for a valuable consideration purchased of the natives and Indian owners all their right, title and interest, claim and demand, of, in and to a certain tract or parcel of land, being a part of the land aforementioned within the aforesaid license, and situate and being by the northermost part of the land purchased by Mr. Frederick Philipse of the city of New York, mer-

---

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. v. 90.

chant, and so running alongst Hudson's river to a certain creek or river called Kitchawan, and from thence running along the said creek two English miles, and from thence running up the country upon a due east line till it comes to a creek called Nip-eran, by the Christians Yonckers creek, and so running along the said creek until it comes to the northerly bounds of the said land of Frederick Philipse, from thence along said land until it comes to Hudson river, as by the Indian deed of sale thereof, bearing date 13 August, A. D. 1685."

On the death of Frederick Philipse, A. D. 1700, this portion of the Manor of Philipsburgh passed by will to his second son Adolph Philipse, who dying without issue in 1749, it became vested in his nephew, the Hon. Frederick Philipse, son of his eldest brother, Philip Philipse. The last mesne lord was Colonel Frederick Philipse with whose attainder these lands expired in the Philipse family.

The subsequent proprietors who purchased under the commissioners of forfeitures, were the Wards, Orsers, Cranks, Bazelies, Ackers, Purdys, Merritts, McCords, Bishops, Balyeas, Storms, Jones, Millers, Ryders, and others.

The village of Sing Sing, is remarkable for the beauty of its situation, in which respect it is hardly surpassed by any of the river towns. Spreading on the delightful banks of the Hudson it rises gradually to a height of one hundred and eighty feet above tide water overlooking the magnificent scenery of the Tappan Bay, near its confluence with the Croton. A beautiful ravine intersects the village, running nearly east and west, through which flows a pretty stream called the Sin Sinck run, or Kill brook. These waters rise among the hills east of the village, and after giving animation to numerous picturesque scenes, empty into the Hudson, near the vicinity of the upper dock. The course of this brook a mile above the village, is marked by some singular phenomena. Among these are the Devil's stairs, formed in the face of a perpendicular rock 60 feet high, consisting of 16 steps. This extraordinary freak of nature is best seen from the south west bank of the ravine. Directly beneath the stairs in the rocky bed of the river, are some rude marks closely

resembling the prints of horses shoes. These however, are only visible at low water. Immediately to the south, and almost close to the water's edge is situated the Indian cave. The whole of the above, are on the property of Mr. Stephen Todd. The rocks of the same region abound in copper ores, such as copper pyrites, black sulphuret of copper and green carbonate of copper, likewise iron pyrites, but they are not found in such abundance as to warrant any extensive operations.

The site of the present village of Sing Sing, is supposed to occupy partly the ground on which stood the ancient Indian settlement of Sing Sing, nearly 200 years since. The existence of Indian habitations upon this particular spot, is amply proved by the vast number of shell beds, arrow heads and stone axes, still found in the neighborhood. Adriaen van der Donck in his Dutch map before referred to, styles the place Sin Sing, the same name now in use, with the exception of the single letter G.

At an early period, Sing Sing appears to have been a favorite landing place for shipping the various marketable produce raised in the interior.

There are now four landings, from which numerous steam-boats and vessels are constantly plying to and from the city of New York, a distance of 33 miles.

This village was incorporated by an act of the legislature, passed A. D. 1813, afterwards amended May 15, 1837.

The corporation at present, consists of a president, 7 trustees, (who must be freeholders) 3 assessors, clerk, collector, treasurer and 3 fire wardens. These officers are elected annually, on the first Monday in May, their official title being, "The Trustees of the village of Sing Sing."

The village of Sing Sing contains several academies and schools; among the former, is the Mt. Pleasant academy, situated in State street. This institution was first founded by the inhabitants, A. D. 1814. To meet the increasing wants of the population, the present structure was raised in 1820, at a cost of \$18,000. The academy was incorporated on the 24th of March, 1820, and subsequently received a charter from the Regents of the university.

The edifice is a spacious building of Sing Sing marble, sixty feet square, three stories high, standing on a lot of four acres, delightfully shaded with fruit trees, on one of the most retired streets of the village, commanding too, an extensive prospect of the river and adjacent country. In its internal arrangement, there is every desirable convenience for the principal's family and instructors, and the several departments of the school. This academy is under the direction of the "regents." Boys are boarded and educated for \$150 per annum."<sup>a</sup>

Besides an extensive library, the academy possesses a valuable philosophical and chemical apparatus. The first principal was Mr. N. S. Prime, who commenced his duties in 1814. The Rev. Calvin Colton presided over the classical department in 1816.

The present principal is Mr. C. F. Maurice.

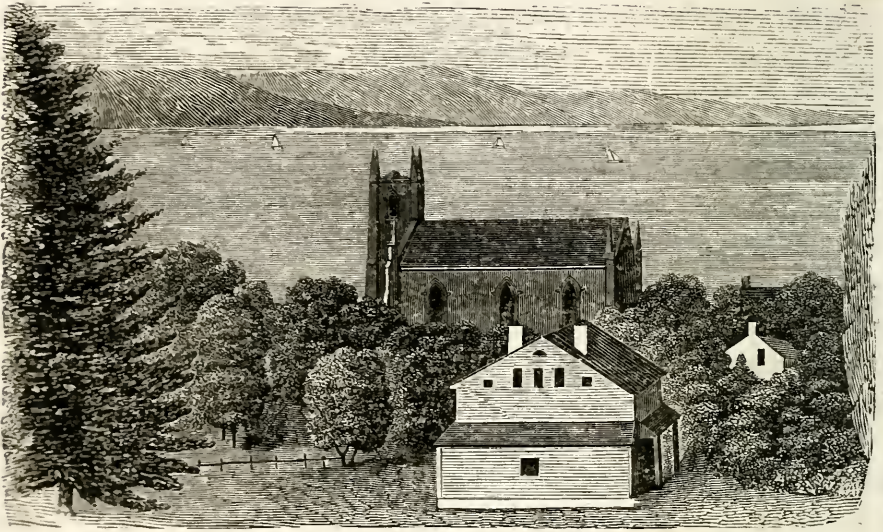
Adjoining this institution on the north, is the Franklin Academy, an incorporated seminary for young ladies. The building is well located, and possesses every desirable advantage for a private boarding and day school; it is under the management of Mr. W. M. Thompson.

Occupying a very conspicuous situation above the rest of the village stands the Mountain House, a classical and mathematical school (for boarders only) under the charge of Mr. Marlborough Churchill. "The *location*, which is noted for its salubrity, is perhaps one of the most eligible that could have been chosen for such an institution." From its elevated position, "the edifice commands one of the most magnificent prospects on the river, from the Highlands on the north, almost to the city of New York on the south. The *building* itself, which is of brick, is four stories high, on a foundation sixty feet square. It was originally intended for a female seminary, and was erected with an unusual degree of care and regard for the comfort and convenience of the pupils. The *grounds* are extensive beyond what is usual, and afford abundant play-room. The building is half a mile from the steamboat landing; and while its proximity to the vil-

---

\* Letters about the Hudson, p. 67.

lage, renders it convenient for all purposes of communication, its elevated and retired situation, secures the pupils from all injurious or undesirable intercourse therewith, and is peculiarly suited to encourage them in studious and domestic habits. Especial pains are taken in the discipline of the pupils in this establishment. The principal is a graduate of the U. S. Military Academy at West Point, and his aim is to make this a school of the highest character."



St. Paul's Church, Sing Sing.

Near the centre of the village, is situated the Episcopal church of St. Paul's, a beautiful Gothic structure of Sing Sing marble. The tower is built of the same durable material, and supported by single buttresses. It is intended to finish the whole with a plain marble spire and pinnacles. Beneath the body of the edifice is an extensive basement, containing lecture, vestry and robing rooms. Above the tower entrance, a neat escutcheon bears the following inscription :

ST. PAUL'S  
CHURCH  
AD.  
MDCCCXXXV.



The interior is neat and appropriate. The altar and font are of polished marble, richly carved, the latter presented by Miss Ludlow.

The communion service, consisting of a flagon, two chalices and paten, were the gift of Mrs. Jacob Arthur. The tower contains a large bell manufactured by "A. Meneely, West Troy, N. Y., 1835," weight, 1500lb. It was purchased by the vestry at a cost of four hundred and fifty dollars. The deep tones of this powerful bell can be heard for many miles, over the adjoining hills.

"As wave on wave, the tide of sound  
Fills the bright atmosphere."

[*Christmas bells.*]

The corner stone of this church was laid by the Right Rev. B. T. Onderdonk, November 6th, 1834, in the presence of a large concourse of people; on which occasion an address was delivered by the Rev. Edward N. Mead, Deacon, minister of the parish. The Rev. Peter S. Chauncey, A. B., Deacon, minister of Christ Church, Rye in this county was also present and assisting. In the stone were deposited a bible and book of common prayer, as an evidence that the church is spiritually founded upon "apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone," also the canons of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, journals of the General and Diocesan Conventions, with other journals and pamphlets, together with a glass bottle closed and sealed, containing among many other things a parchment, on which was the following inscription:

St. Pauls Church. Incorporated November 11th 1833.

Rev. Edward Nathaniel Mead, A. M., Rector,

George W. Cartwright and Caleb Bacon, Church Wardens,

John Strang, Peter R. Maison, William Darjue, Jacob C. Arthur,

John Sing, John Barlow, Joseph Hunt, and Robert Willse, Vestrymen,

James Smith, Clerk of the Vestry,

Samuel C. Nichols, Superintendant of the Sunday School,

Mrs. John Strang, Superintendant of the Female Department,  
 Carman Nichols, secretary ; Robert Willse, treasurer,  
 John Barlow, Librarian,  
 Building Committee, Jacob C. Arthur, Joseph Hunt,  
 George W. Cartwright, John Strang and John Sing,  
 Ledyard H. Halsey, Builder,  
 Calvin Pollard, Architect  
 Paul McCord, Superintendent.

On Wednesday, July 6th 1836, it was consecrated and set apart to the worship and service of Almighty God, under the title of St. Paul's Church, by the Right Rev. B. T. Onderdonk, Bishop of the Diocese.

From the church records we extract the following memoranda, 3 October 1833, "a meeting of Episcopalians residing in this village and vicinity, was held at the house of Mr. Caleb Bacon, who resolved to form themselves into a society for the purpose under Divine favor and assistance of forming a church in said village; and that we will communicate with our Episcopal friends and neighbors on the subject, and urge by our best efforts their co-operation in the good work." This is signed by George W. Cartwright, William Darjue, John Barlow, C. Bacon and John Strang; they also agreed to write to the Rev. Mr. Jelliff of North Salem, who has expressed a wish to aid in establishing a church with us."

Previous to this date there had been occasional services held at some private house, when a clergyman of the church happened to be in the village or vicinity.

In 1833 there were reported to be twenty-four heads of families with an aggregate of one hundred and thirty-six souls belonging to the Episcopal church.

November 11th 1833, the first election of officers took place.

December 4th and 5th 1833, "it was resolved to memorialize the rector, church-wardens and vestry of Trinity Church, New York, for aid by funds in the erection of a church edifice. In this memorial which was presented by James Smith, Esq.; the petitioners state among other matters, "that some years past an old Episcopal

church in this neighborhood, at New Castle<sup>a</sup> (of wood) falling to decay, its congregation was broken up, and some of the descendants of its members have become Quakers, notwithstanding portions of them have until lately adhered to the forms of the Episcopal Church, and your memorialists entertain a hope that with the blessing of Divine Providence, by the means of the establishment of a church at Sing Sing, many of the descendants of this ancient congregation may be brought back to our church, &c." Trinity Church nobly responded to this call by an appropriation of \$2000, the remainder being raised by public subscription.

On the first Thursday of October, 1834, this church was admitted into union with the convention of the diocese.

## LIST OF RECTORS.

<i>Instit. or Call.</i>	<i>Incumbents.</i>	<i>Vacated by</i>
July 7th, 1836,	Edward N. Mead, A. M., Presb.	resig.
Dec. 16, 1839,	Charles Henry Halsey, Presb.	"
	1846, Charles Clowes, Presb.	"
	1847, Charles Tomes, Presb.	"
January, 1848,	William F. Halsey, present incumbent.	

*Notitia Parochialis.*

Since the organization of the parish to 1846, there had been one hundred and eighteen infants baptized, and thirty nine adults.

1846, communicants 81.

The church possesses a convenient parsonage and lot, situated in the village; the whole valued at \$3150.

The Methodist Episcopal church is a plain building of wood, fronting on Maine street, erected A.D. 1817. The Methodist Society was first formed in this town, through the exertions of the Rev. Messrs. Cornelius Cook and Peter Moriarty, in 1787, who occasionally performed services here when on their route to the Croton. The earliest class meetings were organized in the valley beyond Sand Sutton's, and the vicinity of Scrabble street. The

---

<sup>a</sup> St. George's Church, New Castle.

first class leader appears to have been Joshua Ryder, who afterwards became a local preacher. The present pastor is the Rev. Abraham Chalker. The members of the Methodist Society number 300. Adjoining the church is a neat parsonage and lot.

The Baptist Society in this place was first organized Nov. 12, 1790; the present church erected A.D. 1834, to which is attached a small burial ground.

LIST OF PASTORS OF THE BAPTIST CHURCH, SING SING.

<i>Name.</i>	<i>Date of Call.</i>	<i>Period of Pastorship.</i>
John Kitchen	1796	2 y. and 6 mo.
Elijah Wheeler	1799	1 y. and 6 mo.
Thos. Stephens	1801	1 y. and 6 mo.
Stephen S. Nelson	1802	12 y. and 0 mo.
Jacob H. Brouner	1814	14 y. and 0 mo.
P. L. Platt	1823	1 y. and 6 mo.
T. C. F. Frey	1830	2 y. and 4 mo.
John Pubies	1833	1 y. and 8 mo.
C. C. Williams	1835	2 y. and 6 mo.
Wm. M. Doolittle	1839	2 y. and 9 mo.
Sidney A. Cory	1841	1 y. and 6 mo.
Will. C. Locke	1844	0 and 9 mo.
B. C. Morse	1845, present pastor.	

Since the organization of this church, 487 members have been received into communion. Of these, 333 were added by profession, 131 by letter, and 23 restored after exclusion.

The Presbyterian church, a large and handsome edifice of wood, fronts upon the New York and Albany post road. This building was erected in the year 1834, at a cost of \$7000, just twenty two years after the removal of the old congregation from the lower church. The tower contains a fine toned bell, weighing five hundred pounds, inscribed "L. Aspenwall, Albany, 1834." The Presbyterian Society of Mount Pleasant was organized immediately subsequent, if not prior to the American revolution, at which period it belonged to the Westchester Association, an irregular Presbyterian judicatory formerly existing in these parts. In 1814, however, it joined the Presbytery of New York. Five years afterwards, the congregation employed a minister not in

good standing, and thereby offended the Presbytery. Upon receiving censure, they returned once more to the Westchester association, thus again becoming independent in their form of government. This continued until the year 1825, at which date the Rev. R. W. Knight was the officiating pastor. The following year it again became a Presbyterian church, and was received into connection with the General Assembly, with which body it still remains united.

LIST OF MINISTERS AND SUPPLIES OF THE PRESBYTERIAN  
CHURCH AT SING SING.

<i>Installed or Call.</i>	<i>Ministers.</i>	<i>Vacated by</i>
1798	Rev. Mr. Townley,	resig.
2d Aug. 1814	“ Thomas Jackson,	“
pro temp. 1818	“ Asa Lyman,	“
1819	“ George Bourne,	“
pro. temp. 1825	“ ——— Johnson,	“
1826	“ R. W. Dickerson,	“
pro temp. 1830	“ Nathaniel S. Prime,	“
Nov. 1832	“ James V. Henry,	“
1842	“ Daniel Teese, present pastor.	

*Church Memorandum.*

1846, Communicants 107.

The burial ground belonging to this church adjoins the site of the old church edifice, about one mile and a half south of Sing Sing. One of the principal monuments in this yard is that of the Ladau family. It is constructed of brick, and bears on one side four tombstones. Some of the inscriptions are nearly obliterated,

In memory of  
ANNA LADAU,  
wife of Abraham Ladau,  
who departed this life  
December 25, 1795,  
aged 68 years, 11 mo. and 25 days.  
Also ABRAHAM LADAU, husband  
of Anne Ladau, who departed  
June 21st, ——— years, 4 mo. and 5 days.

In memory of  
 ABRAHAM LADAU,  
 son of Abraham and Ann Ladau,  
 was born A.D. September the 28th, 1767,  
 and departed this life Oct. the 21st, 1774,  
 aged 7 years.

Here stop awhile ; let pity draw  
 The sympathizing tear, if old thou art prepare to die,  
 If young—thyself in virtue train.  
 Here lies a son, an only son and heir ;  
 He lived admired, and while he liv'd  
 Him good and just we hoped to see,  
 But death our hopes deceived.  
 Here all our joy and comfort lies ;  
 Here lies our only darling son—  
 He fell to death a sacrifice,  
 Scarce had his glass began to run :  
 His soul is flown to mansions of the just—  
 To that great God in whom we weep and trust.

Here lyeth the body of  
 SARAH LADAU, born in the year 1750,  
 April 26,  
 who departed this life August 15, 1764,  
 aged 5 years and 7 mo. and 11 days,  
 daughter of Abraham and Anna Ladau.

In memory of  
 DANIEL LADAU, who was born  
 in the year of our Lord, 1694,  
 and departed this life Nov. the 5th, aged 73.

In memory of  
 MARY LADAU, who was born  
 in the year of our Lord 1695,  
 and departed this life May 11, 1775, aged 78.

There are also memorials of Moses Ward, William Kemeys, Henry Roscoe, Enoch Crosby, and others. The Roman Catholics occupy the brick building formerly used as a Reformed Dutch Church, situated on the property of Mr. Albertus.

There are several hotels in the village, which afford excellent accommodation for travellers, viz. : the American Hotel by L. Workman, and the Hudson River Hotel by J. W. Vincent. The latter was formerly kept by Mr. Enoch Crosby, "son of him

of spy memory." Besides eighteen stores and groceries, there is one ship yard, one iron foundry, two grist mills, and Brandreth's pill factory. Two newspapers weekly are issued from this place, entitled the Westchester Herald and the Hudson River Chronicle, the former conducted by Mr. Caleb Roscoe, the latter by Mr. J. B. Swain.

A number of handsome residences adorn the higher grounds of the village. Among others may be noticed the mansions of Mr. William Robinson, Mr. Ludlum, Mr. Albertus. Also that of Maj. Gen. Aaron Ward,<sup>a</sup> who for a number of years represented this district in Congress. General Ward holds a part of the patrimonial estate which covered nearly the whole southern portion of the village, his father the late Moses Ward, Esq.,<sup>b</sup> having been one of the original purchasers under the commissioners of forfeitures in 1785. At this early period there were but three dwelling houses in Sing Sing, one of which (an old stone mansion, used as a fortress to defend the settlers against the Indians,<sup>c</sup>) was the residence of Mr. Ward. This family descends from Richard Ward, son of Edmund Ward of Fairfield, Connecticut.<sup>d</sup> General Ward's residence is a fine building of Sing Sing marble, presenting a neat Ionic portico to the river, with wings on either side. The interior is embellished with several excellent pictures by native artists, viz., Falls of Niagara, by Vanderlyn; St. Nicholas, by Weir; Boy hoeing corn, by Mount; Village of Sing Sing, by Havel; Gipsy Girl, by Freeman; View in New Hampshire, by Doughty; Girl and Child, by Chapman. The family portraits are by Ames, Vanderlyn, and Gilbert.

One of the most striking features of this hilly region is the romantic ravine (already alluded to) intersecting the village; both sides of it are bounded by steep acclivities covered with a luxuriant growth of hemlock and spruce, and near its mouth the banks rise to a height of one hundred feet above the bed

---

<sup>a</sup> During the last war with Great Britain General Ward held a captain's commission in the United States' service, and at the close of it conducted a battalion of 700 British prisoners from Pittsfield, Massachusetts, to Canada.

<sup>b</sup> Moses Ward married a niece of Col. Samuel Drake of the continental army.

<sup>c</sup> The old stone fortress stood a little east of Mr. R. K. Forster's dwelling house.

<sup>d</sup> See Eastchester, p. 159.

of the stream. In the vicinity of Brandreth's mill the Croton aqueduct crosses this ravine by means of a handsome arch constructed of solid masonry, in the most durable manner. The space between the abutments is 88 feet, and the rise from the bottom of the creek is about 100 feet. So securely were the foundations of this noble structure laid, that upon the removal of the uprights the whole work settled but one inch. It was erected under the superintendence of Mr. Young, engineer of the works, commenced May, 1838, completed October, 1840.

Near the village landing are situated the nursery gardens of Mr. James Lock, a well known Horticulturist. In the vicinity of Sing Sing the shores of the Croton bay are decked with numerous country seats. The first property south of the Croton in this town is that of Col. Joseph Hunt, whose family purchased of the commissioners in 1784. The next place in succession is the old McChain estate, now owned by Thomas Oliver, Esq. The house is prettily situated on a finely wooded point, at the extremity of which lies a great rock, commonly called Frank's rock, near a gigantic tree where a white or bald headed eagle has for a long series of years built her nest.

Adjoining the above on the south is the Albert Orser property, at present belonging to Mr. Benjamin Moore. It was in the old Orser residence that a body of continental troops, under the command of Capt. Daniel Williams, were surprised by a superior force of British cavalry, led by Capt. Bearmore; the circumstances attending the event are thus related by an eye-witness. During the winter of 1782 Capt. Daniel Williams (who had been for some time stationed at Croton in command of the American guard upon the lines,) undertook, with a small party of dragoons, a foraging expedition into the neighborhood of Morrisania. Success had attended the enterprise, and they were thus far on their way homeward when they halted to refresh themselves. Not apprehending pursuit, they neglected to post guards, and the road leading from the highway being hidden by a small knoll which rose directly in front of the windows, they were not aware of an enemy's approach until nearly surrounded by Capt. Bearmore and his dragoons.

The confusion that ensued may be imagined. Some of the



Americans were cut down within and about the house; others rushed along the steep bank to the river, which was frozen, their enemies following in hot pursuit. Several were slain upon the ice; among the latter was George McChain. Capt. Williams himself fled down the adjoining bank, closely followed by a British dragoon, who was gaining fast upon him, when he suddenly checked his horse, and, as his pursuer (unable to stop) dashed by him, rose in his stirrups and dealt a back handed blow with his sword, which brought the dragoon to the ground. He also succeeded in capturing his adversary's horse with which he arrived safe at head-quarters.

In the same neighborhood are the estates of John Strang, General Sandford, John Kane, and Robert Havell, Esqrs.

Nearer the village are situated the residences of Benjamin Brandreth and Philip van Wyck, both delightfully embosomed in trees, and commanding extensive views of the river. The latter contains some fine portraits of the Van Cortlandt family, viz., Philip van Cortlandt, son of Stephanus van Cortlandt first lord of the manor of Cortlandt, artist unknown, Catherine de-Peyster, wife of Philip, the Honorable Pierre van Cortlandt, by Jarvis, and General Philip van Cortlandt, by the same. Philip van Wyck, Esq., is the son of the late Theodosius van Wyck by his wife Catharine, daughter of the Hon. Pierre van Cortlandt.

A short distance north of Mr. Brandreth's pill manufactory is situated *Craw-bucky point*, literally crab cove point. The adjoining beach was once famous for its shad fishery; four thousand have been taken at one lift.

On the margin of the river, are two deep grooves, apparently chiselled in a hard gneiss rock. These marks indicate the commencement of the *two mile line* of the manor of Philipsburg, which, according to the royal patent,<sup>a</sup> extended two miles north from the *mouth* of the Croton, until it struck the southern line

---

<sup>a</sup> See Patent of Philipsburg. The same kind of mark is found near the division line, between the townships of Yonkers and Greenburgh, both of them are probably Indian lines.

of Cortlandt manor. In an old "map of the township of Bedford, Stamford, Greenwich, the North river, and Keightawank or Croton's river, by a survey, April the 6th, &c., 1763, by Charles Webb, surveyor," two spots are marked. First, "the station fixed by Cortlandt at the sand beach to measure up the river." This lies nearly mid-way between the Sing Sing brook and the next stream to the north. Secondly, a "rock four chains and sixty links north of the brook," (the first stream above the Sing Sing brook,) "fixed by Bedford committee to begin to measure up the river."<sup>a</sup>

Mining operations were formerly carried on to a considerable extent in Sing Sing, under the flattering idea that silver ore existed here; the old shafts sunk for this object are still visible. The following entries in the Secretary of State's office, refer to these mines.

No. 54.]

Stephen Lyon, Westchester county, town of Mt.

Pleasant, about 100 rods south of  
the discoverers dock, and about 80

rods south of the farmers dock

at Sing Sing landing, upon lands

of John F. Marsh, (gold and silver.) Nov. 14, 1820. 41. 204.

No. 57.]

Stephen Lyon, Westchester County, town of Mt. Pleasant,

additional vein south of the mine,

which is now on file, extending 1 mile

south of said mine, (gold and silver.) Jan. 30, 1824. 41. 296.

Galena has been obtained here in small specimens, as well as several ores of copper; one specimen of the latter yielding from 50 to 75 per cent, also iron pyrites. Sulphuret of zinc and oxide of manganese occasionally occur in the lime stone rock. "Sing Sing is also celebrated for its marble quarries, which are worked to a great extent by the state prison convicts, who have here erected two large prisons, a keeper's house and several ranges of work-shops from materials found on the state farm." The mar-

---

<sup>a</sup> From the original map in the possession of the Hon. William Jay, Bedford.

ble found in this vicinity, is the dolomitic or white coarse grained, of excellent quality, and almost inexhaustible ; large quantities are annually quarried and sent to the city of New York and other places.

“The *Mount Pleasant State Prison*, situated about half a mile south of the village of Sing Sing, and thirty-three miles north of New York ; contained in 1840, 847 male and female convicts, of whom 60 were females.

The prison grounds consist of 130 acres of land, lying between the villages of Sing Sing and Sparta ; being bounded on the east by the Highland turnpike, and on the west by the Hudson river, which here affords a depth of twelve feet of water at the landing. The main prison building is four hundred and eighty-four feet in length, running north and south, and forty-four feet in width, fronting westerly on the Hudson, being five stories in height, and containing one thousand cells ; in front and rear are located work shops of different kinds, which together with the keeper's house are all built of rough dressed marble. Attached to the prison building on the south, is a chapel, hospital, kitchen, store houses, &c. A new prison for female convicts stands on elevated ground, and is built of marble in the Ionic order. It contains well furnished apartments in front for the matrons, and the interior finish for the reception of female convicts, is neat and well arranged.<sup>a</sup>”

The following relative to the history of the prison, &c., is taken from an article published in the *New York Express*, April 13th, 1841.

“In 1823 the solitary system of imprisonment was abandoned at the Auburn prison, and was succeeded in 1824 by the present system of shutting up the convicts in separate cells by night, and compelling them to labor diligently during the day.

“The adoption of this system rendered the Auburn prison, which in 1824 contained but 550 separate cells, insufficient for the accommodation of all the convicted felons in the state, and an act of the legislature was passed in March, 1824, for the erec-

---

<sup>a</sup> Disturnell's Gazetteer, N. Y.

tion of a new state prison in the first or second senatorial districts, which the commissioners appointed for the purpose, thought proper to locate in Mount Pleasant, Sing Sing, owing to its exhaustless bodies of marble, its healthy situation, and its accessibility by water. On the 14th of May, 1826, Capt. E. Lynds, former agent of the Auburn prison, with one hundred convicts in obedience to instructions, proceeded to Sing Sing, and commenced the erection of the state prison there. This was completed in 1829, and contained eight hundred cells. By the addition of several additional counties to this prison district greatly increasing the number of convicts, it was discovered that these accommodations were insufficient, and two hundred more cells were ordered to be added, which result was obtained by adding another, or fifth story to the prison building, which addition was completed in 1831.

“In May, 1828, the convicts then in the old state prison in this city were removed to Sing Sing, and the old prison here was emptied of its inmates and abandoned forever as a prison.

The Mount Pleasant prison at Sing Sing is thirty-three miles from this city, on the eastern shore of the Hudson river, and the ground on which it stands is about ten feet above high water mark. The prison grounds contain one hundred and thirty acres, and the wharf is approachable by vessels drawing twelve feet of water. The prison keeper's house, work-shops, &c., are built of rough dressed stone. The prison for the males is 480 feet in length from north to south, and 44 in width, fronting towards the west or Hudson river. This building is five stories high, containing a line of 100 cells in each story on the west side, and as many more on the east side, making 1000 cells in all. The western yard is enclosed by two buildings, forty feet wide, and two stories high, which are occupied as the kitchen, hospital, chapel, work-shops, store houses, &c., and extend from the prison westerly, to the edge of the water. The south wing adjoins the prison, but communicates with it only through the hospital. The north wing connects with the prison by a wall twenty feet in height running north and south ten feet, enclosing together an area of 494 feet by 412. In the centre of the west yard is a range of shops 40 feet wide, fronting on the Hudson, and running parallel with the prison 276 feet, with wings extending easterly towards the prison 140

feet, which are occupied as stone shops. The guard-house is on the bank or height on the east side of the prison, about one hundred and seventy feet above the level of the yard, commanding a perfect view of the east yard and most of the west. Within the last few years an additional building has been erected on the heights east of the main prison, for the purpose of a female prison exclusively, which is capable of containing about seventy-two female convicts, one in each cell, and in which that number is now confined.

“The officers of the prison are those connected with its government, business, interests, health and morals, are five inspectors, a principal keeper, agent, clerk, physician, and chaplain, twenty-five assistant keepers, and twenty-six guards. These, except the clerk, are appointed by the board of inspectors and hold their offices during their pleasure. The clerk is appointed by the governor and senate, and holds his office for four years. The inspectors are appointed every two years by the governor and senate, and on them the government of the prison, its discipline, police, its moneyed concerns, contracts, &c., by law devolves. They are required to meet every two months and inspect the prison and to make a report annually to the legislature soon after it convenes. The duties of the principal officers are defined by law, and are such as the good government and welfare of the institution require.

“In this prison the convicts are compelled to labor in silence; no conversation by word, look or gesture being allowed between or amongst them. If any information is needed by the prisoner in regard to his business, he modestly applies to and obtains it of his keeper, one of whom is always near him in each department of labor.

“The utmost harmony of movement in the various businesses conducted, and the most perfect order reigns. The whole internal machinery of the prison, with its more than eight hundred hardy convict laborers, resembles more the quiet industry and subordination to authority of a well regulated family, than an institution for the punishment of hardened offenders.

“The hours of labor are not more than laboring men out of prison generally labor. The food afforded is ample. The ration

for each day consists of either sixteen ounces of good prime beef, or twelve ounces of prime pork, eight ounces of rye flour, twelve ounces of sifted Indian meal and half a gill of molasses per man ; and three bushels of potatoes, or forty pounds of rice, four quarts of rye in the grain for coffee, two quarts of vinegar, and two ounces of pepper to every hundred rations. This is all weighed or measured out each day by the superintendent of the kitchen. The bread is well baked, and the provisions well cooked by some of the convicts employed for that purpose. Their provisions are put in small wooden vessels called kids, which are placed on racks, one of which each prisoner takes as he retires from labor to his cell, in which he is locked, and where silently he eats his repast. If any convict requires more food, on making his wants known, he is supplied from the kitchen.

“ At the close of the day, in long lines they march to their respective cells, accompanied by their keepers, and being locked in, partake of their food and indulge in repose. Each cell has a bunk of wood or frame made of pine, six feet long and two wide, four or six inches from the floor, four blankets, a bible, pint cup for their coffee, small tin cup for vinegar, an iron spoon, a comb, and towel. These are all kept clean or made so when otherwise. From twelve to fourteen convicts are employed in washing the clothes and bedding of the prisoners ; some others do the cooking ; and once a week they are all shaved by a convict who acts as barber.

“ The tailoring is done by convict tailors, who make and repair all the prisoners' garments. Clean underclothes are placed in their cells each week. At night they are carefully watched by a keeper and four armed guards, who pace the galleries noiselessly with socks on their feet—observe that all is safe—notice every noise, and are prepared to quell any disturbance that might possibly arise. This latter is, however, almost impossible, as each prisoner is in a small cell by himself, and secured by powerful bolts and bars.

“ The moral and religious condition of the prisoners is also carefully attended to. Prayer generally at night, and a sermon and prayers every Sabbath morning by the chaplains in the chapel, a bible and latterly other religious books in the cells,

constitute a portion of their spiritual privileges. A Sunday school attended by some two hundred and fifty convicts as pupils, and a bible class of one hundred and twenty or more of them, are also in active operation each Sabbath in the chapel. The effects of these united means of mental and moral culture in many of the convicts, are highly beneficial and promissory of good fruits at a future day. They render the convicts more orderly and sober-minded, and divert their attention from less profitable subjects."

Zion Hill in the vicinity of the prison, the property of Mr. Peter Weatherby, is famous as being the scene of Matthias' impositions.

A few Revolutionary incidents connected with Sing Sing deserve to be recorded here.

In the year 1774, a regiment under the command of Colonel James, (director of the silver mines in this place,) was stationed at Sing Sing. Upon the breaking out of hostilities it was ordered to Boston.

Some days previous and subsequent to the memorable battle of White Plains, the British vessels of war, consisting of the *Tartar*, *Roebuck* and *Phœnix*, lay off Sing Sing.

"On the 28th October, 1779," observes General Heath, "Captain Hopkins of the dragoons took the captain of the *Bellona* transport, a serjeant and corporal of the 64th British regiment and two seamen who had ventured too far on the shore near Sing Sing."<sup>a</sup>

There is still preserved in the village a small cannon, well known by the cognomen of "Old White," which is said to have been the identical piece fired at the *Vulture* sloop of war, as she lay off Teller's point, on the morning of September 22, 1780.

"No sooner (remarks the biographer of Arnold,) had the parties (Arnold and André) arrived at Smith's house than a cannonade was heard down the river. It was discovered to be against the *Vulture*, which although distant several miles was in full view and for some time seemed to be on fire.

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 214

“It had been reported to Colonel Livingston by messengers from Teller’s Point, that the vessel was so near the shore as to be within reach of cannon-shot, and that the inhabitants were likewise apprehensive boats would land and commit depredations. Colonel Livingston accordingly sent from Verplanck’s Point a party with cannon, who fired upon the Vulture and compelled her to remove from the position she had held during the night, and drop farther down the river, till she was beyond the reach of the shot. André beheld the scene from the windows of Smith’s house with anxious emotion. At length the firing ceased and he resumed his wonted spirits and composure.”<sup>a</sup> He was in an upper apartment of Smith’s house on the opposite side of the river.

On every anniversary of the Fourth, “Old White” emerges from his lurking place and is paraded through the streets in triumph.

The village of Sparta is situated one mile south of Sing Sing. This place contains one tavern, two stores, about forty dwellings and a very convenient landing.

In the immediate vicinity is the residence of the Rev. William Creighton, D. D., which stands on the sloping bank of the river. Every effort of successful art has been made to aid and improve the natural beauty of the surrounding grounds, nor can any thing be imagined more beautiful than the views presented from this delightful place. There are also the properties of Mr. James Knowlton, Mr. Rhodes, Mr. Drowley, Mr. Cheetham, Mr. Edward Agate, Mr. Peter Weatherby, Mr. Edward Priestly and Edward Kemeys, Esq., in and around Sparta. Mr. Kemeys<sup>b</sup> was for some years a judge of the late Court of Common Pleas of this county.

The ancient boundary line of 1684, which divided the two

<sup>a</sup> Sparks’ Life of Benedict Arnold, 206.

<sup>b</sup> This gentleman is the son of the late William Kemeys, Esq., a native of Scarborough, York, England. “The ancient house of Kemeys, originally De Camois, Camoes and Camys is of Norman extraction, and the name of its patriarch is to be found on the roll of Battle Abbey. Large possessions were granted to the family in the counties of Sussex and Surrey, and so early as the year 1258, Ralph de Camois was a baron by tenure. A branch of the family afterwards removed into Yorkshire.” Burke’s Hist. of the Commoners of England, vol. iv. 184.



colonies of New York and Connecticut passed a short distance south of Sparta.<sup>a</sup>

The Bishop rocks, so called from John Bishop, who purchased these lands in 1785, lie one mile south of this place. They constitute a portion of the southern boundary of Ossining. White Point is a celebrated fishing place in the same neighborhood. "The surface of this town is mostly hilly, soil productive and well cultivated." There is also a good proportion of interval and meadow land. The principal streams are the Sing Sing brook and the Mill river or Pocanteco. The latter has its source in New Castle and was particularly described in the account of that town.

The first independent election for town officers took place, April the 7th, 1789, upon which occasion the following persons were chosen for the ensuing year.

Elijah Hunter, supervisor.

Daniel Miller, town clerk.

Nathaniel Tucker, constable.

John Oakley,-	}	assessors.
Moses Fowler,		
Jesse Baker,		
James McCord,		

Abraham Le Due,	}	overseers of the poor.
James Requa,		

Nathaniel Tucker,	}	commissioners.
John Bishop,		
Isaac G. Graham,		

Thomas Lawrence, collector.

Abraham Le Due,	}	fence viewers.
John Shute,		
Isaac van Wart,		
James Hammond,		
Jesse Baker,		
Thomas Dean,	}	pound masters.
Ebenezer Scofield,		
Henry van Wart,		
Richard Garrison,		

---

<sup>a</sup> Three miles above Frederick Philipse's mills at Sleepy Hollow. See Boundary Letters, secretary of state's office, Hartford, Conn., fol. ii. letter 46.

Upon the erection of the present town in 1845, the following officers were chosen.

Joseph Hunt, supervisor.

George Sherwood, town clerk.

Charles Yoe,	}	justices of the peace.
Henry Harris,		
Thomas Catterall,		
William Pugsley,		

Nichols J. Greene, superintendent of common schools.

Caleb Smith,	}	assessors.
William Orsor,		
Stephen Marshall,		

John Ryder,	}	commissioners of highways.
Edward J. Bayles,		
David C. Codington,		

Willet Holmes,	}	overseers of the poor.
William Mangam,		

Abraham Miller, collector.

Abraham Miller,	}	constables.
James Rider,		
John Romaine,		

*First District.*

Charles Yoe,	}	inspectors of election.
George Sherwood,		

*Second District.*

William H. Peck,	}	Inspectors of election.
David McBeth,		

Thomas E. Bridger, town sealer.

Levi Peck, pound master.



Christ's Church, Pelham.

## PELHAM.

THIS town is enclosed on the east and north by the township of New Rochelle, on the west by Hutchinson's river, which separates it from Eastchester, and on the south by the Sound.<sup>a</sup>

Prior to the Revolution, Pelham formed a portion of the old manor of that name, which originally embraced nine thousand one hundred and sixty-six acres. The name itself is of Saxon origin, and compounded of the two words *Pel* (remote) and *Ham* (mansion.)<sup>b</sup> The former, being the ancient surname of the manorial proprietors, affords us a very good reason for its adoption in connection with the last.

The Indian appellation of these lands has not been preserved. Its early inhabitants appear to have been a tribe of the Mohegans called *Siwanoy's*, whose possessions extended, it is well known, from Norwalk to the neighborhood of Hellgate. From the Indians, this tract of land (with others adjacent) passed to the Dutch West India Company, A.D. 1640. In the year 1642, Mrs. Anne Hutchinson, to avoid the bitter persecutions of the Puritans, fled here for protection, and commenced a plantation. Neal, the Puritan historian, asserts that "Mrs. Hutchinson being turned

<sup>a</sup> Pelham is situated ten miles south of the village of White Plains and distant 140 miles from Albany.—*Disturnell's Gazetteer*.

<sup>b</sup> Pelham is the name of a lordship in Herefordshire, England, and recorded to have been part of the possessions of Walter de Pelham, A.D. 1293.

out into the wide world, went first with her disciples to Rhode Island, but not liking to stay there she removed with her family into one of the *Dutch plantations called Hebgate*, where within a little while, the Indians murdered her and her whole family, to the number of sixteen persons.<sup>a</sup> Chandler in his criminal trials, says, "the whole family of the Hutchinsons removed beyond New Haven to *Eastchester in the territory of the Dutch.*"<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan observes, that "the greatest terror prevailed everywhere," (arising from the Indian war then raging,) Pavonia, Achter Col, the greater part of Manhattan, and most of Long Island were in the hands of the Indians, now consisting of seven different tribes, amounting, it was estimated, to fifteen hundred warriors. While the work of destruction was going on in the above quarters other parties of savages crossed over to the main, and cleared all before them as far as Stamford. Thither the celebrated Mrs. Anne Hutchinson had retired from her persecutors in Massachusetts, but the Indians had discovered her retreat. They appeared at first friendly, as was their wont when making their visits, but on discovering the defenceless condition of the inmates they killed her and her son-in-law, Mr. Collins, with her son Francis, and all the other members of her family, besides a number of other persons in the neighborhood belonging to the families of *Mr. Throgmorton* and *Mr. Cornhill*. Eighteen persons in all fell victims here to these barbarians, who putting the cattle into barns, burnt the whole."<sup>c</sup> To the above account Mr. Drake adds, "a greater slaughter would have been made at this time and place, but for the arrival of a boat while the tragedy was enacting, into which several persons, women and children,

---

<sup>a</sup> Neal's Hist. of New England, vol. i. 178.

<sup>b</sup> Chandler's Criminal Trials, vol. i. 27.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. 287. Wild's Rise, Reign, and Ruin of the Antinomians contains this pious exultation at the destruction of Mrs. Hutchinson: "The Indians set upon them and slew her and all her children, save one that escaped, (her own husband being dead before,) a dreadful blow! Some write that the Indians did burn her to death with fire, her house and all the rest that belonged unto her, but I am not able to affirm by what kind of death they slew her. . . . . God's hand is more apparently seen herein to pick out this woful woman, to make her and those belonging to her, an unheard of heavy example of their cruelty to others."

escaped, but two of the boat's crew were killed in their humane exertions to save these distressed people. The daughter of Mrs. Hutchinson remained a prisoner four years, when she was delivered to the Dutch governor at New York, who restored her to her friends. She had forgotten her native language, and was unwilling to be taken from the Indians."<sup>a</sup> The residence of Anne Hutchinson appears to have been situated on Pelham neck, formerly called *Ann's hoeck*, literally, Ann's point or neck, hoeck being a Dutch name for a neck or point, for, up to a very late period, her farm was distinguished as the *Manor of Anne hooks neck*. A small stream that separates this town from Eastchester on the west still retains her surname *Hutchinson's river*. One of the principal Indian proprietors of this territory also assumed her christian surname, as we find it recorded in the early deeds, *Ann-hoock* alias Wampage. This individual may have taken an active part in the destruction of Mrs. Hutchinson, for nothing was more common among the Indians than for a warrior to assume the name of his victim.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 14th of November, 1654, Thomas Pell of Fairfield, in Connecticut, obtained a grant from the ancient Indian proprietors, embracing all that territory bounded on the east by a stream called Stoney brook or river, and so running northward as the said brook or river runs, eight English miles into the woods, thence west to Broncks's river, then down the stream of Broncks's river to a certain bend in the said river, thence by marked trees south until it reaches the tide waters of the Sound which lyeth between Long Island and the main land, together with all the island in the sound, &c., &c. This grant was signed by the sachem Ann-hoock and five other Indians. A. Dyckman occurs as

*Ann hoock*  
**AH**  
*his mark*

<sup>a</sup> Drake's Book of the Indians, 69.

<sup>b</sup> There is also a rock upon the south side of the neck bearing the same name, which is said to have been a favorite fishing place of the above chief.

witness. It was subsequently confirmed in council.<sup>a</sup> Thomas Pell stated before a court of assize, held in 1665, that he had obtained license to make the purchase, from the authorities of Connecticut, and that he had paid large sums of money for the same.<sup>b</sup> In 1654 it was resolved, at a meeting of the director general and council of the New Netherlands, "that whereas *a few English* are beginning a settlement at a great distance from our outposts on lands long before bought and paid for, near *Vreedlan*, to send there, interdict, and the attorney general, Cornelius van Tienhoven, and forbid them to proceed no farther, but to abandon that spot. Done at Fort Amstel on the 5th of Novembêr, 1654 in New Netherlands,"<sup>c</sup> "On lands purchased from the Indians by the Hon. Thomas Pell of Fairfield, Connecticut." Notwithstanding this and further protestations made by the Dutch authorities, Thomas Pell continued the settlement of his lands until the surrender of the Dutch in 1664. The two principal Sachems of Pelham, Ann-hoock (Wampage) and Himham or Nimham,<sup>d</sup> lived to advanced ages. In 1675 the Indians must have been residing on the neck in considerable numbers, for at a general court of assize held the same year, it was resolved, "that the Indiyans at Mr. Pell's or Anne Hook's neck, be ordered to remove to their *usual winter quarters*, within Hellgate, upon this island; and further that all canoes belonging to Christians or Indiyans on the north side of Long Island to the east of Hellgate shall be (within three days from the publication of this order,) brought to the next townes and delivered to the constables to be secured near the block-house. Any canoes found upon the sound after that time to be destroyed." This order is said to have been made to prevent the Indians of Long Island joining King Philip against New England.<sup>e</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> This grant was seen some years since by Mr. John Soulice of New Rochelle, To his kindness we are indebted for the above particulars. The original is supposed to be in the possession of the Pell family.

<sup>b</sup> Assize Rec. Albany, 1665 to 1672.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. ix. 275.

<sup>d</sup> Nimham, sachem of Miereckacky, occurs in 1669.

<sup>e</sup> Danlap's Hist. of N. Y. vol. ii. appendix, cxxiii.

Near the entrance of Pelham neck, is situated the favorite burying ground of the river tribes, to which the Indians brought their dead even from Horseneck, Connecticut, for interment. Numerous mounds are still visible near the water's edge, on the property of the late Mr. George Rapelje. Two of the largest mounds are pointed out as the sepulchres of the Siwanoy sachems, Ann-hoock and Nimham. The former was opened some years since, and found to contain a large sized skeleton, by the side of which, lay the stone axe and flint spear head of the tenant of the grave. We have examined several mounds near the water's edge; one of these held the remains of an Indian boy about 12 years old, in a sitting position, together with a beautiful specimen of native pottery formed by the hand alone, rudely ornamented with zigzag lines; in this we discovered an arrow head and the bones of a small animal. This practice of burying their favorite utensils and weapons with the deceased, is known to be an ancient Indian custom. Near the residence of Mrs. King, the remains of an Indian were found in a perfect state of preservation with a gun by his side. On the extreme point of this beautiful neck which commands the magnificent scenery of Hutchinson's Bay, lies another Indian cemetery. The shores of the "Great Bay of the Island of shells," shaded with their ancient forests of nut and oak, interspersed with grassy glades must have afforded favorite sites for the Indian villages. On the property of Mr. Roosevelt north of the post road, great quantities of Indian arrow heads have been discovered in one particular spot, leading to the supposition, that an extensive manufactory of that article once existed here. Fine specimens of Indian hatchets, and javelins of chert, quartz and horn stone, are constantly found in the neighborhood of these shores.

Upon the sixth day of October, 1666, a large proportion of the Indian grant of 1654, was confirmed to Thomas Pell, Esq., by his excellency Richard Nicolls in the following manner.

#### RICHARD NICOLLS ESQ., GOVERNOR

Under his Royall Highness the Duke of York, of all his territories in America. To all to whom these presents shall come,

sendeth greeting. Whereas, there is a certain tract of land within this government upon the main, situate, lying and being to the eastward of Westchester bounds, bounded to the westward with the river called by the Indians, Aqueouncke, commonly known by the English, by the name of Hutchinson's river, which runneth into the bay lying between Throckmorton's neck and Ann Hooks neck, commonly called Hutchinson's bay, bounded on the east, by a brook called Cedar Tree Brook or Gravelly brook, on the south by the sound which lyeth between Long Island and the main land, with all the islands in the sound, not already granted or otherwise disposed of, lying before that tract of land so bounded as is before expressed, and northwards, to run into the woods about eight English miles in breadth as the bounds to the sound, which said tract of land hath heretofore been purchased of the Indian proprietors, and due satisfaction given for the same. Now know ye, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given, by his Royal Highness, James Duke of York, &c., upon whom by lawful grant and pattennt from his majesty, the proprietary and government of that part of the main land, as well as of Long Island, as all the islands adjacent, among other things is settled, I have thought proper to give, grant, confirm and ratify unto Thomas Pell of Onckway, alias Fairfield, his majesty's colony of Connecticut, gentleman, his heirs and assigns, all the said tract of land bounded as aforesaid, together with all the lands, islands, sea-bays, woods, meadows, pastures, marshes, lakes, waters, creeks, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other profits, commodities, emoluments and hereditaments, to the said tract of land and islands belonging, with their appurtenances, and of every part and parcel thereof; and that the said tract of land and premises, shall be for ever hereafter held, demand, reputed, taken and be an enfranchised township, manor and place itself, and shall always from time to time, and at all times hereafter, have, hold and enjoy, like and equal privileges and immunities, with any town, enfranchised place or manor, within this government, and shall in no manner of way, be subordinate or belonging unto, have any dependency upon, or in any wise be under the rules, orders



or directions of any riding, township or townships, place or jurisdiction, either upon the main or upon Long Island, but shall in all cases, things and matters, be deemed, reputed, taken and held, as an absolute, entire, enfranchised township, manor and place of itself in this government, and shall be ruled, ordered and directed, in all matters as to government accordingly, by the governor and his council, and the general courts of assizes only, always provided, that the inhabitants on the said tract of land granted as aforesaid, shall be obliged to send forwards to the next towns, all public packets and letters, or Hue and Cries, coming to this place or going from it, to any other of his majesties colonies, to have and to hold the said tract of land and grant, with all and singular the appurtenances, premises, together with the privileges, immunities, franchises, and advantages herein given and granted, unto the said Thomas Pell, his heirs and assigns, to the proper use and behoof of the said Thomas Pell, forever, firmly, freely and clearly, in so large and ample manner and form and with such full and absolute immunities and privileges as before is expressed, as if he had held the same immediately from his majesty the King of England, &c., &c., &c., &c., &c., his successors, as of the manor of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in free and common socage and by fealty only, yielding, rendering and paying, yearly and every year, unto his royal highness, the duty forever, and his heirs, or to such governor as shall from time to time, be by him constituted and appointed, as an acknowledgment, one lamb upon the first day of May, if the same shall be demanded. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, in New York, on the island of Manhattan, the sixth day of October, in the 18th year of the reign of our sovereign, Lord Charles the second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the faith, &c., &c., &c., and in the year of our Lord God, 1666.

RICHARD NICOLLS.

Entered and recorded in the office of New York, the 8th day of October, 1666.

MATHIAS NICOLLS, SECT'Y.

The Pells who were formerly lords of the manor, boast a very remote antiquity, tracing their descent from the ancient family of that name, in Lincolnshire, England, a branch of which afterwards removed into the county of Sussex;<sup>a</sup> of this family was John Pell, Esq., of the county of Norfolk, “steward, or master of the



Stone effigies of John Pell, and Margaret hiswife, in Dersingham Church, Norfolk, England.

HIC JACET JOHANNES PELL ARMIGER QUANDUM MAJOR TINNÆ REGIS  
 QUI VXOREM DVXIT MARGARETAM FILIAM VNICAM GVLIELMI  
 OVEREND ARMIGER ANNOS 61 ET VNVM FÆLIO TER VNA VIXERVNT  
 SEX FILIOS ET TRES FILIAS INTER SE HÆVERVNT ILLE VERO CVM  
 ANNOS 81 COMPLEVERAT QVINTO DIE FEBRVAIE ANNO DOMINI  
 1607 MATVRA SENECTVE MORTEM OBIT ET OCTAVO DIE  
 EIVSDEM MENSIS CORPVS SEPVLCIRO CONDERATVR.

---

<sup>a</sup> The seal of John Pell, Esq., attached to the patent of New Rochelle, is charged with the arms of this ancient family, viz: ermine, on a canton azure, a pelican or, vulned gules; this coat appears to have been granted October the 19th, 1594, the gold pelican and azure field are also a portion of the charges belonging to the coat armor of the Pelham family.

king's cup," living in 1597, who married Margaret Overend, the only daughter of William Overend, Esq., and had six sons and three daughters; his eldest son was John Pell, in holy orders, Rector of Southwyck, in Sussex County, England, who died A. D. 1616. This individual was the father of two sons, Thomas Pell, first proprietor of the manor of Pelham, and the Rev. John Pell, D. D., Rector of Fobbing in Essex. Thomas Pell appears to have been born at Southwyck, in Sussex, cir. 1608; the exact period of his arrival in America is uncertain; that he was one of the first settlers of New England however, there remains no doubt, for at a very early period we find his name associated with Roger Ludlow, a member of the Rev. John Warham's company, who settled first at Dorchester, Massachusetts, June, 1630, and afterwards removed to Windsor, Connecticut, in 1635; subsequently Ludlow, with ten families, commenced a plantation at Unquowa, (the Indian name for Fairfield, Conn.) here we find Mr. Pell in 1635. The name of Thomas Pell first occurs in the New Haven colonial records, as attorney for the executors of Richard Jewell, in 1639.<sup>a</sup>

On the 10th of March, 1646, at a general court held at New Haven were recorded the names of the people as seated in the meeting house; 1st middleseat, the governor and deputy governor, &c. In the cross seats at the end, 1st seat, Mr. Pell, Mr. Tuttle and brother Fowler, &c.<sup>b</sup>

The next year Mr. Pell is attached for £200, a debt which his wife, late widow of Mr. Francis Brewster, had contracted before her marriage with him. This debt it appears Mr. Pell refused to pay, notwithstanding the court took the liberty to inform him that his wife's debts were his own. On being afterwards brought up to court, he declared "that it was against his judgment to take an oath."<sup>c</sup>

A. D. 1654, (the same year of his purchase in this town,) Mr. Thomas Yale, presented to ye general court held at New Haven, a noute under the hand of Mr. Thomas Pell, wherein he desires ye

<sup>a</sup> New Haven Col. Rec. vol. i. 63.

<sup>b</sup> New Haven Col. Rec. vol. i. 280.

<sup>c</sup> New Haven Col. Rec. vol. i. 315, 316, 317, 335, 391

said Mr. Yale to make entry of the lands he had sold to Allen Ball, James Russel and Will Bradley, &c.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 9th of February, 1653, Thomas Pell purchased lands in Fairfield of Henry Rowland, Philip Pinckney, Alexander Briant and others; also a house which was sometimes Nathan Gold's in 1654.<sup>b</sup>

At a court holden at Fairfield, October the 19th, 1658, the court desired Mr. Thomas Pell and John Wheeler to be husbands and administrators upon the estate of Thomas Demond.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 25th of June, 1669, the town of Fairfield granted certain lands to Thomas Pell, Esq.<sup>d</sup>

Circa 1663, "the legislature of Connecticut determining to secure as far as possible the lands within the limits of their charter, authorized one Thomas Pell to purchase of the Indian proprietors all that tract between Westchester and Hudson's River, and the waters which made the Manhadoes an island, and resolved that it should be added to Westchester." This statement is made on the authority of Trumbull and Webster, although no record now remains of the transaction.<sup>e</sup>

Mr. Pell's death must have occurred sometime between the date of his will, 21st of September, 1669, and that of the order for the taking of an inventory of his estate, on the 13th October, 1669; tradition asserts he was buried at Fairfield.<sup>f</sup>

### *The last will of Thomas Pell.*

In ye name of God, Amen—It hath pleased ye all wise God many years to exercise me with much weakness of body, and having lately taken to himselfe my beloved wife Lucy, it being ye good pleasure of God to deny me natural issue of my owne body, his good hand of mercy continueing unto me to keep me in perfect memory and my understanding in a comfortable measure, according to proportion of wisdom and knowledge, where he saw meet to proportion to me, I desire in faith to give up my soule to God which gave it, my body to a

<sup>a</sup> New Haven Col. Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Fairfield Town Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Probate Rec. Fairfield Co.

<sup>d</sup> Fairfield Town Rec.

<sup>e</sup> Trumbull's Hist. Conn. 272. Webster's Letters, 205.

<sup>f</sup> Hazard's State Papers, vol. ii. 245, 336, 342, 343.

comely burial, that I may be decently buried in such a comely manner that God may not be dishonored. It beinge my desire that peace may be attended in enjoyment of what God hath been pleased to give to me—this being my last will and testament—I doe make my nephew, John Pell, living in ould England, the only sonne of my only brother John Pell, Doctor of Divinity, which he had by his first wife, my whole and sole heire of all my lands and houses in any parte of New England, or in ye territoryes of ye Duke of Yorke. I also give to my nephew John Pell (my whole and sole heire) all my goods, moveable or immoveable whatsoever—money, plate, chattells and cattle of all kinde—except such parcells and legacies which I give and bequeath to persons as followeth, my just debts being first paid : and if my nephew, John Pell, be deceased, and hath left a sonne or sonnes surviving him, then what I have above given to my nephew, John Pell, I give to such issue of his ; and in ye default of such issue, it's my will that my brother John Pell's daughter shall enjoy ye abovesaid portion ; and in case they or any of them be deceased, then it is my will that the children of my brother's daughters shall inherit the abovesaid portion, to be equally divided amongst them. It is my will, that in case my nephew, John Pell, my brother's sonne by his first wife, be deceased, and hath left no male issue, if my brother hath a sonne or sonnes by his last wife, he or they shall enjoy ye above said portion ; and in ye default of them or their male issue, then my brother's daughters, or their children, shall enjoy ye above portion as is above expressed. I give to Abigail Burr, ye wife of Daniell Burr, ye best bed in my house in Fairfield, and boulstis, with two blancoates, a rug and dormink suit of curtains, six cushions, two paire of sheets, six chairs, the brewing kettle in use, two new keelers, a brewing tub, six silver spoons, with ye use of all ye plate in the house, if she desire of my executors of trust, till my heire or heires come or send his or their order how or which way all things shall be disposed of. *Item*—I give to Daniell Burr all my horses and horse colts which I have in New England, and in ye territoryes of ye Duke of Yorke : I except my mares and mare colts, which I do not give him ; I except my saddle gelding, which my heire is to have if he come over—otherwise, Daniell Burr is to have him, Daniell Burr is to take ye horse flesh as they run ; without any further dehinery, lett the mares be disposed of according to ye understanding of my executors of trust. *Item*—I give to my sonne, Francis French, all my tobacco, growing or not growing, in casks, or otherways made up in rolls or twist. *Item*—I give to Nathaniell French two young coves and one young bull. *Item*—To Elizabeth White I give the worst feather bed and boulster, one iron pott, six porringers, six spoons of alcamy, six pewter platters, one brass skellet, and fiteene pounds more in goods or cattle, current pay, and two comely suits of apparel, one for working days, another for Sabbath dayes, with two paire of shoes. *Item*—to Mary White I give six pounds and one suite of aparell of serge, with two shifts, and wool for stockings. I give to Nathaniell White, an apprentice to some handicraft trade ; and if it be for his advantage, to give tenne pounds

with him out of my estate, not diminishing his twenty pounds, which is to be improved for his use. I give to Barbary, my servant—I sett her at liberty to be a free woman a month after my burial, except my nephew, John Pell, come in person; she then to attend his occasions whilst he is there, not exceeding three months. Further, I do give to Barbary, my servant, one flock bed and boulder, and two blancoats, a pair of sheets, and cotton rug, one iron pott, an iron skellett, six trays and chest, with a lock and key to it, six porringers, two pewter platters, six pewter spoons or ye value of them, two cowes or the value of them. I give to my ancient maid, Katharine Rysten, five pounds in cattle or county pay. I make, ordain, constitute and appoint Daniell Burr and John Bankes to be my executors of trust; and order them to pay, after my burial, all my just debts and legacies, and to make sale of any utensils which are subject to decay—old cattle—and to be accountable to my heire or heires, and to keep up housing and fences upon my heires' charge, that the estate may not suffer. I give to my said executors of trust twenty pounds apiece, and to be paid what first charge they are at upon any incumbrances. *Item*—I give those poor men their debts upon my booke, whose names follow—Joseph Pathon, James Evers, Thomas Bassett, Roger Percy: and that this is my last will. In witness whereof, I have hereunto sett my hand this twenty and one yeare of the raigne of our soveraigne lord, King Charles, and the twenty first of September, 1669.

Me, THOMAS PELL.

Signed in the presence of us,

Nathan Gould,  
John Cabell.

John Cabell gives oath that he was wisse to Mr. Pell signing this will, with Mr. Gould, as he hath entered his hand. Taken upon oath before me,  
Nathan Gould, Assistant,

This 3d of ———, in his Majestie's  
Colony of Connecticut, September, 1669.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 13th of October, A.D. 1669, the Court of Assize issued the following order, authorizing and appointing Mr. John Richbell, Mr. William Leyden, and Mr. Samuel Drake, to take an inventory of the estate of Thomas Pell, deceased:

“Whereas, Mr. Thomas Pell, of Ann Hook's Neck, is lately deceased, and having left a considerable estate in this government, of which no inventory is as yet returned.”<sup>b</sup>

In the inventory, we have a thorough and particular account

<sup>a</sup> This will may be found in the Probate Rec. of Fairfield Co. 1665 to '75.

<sup>b</sup> Assize Rec. Albany, vol. ii. 78.

of the whole furniture and household array of a wealthy merchant and gentleman of that early period.

An inventory of ye estate of Mr. Thomas Pell, late deceased, appraised by us whose names are underwritten, and yt according to an order or commission directed unto us by ye Rt. Hon'ble ye Govern'r, and his Royal High., ye Duke of Yorke, of all his territories in America.

Imprimis 1 old feather bed, 2 feather bolsters, 2 pillows, 1 rug,			
1 blankett, 1 coverlett, 1 bedstead, and 1 pr. of old sheets, .	14	0	0
1 paire of old kitterminster curtains and vallance, . . . .	1	0	0
63 yds. of canvass at 2s. pr yd. . . . .	6	6	0
36 drest buck and doe skins at 4s. pr piece, . . . . .	7	0	0
1 pr. of wooden scales and weights, . . . . .	0	3	0
2 paire of old sheep sheres . . . . .	0	4	0
1 table and frame, . . . . .	0	10	0
6 silver spoons and 1 dram cup, . . . . .	2	0	0
9 pound of tacks, . . . . .	0	4	0
1 pr. of brasse scales and pound weights, . . . . .	0	5	0
1 piece of girt web and lead lyne, . . . . .	0	6	0
1 pound of pepper, . . . . .	0	2	0
4 knives, . . . . .	0	2	0
14 buckles and 2 bridle bits, . . . . .	0	2	0
2½ yds. of bongala at 3s. pr yd. . . . .	0	7	6
14 yds. of peniston at 2s. p. yd. . . . .	1	8	0
6 yds. of Holland at 4s. p. yd. . . . .	1	4	0
21 yds. ½ of bockram at 1s. 6d. p. yd. . . . .	1	12	3
60 lbs. of pewt. at 12d. pr lb. . . . .	3	0	0
8 old napkins, 1 table cloath and towell, . . . . .	0	14	0
1 old lynnenn wast coate, 1 pr. of drawers and 2 shirts, . . . . .	0	16	0
1 chest, . . . . .	0	5	0
1 old wast coate, . . . . .	0	6	0
5 pr. of woosted stockings at 4s. pr pair, . . . . .	1	0	0
1 pr. of home spun stockings, . . . . .	0	4	0
1 pair of serge boot hose and tops, . . . . .	0	6	0
4 cushion cases, . . . . .	0	10	0
13 yds. of several remnants of several stuffs at 2s. pr yd. . . . .	1	6	0
12 yds. more ye sd stuffs, . . . . .	1	4	0
9 yds. of remnants of serge at 3s. pr yd. . . . .	1	7	0
1 piece of serge, . . . . .	3	0	0
11½ yds. of remnants of kersey at 4s. pr yd. . . . .	2	6	0
24 yds. of flew lynnenn at 2s. p. yd. . . . .	2	2	0

4 yds. of penistone at 2s. pr yd. . . . .	0 8 0
5 yds. of cotton at 2s. 6d. p. yd. . . . .	0 12 6
3 lb. of black and browne thread, . . . . .	0 6 0
Remnants of gimp and other laces, . . . . .	1 0 0
1 pair of cotton cards, . . . . .	0 1 6
14 lb. and $\frac{1}{2}$ of lead in barres at 3d. p. lb. . . . .	0 3 2
1 pair of bridle reines, . . . . .	0 1 6
3 quire of paper, . . . . .	0 1 6
1 chest with a lock, . . . . .	0 10 0
2 joynt stooles, . . . . .	0 4 0
3 chaires at 2s. pr chaire, . . . . .	0 6 0
7 lb. of powder at 1s. per lb. . . . .	0 7 0
1 old neckcloath, 5 old bands, 2 handkerchiefs, and old red cap, . . . . .	0 10 0
3 gunnes, . . . . .	3 0 0
1 old patcht flock bead, 2 boulsters, 3 old blanketts, 1 old coverlett, . . . . .	0 10 0
1 chaffe bed being broke, 1 feath. bolster, 1 per of coarse sheets, . . . . .	2 0 0
1 hammock, . . . . .	0 12 0
1 old coate, . . . . .	0 4 0
2 feather bol. 1 pillow, 2 blanketts and 1 coarse sheet, . . . . .	2 10 0
1 dressed boar skin, . . . . .	0 4 0
1 very old boat sayle, . . . . .	0 4 0
1 old bible, . . . . .	0 4 0
Culpeper's dispensatory, wh 3 other small books, . . . . .	0 10 0
2 of Cradock's works in quarto, . . . . .	0 0 0
2 brushes, . . . . .	0 1 0
18 old fashioned felt hats wh bands, . . . . .	5 0 0
2 yds. of bayes and duffets for 1 paire of Indian breeches, . . . . .	0 7 0
15 bushells of winter wheat at 6s. p. bushell, . . . . .	3 0 0
3 bushells of Indian corn at 2s. 6d. p. bushell, . . . . .	0 7 6
A parcell of sheep's wool, . . . . .	2 0 0
A parcell of cotton wool, . . . . .	1 6 0
A parcell of lumber casks in ye chamber, . . . . .	0 12 0
380 lb. of nayles at 10d. p. lb. . . . .	15 0 8
7 bolts for dores, . . . . .	0 4 0
2 paire of bridle raines, . . . . .	0 3 0
1 paire of bridle bitts, . . . . .	0 1 0
1 feth'r bed, 1 boulster, 2 blanketts, 2 rugs, 2 pillows, 1 pr. of sheets, . . . . .	5 0 0
1 large feather bed, 1 boulster, 2 blanketts, 1 rug, 1 pr. of old sheets and 1 pillow, . . . . .	7 0 0
2 blanketts, . . . . .	1 0 0
1 old feather bed, 1 boulster, 1 pillow, 1 paire of sheets, 1 blan-	



kett and 1 coverlett, . . . . .	5 0 0
17 yds. of coarse broad cloth at 7s. p. yd. . . . .	5 19 0
17 lumber casks, . . . . .	0 17 0
1 old chest without a lock, . . . . .	0 5 0
4 iron potts, 1 skillett, 3 pair of pot hooks, . . . . .	2 10 0
3 brasse kettles, 1 skillett, 2 chafing dishes, 1 pestell and mortar, and 1 copper skillett, . . . . .	5 0 0
2 trammells, 1 dripping pan, 1 spitt, 1 frying pan, 1 paire of tongues, 1 gridiron, 1 smoothing iron, . . . . .	1 15 0
2 doz. trayes, 2 boults, 1 cheesplate, 5 wooden bottles, 8 peales, 1½ bushell, 1 peck, 1 quarter cann, 1 old small churn, . . . . .	1 5 0
2 ploughs, 2 shares, 2 coulter, bolts, collars and 1 pr. of chaines, . . . . .	1 10 0
3 draught chaines, 1 timber chaine, . . . . .	2 0 0
2 paire of geres for horses, . . . . .	1 0 0
6 falling axes and 1 hatchett, . . . . .	0 14 0
2 mattocks, 2 spades, 2 iron crowes, 2 sledges, 6 wedges, 1 drawing knife, 1 hedging bill, 1 clapboard hoe, 1 crosse cut saw, 1 hand saw, and beetle rings, . . . . .	2 10 0
1 piece of an iron barre, . . . . .	0 10 0
2 old carts, 3 paire of wheels, 1 paire of them shod with iron, and 1 cart rope, . . . . .	5 9 0
3 old table napkins, 1 table cloth, 6 old towells, . . . . .	0 10 0
1 warming pan, &c. . . . .	0 16 0
24 harrow teeth, 1 swivell, 1 horse lock, 1 small chaine, 3 gimblets, 8 howes, . . . . .	1 10 0
1 small bag with ginger, . . . . .	0 1 0
20 yearling cattle, . . . . .	40 0 0
9 2 yeare old, . . . . .	22 10 0
9 3 yeare old, . . . . .	31 10 0
6 4 yeare old, . . . . .	27 0 0
6 milch cows, . . . . .	27 0 0
12 oxen, . . . . .	72 0 0
5 calves, . . . . .	5 0 0
1 hogsd. and 1 barrell of mollasses, . . . . .	4 0 0
4 barrells of salt, . . . . .	1 10 0
16 lumber casks, . . . . .	0 16 0
All ye tobacco, old and new, . . . . .	50 0 0
2 hydes, . . . . .	1 0 0
1 parcell of feathers in a pillow case, and 1 pr. of old stockens, . . . . .	0 4 0
Horses and horse colts as they run in the woods, . . . . .	40 0 0
Mares and mare colts, . . . . .	50 0 0
53 sheep, . . . . .	22 0 0
Swyne, small and greate, . . . . .	40 0 0
House and land in Westchester, . . . . .	20 0 0

The howsing, lands, barnes, islands, adjoyning from Hutchinson's Ryver westward, and so far eastward as were Mr. Tho.

Pell's inst. and lawful right, . . . . .	500	0	0
6 new scythes, . . . . .	0	18	0
6 unwashed fleeces of wool, . . . . .	0	12	0
6 old scythes, . . . . .	0	14	0
In Applebyes keeping, 2 cows and 1 plow chaine, . . . . .	9	8	0
In Jonathan Burge his keeping, 2 oxen, 3 coves, 2 yearlings, 4 calves, 1 timber chaine, 1 plough chaine, 1 colter, 1 share and bould, . . . . .	35	10	0
1 plough share, colter, bould, collar and yoke irons, in John Holy's hands, . . . . .	2	0	0
64 load of hay, . . . . .	16	0	0
5 firkins of sope and parcell of tallow, . . . . .	3	0	0
$\frac{3}{4}$ barrell of rum, . . . . .	1	10	0
1 paire of stillyards, . . . . .	0	10	0
3 yoaks and 2 grind stones, . . . . .	0	12	0
1 canow, parcell of beef, and 2 small parcells of sugar, . . . . .	1	10	0
4 coves more, . . . . .	18	0	0
4 oxen, . . . . .	24	0	0
2 of 2 yeare old, . . . . .	5	0	0
2 of 3 yeare old, . . . . .	7	0	0
2 calves, . . . . .	2	0	0
1 bull stag, . . . . .	6	0	0
Wheate, . . . . .	12	0	0
30 bushells of Indian corne, . . . . .	3	0	0
Old wheat, . . . . .	5	0	0
2 draught chaines, 1 timber chaine, 1 pr. cart wheels, boxes and rings, . . . . .	3	0	0
1 colter, 1 share colter and bould, . . . . .	1	10	0
1 broad axe, 3 iron wedges, 1 pr. of beetle rings, 1 cart rope, 1 collar for a horse, 2 pitchforks, 1 grind stone, . . . . .	1	10	0
1 flock bed and bouldster, 1 handsaw, 2 augurs, 2 hamers, and 1 paire fell'rs, . . . . .	1	10	0
1 iron pott, pot hooks and tramell, 1 brasse kettle, 1 kellett and candlestick, 1 pewter pint pott, 2 old pewter platters, . . . . .	2	0	0
6 alchymy spoons, . . . . .	0	1	0
15 old lumber casks, . . . . .	0	15	0
$\frac{1}{2}$ firkin butter and 2 cheeses, . . . . .	0	15	0
2 cove hydes, . . . . .	0	10	0
<b>Total sume,</b> . . . . .	<b>1294</b>	<b>14</b>	<b>4</b>

This inventory and appraisem't was finished ye 20th of October, 1669, as witness o'r hands, we having according to o'r best knowledge and understand-

ing, done as witness o'r hands ye day and yeare aforesaid, we have appraised as money of this country,

John Richbells.

Wm. = Hoyden.

his marke.

Samuell Drake.

John Bankes one of ye Exec'rs of ye said will entered into bond of £200 Sterl. to perfourme ye said will. Ye bond was dated ye 13 of October, 1669.

During the same year an execution was granted against ye estate of Thomas Pell of Ann Hooks neck, for £16 19 10, of ye goods or chattels belonging and reserved by ye executors, in trust, for the use of his heirs, the said sum being due for several charges relating to a matter in difference between Charles Bridges and Sarah his wife, plaintiffs, and ye said Thomas Pell defendant, wherein ye said defendant was overthrown, and condemned to pay ye costs of suit.<sup>a</sup>

FRANCIS LOVELACE.

To Mr. Robert Coe, high sheriff or his deputy, to cause this execution to be served.<sup>b</sup>

By the will of Mr. Thomas Pell, it will be observed, that he bequeathes all his "lands and houses in any part of New England, or in ye territory of ye Duke of York," to his nephew John Pell living in Ould England, the only son of his only brother, John Pell, Doctor of Divinity.

Dr. Pell, the immediate ancestor of the Pell family in this country, was "an eminent mathematician, and descended of an ancient family in Lincolnshire, whence this branch having removed some time into Sussex, *this gentleman* had his birth in that county, on the first of March, 1610, at Southwycke, of which place his father Mr. John Pell (as we have shown before) was then minister, but he did not live to see his son above six years of age, who after this loss, was put to a grammar school then newly founded at Steyning in that county.<sup>c</sup> When scarcely thirteen years of age, he entered Trinity College, Cambridge, England.

<sup>a</sup> See Westchester.

<sup>b</sup> Assize Rec. Alb. 215

<sup>c</sup> Biographia Brittanica, vol. v.

In 1630, he wrote and published his *Modus Supputandi, Ephemerides, Astronomicas*, also a key to unlock the meaning of Johannes Trithemius, and a discourse on Steganography. He had previously written a description and use of the Quadrant. His great patron at this time, was the Prince of Orange, who presented him with the professorship of mathematics, at Breda in Holland.

In April, 1654, he received his appointment from Oliver Cromwell, as English resident Ambassador to the Swiss cantons.

The Pell papers in the Lansdowne and Birch collections afford interesting illustrations of Dr. Pell's domestic and literary character.

These papers contain numerous letters from Sir William Moorland, Sir William Lockhart, Sir William Cavendish, Secretary Thurloe and other distinguished men of that day to Dr. Pell.

To which is appended Dr. Pell's diary during his residence at Zurich.

The latter commences thus: "April 5th, dismissed my Lord Protector, supped with my wife and bade her adieu."

The first article in his correspondence (as ambassador) opens with a letter to Mr. Secretary Thurloe, dated Utrecht, April 20th, old style, 1654.<sup>a</sup>

In a letter from Mr. Moorland, to the Right Hon. John Pell, dated, Whitehall, January 15th, 1656-7, he makes the following allusion to the family of the latter: "to-morrow, God willing, I shall not fail to go and present your *five* children with five gold angels according to your order, as I have this evening sent her ladyship a note, though it were after I received the enclosed from her to you," &c. &c.

August 26th, 1654, Mr. Pell thus writes to his wife concerning his children.

Let *Mary* learn to cut and carve with her right hand. Take heed that *John*<sup>b</sup> lose not his Roman with learning Secretary, or else get a rambling hand writing, neither of them well, &c."

<sup>a</sup> The year of his brother's purchase.

<sup>b</sup> John here alluded to, was the second proprietor of the manor. In Mr. Pell's diary, Feb. 3, 1654, he remarks, "my son eleven years old."

To Mrs. Pell, at her house behind six trees, in Gardiner's lane, near King street, Westminster. In a letter of August 28th O. S. 1655, to his wife, he writes, "you have reason to thank the councillor that persuaded you to write to me for pearls and jewels. You tell me you know I have rich presents; you might do well to tell me, who gave them me, when, and where, and what they are, for I know none of all these. Nobody wears pearls or jewels here. If they were to be sold, they cannot be sent safely to you in a letter through the hands of many posts, and I have no other way to send to you from hence. It would a great deal better become you, to advise your daughters to cast off all thoughts of such bravery, as would not be fit for them, though their father were worth twenty times as much as he is, all his just claims being reckoned with that which he hath now in his power. This letter will come to Whitehall, about the very beginning of the parliament, so that Mr. Secretary and those about him, may be so full of business, that they may forget to send you this letter in due time, and then it may miscarry, which is the cause that this time I tell you no more of my mind concerning Ma. and the rest, of whom, I cannot think without much sadness.

God Almighty bless them and direct you.

Zurich, May, 26th. Mr. Pell to Mrs. Pell. Since my last of April 20th, &c. &c., I have received two of yours. In them you ask advice concerning my son. If he be not fit to get long lessons, by heart, he will never be fit for that school; but you must take heed that you displease not Mr. B. by taking him away. If our friends can help you to find out a good school for him, you may send him thither in the school vacation; or else my uncle may help you to an excuse, by pretending a desire to see him; and then (as if it were his humor in my absence to have him better grounded before he return to such a great school) he may be sent to some other school, where there are fewer boys; for in large schools, the masters are forced to ease themselves by laying great burdens upon their scholars' memories. But it will be very hard to find a good school. God Almighty direct you and bless him and his sisters.

October 15th. Mr. Pell to Mrs. Pell. Since my last of July 16, I have received seven of yours, &c. The fourth tells me

that you like mine of July 16th so ill, that you may well content yourself without my letters. In it you sent me a Latin letter enquiring whether *he that wrote it will be a scholar or a 'prentice*. That question will be better answered three years hence; they that will now judge of him may be very much mistaken in him; with your next, let him send me the names of the books which he now learns at school, &c.

October 2d, 1656, concerning his daughter Mary's marriage, he writes: "I perceive by yours, that M. hath much abated the height of her first flight. First a rich husband or none at all, then two hundred pounds a year at least; now, a younger brother, that hath no land, but some money in other men's hands, almost enough to purchase fourscore pounds a year free laud.

Now she hath found one rich enough for her, you must try whether he will account her rich enough for him, you may therefore tell him or her that you have order to pay him two hundred pounds upon the day of her marriage, without promise that she or hers shall receive any more from me, or by me, till I am dead, &c. &c.<sup>a</sup>

On May the 6th, 1658, Mr. Pell received the following letter of recall from the Protector.

Oliver Cromwell to Mr. Pell.

Sir:—The state of affairs being much altered in those parts, so that your longer abode there seemeth not so necessary, and that your return hither may be more serviceable to us, I have thought fit hereby to recall you; therefore you will do well, having taken your leave their, in the best manner, to repair homewards, that we may receive from you the account of your whole negotiation, and you from us the encouragement which you have deserved.<sup>b</sup>

Sir, I rest your loving friend,

Oliver P.

By his highness's command, Jo Thurloe.

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Pell's daughter was mar. Nov. 27, 1656.

<sup>b</sup> The tedious negotiations at Baden, ended in a peace, which left the Swiss Cantons in the same relation to each other and Europe as before.

Mr. Pell arrived in England only a short time prior to the death of his patron. Cromwell died on the 3d of September, 1658, just three weeks after Pell's arrival in London, on the 13th of August. In his diary, Mr. Pell thus records the event.

September 3. "Olivarius Protector, obiit Alb. aulee.

September 4. Ricardus Westmonasterii et Londini proclamatur.

The following notes relate to his attendance on the Protector's funeral:

*Gardiner's Lane near King Street.*

I do hereby request that the proportion of cloth allowed unto me by the right honorable council as mourning for his late highness, the lord protector, may be delivered unto my neighbor, Mr. Samuel Hartlib the younger.

Written with mine own hand, Sept. 25th, 1658,

JOHN PELL.

*Whitehall, at the Green Cloth, Sept. 27, 1658.*

MR. CLERK COMPTROLLER: I desire you to direct the delivering of nine yards of black cloth, of twenty-four shillings per yard, and six yards, of fifteen shillings per yard, for John Pell, Esq.

BARRINGTON.

JOHN PELL, ESQ.: You are desired to attend the funeral of the most serene and most renowned Oliver, late lord protector, from Somerset house, on Tuesday the 23d of November, instant, at eight of the clock in the morning at the furthest, and to bring with you this ticket, and that by Friday night next you send to the herald's office, near Paul's, the names of your servants that are to attend in mourning, without which they are not to be admitted, and also to take notice that no coaches are to pass on that day in the streets between Somerset house and Westminster.<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Pell was admitted to holy orders by the Bishop of Lincoln in 1661, and obtained from the crown the rectory of Fobbing in

---

<sup>a</sup> Vaughan's Protectorate of Cromwell, vol. ii. 341, 342.

Essex, to which the Bishop of London added the rectory of Lavingdon, or Lainden, in the same county, A. D. 1677-8.

Among the Pell papers occurs the following letter from his curate, the Rev. John Nye, dated,

*Lainden, Feb. 10, 1677-8.*

REVEREND SIR,—You expect, I presume, some intimations concerning the place and people where, as your substitute, I serve the cure; after tedious deliberation, I thought to give your worship the following notice, viz. :—As far as the winter extremities, the incontinuity of country houses, and private necessities do permit, our churches enjoy full congregations, the people being reverent and observant, and lovers of the desk as well as pulpit. I know not one perfect dissenter; only Mr. Andrews, of Lainden, once held a conventicle in his house since my coming. The appearance at Christmas communion was tolerable—about twenty persons; and we hope Easter will exceed. Our school is occupied by a licensed, grave, and good man. All officers for church and town are legally qualified, *i. e.* men honest, able, judicious. All church ornaments and repairs are exact, except only Barseldon, where two casualties are fallen, viz. : the bell roof is ready to drop, and one side of the church needs shoring; the total charges are pre-estimated about fifty pounds. As for my own acceptance and success, it is not wholly in vain, praised be God! I know not one drunkard nor swearer amongst us, except only Gaffar Fryer of Lainden, who on many accounts forgets piety but especially by swearing and miserableness. My Lord Bishop of London urges the duty of catechising with much fervor; I shall begin on the 17th of Feb. next, being the first Sunday in Lent; but my lord (when I sued out a license,) did profess lent season too short for such a work, and hardly endured to have the matter contested. Our parishes have not observed perambulations for several years; I suppose it will be convenient to stir them thereto against the 5th of May next, Rogation Sunday. Reverend sir, I know your minutes are precious, your importances constant; *ergo*, it is duty and love without rhetorical amages, to profess myself, as I ought to appear,

Your worship's humble servant and ready curate.

JOHN NYE.



Mr. Andrews (of whom my letter speaketh,) is a constant churchman, attentive and observant at the common prayer, and carefully avoideth sly reflections against the government, but, as it seems, best satisfied with the Presbyterian discipline.<sup>a</sup>

The Rev. John Pell, D. D., died on the 12th of December, 1685, and was buried in the rector's vault of St. Giles' Church in the Fields, London.

John Pell, the only son of the Rev. John Pell, D. D., was born on the 3d February, 1643. By the will of his uncle, Thomas Pell, he became the next proprietor of the manor of Pelham.

From the following document it is apparent that John Pell took possession of the manor the year succeeding his uncle's decease, for "at a meeting of the governor and assistants in Hartford, December 9th, 1670, upon the desire of Mr. John Pell, the governor and assistants thought good thereby to certify whom it may concern, that they are fully satisfied by several letters and testimonials that the governor hath received from persons of honor in England, that the bearer of them, Mr. John Pell, sewer in ordinary to his majesty, and son of Dr. Pell of London, is the undoubted nephew of Mr. Thomas Pell, late of Fairfield, and the person whom he hath made his heir in his last will and testament, to whom the inventory in trust ought to surrender the estate bequeathed to him by the said Mr. Thomas Pell, deceased, and the just account thereof according to his will. Signed by order of the governor and assistants, present me

JOHN ALLEN, Secretary of

his Majesty's Colony of Connecticut.<sup>a</sup>


In the year 1675, John Pell of Ann-hooks neck, binds and makes over unto John Burr of Fairfield, his heirs and assignees, &c., all his meadow lying in Fairfield, on the Mill river, &c.

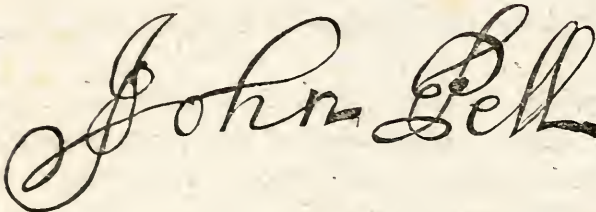
The 11th of December, 1685, John Pell, Esq., by conveyance made over to John Smith of the town of Bruckland, Great Minne-

<sup>a</sup> Vaughan's Protectorate of Cromwell, vol. ii. 483-5.

<sup>b</sup> Probate Rec. Fairfield, Co. 1665-75, p. 49.

fords Island, sometimes called Mulberry Island, which lies situate opposite to Ann-hooks neck, formerly in possession of William Pate and Robert Godfrey.





Signature and seal of John Pell and Rachel his wife.

Upon the 20th of October, 1687, the whole manor was confirmed by letters patent under the great seal of the province of New York, by Thomas Dongan, lieutenant governor of the same in the following manner :

THOMAS DONGAN, Captain General and Governor-in-chief in and over the province of New Yorke, and the territories depending thereon in America, under his most sacred Majesty, James the Second, by the grace of God Kinge of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c.,—to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting : Whereas, Richard Nicolls, Esq., late governor of this province, by his certaine deed in writing, under his hand and seale, bearing date the sixth day of October, in the eighteenth year of the reigne of our late sovereigne lord, Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Kinge, defender of the faith, &c., and in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand six hundred sixty and six—did give, grant, confirme and rattefy, by virtue of the commission and authoritye unto him given by his (then) royal highness, James, Duke of Yorke, &c., (his now Majesty,) upon whome, by lawful grant and pattent from his (then) Majesty, the propriety and government of that part of the maine land, as well of Long Island and all the islands adjacent. Amongst other things was settled unto Thomas Pell, of Onkway, alias Fairfield, in his Majesty's colony of Connecticut—gentleman—all that certaine tract of land upon the maine lying and being to the eastward of Westchester bounds, bounded to the westward with a river called by the Indians Aquaconounck; commonly known to the English by the name of Hutchinson's River, which runneth into the bay lyeing betweene Throgmorton's Neck and Anne Hooke's Neck, comonly caled Huchingson's Bay, bounded on the east by a brooke

called Cedar Tree Brooke, or Gravelly Brooke ; on the south by the Sound, which lyeth betweene Longe Island and the maine land, with all the islands in the Sound not before that time granted or dispossessed of, lyeing before that tract of land so bounded as is before expresst ; and northward to runne into the woods about eight English miles, the breadth to be the same, as it is along by the Sound, together with all the lands, islands, soyles, woods, meadows, pastures, marshes, lakes, waters, creeks, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other proffits, commodities and heridatements to the said tract of land and islands belonging, with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof ; and that the said tract of land and premises should be forever thereafter held, deemed, reputed, taken and be an intire infranchised townshipp, manner and place of itself, and should always, from time to time, and at all times thereafter, have, hold and enjoy like and equall priviledges and immunities with any towne infranchised, place or manner within this government, &c., shall in no manner of way be subordinate or belonging unto, have any dependance upon or in any wise, bounds or the rules under the direction of any riding, or towne, or townships, place or jurisdiction either upon the maine or upon Longe Island—but should in all cases, things and matters be deemed, reputed, taken and held as an absolute, intire, infranchised townshipp, manner and place of itselfe in this government, and should be ruled, ordered and directed in all matters as to government, accordingly, by the governour and Councill, and General Court of Assizes—only provided, always, that the inhabitants in the said tract of land granted as aforesaid, should be oblidged to send fforwards to the next townes all publick pachquets and letters, or hew and cryes coming to New Yorke or goeing from thence to any other of his Majestie's collonys ; to have and to hold the said tract of land and islands, with all and singular the appurtenances and premises, together with the priveledges, imuneties, franchises, and advantages therein given and granted unto the said Thomas Pell, to the proper use and behoofe of the said Thomas Pell, his heires and assignes for ever, fully, ffreely and clearly, in as large and ample manner and forme, and with such full and absolute imunities and priveledges as before is expresst, as if he had held the same immediately ffrom his Majesty the Kinge of England, &c., and his suckcessors, as of the manner of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in free and common sockage and by fealtey, only yealdeing, rendering and payeing yearely and every yeare unto his then royall highness, the Duke of Yorke, and his heires, or to such governour or governours as from time to time should by him be constituted and appoynted, as an acknowledgement, one lambe on the first day of May, if the same shall be demanded as by the said deede in writeing, and the entrey thereof in the bookes of records in the secretarie's office for the province aforesaid, may more fully and at large appeare. *And whereas*, John Pell, gentleman, nephew of the said Thomas Pell, to whom the lands, islands and premises, with appurtenances, now by the last will and testament of him, the said Thomas Pell, given and bequeathed, now is in the actual, peacable

and quiett seazeing and posession of all and singular the premises, and hath made his humble request to mee, the said Thomas Dongan, that I would, in the behalfe of his sacred Majesty, his heirs and suckcessors, give and grant unto him, the said John Pell, a more full and firme grant and confirmation of the above lands and premises, with the appurtenances, under the seale of this his Majestie's province : *Now Know Yee*, that I, the said Thomas Dongan, by vertue of the commission and authority unto me given by his said Majesty, and power in me being and residing, in consideration of the quitt rent hereinafter reserved, and for divers other good and lawfull considerations me thereunto mouving, I have given, rattefied and confirmed, and by these presents doe hereby give, grant, rattefie and confirme unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns for ever, all the before mentioned and rented lands, islands and premises, with the heridatements and appurtenances, priveledges, imunities, franchises and advantages to the same belonging and appertaining, or in the said before mentioned deede in writing expresst, implied or intended to be given and granted, and every part and parcell thereof, together with all that singular messuages, tenements, barnes, stables, orchards, gardens, lands, islands, meadows, inclosures, arable lands, pastures, feedeings, commons, woods, underwoods, soyles, quarreys, mines, minnerally, (royall mines only excepted,) waters, rivers, ponds, lakes, hunteing, haucking, ffishing, fflowleing, as alsoe all rents, services, wasts, strayes, royaltyes, liberties, priveledges, jurisdictions, rights, members and appurtenances, and all other imunities, royaltyes, power of franchises, profitts, commodeties and heredatements whatsoever to the premises, or any part or parcell thereof belonging or appertaining : and further, by vertue of the power and authority in mee being and residing, I doe hereby grant, rattefie and confirme, and the tract of land, island and premises aforesaid are, by these presents, erected and constituted to be one lordship and manner—and the same shall from henceforth be called the lordshipp and manner of Pelham ; and I doe hereby give and grant unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns, full power and authority at all times hereafter, in the said lordshipp and manner of Pelham aforesaid, one court leete and one court barron, to hold and keepe at such times and so often yearly as he and they shall see meete, and all sines, issues and amerçiements at the said court leete and court barron, to be holden and kept in the manner and lordship aforesaid, that are payable from time to time, shall happen to be due and payable by and from any the inhabitants of or within the said lordshipp and manner of Pelham abovesaid ; and also all and every the powers and authorities herein before mentioned, for the holding and keepeing of the said court leete and court barron, ffrom time to time, and to award and issue forth the costumary writts to be issued and awarded out of the said court leete and court barron, and the same to beare test and to be issued out in the name of the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, and the same court leete and court barron to be kept by the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, or his or their steward, deputed or appoynted : and I doe further hereby give and grant unto the said John Pell,

his heirs and assignes, full power to distraine for all rents and other sums of money payable by reason of the premises, and all other lawful remedies and meanes for the haveing, receiving, levying and enjoying the said premises and every part thereof, and all waifts, straves, wrecks of the sease, deodands and goods of ffellons happening and being within the said manner of Pelham, with the advowson and right of patronage of all and every of the church and churches in the said manner, erected and to be erected—to have and to hold all and singular the said tract of land, islands and manner of Pelham, and all and singular the above granted or mentioned to be granted premisses, with their rights, members, jurisdictions, privileidges, hereditaments and appurtenances, to the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, to the only proper use, benefitt and behoofe of the said John Pell, his heirs and assignes, for ever; to be holden of his most sacred Majestye, his heirs and successors, in free and common soccage, according to the tenure of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in his Majestye's kingdom of England, yielding, rendering and praying therefore yearly and every year for ever, unto his said Majestye, his heirs and succesors, or to such officer or officers as shall from time to time be appointed to receive the same—twenty shillings, good and lawful money of this province, at the city of New Yorke, on the five and twentyth day of the month of March, in lieu and stead of all rents, services and demands whatsoever.

In testimony whereof, I have signed these presents with my handwriting, caused the seale of the province to be thereunto affixed, and have ordained that the same be entered upon record in the secretary's office, the five and twentyeth day of October, in the third yeare of the Kinge Majestye's reigne, and in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred eighty and seven.<sup>a</sup>

THOMAS DONGAN.

---

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. 240, Alb. Book of Pat. No. ii. 306. The original document is in the possession of Mrs. Maria Fay, of New York.

On the 20th of September, 1689, John Pell, gentleman, and Rachel his wife, for a valuable consideration, conveyed to Jacob Leisler of New York, merchant, all that tract of land in the manor of Pelham, (now called New Rochelle,) containing six thousand acres, and also one hundred acres for the use of the French church, &c. The grantees and his heirs yielding as an acknowledgment therefore unto the said John Pell and his heirs as lords of the manor of Pelham, one fat calf on the 24th day of June, yearly.<sup>a</sup>

By a writ of summons served on the 20th of March, 1691, John Pell was returned by the high sheriff to represent the county of Westchester in the Provincial Assembly.<sup>b</sup> He was also judge of the court of common pleas for this county.

The Hon. John Pell appears to have died intestate cir. 1700, leaving issue by his wife Rachel Pinckney, two sons and several daughters.

Thomas, the eldest son, as heir at law, became invested with the inheritance and legal rights of his deceased father. By the will of Thomas Pell, 3 July, 1739, he bequeathes all his rights to his son Joseph Pell, whose son Joseph married his cousin Zipporah Pell, daughter of John Pell; the sons of the late Joseph Pell, last mentioned, are Peter Pell of Eastchester, the eldest heir male of the Pell family, and Abner lately deceased, besides three daughters. Thomas Pell of Eastchester, the son of Thomas, by his will, dated A. D. 1753, "bequeathes his silver tankard and silver tumbler that formerly belonged to his grandfather, John Pell, to his son David Pell; also the great bible. His executors he empowers to execute good and sufficient deeds and conveyances of his lands and remainders of the moneys which shall be arising from the sale of one half of his farm lying in Eastchester, and the island lying in ye manor of Pelham, and my right in lands lying within ye patent at the north end of New Rochelle lands, &c., and to dispose of my lands lying in Fairfield, Conn.<sup>c</sup>

A small portion of the ancient manor still remains vested in the

---

<sup>a</sup> See New Rochelle.

<sup>b</sup> Smith's Hist. N. Y. 73.

<sup>c</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y. No. xviii. 463.



he last vulned gules. [Granted October 19th, 1594.]

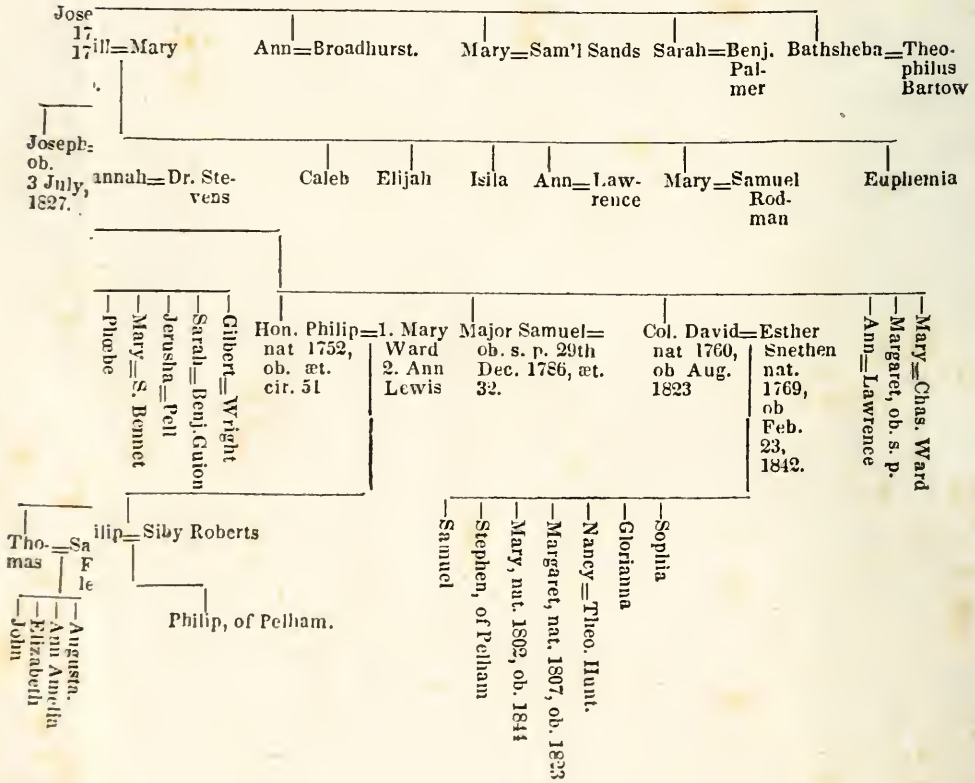
Rev. and Hon. John Pell, D. D. nat. March, 1610, ob. Dec 12, 1685; buried in the Rector's vault at St. Giles' Church, London.

kney,  
ster.

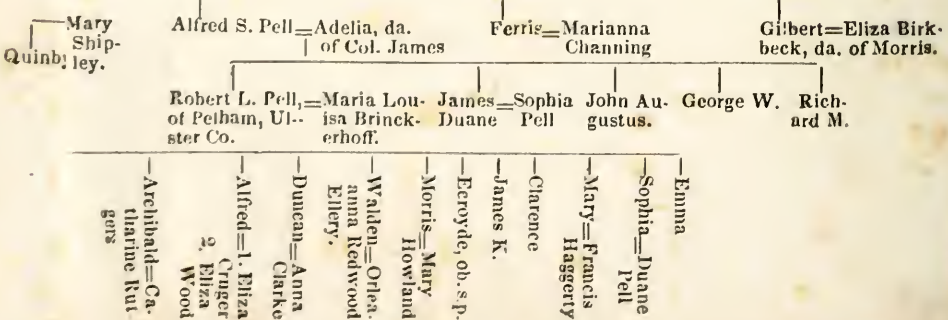
Mary Pell, nat.  
April 14, 1645.

=... Honeywell.

Tamar=James Eustis.



Thom<sup>as</sup> = S<sup>a</sup> F<sup>le</sup> = John  
 Angusta.  
 Ann Amelia  
 Elizabeth





descendants of Philip Pell, Esq., fourth son of Thomas Pell, eldest son of John Lord Pell. Philip married Hannah Mott on the 5th of March, 1731.<sup>a</sup> The son of Philip and Hannah Pell, was Philip Pell, who married Gloriana Tredwell. Their issue was, *first* the Hon. Philip Pell, judge advocate of the American army, member of assembly and one of the best Greek scholars of that day. His grandson is the present Philip Pell, of Pelham. The *second* son was Major Samuel Pell of the second New York regiment who greatly distinguished himself at the memorable battle of Saratoga.<sup>b</sup>

The following epitaph is inscribed on his head stone in Eastchester church yard :

MAJOR SAMUEL PELL,  
ob. 29 Decr. 1786,  
in the 32nd year of his age.

“ Thus after returning victorious,”  
from the field of Mars, he  
cheerfully obeys the summons  
of eternity from whence there  
is no return.

The *third* son of Philip and Hannah Pell, was Colonel David Pell, an officer in the continental army ; this individual was the father of Stephen Pell, of Pelham.

The descendants of Joshua Pell, third son of Thomas Pell, eldest son and heir of John Lord Pell, are the Pells of New York, and Robert L. Pell, Esq., of Pelham, Ulster County.

A beautiful valley borders the Acqueanouncke or Hutchinson's river on the west side of the town. The Acqueanouncke or

<sup>a</sup> This marriage took place before the Quaker meeting assembled at Westbury, L. I. The marriage certificate is signed by 26 witnesses ; among these occurs the name of his brother Caleb Pell.

<sup>b</sup> For his services Major Samuel Pell received three hundred acres of bounty land.

### PEDIGREE OF PELL OF PELHAM.

Arms. ermine, on a canton, azure, a pelican or, vulned gules. Crest. on a chaplet vert flowered, or, a pelican of the last vulned gules. [Granted October 19th, 1594.]

John Pell, Esquire, of Norfolk Co. England, = Margaret Overend, da. of Master of the King's Cup, ob. Feb. 1607. William, of Norfolk.

Thomas Pell, Esquire, first proprietor of the Manor of Pelham, nat. 1608, New Haven, Conn. ob. 1659. Supposed to be buried at Fairfield, Conn.

Rev. and Hon. John Pell, D. D. nat. March, 1610, ob. Dec. 12, 1685; buried in the Rector's vault at St. Giles' Church, London.

Hon. John Pell, first Lord of the Manor of Pelham, = Rachel Pinckney, of Eastchester. nat. 2d Feb. 1643, ob. cir. 1700.

Mary Pell, nat. April 14, 1645.

Thomas, second Lord of the Manor of Pelham, = Ann will dated 1739, No. 18, 154. Sur. Rec. N.Y.

John.

A da. .... Honeywell.

Tamar = James Eustis.

Joseph, nat. 1722, ob. 1752; will dated 1732, No. 15. = Phoebe, nat. 1730, ob. 24d March, 1790. Buried on the Barlow estate.

Thomas, of Eastchester, = Dorothy, held land in a field, will dated 1733, No. 18, 468.

Joshua = Palmer.

Philip, of Pelham, will dated 1751, No. 18, 80. = 1. Hannah, 2. Phoebe.

Caleb: will = Mary dated 1768, No. 26, 259.

Ann = Broadhurst.

Mary = Sam'l Sands

Sarah = Benj. Palmer

Bathsheba = Theophilus Barrow

Joseph = Zippo, ob. 3 July, 1827. = Abner

Thomas = owned the home-stead. = John Thomas

Margaret = da of the Rev. John. = Sarah

Sarah = Capt. Wm. Bailey. = Sarah

Ann = John Barrow = Sarah

Philip = Gloria- na = John Tredwell.

Mary = John Allen

Hannah = Dr. Stevens

Caleb = Elijah

Isia = Ann = Lawrence

Mary = Samuel Rodmen

Euphemia

Samuel James = Mary Fowler

Thomas = will dated 1755 lib. 19, 227. = Thos. Pell.

Roger = John, owned the Schuyler Place. = Mary Inten.

Elizabeth = Archer

Frederick = Elijah, sons in N Y. City.

Ann = Benj. Gorton

Hon. Philip = 1. Mary ob. at cir. 51. = 2. Ann Lewis

Major Samuel = ob. s. p. 29th Dec. 1786, et. 32. = Stephen, of Pelham

Col. David = nat. 1700, ob. Aug. 1823. = Esther nat. 1769, Feb. 24, 1812.

Sophia

Corinna

Mary = Thos. Hunt

Mary = Chas. Ward

Thomas = Sarah Fowler. = Augustin. Ann Amie John

Jas = Ruth Wagler. = Charles Annes

Sam = Maria = Benjamin F.

Rebecca = Fowler = Maria Tell

Phoebe = Dorothy = Mary = Joseph Pell = Rebecca = Fowler = Maria Tell

Elizabeth = Archer = Joseph = Archer = Elizabeth = Archer = Joseph = Archer = Elizabeth = Archer

Philip = Sily Roberts = Philip, of Pelham.

Philip = Sily Roberts = Philip, of Pelham.

Philip = Sily Roberts = Philip, of Pelham.

Philip = Sily Roberts = Philip, of Pelham.

Philip = Sily Roberts = Philip, of Pelham.

Philip = Sily Roberts = Philip, of Pelham.

Philip = Sily Roberts = Philip, of Pelham.

Philip = Sily Roberts = Philip, of Pelham.

Caleb = Martha

James = Martha Pugsey

Elijah =

Da = Palmer

William F. = Mary of New York, ob. Oct. 1841. = Ship-ley.

Alfred S. Pell = Adelia, da. of Col. James

Ferrie = Marianna Channing

Gibert = Eliza Birkbeck, da. of Morris.

Quincy = Isiah

Stephen = Da. = Rev. Mr. Chase

Da. = Rev. Mr. Chase

Caleb = Martha, wife of his uncle James

Aaron = Maria

Elizabeth = Remson Hinman

Mary = Gen. Robert Macomba

Robert L. Pell = Maria Louisa Bruck-erhoff.

James = Sophia Pell

John = George W. Rich-ard M.

James = Sophia Pell

John = George W. Rich-ard M.

John = George W. Rich-ard M.

John = George W. Rich-ard M.

Theodore James Murtipier

Archibald = Cas- sara Kutt-ger  
Alfred = L. Eliza- beth Wood  
Duncan = Anna Charle  
William = Maria Louisa Bruck-erhoff.  
Yardley = Orca- ana Redwood  
Morris = Mary Howland  
James K. = s. p.  
James = Sophia Pell  
Mary = Francis Haggerty  
Clarence =  
Emma =  
Sophia = Dunc-ane Pell  
Mary = Francis Haggerty  
Clarence =

descendants of Philip Pell, Esq., fourth son of Thomas Pell, eldest son of John Lord Pell. Philip married Hannah Mott on the 5th of March, 1731.<sup>a</sup> The son of Philip and Hannah Pell, was Philip Pell, who married Gloriana Tredwell. Their issue was, *first* the Hon. Philip Pell, judge advocate of the America army, member of assembly and one of the best Greek scholars of that day. His grandson is the present Philip Pell, of Pelham. The *second* son was Major Samuel Pell of the second New York regiment who greatly distinguished himself at the memorable battle of Saratoga.<sup>b</sup>

The following epitaph is inscribed on his head stone in Eastchester church yard :

MAJOR SAMUEL PELL,

ob. 29 Decr. 1786,

in the 32nd year of his age.

“ Thus after returning victorious,”  
 from the field of Mars, he  
 cheerfully obeys the summons  
 of eternity from whence there  
 is no return.

The *third* son of Philip and Hannah Pell, was Colonel David Pell, an officer in the continental army; this individual was the father of Stephen Pell, of Pelham.

The descendants of Joshua Pell, third son of Thomas Pell, eldest son and heir of John Lord Pell, are the Pells of New York, and Robert L. Pell, Esq., of Pelham, Ulster County.

A beautiful valley borders the Acqueanouncke or Hutchinson's river on the west side of the town. The Acqueanouncke or

<sup>a</sup> This marriage took place before the Quaker meeting assembled at Westbury, L. I. The marriage certificate is signed by 26 witnesses; among these occurs the name of his brother Caleb Pell.

<sup>b</sup> For his services Major Samuel Pell received three hundred acres of bounty land.

more properly the Acquacknounce (an Indian name, descriptive of the red cedar tree,) rises in the town of Scarsdale, upon the lands of Isaac Adriance.

Pelham Dale, the property of James Hay, Esq., is delightfully situated near the junction of the salt and fresh waters of the Aqueanounce. This estate formerly belonged to Col. David Pell, and, upon the division of his property, was purchased by the present proprietor. Mr. Hay is a descendant of James Hay, Esq.,<sup>a</sup> of Netherinch, Scotland, who joined the army of Prince Charles Edward in 1745, and was wounded at the "*fight of Falkirk.*" After his death, his family retired to Shetland. The dwelling house is a handsome structure of stone, and commands a beautiful view of Hutchinson's River, together with the distant village and spire of Eastchester. The garden contains a choice collection of trees and shrubs, and is also enlivened by a running stream. About half a mile further up the valley is situated the *Race Field*, once famous in the annals of the turf. The Pell family, however, appear to have been its principal supporters, and it has long since fallen into disuse. A little south of this spot, the New Haven Railroad crosses the vale. A grand feature in this beautiful valley is an extensive range of forest commonly called the Pelham woods. On the margin of the East River Creek, in this town, is situated the Shrubbery, the residence of George Prevost, Esq., son of the late Major George William Prevost. This place was formerly the property of Joshua Pell, Esq., whose son Joshua sold it to Colonel Aaron Burr, from whom it passed by purchase to his step son, Frederick Prevost.<sup>b</sup> The latter subsequently conveyed it to Major Prevost. The Prevosts were originally from Geneva, in Switzerland, being descended from Major General George Prevost, of that place, who married Anne, daughter of the Chevalier Grand, of Amsterdam, Holland. The father of the late proprietor was Major General Augustine Prevost, brother of Lieut. Gen. Sir George Prevost.

---

<sup>a</sup> James Hay, Esq., is buried in Kilsyth churchyard, Scotland.

<sup>b</sup> Frederick Prevost was the son of Frederick Prevost, Esq., by his wife, Theodosia Bartow. This lady afterwards married Col. Aaron Burr.

Baronet, Governor General and Commander-in-chief of the British North American colonies.<sup>a</sup> The brothers of the late proprietor were Col. Augustine Prevost, lost at sea; Capt. Henry Prevost, who fell in the storming of Albufeira, Portugal, and Capt. James Prevost, who was killed in the storming of Ciudad Rodrigo, in Spain. Mr. Stephen Pell's residence and store is at a little distance on the north. The following item relates to the old mill that formerly stood in this vicinity :

"April, 1726, Joseph Fowler is permitted to erect a dam or mill on the creek that runs between *Mr. Pell's* and *Eastchester*, at a certain place commonly called and known by the town land, provided he makes room for the water to be drawn off the meadows and for the *canoes* to pass."<sup>b</sup>

On the heights of Pelham, overlooking the village of Eastchester, stands the residence of Mrs. Hinman, daughter of Col. James Pell, former proprietor. From the records of the Court of Chancery, it appears that Colonel Pell's property originally consisted of four hundred and forty acres. His last will was recorded in 1790. Nearly opposite this place, a road pursues the eastern side of the heights towards Pelham Neck. This road passes, on the left, Woodside, the residence of Mr. B. S. Collins. From this place, many pleasant views of the valley and adjacent country are obtained, with the meanderings of the Aqueanouncke, on its way to the Sound.

Pelham Neck, a portion of the southern extremity of this town, (as has been shown,) was formerly called Ann Hook's Neck—subsequently Pell's Point and Rodman's Neck. Before entering the Neck, on the high ground to the west stands the residence of Richard Morris, Esq., commanding a pretty bay on the east, and some fine woodland scenery on the northwest. Upon the northeast side of the Neck lies the "*Indian burying-ground*," already alluded to. In fact, the whole of the Neck appears to have been used by the Indians for the purposes of sepulture : in proof of this their remains have been found in almost every part of it. The

---

<sup>a</sup> Ancestor of the Rev. Sir George Prevost, of Belmont, Hampshire, England.

<sup>b</sup> Eastchester Rec.

largest proportion of mounds, however, are situated on the grounds of the late George Rapelje. This individual's father, Rem Rapelje, purchased the property of the Rodman family, the Rodmans having obtained it through the marriage of Samuel Rodman, with Mary Pell, daughter of Caleb Pell. The residence of the late Mr. Rapelje is occupied by Peter Brinckerhoff, Esq. ; it is beautifully situated near the eastern shore of the Neck. This spot is celebrated for extensive views of the Sound. The interior of the mansion possesses some good paintings ; the whole collection is well worthy the attention of the connoisseur.

Hawks' Wood, the residence of the late Elisha King, Esq.,<sup>a</sup> now occupied by his widow, adjoins the Rapelje property on the south. The house is built of stone, in the Grecian style, and presents a fine front of columns to the water. The beauty of the scenery in this vicinity is greatly heightened by the close proximity of City Island and the richly wooded shores of the Point. The grounds, containing a great variety of choice trees, were laid out by the celebrated gardener, André Parmentier.

Pelham Neck is terminated by the property of Mr. Samuel Bowne.<sup>b</sup> Perhaps the finest view of City Island and the adjacent waters are to be had from this portion of the Point. It deserves to be mentioned, that this district affords a favorite haunt for the fish hawk, (*Falco Halitætus*,) whose nests may be seen in the lofty summits of the venerable oaks and chesnuts which abound on the Neck and neighboring shores.

“ These birds are greatly respected, and a kind of superstition prevails that it is a lucky omen if one builds on the farm. The nest is an immense fabric of rotten sticks—

‘ Itself a burden for the tallest tree.’ ”

They subsist altogether on the finny tribes that swim in the

<sup>a</sup> For a full account of the King family, see Thompson's *Hist. of Long Island*.

<sup>b</sup> On the site of Mr. Bowne's dwelling house, stood the residence of Thomas Pell, first proprietor of the manor.

bays and creeks adjacent, procuring their prey by their own active skill and industry."

"The regular arrival of this noted bird at the vernal equinox, when the busy season of fishing commences, adds peculiar interest to its first appearance, and procures it many a benediction from the fishermen."

"Soon as the sun, great ruler of the year,"  
 Bends to our northern climes his bright career,  
 And from the caves of Ocean calls from sleep  
 The finny shoals and myriads of the deep ;  
 When freezing tempests back to Greenland ride,  
 And day and night the equal hours divide ;  
 True to the season, o'er our sea-beat shore,  
 The sailing Osprey high is seen to soar  
 With broad, unmoving wing ; and, circling slow,  
 Marks each loose straggler in the deep below,  
 Sweeps down like lightning ! plunges with a roar !  
 And bears his struggling victim to the shore.

The long-housed fisherman beholds, with joy,  
 The well-known signal of his rough employ ;  
 And, as he bears his nets and oars along,  
 Thus hails the welcome season with a song :—

#### THE FISHERMAN'S HYMN.

The Osprey sails above the Sound ;  
 The geese are gone, the gulls are flying ;  
 The herring shoals swarm thick around ;  
 The nets are launched, the boats are plying.  
 Yo, ho, my hearts ! let's seek the deep,  
 Raise high the song, and cheerly wish her,  
 Still as the bending net we sweep,  
 "God bless the fish hawk and the fisher."

She brings us fish—she brings us Spring,  
 Good times, fair weather, warmth, and plenty ;  
 Fine store of shad, trout, herrings, ling,  
 Sheeps-head and drum, and old-wives' dainty.  
 Yo, ho, my hearts ! let's seek the deep,  
 Ply every oar, and cheerly wish her,

Still as the bending net we sweep,  
 " God bless the fish hawk and the fisher."

She rears her young on yonder tree ;  
 She leaves her faithful mate to mind 'em ;  
 Like us, for fish, she sails to sea,  
 And, plunging, shows us where to find 'em.  
 Yo, ho, my hearts ; let's seek the deep,  
 Ply every oar, and cheerly wish her,  
 While the slow-bending net we sweep,  
 " God bless the fish hawk and the fisher."<sup>a</sup>

In May, 1755, a public ferry appears to have been established between Ann-hooks neck, and Gravelly or Cedar Tree brook, on the north side of the East river and Hampstead harbor, and Matagariesons bay on the opposite shore, under such regulations as had been usual and customary. " The patentees were Samuel Rodman, owner and proprietor of a tract of land lying on Pell's neck, in the county of Westchester, adjoining upon and extending along the East river about one mile and a half, and John Wooley owner and proprietor of a certain tract in the township of Hampstead in Queens county, on Nasseau Island, opposite to the landing place on the said Samuel Rodman's plantation, adjoining upon and extending along the said river about half a mile."<sup>b</sup>

It was upon Pelham neck that the British forces landed, October 18th, 1776, ten days previous to the battle of White Plains.

Two days prior to the enemies landing, General Heath informs us " that the general officers of the American army rode to reconnoitre the ground at Pell's neck, &c., and it was determined that the position of the American army should be immediately changed ; the left flank to be extended more northerly, to prevent its being turned by the British,<sup>c</sup> who were at this time posted on Throgmorton's neck." " On the 18th of October, (Gen. Heath continues) the wind was now fresh at south-west, the British crossed to the other side of Frogs neck, embarked on board their boats,

---

<sup>a</sup> Wilson's American Ornithology, page 334.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. Book of Pat. No. xvi.

<sup>c</sup> Gen. Heath's Mem. 71.



crossed over the cove, landed on Pell's neck, and moved briskly upwards. Three or four of the American regiments advanced towards them and took a good position behind a stone fence. When the British had advanced sufficiently near, they gave them a pretty close fire, which checked them, and even obliged them to fall back ; but being immediately supported, they returned vigorously to the charge. The action was sharp, for a short time ; but the Americans were soon obliged to give way to superior force. Shepard's, Read's, Baldwin's, and Glover's regiments had the principal share in this action. The Americans had between thirty and forty men killed and wounded ; among the latter Col. Shepard, in the throat, not mortally, although the ball came well nigh effecting instant death. The loss of the British was not known, but must have been considerable. They advanced almost to New Rochelle, and halted. The American army extended its left."<sup>a</sup>

We copy the following from the Diary of President Styles :

*Camp at Mile Square, E. Chester, 23 Oct. 1776.*

"Friday morning last, the 18th, we were alarmed, and the enemy landed at Rodman's Point, (a place about four miles from our encampment,) with their whole force, the brigade under the command of Col. Glover consisting of about 700 men, one regiment being absent for guard. We marched down towards the place where the enemy were advancing with a body of 1600, with a very large artillery train. The first attack was made by a small party on their advance guard. We were effectually routed, and forced to retreat to the main body, who, when they came up, were fired upon by two regiments advantageously posted, Col. Glover's and Major Lee's, who behaved gallantly ; we brought many of them to the ground.<sup>b</sup> Thus we continued fighting them and retreating the whole afternoon, until they came to a stand, where they now remain, except stretching along down towards Connecticut, I suppose for forage. Our men behaved like soldiers, conformed

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. pp. 72, 73.

<sup>b</sup> Balls and brass ornaments are frequently found on the heights of Pelham. Near the residence of James Hay, Esq., part of a soldier's belt was discovered marked 16th Regiment.

to the orders of their officers, and retreated in grand order. Our loss is about nine or ten killed, and about thirty wounded. People may think what they please of the regular and spirited behavior of the British troops, but I that day was an eye witness to the contrary; I saw as great irregularity almost as in a militia regiment. They would run out from the body and fire single guns. As to their courage, the whole body of the 16th were forced to return by the fire of a single regiment, and many of them old troops. The fourth regiment was one that ran, and had we been reinforced with half their numbers might have totally defeated them.

“The next day General Lee (under whose command we are,) came and publicly returned his thanks to Colonel Glover and the officers and soldiers under his command for their noble spirited and soldier like conduct during the battle.”<sup>a</sup>

*North Castle, October 29th, 1776.*

“We have secured and encamped on every hill and dale, between this and New York, last Friday week, (18th.) Our whole brigade that then lay at Eastchester under command of Colonel Glover was ordered to oppose the progress of a large body of the enemy, then landing at Rodman’s Point.<sup>b</sup> Three regiments were ordered to pass a causeway, (the only passage,) and march to oppose them, and our regiment with three pieces of artillery was posted on an eminence overlooking the causeway, to secure a retreat for the others, and prevent the enemy from advancing. Colonel Glover so posted the three other regiments in the wood that they annoyed the enemy greatly. But discovering that they had determined to flank them he ordered a retreat. We had six or seven killed and about eighteen wounded. The enemies’ loss about one hundred and forty or one hundred and fifty. After the skirmish we retreated to Mile Square, where we lay encamped till Friday, (25th Oct.) when with the remainder of General

---

<sup>a</sup> Diary of President Styles, Library of Yale College, vol. vi.

<sup>b</sup> The British grenadiers and light infantry (says Stedman,) landed October 18th, 1776, on Pell’s Point, ten days before the battle of White Plains. The Hessians under Knyphausen landed on Davenport’s neck.

Lee's, joined the main body of the American army at White Plains."<sup>a</sup>

There are several islands belonging to this town lying opposite the southern extremity of Pelham neck, which add much to the beauty of the Sound scenery. The principal of these is *Great Minnefords*<sup>b</sup> or City Island. We have shown that upon the 11th of December, 1685, John Pell sold Great Minneford's Island, sometimes called Mulberry Island, to John Smith of Brukland. The principal proprietors of the island in 1700 were William Euerden and Gabriel Umbriel. "Upon the 27th of May, Robert Monckton, governor of the province, laid out for Benjamin Palmer and others the breadth of four hundred feet of the ground or soil now lying under the water, round the east side south, and part of the west side of a certain island lying in the Sound or East river, in the manor of Pelham, &c., called and known by the name of Minnefords Island. The petitioners on this occasion appear to have been David Hunt, Jonathan Fowler, Caleb Hunt, Edward Ward, Samuel Ward, John Wooley, Isaac Barnes, Enoch Hunt, Joseph Mullineux, James Lewis, Aaron Hunt, Benjamin Palmer, Joseph Palmer, Samuel Le Roux, and many other persons, proprietors of Minnefords Island,<sup>c</sup> &c."

The above right is now vested in Des Broses Hunter, Esq. the state having sold it some years since for quit rent to an individual from whom Mr. Hunter purchased.

At an early period of our colonial history the erection of a large commercial city was proposed upon this island. The attempt was actually commenced, but its hasty projectors were soon compelled to seek a less exposed and more eligible site. From this circumstance the place acquired its present name, *City Island*. Flagging stones are frequently met with on various parts of the island. One of the principal proprietors is George W. Horton. On the north-west side reside the family of the late Thomas Pell, fifth in descent from John Pell, Esq., lord of the manor of Pelham.

---

<sup>a</sup> Diary of President Styles.

<sup>b</sup> This word invariably occurs in the genitive, (*Minneford's Island*) from which we infer that it was originally the name of its Indian proprietor.

<sup>c</sup> See docket on file at office of Secretary of State.

During the Revolutionary war, the island was greatly exposed to the enemy's shipping.

"On the 27th of August, 1776, early in the morning, (says Gen. Heath,) two ships and a brig came to anchor a little above Frog Point. Our general immediately detached Col. Graham with his regiment, to prevent their landing to plunder or burn. Before he arrived several barges full of men landed on *New City Island* and killed a number of cattle. Two companies of the regiment immediately on their arrival ferried over to the island. The enemy carried off one man and fourteen cattle; the remainder of the cattle were secured."<sup>a</sup>

"30th of January, 1777, (observes the same authority,) the storm cleared up, when fifteen ships, one brig, two schooners, and two sloops came to, between Hart and *City Island*. They were from the eastward, and were supposed to have troops on board."<sup>b</sup>

Hart Island lies to the east of the former.

In 1774, Oliver de Lancey was seized in demesne as of fee of all that certain island, situate and being in Long Island Sound, commonly called *Spectacle, or Hart Island, or one of the Minneford Islands*, containing eighty-five acres. From Oliver de Lancey it passed to the Rodmans and Haight's. The latter sold it to the present proprietor, John Hunter, Esq. The south-west end of the island affords a safe anchorage for the river shipping, during the prevalence of south-easterly storms. *High Island*, is situated near the south shore of Pelham neck. The *Narrows* between Hart and City Island and the Blauzes are much frequented by vast flocks of wild ducks. The varieties consist principally of the old wife, broad bill, coot, black duck and whistler. In the fall of 1846, 1000 ducks are said to have been shot here, in the course of six hours.

The Pelham bridge, sometimes called the Eastchester creek bridge, communicates with the neck and the Westchester shore. This place is well known as a favorite resort for anglers. When

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 55, 56.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 113.

the tide serves, fish of various kinds and particularly the largest sized bass are taken. On the 3d of June, 1844, Mr. Benjamin Fowler captured a striped bass, weighing sixty-three pounds. When measured it was found to be four feet six inches long. A single steak of this fish weighed eight pounds. Des Brosses Hunter, Esq., also caught a bass here weighing fifty pounds.

During the summer of 1841, a bass drifted on the neighboring beach, weighing forty-three pounds. Mr. Albert Woodhull with a trolling line captured a fish in these waters, whose weight was thirty-six pounds, and Mr. Geo. Cox Furman, with a reel, another weighing twenty-one pounds. In the fall of 1838, the proprietor of the bridge informed me, that 769 bass of various sizes were taken at this place by angling. September and October are considered the best fishing months. Sheeps head are also occasionally taken here. A few years since a monstrous seal was shot in the bay, opposite the bridge, weighing eight hundred pounds.

Pelham bridge was originally commenced by a company of gentlemen in the immediate neighborhood, who after sustaining severe losses, were compelled to relinquish the enterprize, which it was reserved for the late George Rapelje, Esq. to complete. The bridge has since been purchased of his heirs, and is now rented by Benjamin Fowler, Jun., who bears (like his father) an admirable character for the manner in which he sustains this favorite haunt of the angler.

From the bridge there is a most extensive view of Hutchinson's bay, terminated only by the shores of Long Island, the fertile valley through which the Aqueanounck winds on its passage to the former and the heights of Westchester. On the south-east shore of Pelham is situated the estate of Robert Bartow, Esq. This property was once a portion of the estate of Thomas Pell, proprietor of the manor, eldest son and heir of John Lord Pell.

In March, 1790, Thomas Pell, grand-son of the above Thomas and Phebe his wife, conveyed the same to John Bartow,<sup>a</sup> and Ann Pell his wife, grand-parents of the present owner.

---

<sup>a</sup> The father of John was Theophilus Bartow, who married Bathsheba Pell, daughter of Thomas Pell the proprietor.

The dwelling house which is constructed of native stone presents a fine Grecian front to the road, with wings on the east and west.

The old manor house was pulled down many years since. It stood south-west of the present residence.

In a small cemetery south of the former, repose the remains of the Pell family. The oldest monument legible bears the following inscription.

Her is the  
Body of Jo-  
seph Pell,  
Eged 31,  
D. 1752.

The figure of a rude cherub with out-stretched wings surmounts the epitaph.

The family of Drake and others have monuments erected here.

On the estate is one of the largest and finest oak trees in the country, interesting as the very tree beneath which the Indian sachems ceded these lands to Thomas Pell, on the 14th of November, 1654.

“What tales, if there were tongues in trees,  
That giant oak could tell.”—*Alnwick Castle*.

The adjoining estate, Oak-shade, is the property of James A. Suydam, Esq. The house is a very beautiful specimen of the Italian villa style. The south front commands a fine view of Pelham neck and the Sound.

The residence of Isaac Coles, Esq., is also finely situated and embraces every variety of water view. But the most to be admired in this situation is the good taste with which art has added her charms to those of nature; the grounds being tastefully laid out to the water's edge, and embellished with extensive green and fruit houses.

Hunter's Island is connected with the main by a stone causeway and bridge. The mansion which is situated about the centre of the island, has the most commanding views of the vicinity. It is constructed of stone with wings on the east and west. The south front presents a collonade of the Ionic order,

from which an extensive and delightful prospect presents itself to the eye. Before you is a fine belt of woods, to the east a boundless expanse of water, while on the south-west a lovely bay stretches towards Pelham neck and Throgmorton's Point. These features render it one of the most beautiful spots on the river. The north front of the house overlooks the winding creek and distant woods of Pelham.

The principal rooms, together with a large picture gallery are hung around with an extensive collection of paintings by the best masters. To enumerate the whole would be unnecessary, we shall therefore, briefly mention the most pre-eminent. A Madonna and child, by Raffaele. In this picture may be remarked, that grace and simplicity of style, by which the prince of painters is distinguished. A landscape, by Poussin. A St. Cecilia, by Domenichino. This painting displays the greatness of expression and force of relief so peculiar to that artist. It is related of Domenichino, that when his friends were persuading him to finish his works with less labor, and in this respect to follow the example of his contemporaries, he replied: "I work for myself alone, and for the perfection of the art." Landscapes, by Salvator Rosa.

The reading of the recovered books of the law, to King Josiah. 2 Kings, xxii. 8, 9, by Rembrandt.

Presentation in the Temple,—Paul Veronese. Landscape,—Cuyp. Moonlight, water view,—Vanderveelde. The guard room,—Teniers. Merry making scene,—Ostade. The wise and foolish virgins, Matthew xxv.—Ottovenius. Beheading of John the Baptist, by Rubens, a pupil of the above artist. Oliver Cromwell and his favorite daughter, Mary, Countess of Fauconberg.—by Vandyck. This lady, Bishop Burnet describes as "a wise and worthy woman, and one more likely to have maintained the post of protector, than either of her brothers."<sup>a</sup> Sea storm,—Vernet. An Ecce Homo,—Carlo Dolci. Holy family,—Andrea del

---

<sup>a</sup> Burke's Hist. Landed Gent. vol. I. 432.

Sarto. Several fine hunting pieces by Snyders. Portrait—Albert Durer. Pillaging party,—Wouvermans. An Italian Lazaroni,—Vonlaer. A portrait of James Rivington, printer of the Royal Gazette, and supposed spy of General Washington,—Stuart. The paintings have been collected with great judgment, and constitute one of the best private collections in the United States.

In 1743, this island and twenty acres on the main, were in possession of Joshua Pell, Esq., from whom the former passed to the Hunts and Hendersons. The latter family conveyed it to the present proprietor. The island embraces an area of 250 acres to which may be added Mr. Hunter's property on the main, consisting of five hundred and fifty acres, also Hart and Flatt islands. Large quantities of fish are constantly taken in the waters south of the island. A thousand weight have been captured in one morning with a fyke net. The *no nation reefs* and *green flats*, lying nearly south of the island, are also well known fishing places.<sup>a</sup>

The Hunter family is originally from the county of Ayrshire, Scotland; two houses of that name having existed in that country for many centuries. The surname says Robertson "is obviously derived from the chase, before the use of fixed family names, as at present. Thus John le Hunter de la Forester de Paisley, the Hunter of Stragrife, appears in the Scottish<sup>b</sup> rolls.

The father of the present proprietor was Robert Hunter of Armagh county, Ireland, whose ancestors emigrated thither from Scotland cir. the beginning of the seventeenth century.

The Hon. John Hunter, has for many years represented this district in the senate; and, in 1846, was chosen a member of the convention for revising the state constitution.

The residence of Elbert Roosevelt, Esq., is pleasantly situated on the side of the Sound, and has fine views of Long Island and the surrounding shores. This family is of Dutch extraction, and

<sup>a</sup> On the southeast end of the island, is situated the Indian rock Mishow, while on the east lies the well known boulder, called the Grey Mare.

<sup>b</sup> Burke's Hist. of the Landed Gent. vol. II. 500.



claim descent from Claes Martensze van Roosevelt,<sup>a</sup> a native of Holland, and first of the name who came to America.



The residence of the Rev. Robert Bolton, Pelham.

The last object worthy of notice in this vicinity is the residence of the Rev. Robert Bolton.<sup>b</sup> The house, which is of stone, affords a good specimen of the old English style, and accords well with its romantic situation. The building has two towers, affording splendid views, in which wood and water are beautifully blended. The interior arrangements correspond with the style of the house, and carry the mind back to days of old. There are some family pictures, by Etty, of the Royal Academy of England. There is also an original portrait of Bunyan, formerly in the possession of the Rev. George Whitefield. The library contains the original Italian edition of Piranesi, collected for Napoleon, bearing his initial, and surmounted by the imperial crown. This extraordinary work on ancient and modern Rome consists of forty two volumes royal quarto. Also a copy of Macklin's Bible, the largest ever printed, in six volumes royal

<sup>a</sup> Literally, Nicolas, the son of Martin of the Rose-field. The son of this individual was Nicolas, whose son Johannes was the grandfather of Cornelius, father of Elbert Roosevelt, Esq., of Pelham.

<sup>b</sup> A native of Savannah, Georgia, and son of Robert Bolton, Esq., a merchant of that place.

quarto; a copy of Elliot's Indian Testament, said to be the first work "written and published in the present United States," printed at Cambridge, Massachusetts, A.D. 1661, by Samuel Green, the first printer in America. When Elliott had finished this translation, he wrote in his diary—"N. B. Prayer, faith and patience can perform wonders." Here is also a valuable cabinet of coins, collected by the Rev. Bryan Hill, rector of Hodnet, Shropshire, England: among the most interesting are those of Alexander the Great, Cæsar Augustus, and a series of Roman and ancient English. Among the medals of the Popes is the celebrated one of Adrian the Sixth, upon the reverse of which is the idolatrous inscription, "*Quem creant Adorant*"—*whom we create, we adore*. There is also a good collection of autographs, the oldest of which is that of Henry VII. The signatures of Elizabeth, with her Council, and of her successor, Queen Mary, are worthy of notice; also those of Oliver Cromwell and Richard Cromwell, presented by the late Oliver Cromwell.<sup>a</sup> We have also to notice, in this collection, an original of Addison's Spectator, and a letter of Pope's, never before published, addressed to Lord Bathurst. Our readers, we are sure, will be pleased with its insertion.

London, July 5.

My Lord—

To say a word in praise either of your wood or you, would be alike impertinent, each being, in its kind, the finest thing I know, and the most agreeable. I can only tell you very honestly, (without a word of the high timber of the one, or the high qualities of the other,) that I thought it the best company I ever knew, and the best place to enjoy it in.

I came hither but this day, where I find as much business as I left pleasure. I wish it would last as short a time, that I might return to you before you quit Cirencester, but I really see no prospect of ending what I must necessarily do, in less than a fortnight. Mr. Gay is as zealously carried to the bower by the force of imagination as ever Don Quixote was to an enchanted castle. The wood is to him the cave of Montesinos. He has already planted it with myrtles, and peopled it with nymphs. The old woman of the peasantry appears already an Urganda, and there wants nothing but a crystal rivulet to purl

---

<sup>a</sup> The late Oliver Cromwell, of Chesunt Park, England, was the last direct male descendant of the Protector.

through the shades, which might be large enough to allay Mr. Lewis's great thirst after water.

But, my Lord, I beg you to be comforted. Gay promises, that whatever may be said by the prose-men of this age, posterity shall believe there was water in Okely wood, and (to speak boldly) wood also.

A wood? quoth Lewis—and with that,  
He laughed, and shook his sides so fat;  
His tongue (with eye that marked his cunning)  
Thus fell a reas'ning, not a running.

Woods are (not to be too prolix)  
Collective bodies of strait sticks;  
It is, my Lord, a mere conundrum  
To call things woods for what grows und'r 'em;  
For shrubs, when nothing else at top is,  
Can only constitute a coppice.  
But if you will not take my word,  
See anno. quart of Edward Third;  
And that they're coppice called, when dock'd,  
Witness ann. prim. of Henry Oct.  
If this a wood you will maintain,  
Merely because it is no plain,  
Holland (for all that I can see)  
Might e'en as well be termed the sea;  
And C——by be fair harangu'd,  
An honest man, because not hang'd.

The rest of Mr. Lewis's arguments I have forgotten; for as I am determined to live in the wood, I am likewise resolved to hear no reasons against it. I have made a *coup de maitre* upon my mother in persuading her to pass a month or two at Stanton Harcourt, in order to facilitate my journies to her from Cirencester. And I will not fail to be with you whatever time you shall pass there in August.

I beg to be informed when your lordship comes to Richkins, by the first message you send to London, directed to Jervas's. I have only to add my most faithful services to the ladies; to desire Mr. Lewis to think as well of me as he can of a man that writes verses half the year; and to beg your lordship to believe I love you so very well as to be ashamed to find no better expression for myself than that of, my lord,

Your most obedient,  
and most humble servant,

A. POPE.

Also a note of Cowper's, one of Chatterton, Lord Nelson, Na-

oleon, Sir Christopher Wren, Percy, the author of the ballads, Bishop Burnet, Kosciusko, &c., &c. Among the American autographs are those of William Penn and his sons, the proprietors of Pennsylvania, Francis Lovelace, Governor of New York in 1671, Jonathan Edwards, Increase and Cotton Mather, Washington, La Fayette, Franklin, Jefferson, Schuyler, Sterling, Arnold, and various other eminent characters.

The terrace in front of the house forms a fine promenade. The gardens are laid out in the French, and landscape styles. The grounds are ornamented with natural walks leading to various objects of interest, among which deserves to be noticed the "*rocking stone*."<sup>a</sup> This natural curiosity is a rock supposed to weigh about twenty tons, so nicely poised that

"A stripling's arm can sway  
A mass no host could move."

At a short distance from the house stands a neat Gothic church of stone. This edifice was erected in 1843, and consecrated to the service of Almighty God, by the name and style of Christ Church, Pelham, on the 15th of October, the same year.<sup>b</sup> The act of incorporation bears date 25th of September, 1843. Richard Morris and Henry Grenzebach, wardens, Isaac Rosevelt, George F. Mills, John Jay Bolton, William Jay Bolton, Peter N. King, Jacob Le Roy, Cornelius Winter Bolton, and Robert Bolton, Jun., vestrymen. The Rev. Robert Bolton is the first and present incumbent.

The bell of Spanish manufacture was presented to the church by Lydig Suydam, Esq. It carries a Latin inscription and weighs 156 pounds. The communion plate was the gift of Mrs. C. L. Spencer. It bears the following inscription "*Christ Church, Pelham, May 11th, 1844.*" A chalice has also been

---

<sup>a</sup> Rocking stones were called "rogan stones" by the Saxons, from the old Saxon principal of the verb "rogg," to shake, which is used by the poet Chaucer. "And him she roggeth and awaketh soft."—Legend of Good Women.

<sup>b</sup> By an instrument of donation, dated the same day, the rector appropriated and devoted the church to the worship and service of Almighty God, the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost, according to the provisions of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, &c., &c.

presented by Miss G. C. Pell,<sup>a</sup> inscribed with the appropriate motto, "*This do in remembrance of me.*" The font was presented by Miss M. H. Clark, the chandeliers by Miss Emma Guerard, and the service books by Gerardus Clark, Esq. The chancel window is a beautiful specimen of stained glass, representing the adoration of the Magi. Matthew, ii. 11.

From the town records we take the following extracts.

"At a town meeting held at the school house in the town of Pelham, on Tuesday the seventh day of April, 1801, for the purpose of electing town officers for the said town to serve the ensuing year, the following persons were appointed to the following offices and places," viz.

Philip Pell, supervisor.

David J. Pell, town clerk.

David J. Pell,  
William Bayley,  
Joshua Huestis, } assessors.

Philip Pell,  
John Bartow,  
William Bayley, } commissioners of Highways.

Joshua Huestis, overseer of highways, for the within district of the town, to extend as far north till it come to the gate between the farms of Mr. John Bartow and Charles Turnbull deceased, and Elijah Horton, overseer of the highways of the northern district of the town, as far north till it comes to the before mentioned gate.

Elijah Horton,  
George Crawford, } overseers of the poor.

Jesse Mullinex,  
Joshua Huestis,  
Elijah Horton,  
Esaie Guion, } fence viewers.

David J. Pell,  
Jesse Mullinex, } pound masters.

Philip Pell,  
John Bartow,  
Alexander Anderson,  
William Bayley,  
Isaie Guion,  
Rem Rapalje,  
John Williams, } commissioners of schools.

Joseph Bayley, constable and collector.

The Pelham infant school, erected in 1845, is an interesting specimen of Saxon architecture. It was opened May, 1845, and at present numbers from eighty to ninety stated scholars.

<sup>a</sup> This lady is a lineal descendant of John Pell, second lord of the manor of Pelham.

4935













